



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

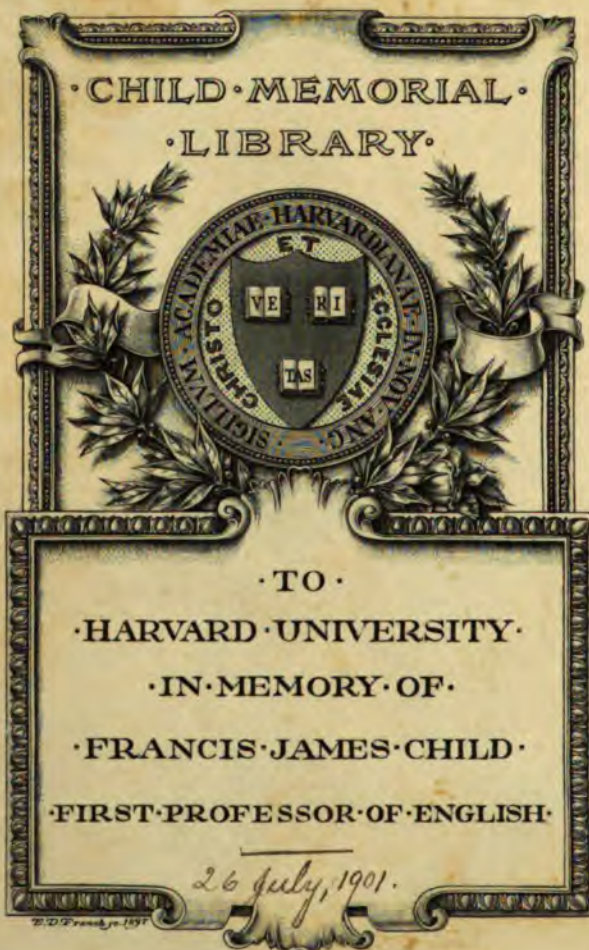
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

KF26772 (1)





$$\frac{01}{-9}$$

$$12 \overline{) 009} \\ \underline{30.00} \\ \gamma \pi \lambda \times$$







**HISTORY**  
**OF THE REIGN OF**  
**FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.**







0

# HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

## FERDINAND AND ISABELLA

### THE CATHOLIC

BY  
*Kirkling*  
WILLIAM H. ~~PRESCOTT~~

Conjugio tali!

Quæ surgere regna

*Virgil. Æneid. iv. 47.*

Crevere vires, famaue et imperi

Porrecta majestas ab Euro

Solis ad Occiduum cubile.

*Horat. Carm. lv. 15.*

EDITED BY JOHN FOSTER KIRK

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.



PHILADELPHIA:

J. B. LIPPINCOTT COMPANY.

1890.

~~2635.10~~

KF 26772 (1)

26 July 1901  
Harvard University,  
Child Memorial Library

Copyright, 1837,  
By WILLIAM H. PRESCOTT.

Copyright, 1865,  
By SUSAN PRESCOTT AND WILLIAM GARDINER PRESCOTT.

Copyright, 1872,  
By J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

Ferdinand—Vol. I.





TO  
THE HONOURABLE  
WILLIAM PRESCOTT, LL.D.,  
THE GUIDE OF MY YOUTH,  
MY BEST FRIEND IN RIPER YEARS,  
*These Volumes,*  
WITH THE WARMEST FEELINGS OF FILIAL AFFECTION,  
ARE RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED.

22 July, 1901  
Harvard University,  
Child Memorial Library.

## EDITOR'S PREFACE.

---

IN the intervals of composition, especially during the last years of his life, Mr. Prescott devoted much time to the revision of his published works. The changes he made included, besides many verbal amendments and some alterations of greater moment, numerous additions, principally to the notes, from the fresh material accumulated in the progress of his researches. Successive English editions published during his lifetime profited to some extent by this labour; but his purpose to incorporate the whole of its results in a new American edition was unhappily frustrated by his death. He had intimated a desire that the task should, in this event, be undertaken by the writer, who had shared in the previous labour and was cognizant of the details, and to whom it has accordingly been intrusted by the publishers, the present proprietors of the copyrights. It has consisted mainly in collating the editions, errors having crept into the later and otherwise more perfect ones; inserting emendations and additions from the author's manuscripts; verifying doubtful references; and securing, by a careful supervision of the proofs, that high degree of typographical accuracy which is especially desirable in reprints of standard works. Occasional notes, confined to points of fact, have been appended by the editor, where statements in the text, based on insufficient authority or called in question by recent investigators, needed to be substantiated or corrected.

## PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

---

ENGLISH writers have done more for the illustration of Spanish history than for that of any other except their own. To say nothing of the recent general compendium executed for the "Cabinet Cyclopædia," a work of singular acuteness and information, we have particular narratives of the several reigns, in an unbroken series, from the emperor Charles the Fifth (the First of Spain) to Charles the Third, at the close of the last century, by authors whose names are a sufficient guarantee for the excellence of their productions. It is singular that, with this attention to the modern history of the Peninsula, there should be no particular account of the period which may be considered as the proper basis of it,—the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella.

In this reign, the several States into which the country had been broken up for ages were brought under a common rule; the kingdom of Naples was conquered; America discovered and colonized; the ancient empire of the Spanish Arabs subverted; the dread tribunal of the Modern Inquisition established; the Jews, who contributed so sensibly to the wealth and civilization of the country, were banished; and, in fine, such changes were introduced into the interior administration of the monarchy as have left a permanent impression on the character and condition of the nation.

The actors in these events were every way suited to their importance. Besides the reigning sovereigns, Ferdinand

and Isabella, the latter certainly one of the most interesting personages in history, we have, in political affairs, that consummate statesman, Cardinal Ximenes; in military, the "Great Captain," Gonsalvo de Cordova; and in maritime, the most successful navigator of any age, Christopher Columbus; whose entire biographies fall within the limits of this period. Even such portions of it as have been incidentally touched by English writers, as the Italian wars, for example, have been drawn so exclusively from French and Italian sources that they may be said to be untrodden ground for the historian of Spain.<sup>1</sup>

It must be admitted, however, that an account of this reign could not have been undertaken at any preceding period with anything like the advantages at present afforded, owing to the light which recent researches of Spanish scholars, in the greater freedom of inquiry now enjoyed, have shed on some of its most interesting and least familiar features. The most important of the works to which I allude are, the History of the Inquisition, from official documents, by its secretary, Llorente; the analysis of the political institutions of the kingdom, by such writers as Marina, Sempere, and Capmany; the literal version, now made for the first time, of the Spanish-Arab chronicles, by Conde; the collection of original and unpublished documents illustrating the history of Columbus and the early Castilian navigators, by Navarrete; and, lastly, the copious illustrations of Isabella's reign by Clemencin, the late lamented secretary of the Royal Academy of History, forming the sixth volume of its valuable Memoirs.

<sup>1</sup> The only histories of this reign by Continental writers, with which I am acquainted, are the "*Histoire des Rois Catholiques Ferdinand et Isabelle*, par l'Abbé Mignot, Paris, 1766," and the "*Geschichte der Regierung Ferdinand des Katholischen*, von Rupert Becker, Prag und Leipzig, 1790." Their authors have employed the most accessible materials only in the compilation; and,

indeed, they lay claim to no great research, which would seem to be precluded by the extent of their works, in neither instance exceeding two volumes duodecimo. They have the merit of exhibiting, in a simple, perspicuous form, those events which, lying on the surface, may be found more or less expanded in most general histories.

It was the knowledge of these facilities for doing justice to this subject, as well as its intrinsic merits, which led me, ten years since, to select it ; and surely no subject could be found more suitable for the pen of an American than a history of that reign under the auspices of which the existence of his own favoured quarter of the globe was first revealed. As I was conscious that the value of the history must depend mainly on that of its materials, I have spared neither pains nor expense, from the first, in collecting the most authentic. In accomplishing this, I must acknowledge the services of my friends, Mr. Alexander H. Everett, then minister plenipotentiary from the United States to the court of Madrid, Mr. Arthur Middleton, secretary of the American legation, and, above all, Mr. O. Rich, now American consul for the Balearic Islands, a gentleman whose extensive bibliographical knowledge, and unwearied researches during a long residence in the Peninsula, have been liberally employed for the benefit both of his own country and of England. With such assistance, I flatter myself that I have been enabled to secure whatever can materially conduce to the illustration of the period in question, whether in the form of chronicle, memoir, private correspondence, legal codes, or official documents. Among these are various contemporary manuscripts, covering the whole ground of the narrative, none of which have been printed, and some of them but little known to Spanish scholars. In obtaining copies of these from the public libraries, I must add that I have found facilities under the present liberal government which were denied me under the preceding. In addition to these sources of information, I have availed myself, in the part of the work occupied with literary criticism and history, of the library of my friend, Mr. George Ticknor, who during a visit to Spain, some years since, collected whatever was rare and valuable in the literature of the Peninsula. I must further acknowledge my obligations to the library of Harvard University, in Cambridge, from whose rich repository of

books relating to our own country I have derived material aid ; and, lastly, I must not omit to notice the favours of another kind for which I am indebted to my friend, Mr. William H. Gardiner, whose judicious counsels have been of essential benefit to me in the revision of my labours.

In the plan of the work, I have not limited myself to a strict chronological narrative of passing events, but have occasionally paused, at the expense, perhaps, of some interest in the story, to seek such collateral information as might bring these events into a clearer view. I have devoted a liberal portion of the work to the literary progress of the nation, conceiving this quite as essential a part of its history as civil and military details. I have occasionally introduced, at the close of the chapters, a critical notice of the authorities used, that the reader may form some estimate of their comparative value and credibility. Finally, I have endeavoured to present him with such an account of the state of affairs, both before the accession and at the demise of the Catholic sovereigns, as might afford him the best points of view for surveying the entire results of their reign.

How far I have succeeded in the execution of this plan must be left to the reader's candid judgment. Many errors he may be able to detect. Sure I am, there can be no one more sensible of my deficiencies than myself ; although it was not till after practical experience that I could fully estimate the difficulty of obtaining anything like a faithful portraiture of a distant age, amidst the shifting hues and perplexing cross-lights of historic testimony. From one class of errors my subject necessarily exempts me,—those founded on national or party feeling. I may have been more open to another fault,—that of too strong a bias in favour of my principal actors ; for characters noble and interesting in themselves naturally beget a sort of partiality, akin to friendship, in the historian's mind, accustomed to the daily contemplation of them. Whatever defects may be charged on the work, I can at least assure myself that it

is an honest record of a reign important in itself, new to the reader in an English dress, and resting on a solid basis of authentic materials, such as probably could not be met with out of Spain, nor in it without much difficulty.

I hope I shall be acquitted of egotism although I add a few words respecting the peculiar embarrassments I have encountered in composing these volumes. Soon after my arrangements were made, early in 1826, for obtaining the necessary materials from Madrid, I was deprived of the use of my eyes for all purposes of reading and writing, and had no prospect of again recovering it. This was a serious obstacle to the prosecution of a work requiring the perusal of a large mass of authorities, in various languages, the contents of which were to be carefully collated, and transferred to my own pages, verified by minute reference.<sup>1</sup> Thus shut out from one sense, I was driven to rely exclusively on another, and to make the ear do the work of the eye. With the assistance of a reader, uninitiated, it may be added, in any modern language but his own, I worked my way through several venerable Castilian quartos, until I was satisfied of the practicability of the undertaking. I next procured the services of one more competent to aid me in pursuing my historical inquiries. The process was slow and irksome enough, doubtless, to both parties, at least till my ear was accommodated to foreign sounds, and an antiquated, oftentimes barbarous phraseology, when my progress became more sensible, and I was cheered with the prospect of success. It certainly would have been a far more serious misfortune to be led thus blindfold through the pleasant paths of literature; but my track stretched, for the most part, across dreary wastes, where no beauty lurked

<sup>1</sup> "To compile a history from various authors, when they can only be consulted by other eyes, is not easy, nor possible but with more skilful and attentive help than can be commonly obtained." (Johnson's *Life*

of Milton.) This remark of the great critic, which first engaged my attention in the midst of my embarrassments, although discouraging at first, in the end stimulated the desire to overcome them.



to arrest the traveller's eye and charm his senses. After persevering in this course for some years, my eyes, by the blessing of Providence, recovered sufficient strength to allow me to use them, with tolerable freedom, in the prosecution of my labours, and in the revision of all previously written. I hope I shall not be misunderstood as stating these circumstances to deprecate the severity of criticism, since I am inclined to think the greater circumspection I have been compelled to use has left me, on the whole, less exposed to inaccuracies than I should have been in the ordinary mode of composition. But, as I reflect on the many sober hours I have passed in wading through black-letter tomes, and through manuscripts whose doubtful orthography and defiance of all punctuation were so many stumbling-blocks to my amanuensis, it calls up a scene of whimsical distresses, not usually encountered, on which the good-natured reader may, perhaps, allow I have some right, now that I have got the better of them, to dwell with satisfaction.

I will only remark, in conclusion of this too prolix discussion about myself, that, while making my tortoise-like progress, I saw what I had fondly looked upon as my own ground (having indeed lain unmolested by any other invader for so many ages) suddenly entered, and in part occupied, by one of my countrymen. I allude to Mr. Irving's "History of Columbus" and "Chronicle of Granada;" the subjects of which, although covering but a small part of my whole plan, form certainly two of its most brilliant portions. Now, alas! if not devoid of interest, they are, at least, stripped of the charm of novelty. For what eye has not been attracted to the spot on which the light of that writer's genius has fallen?

I cannot quit the subject, which has so long occupied me, without one glance at the present unhappy condition of Spain; who, shorn of her ancient splendour, humbled by the loss of empire abroad and credit at home, is abandoned to all the evils of anarchy. Yet, deplorable as this condition is, it is not so bad as the lethargy in which she has

been sunk for ages. Better be hurried forward for a season on the wings of the tempest than stagnate in a deathlike calm, fatal alike to intellectual and moral progress. The crisis of a revolution, when old things are passing away and new ones are not yet established, is indeed fearful. Even the immediate consequences of its achievement are scarcely less so to a people who have yet to learn by experiment the precise form of institutions best suited to their wants, and to accommodate their character to these institutions. Such results must come with time, however, if the nation be but true to itself. And that they will come, sooner or later, to the Spaniards, surely no one can distrust who is at all conversant with their earlier history, and has witnessed the examples it affords of heroic virtue, devoted patriotism, and generous love of freedom ;

“ Ohè l'antico valore  
—— non è ancor morto,”

Clouds and darkness have, indeed, settled thick around the throne of the youthful Isabella ; but not a deeper darkness than that which covered the land in the first years of her illustrious namesake ; and we may humbly trust that the same Providence which guided her reign to so prosperous a termination may carry the nation safe through its present perils, and secure to it the greatest of earthly blessings, civil and religious liberty.

November, 1837.

## PREFACE TO THE THIRD ENGLISH EDITION.

---

SINCE the publication of the First Edition of this work it has undergone a careful revision ; and this, aided by the communications of several intelligent friends, who have taken an interest in its success, has enabled me to correct several verbal inaccuracies, and a few typographical errors, which had been previously overlooked. While the Second Edition was passing through the press, I received, also, copies of two valuable Spanish works, having relation to the reign of the Catholic sovereigns, but which, as they appeared during the recent troubles of the Peninsula, had not before come to my knowledge. For these I am indebted to the politeness of Don Angel Calderon de la Barca, late Spanish Minister at Washington ; a gentleman whose frank and liberal manners, personal accomplishments, and independent conduct in public life have secured for him deservedly high consideration in the United States, as well as in his own country.

I must still further acknowledge my obligation to Don Pascual de Gayangos, the learned author of the "Mahomedan Dynasties in Spain," recently published in London, —a work which, from its thorough investigation of original sources and its fine spirit of criticism, must supply, what has been so long felt to be a desideratum with the student, the means of forming a perfect acquaintance with the Arabic portion of the Peninsular annals. There fell into the hands of this gentleman, on the breaking up of the convents of Saragossa, in 1835, a rich collection of original

documents, comprehending, among other things, the autograph correspondence of Ferdinand and Isabella, and of the principal persons of their court. It formed, probably, part of the library of Geronimo Zurita,—historiographer of Aragon under Philip the Second,—who, by virtue of his office, was intrusted with whatever documents would illustrate the history of the country. This rare collection was left at his death to a monastery in his native city. Although Zurita is one of the principal authorities for the present work, there are many details of interest in this correspondence which have passed unnoticed by him, even when forming the basis of his conclusions; and I have gladly availed myself of the liberality and great kindness of Señor de Gayangos, who has placed these manuscripts at my disposal, transcribing such as I have selected for the corroboration and further illustration of my work. The difficulties attending this labour of love will be better appreciated when it is understood that the original writing is in antiquated character, which few Spanish scholars of the present day could comprehend, and often in cipher, which requires much patience and ingenuity to explain. With these various emendations, it is hoped that the present Edition may be found more deserving of that favour from the public which has been so courteously accorded to the preceding.

March, 1841.

# CONTENTS

OF

## THE FIRST VOLUME

### INTRODUCTION.

#### SECTION I.

##### VIEW OF THE CASTILIAN MONARCHY BEFORE THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY.

	PAGE		PAGE
State of Spain at the Middle of the Fifteenth Century . . . . .	2	Wealth of the Cities . . . . .	22
Early History and Constitution of Castile . . . . .	3	Period of the highest Power of the Commons . . . . .	23
The Visigoths . . . . .	3	The Nobility . . . . .	24
Invasion of the Arabs . . . . .	4	Their Privileges . . . . .	26
Its Influence on the Condition of the Spaniards . . . . .	7	Their great Wealth . . . . .	27
Causes of their slow Reconquest of the Country . . . . .	7	Their turbulent Spirit . . . . .	28
Their ultimate Success certain . . . . .	8	The <i>Cavalleros</i> , or Knights . . . . .	30
Their Religious Enthusiasm . . . . .	9	The Clergy . . . . .	31
Influence of their Minstrelsy . . . . .	10	Influence of the Papal Court . . . . .	32
Their Charity to the Infidel . . . . .	11	Corruption of the Clergy . . . . .	33
Their Chivalry . . . . .	12	Their rich Possessions . . . . .	34
Early Importance of the Castilian Towns . . . . .	14	Limited Extent of the Royal Prerogative . . . . .	36
Their Privileges . . . . .	15	Poverty of the Crown . . . . .	38
Castilian Cortes . . . . .	17	Its Causes . . . . .	38
Its great Powers . . . . .	19	Anecdote of Henry III. of Castile . . . . .	39
Its Boldness . . . . .	20	Constitution at the Beginning of the Fifteenth Century . . . . .	41
Hermendades of Castile . . . . .	21	Constitutional Writers on Castile . . . . .	43
		Notice of Marina and Sempere . . . . .	43

#### SECTION II.

##### REVIEW OF THE CONSTITUTION OF ARAGON TO THE MIDDLE OF THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY.

Rise of Aragon . . . . .	45	Their Abrogation . . . . .	54
Foreign Conquests . . . . .	47	The Legislature of Aragon . . . . .	55
Code of Soprarbe . . . . .	49	Its Forms of Proceeding . . . . .	56
The Ricos Hombres . . . . .	49	Its Powers . . . . .	58
Their Immunities . . . . .	50	The General Privilege . . . . .	59
Their Turbulence . . . . .	51	Judicial Functions of Cortes . . . . .	60
Privileges of Union . . . . .	52	Preponderance of the Commons . . . . .	62

	PAGE		PAGE
The Justice of Aragon . . .	63	Intellectual Culture . . .	74
His great Authority . . .	63	Poetical Academy of Tortosa . .	76
Security against its Abuse . .	66	Brief Glory of the Limousin . .	77
Independent Execution of it . .	67	Constitutional Writers on Ara-	
Valencia and Catalonia . . .	68	gon . . . . .	78
Rise and Opulence of Barcelona	69	Notices of Blancas, Martel, and	
Her Free Institutions . . .	70	Capmany . . . . .	78
Haughty Spirit of the Catalans	72		

## PART THE FIRST.

THE PERIOD, WHEN THE DIFFERENT KINGDOMS OF SPAIN WERE FIRST UNITED UNDER ONE MONARCHY, AND A THOROUGH REFORM WAS INTRODUCED INTO THEIR INTERNAL ADMINISTRATION; OR THE PERIOD EXHIBITING MOST FULLY THE DOMESTIC POLICY OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.

### CHAPTER I.

STATE OF CASTILE AT THE BIRTH OF ISABELLA.—REIGN OF JOHN II. OF CASTILE.

Revolution of Trastamara . . .	83	John de Mena . . . . .	95
Accession of John II. . . . .	84	His Influence . . . . .	96
Rise of Alvaro de Luna . . .	84	Baena's Cancionero . . . . .	97
Jealousy of the Nobles . . .	86	Castilian Literature under	
Oppression of the Commons . .	87	John II. . . . .	98
Its Consequences . . . . .	88	Decline of Alvaro de Luna . .	99
Early Literature of Castile . .	90	His Fall . . . . .	100
Its Encouragement under John		His Death . . . . .	101
II. . . . .	91	Lamented by John . . . . .	102
Marquis of Villena . . . . .	91	Death of John II. . . . .	103
Marquis of Santillana . . . .	94	Birth of Isabella . . . . .	103

### CHAPTER II.

CONDITION OF ARAGON DURING THE MINORITY OF FERDINAND.—REIGN OF JOHN II. OF ARAGON.

John of Aragon . . . . .	104	Is imprisoned . . . . .	112
Title of his Son Carlos to		Insurrection of the Catalans . .	113
Navarre . . . . .	105	Carlos released . . . . .	113
He takes Arms against his		His Death . . . . .	114
Father . . . . .	106	His Character . . . . .	115
Is defeated . . . . .	107	Tragical Story of Blanche . .	116
Birth of Ferdinand . . . . .	107	Ferdinand sworn Heir to the	
Carlos retires to Naples . . .	108	Crown . . . . .	118
He passes into Sicily . . . .	109	Besieged by the Catalans in	
John II. succeeds to the Crown		Gerona . . . . .	119
of Aragon . . . . .	110	Treaty between France and	
Carlos reconciled with his		Aragon . . . . .	120
Father . . . . .	111	General Revolt in Catalonia . .	121

# CONTENTS.

xvii

	PAGE		PAGE
Successes of John . . . . .	122	Death of the Queen of Ara-	126
Crown of Catalonia offered to		gon . . . . .	
René of Anjou . . . . .	123	Improvement in John's Af-	
Distress and Embarrassments		fairs . . . . .	127
of John . . . . .	125	Siege of Barcelona . . . . .	128
Popularity of the Duke of		It surrenders . . . . .	129
Lorraine . . . . .	126		

## CHAPTER III.

### REIGN OF HENRY IV. OF CASTILE.—CIVIL WAR.—MARRIAGE OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.

Popularity of Henry IV. . . . .	131	Battle of Olmedo . . . . .	149
He disappoints Expectations . . . . .	132	Civil Anarchy . . . . .	151
His dissolute Habits . . . . .	134	Death and Character of Alfonso	152
Oppression of the People . . . . .	135	His Reign a Usurpation . . . . .	153
Debasement of the Coin . . . . .	136	The Crown offered to Isabella . . . . .	154
Character of Pacheco, Marquis		She declines it . . . . .	154
of Villena . . . . .	137	Treaty between Henry and the	
Character of the Archbishop of		Confederates . . . . .	155
Toledo . . . . .	138	Isabella acknowledged Heir to	
Interview between Henry IV.		the Crown at Toros de Guis-	
and Louis XI. . . . .	139	ando . . . . .	156
Disgrace of Villena and the		Suitors to Isabella . . . . .	157
Archbishop of Toledo . . . . .	140	Ferdinand of Aragon . . . . .	158
League of the Nobles . . . . .	140	Support of Joanna Beltraneja	159
Deposition of Henry at Avila . . . . .	142	Proposal of the King of Por-	
Division of Parties . . . . .	143	tugal rejected by Isabella . . . . .	160
Intrigues of the Marquis of		She accepts Ferdinand . . . . .	161
Villena . . . . .	145	Articles of Marriage . . . . .	162
Henry disbands his Forces . . . . .	145	Critical Situation of Isabella . . . . .	163
Proposition for the Marriage of		Ferdinand enters Castile . . . . .	167
Isabella . . . . .	146	Private Interview between Fer-	
Her early Education . . . . .	146	dinand and Isabella . . . . .	168
Projected Union with the		Their Marriage . . . . .	169
Grand Master of Calatrava . . . . .	148	Notice of the Quincuagenas of	
His sudden Death . . . . .	149	Oviedo . . . . .	170

## CHAPTER IV.

### FACTIONS IN CASTILE.—WAR BETWEEN FRANCE AND ARAGON.—DEATH OF HENRY IV. OF CASTILE.

Factions in Castile . . . . .	173	Second French Invasion of	
Ferdinand and Isabella . . . . .	174	Roussillon . . . . .	185
Civil Anarchy . . . . .	175	Ferdinand's summary Execu-	
Revolt of Roussillon from Louis		tion of Justice . . . . .	186
XI. . . . .	177	Siege and Reduction of Per-	
Gallant Defence of Perpignan	178	pignan . . . . .	187
Ferdinand raises the Siege . . . . .	179	Pérfidy of Louis XI. . . . .	187
Treaty between France and		Illness of Henry IV. of Castile	188
Aragon . . . . .	179	His Death . . . . .	189
Isabella's Party gains Strength	180	Influence of his Reign . . . . .	190
Interview between Henry IV.		Notice of Alonso de Palencia . . . . .	190
and Isabella at Segovia . . . . .	182	Notice of Enriquez del Castillo	191

## CHAPTER V.

ACCESSION OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.—WAR OF THE SUCCESSION.—  
BATTLE OF TORO.

	PAGE		PAGE
Title of Isabella . . . . .	193	Absurd Position . . . . .	206
She is proclaimed Queen . . . . .	195	He suddenly decamps . . . . .	209
Settlement of the Crown . . . . .	197	Overtaken by Ferdinand . . . . .	209
Partisans of Joanna . . . . .	198	Battle of Toro . . . . .	210
Alfonso of Portugal supports her Cause . . . . .	199	The Portuguese routed . . . . .	211
He invades Castile . . . . .	200	Isabella's Thanksgiving for the Victory . . . . .	213
He espouses Joanna . . . . .	201	Submission of the whole King- dom . . . . .	214
Castilian Army . . . . .	201	The King of Portugal visits France . . . . .	215
Ferdinand marches against Alfonso . . . . .	202	Returns to Portugal . . . . .	216
He challenges him to personal Combat . . . . .	203	Peace with France . . . . .	217
Disorderly Retreat of the Cas- tilians . . . . .	204	Active Measures of Isabella . . . . .	218
Appropriation of the Church Plate . . . . .	206	Treaty of Peace with Portugal . . . . .	219
Reorganization of the Army . . . . .	206	Joanna takes the Veil . . . . .	220
King of Portugal arrives before Zamora . . . . .	208	Death of the King of Portugal . . . . .	221
		Death of the King of Aragon . . . . .	222

## CHAPTER VI.

## INTERNAL ADMINISTRATION OF CASTILE.

Scheme of Reform for the Go- vernment of Castile . . . . .	224	Re-establishment of Order . . . . .	238
Administration of Justice . . . . .	224	Reform of the Jurisprudence . . . . .	239
Establishment of the Herman- dad . . . . .	225	Code of Ordenanças Reales . . . . .	239
Code of the Hermandad . . . . .	226	Schemes for reducing the No- bility . . . . .	240
Ineffectual Opposition of the Nobility . . . . .	227	Revocation of the Royal Grants . . . . .	242
Tumult at Segovia . . . . .	228	Legislative Enactments . . . . .	243
Isabella's Presence of Mind . . . . .	229	The Queen's spirited Conduct to the Nobility . . . . .	244
Isabella visits Seville . . . . .	230	Military Orders of Castile . . . . .	248
Her splendid Reception there . . . . .	231	Order of St. Jago . . . . .	249
Severe Execution of Justice . . . . .	231	Order of Calatrava . . . . .	251
Marquis of Cadiz and Duke of Medina Sidonia . . . . .	232	Order of Alcantara . . . . .	252
Royal Progress through Andalusia . . . . .	233	Grand-masterships annexed to the Crown . . . . .	254
Impartial Execution of the Laws . . . . .	234	Their Reformation . . . . .	255
Reorganization of the Tribu- nals . . . . .	235	Usurpations of the Church . . . . .	256
King and Queen preside in Courts of Justice . . . . .	237	Resisted by Cortes . . . . .	256
		Difference with the Pope . . . . .	257
		Restoration of Trade . . . . .	259
		Salutary Enactments of Cortes . . . . .	260
		Prosperity of the Kingdom . . . . .	262
		Notice of Clemencin . . . . .	264



CHAPTER VII.

ESTABLISHMENT OF THE MODERN INQUISITION.

PAGE	PAGE
Origin of the Ancient Inquisition . . . . .	Isabella resorts to milder Measures . . . . .
Its Introduction into Aragon . . . . .	Enforces the Papal Bull . . . . .
Retrospective View of the Jews in Spain . . . . .	Inquisition at Seville . . . . .
Under the Arabs . . . . .	Proofs of Judaism . . . . .
Under the Castilians . . . . .	The sanguinary Proceedings of the Inquisitors . . . . .
Persecution of the Jews . . . . .	Conduct of the Papal Court . . . . .
Their State at the Accession of Isabella . . . . .	Final Organization of the Inquisition . . . . .
Charges against them . . . . .	Forms of Trial . . . . .
Bigotry of the Age . . . . .	Torture . . . . .
Its Influence on Isabella . . . . .	Injustice of its Proceedings . . . . .
Character of her Confessor Torquemada . . . . .	Autos da Fe . . . . .
Papal Bull authorizing the Inquisition . . . . .	Convictions under Torquemada . . . . .
	Perfidious Policy of Rome . . . . .
	Notice of Llorente's History of the Inquisition . . . . .

CHAPTER VIII.

REVIEW OF THE POLITICAL AND INTELLECTUAL CONDITION OF THE SPANISH ARABS PREVIOUS TO THE WAR OF GRANADA.

Early Successes of Mahometanism . . . . .	Moorish Gallantry . . . . .
Conquest of Spain . . . . .	Chivalry . . . . .
Western Caliphate . . . . .	Unsettled State of Granada . . . . .
Form of Government . . . . .	Causes of her successful Resistance . . . . .
Character of the Sovereigns . . . . .	Literature of the Spanish Arabs . . . . .
Military Establishment . . . . .	Circumstances favourable to it . . . . .
Sumptuous Public Works . . . . .	Provisions for Learning . . . . .
Great Mosque of Cordova . . . . .	The actual Results . . . . .
Revenues . . . . .	Averroes . . . . .
Mineral Wealth of Spain . . . . .	Their Historical Merits . . . . .
Husbandry and Manufactures . . . . .	Useful Discoveries . . . . .
Population . . . . .	The Impulse given by them to Europe . . . . .
Character of Alhakem II. . . . .	Their elegant Literature . . . . .
Intellectual Development . . . . .	Poetical Character . . . . .
Dismemberment of the Cordovan Empire . . . . .	Influence on the Castilian . . . . .
Kingdom of Granada . . . . .	Circumstances prejudicial to their Reputation . . . . .
Agriculture and Commerce . . . . .	Notices of Casiri, Conde, and Cardonne . . . . .
Resources of the Crown . . . . .	
Luxurious Character of the People . . . . .	

## CHAPTER IX.

## WAR OF GRANADA.—SURPRISE OF ZAHARA.—CAPTURE OF ALHAMA.

	PAGE		PAGE
Zahara surprised by the Moors	336	Distress of the Garrison	346
Description of Alhama	337	The Duke of Medina Sidonia	348
The Marquis of Cadiz	338	Marches to relieve Alhama	348
His Expedition against Al-		Raises the Siege	349
hama	339	Meeting of the two Armies	349
Surprise of the Fortress	340	The Sovereigns at Cordova	350
Valour of the Citizens	341	Alhama invested again by the	
Sally upon the Moors	342	Moors	350
Desperate Combat	342	Isabella's Firmness	350
Fall of Alhama	343	Ferdinand raises the Siege	351
Consternation of the Moors	344	Vigorous Measures of the	
The Moors besiege Alhama	345	Queen	352

## CHAPTER X.

WAR OF GRANADA.—UNSUCCESSFUL ATTEMPT ON LOJA.—DEFEAT  
IN THE AXARQUILA.

Siege of Loja	353	Expedition to the Axarquila	367
Castilian Forces	354	The Military Array	368
Encampment before Loja	354	Progress of the Army	369
Skirmish with the Enemy	355	Moorish Preparations	370
Retreat of the Spaniards	356	Skirmish among the Mountains	370
Revolution in Granada	359	Retreat of the Spaniards	371
Death of the Archbishop of		Their disastrous Situation	372
Toledo	361	They resolve to force a Passage	373
Affairs of Italy	362	Difficulties of the Ascent	374
Of Navarre	363	Dreadful Slaughter	375
Resources of the Crown	365	Marquis of Cadiz escapes	376
Justice of the Sovereigns	366	Losses of the Christians	376

## CHAPTER XI.

WAR OF GRANADA.—GENERAL VIEW OF THE POLICY PURSUED IN THE  
CONDUCT OF THIS WAR.

Abdallah marches against the		Interview between the two	
Christians	378	Kings	384
Ill Omens	379	General Policy of the War	385
Marches on Lucena	380	Incessant Hostilities	386
Battle of Lucena	380	Devastating Forays	386
Capture of Abdallah	381	Strength of the Moorish Fort-	
Losses of the Moors	382	resses	386
Moorish Embassy to Cordova	383	Description of the Pieces	387
Debates in the Spanish Council	383	Of the Kinds of Ammunition	388
Treaty with Abdallah	383	Roads for the Artillery	389

# CONTENTS

xxi

	PAGE		PAGE
Defences of the Moors . . .	390	Isabella visits the Camp . . .	399
Terms to the Vanquished . . .	390	Royal Costume . . .	400
Supplies for the Army . . .	391	Devout Demeanour of the	
Isabella's Care of the Troops . . .	392	Sovereigns . . .	401
Her Perseverance in the War . . .	392	Ceremonies on the Occupation	
Policy towards the Nobles . . .	393	of a City . . .	402
Composition of the Army . . .	394	Release of Christian Captives . . .	402
Swiss Mercenaries . . .	395	Policy in fomenting the Moor-	
The English Lord Scales . . .	396	ish Factions . . .	403
The Queen's Courtesy . . .	397	Christian Conquests . . .	403
Magnificence of the Nobles . . .	397	Notice of Fernando del Pulgar . . .	406
Their Galhantury . . .	398	Notice of Antonio de Lebrija . . .	406

## CHAPTER XII.

### INTERNAL AFFAIRS OF THE KINGDOM.—INQUISITION IN ARAGON.

Isabella enforces the Laws . . .	408	Remonstrances of Cortes . . .	411
Chastisement of certain Eccle-		Conspiracy formed . . .	412
siastics . . .	409	Assassination of Arbues . . .	412
Marriage of Catharine of Na-		Cruel Persecutions . . .	413
varre . . .	409	Inquisition throughout Fer-	
Liberation of Catalan Serfs . . .	410	dinand's Dominions . . .	414
Inquisition in Aragon . . .	410		

## CHAPTER XIII.

### WAR OF GRANADA.—SURRENDER OF VELEZ MALAGA.—SIEGE AND CONQUEST OF MALAGA.

Position of Velez Malaga . . .	415	Enthusiasm of the Christians . . .	428
Army before Velez . . .	416	Discipline of the Army . . .	428
Defeat of El Zagal . . .	416	General Sally . . .	429
Narrow Escape of Ferdinand . . .	417	Generosity of a Moorish Knight . . .	429
Surrender of Velez . . .	418	Outworks carried . . .	430
Description of Malaga . . .	418	Grievous Famine . . .	431
Sharp Rencontre . . .	420	Proposals for Surrender . . .	431
Malaga invested by Sea and		Haughty Demeanour of Ferdi-	
Land . . .	421	nand . . .	432
Brilliant Spectacle . . .	422	Malaga surrenders at Dis-	
Extensive Preparations . . .	422	cretion . . .	433
The Queen visits the Camp . . .	423	Purification of the City . . .	433
Summons of the Town . . .	424	Entrance of the Sovereigns . . .	434
Danger of the Marquis of		Release of Christian Captives . . .	434
Cadiz . . .	424	Lament of the Malagans . . .	435
Civil Feuds of the Moors . . .	425	Sentence passed on them . . .	436
Attempt to assassinate the		Wary Device of Ferdinand . . .	437
Sovereigns . . .	426	Cruel Policy of the Victors . . .	437
Distress and Resolution of the		Measures for repeopling Ma-	
Besieged . . .	427	laga . . .	439

## CHAPTER XIV.

## WAR OF GRANADA.—CONQUEST OF BAZA.—SUBMISSION OF EL ZAGAL.

	PAGE		PAGE
The Sovereigns visit Aragon . . .	440	Her patriotic Sacrifices . . .	455
Inroads into Granada . . .	441	Resolution of the Besieged . . .	455
Border War . . .	441	Isabella visits the Camp . . .	456
Embassy from Maximilian . . .	442	Suspension of Arms . . .	456
Preparations for the Siege of		Baza surrenders . . .	457
Baza . . .	444	Conditions . . .	458
The King takes Command of		Occupation of the City . . .	458
the Army . . .	444	Treaty of Surrender with El	
Position and Strength of Baza . . .	445	Zagal . . .	459
Assault on the Garden . . .	446	Painful March of the Spanish	
Dependency of the Spanish		Army . . .	460
Chiefs . . .	447	Interview between Ferdinand	
Dispelled by Isabella . . .	449	and El Zagal . . .	460
Gardens cleared of their Timber . . .	449	Occupation of El Zagal's Do-	
City closely invested . . .	450	main . . .	461
Mission from the Sultan of		Equivalent assigned to him . . .	461
Egypt . . .	451	Difficulties of this Campaign . . .	463
Houses erected for the Army . . .	452	Isabella's Popularity and In-	
Its strict Discipline . . .	453	fluence . . .	463
Heavy Tempest . . .	454	Notice of Peter Martyr . . .	464
Isabella's Energy . . .	454		

## CHAPTER XV.

## WAR OF GRANADA.—SIEGE AND SURRENDER OF THE CITY OF GRANADA.

The Infanta Isabella . . .	466	Capitulation of Granada . . .	477
Public Festivities . . .	466	Commutations in Granada . . .	478
Granada summoned in vain . . .	467	Preparations for occupying the	
Knighthood of Don Juan . . .	468	City . . .	478
Ferdinand's Policy . . .	469	The Cross raised on the Al-	
Isabella deposes the Judges of		hambra . . .	480
Chancery . . .	470	Fate of Abdallah . . .	481
Ferdinand musters his Forces . . .	470	Results of the War of Granada . . .	484
Encamps in the Vega . . .	471	Its Moral Influence . . .	484
Position of Granada . . .	471	Its Military Influence . . .	485
Moslem and Christian Chivalry . . .	472	Destiny of the Moors . . .	486
The Queen surveys the City . . .	473	Death and Character of the	
Skirmish with the Enemy . . .	474	Marquis of Cadiz . . .	486
Conflagration of the Christian		Notice of Bernaldez, Curate of	
Camp . . .	474	Los Palacios . . .	488
Erection of Santa Fe . . .	476	Irving's Chronicle of Granada . . .	489
Negotiations for Surrender . . .	476		

## CHAPTER XVI.

## APPLICATION OF CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS AT THE SPANISH COURT.

Maritime Enterprise of the		Early History of Columbus . . .	493
Portuguese . . .	491	Belief of Land in the West . . .	495
Early Spanish Discoveries . . .	492	Columbus applies to Portugal . . .	497

# CONTENTS.

xxiii

	PAGE		PAGE
To the Court of Castile . . .	497	The Queen's favourable Dis-	
Referred to a Council . . .	498	position . . .	503
His Application rejected . . .	499	Final Arrangement with Co-	
He prepares to leave Spain . . .	500	lumbus . . .	504
Interposition in his Behalf . . .	501	He sails on his First Voyage . . .	505
Columbus at Santa Fe . . .	502	Indifference to his Enterprise . . .	506
Negotiations again broken off . . .	503	Acknowledgments due to Isa-	
		bella . . .	507

## CHAPTER XVII.

### EXPULSION OF THE JEWS FROM SPAIN.

Excitement against the Jews . . .	509	Their Sufferings in Africa . . .	516
Fomented by the Clergy . . .	509	In other Countries . . .	517
Violent Conduct of Torque-		Whole Number of Exiles . . .	518
mada . . .	511	Disastrous Results . . .	519
Edict of Expulsion . . .	512	True Motives of the Edict . . .	520
Its severe Operation . . .	512	Contemporary Judgments . . .	521
Constancy of the Jews . . .	514	Mistaken Piety of the Queen . . .	522
Routes of the Emigrants . . .	515		

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### ATTEMPTED ASSASSINATION OF FERDINAND.—RETURN AND SECOND VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

The Sovereigns visit Aragon . . .	524	Preparations for a Second	
Attempt on Ferdinand's Life . . .	525	Voyage . . .	535
General Consternation . . .	526	Conversion of the Natives . . .	535
Loyalty of the People . . .	526	New Powers granted to Co-	
Slow Recovery of the King . . .	527	lumbus . . .	536
Punishment of the Assassin . . .	527	Application to Rome . . .	537
Return of Columbus . . .	528	Famous Bulls of Alexander VI. . .	538
Discovery of the West Indies . . .	528	Jealousy of the Court of Lis-	
Joyous Reception of Columbus . . .	530	bon . . .	539
His Progress to Barcelona . . .	531	Wary Diplomacy . . .	540
Interview with the Sovereigns . . .	531	Second Voyage of Columbus . . .	541
Sensations caused by the Dis-		Mission to Portugal . . .	542
covery . . .	532	Disgust of John II. . .	543
Board for Indian Affairs . . .	534	Treaty of Tordesillas . . .	544
Regulations of Trade . . .	534		

## CHAPTER XIX.

### CASTILIAN LITERATURE.—CULTIVATION OF THE COURT.—CLASSICAL LEARNING.—SCIENCE.

Ferdinand's Education neg-		The Queen's Care for the Educa-	
lected . . .	547	tion of her Nobles . . .	551
Instruction of Isabella . . .	547	Labours of Martyr . . .	552
Her Collection of Books . . .	548	Of Lucio Marineo . . .	553
Tuition of the Infantas . . .	549	Scholarship of the Nobles . . .	554
Of Prince John . . .	550	Accomplished Women . . .	555

	PAGE		PAGE
Classical Learning . . .	557	Other Sciences . . .	562
Lebrija . . . . .	557	Printing introduced . . .	563
Arias Barbosa . . . . .	558	The Queen encourages it . . .	563
Merits of the Spanish Scholars	560	Its rapid Diffusion . . .	564
Universities . . . . .	560	Actual Progress of Science . . .	566
Sacred Studies . . . . .	562		

## CHAPTER XX.

CASTILIAN LITERATURE.—ROMANCES OF CHIVALRY.—LYRICAL POETRY.—  
THE DRAMA.

This Reign an Epoch in Polite Letters . . . . .	567	Criticism on it . . . . .	585
Romances of Chivalry . . . . .	568	It opened the Way to Dramatic Writing . . . . .	586
Their pernicious Effects . . . . .	570	Numerous Editions of it . . . . .	586
Ballads or <i>Romances</i> . . . . .	571	Juan de la Encina . . . . .	587
Early Cultivation in Spain . . . . .	571	His Dramatic Eclogues . . . . .	587
Resemblance to the English . . . . .	572	Torres de Naharro . . . . .	589
Moorish Minstrelsy . . . . .	573	His Comedies . . . . .	589
Its Date and Origin . . . . .	575	Similar in Spirit with the later Dramas . . . . .	591
Its high Repute . . . . .	576	Not acted in Spain . . . . .	591
Numerous Editions of the Ballad . . . . .	577	Low Condition of the Stage . . . . .	592
Lyric Poetry . . . . .	578	Tragic Drama . . . . .	593
Cancionero General . . . . .	579	Oliva's Classic Imitations . . . . .	593
Its Literary Value . . . . .	579	Not popular . . . . .	594
Low State of Lyric Poetry . . . . .	581	National Spirit of the Literature of this Epoch . . . . .	594
Coplas of Manrique . . . . .	582	Moratin's Dramatic Criticism . . . . .	595
Rise of the Spanish Drama . . . . .	582		
Tragicomedy of <i>Celestina</i> . . . . .	584		



The sequel of the *Diary* of the reign of Ferdinand & Isabella.  
by *Alfonso* for the History

*Alfonso*

*Alfonso*

*Alfonso* *Alfonso*



*Alfonso*







# HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.

---

## INTRODUCTION.

### SECTION I.

#### VIEW OF THE CASTILIAN MONARCHY BEFORE THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY.

**Early History and Constitution of Castile.—Saracen Invasion.—Slow Reconquest of the Country.—Religious Enthusiasm of the Spaniards.—Influence of their Minstrelsy.—Their Chivalry.—Castilian Towns.—Cortes.—Its Powers.—Its Boldness.—Wealth of the Cities.—The Nobility.—Their Privileges and Wealth.—Knights.—Clergy.—Poverty of the Crown.—Limited Extent of the Prerogative.**

FOR several hundred years after the great Saracen invasion in the beginning of the eighth century, Spain was broken up into a number of small but independent states, divided in their interests, and often in deadly hostility with one another. It was inhabited by races the most dissimilar in their origin, religion, and government, the least important of which has exerted a sensible influence on the character and institutions of its present inhabitants. At the close of the fifteenth century, these various races were blended into one great nation, under one common rule. Its territorial limits were widely extended by discovery and conquest. Its domestic institutions, and even its literature, were moulded into the form which, to a considerable extent, they have maintained to the present day. It is the object of the present narrative to exhibit the period in which these momentous results were effected,—the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella.

By the middle of the fifteenth century, the number of states into which the country had been divided was reduced to four: Castile, Aragon, Navarre, and the Moorish kingdom of Granada. The last, comprised within nearly the same limits as the modern province of that name, was all that remained to the Moslems of their once vast possessions in the Peninsula. Its concentrated population gave it a degree of strength altogether disproportioned to the extent of its territory; and the profuse magnificence of its court, which rivalled that of the ancient caliphs, was supported by the labours of a sober, industrious people, under whom agriculture and several of the mechanic arts had reached a degree of excellence probably unequalled in any other part of Europe during the Middle Ages.

The little kingdom of Navarre, embosomed within the Pyrenees, had often attracted the avarice of neighbouring and more powerful states. But, since their selfish schemes operated as a mutual check upon each other, Navarre still continued to maintain her independence, when all the smaller states in the Peninsula had been absorbed in the gradually increasing dominion of Castile and Aragon.

This latter kingdom comprehended the province of that name, together with Catalonia and Valencia. Under its auspicious climate and free political institutions, its inhabitants displayed an uncommon share of intellectual and moral energy. Its long line of coast opened the way to an extensive and flourishing commerce; and its enterprising navy indemnified the nation for the scantiness of its territory at home, by the important foreign conquests of Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, and the Balearic Isles.

The remaining provinces of Leon, Biscay, the Asturias, Galicia, Old and New Castile, Estremadura, Murcia, and Andalusia, fell to the crown of Castile, which, thus extending its sway over an unbroken line of country from the Bay of Biscay to the Mediterranean, seemed by the magnitude of its territory, as well as by its antiquity (for it

was there that the old Gothic monarchy may be said to have first revived after the great Saracen invasion), to be entitled to a pre-eminence over the other states of the Peninsula. This claim, indeed, appears to have been recognized at an early period of her history. Aragon did homage to Castile for her territory on the western bank of the Ebro, until the twelfth century, as did Navarre, Portugal, and, at a later period, the Moorish kingdom of Granada.<sup>1</sup> And, when at length the various states of Spain were consolidated into one monarchy, the capital of Castile became the capital of the new empire, and her language the language of the court and of literature.

It will facilitate our inquiry into the circumstances which immediately led to these results, if we briefly glance at the prominent features in the early history and constitution of the two principal Christian states, Castile and Aragon, previous to the fifteenth century.<sup>2</sup>

The Visigoths, who overran the Peninsula in the fifth century, brought with them the same liberal principles of government which distinguished their Teutonic brethren. Their crown was declared elective by a formal legislative act.<sup>3</sup> Laws were enacted in the great national councils, composed of prelates and nobility, and not unfrequently ratified in an assembly of the people. Their code of

<sup>1</sup> Aragon was formally released from this homage in 1177, and Portugal in 1264. (Mariana, *Historia general de España* (Madrid, 1780), lib. 11, cap. 14; lib. 13, cap. 20.) The king of Granada, Aben Alahmar, swore fealty to St. Ferdinand, in 1245, binding himself to the payment of an annual rent, to serve under him with a stipulated number of his knights in war, and personally *attend cortes when summoned*; — a whimsical stipulation this for a Mahometan prince. Conde, *Historia de la Dominacion de los Arabes en España* (Madrid, 1820, 1821), tom. iii. cap. 30.

<sup>2</sup> Navarre was too inconsiderable,

and bore too near a resemblance in its government to the other Peninsular kingdoms, to require a separate notice; for which, indeed, the national writers afford but very scanty materials. The Moorish empire of Granada, so interesting in itself, and so dissimilar in all respects to Christian Spain, merits particular attention. I have deferred the consideration of it, however, to that period of the history which is occupied with its subversion. See Part I., chapter 8.

<sup>3</sup> See the Canons of the fifth Council of Toledo. Florez, *España sagrada* (Madrid, 1747—1776), tom. vi. p. 168.

jurisprudence, although abounding in frivolous detail, contained many admirable provisions for the security of justice, and, in the degree of civil liberty which it accorded to the Roman inhabitants of the country, far transcended those of most of the other barbarians of the north.<sup>4</sup> In short, their simple polity exhibited the germ of some of those institutions which, with other nations, and under happier auspices, have formed the basis of a well-regulated constitutional liberty.<sup>5</sup>

But, while in other countries the principles of a free government were slowly and gradually unfolded, their development was much accelerated in Spain by an event which, at the time, seemed to threaten their total extinction,—the great Saracen invasion at the beginning of the eighth century. The religious as well as the political institutions of the Arabs were too dissimilar to those of the conquered nation, to allow the former to exercise any very sensible influence over the latter in these particulars. In the spirit of toleration which distinguished the early followers of Mahomet, they conceded to such of the

<sup>4</sup> Recesvinto, in order more effectually to bring about the consolidation of his Gothic and Roman subjects into one nation, abrogated the law prohibiting their intermarriage. The terms in which his enactment is conceived disclose a far more enlightened policy than that pursued either by the Franks or Lombards. (See the *Fuero Juzgo* (ed. de la Acad., Madrid, 1815), lib. 3, tit. 1, ley 1.)—The Visigothic code, *Fuero Juzgo* (*Forum Judicium*), originally compiled in Latin, was translated into Spanish under St. Ferdinand, and first printed in 1600, at Madrid. (Los Doctores Asso y Manuel, *Instituciones del Derecho civil de Castilla* (Madrid, 1792), pp. 6, 7.) A second edition, under the supervision of the Royal Spanish Academy, was published in 1815. This compilation, notwithstanding the

apparent rudeness and even ferocity of some of its features, may be said to have formed the basis of all the subsequent legislation of Castile. It was, doubtless, the exclusive contemplation of such features that brought upon these laws the sweeping condemnation of Montesquieu, as “puériles, gauches, idiotes,—frivoles dans le fond et gigantesques dans le style.” *Esprit des Lois*, liv. 28, chap. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Some of the local usages, afterwards incorporated in the *fueros*, or charters, of the Castilian communities, may probably be derived from the time of the Visigoths. The English reader may form a good idea of the tenor of the legal institutions of this people and their immediate descendants, from an article in the sixty-first Number of the *Edinburgh Review*, written with equal learning and vivacity.

Goths as were willing to continue among them after the conquest, the free enjoyment of the religious as well as many of the civil privileges which they possessed under the ancient monarchy.\* Under this liberal dispensation it cannot be doubted that many preferred remaining in the pleasant regions of their ancestors to quitting them for a life of poverty and toil. These, however, appear to have been chiefly of the lower order;† and the men of higher rank or of more generous sentiments, who refused to accept a nominal and precarious independence at the hands of their oppressors, escaped from the overwhelming inundation into the neighbouring countries of France, Italy, and Britain, or retreated behind those natural fortresses of the north, the Asturian hills and the Pyrenees, whither the victorious Saracen disdained to pursue them.‡

\* The Christians, in all matters exclusively relating to themselves, were governed by their own laws (see the *Fuero Juzgo*, Introd. p. 40), administered by their own judges, subject only in capital cases to an appeal to the Moorish tribunals. Their churches and monasteries (*roscæ inter spinas*, says the historian) were scattered over the principal towns, Cordova retaining seven, Toledo six, etc.; and their clergy were allowed to display the costume, and celebrate the pompous ceremonial, of the Romish communion. Florez, *España sagrada*, tom. x. trat. 33, cap. 7.—Morales, *Crónica general de España* (Obras, Madrid, 1791—1793), lib. 12, cap. 78.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, part. 1, cap. 15, 22.

† Morales, *Crónica*, lib. 12, cap. 77.—Yet the names of several nobles resident among the Moors appear in the record of those times. (See Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía de España* (Madrid, 1770), tom. i. p. 34, note.) If we could rely on a singular statement, quoted by Zurita, we might infer that a large proportion of the Goths were content to reside among their Sara-

cen conquerors. The intermarriages among the two nations had been so frequent that in 1311 the ambassador of James II. of Aragon stated to his Holiness, Pope Clement V., that of 200,000 persons composing the population of Granada, not more than 500 were of pure Moorish descent! (Anales de la Corona de Aragon (Zaragoza, 1610), lib. 5, cap. 93.) As the object of the statement was to obtain certain ecclesiastical aids from the pontiff, in the prosecution of the Moorish war, it appears very suspicious, notwithstanding the emphasis laid on it by the historian.

‡ Bleda, *Crónica de los Moros de España* (Valencia, 1618), p. 171.—This author states that in his time there were several families in Ireland whose patronymics bore testimony to their descent from these Spanish exiles. That careful antiquary, Morales, considers the regions of the Pyrenees lying betwixt Aragon and Navarre, together with the Asturias, Biscay, Guipuscoa, the northern portion of Galicia and the Alpujarras (the last retreat, too, of the Moors,

Here the broken remnant of the nation endeavoured to revive the forms, at least, of the ancient government. But it may well be conceived how imperfect these must have been under a calamity which, breaking up all the artificial distinctions of society, seemed to resolve it at once into its primitive equality. The monarch, once master of the whole Peninsula, now beheld his empire contracted to a few barren, inhospitable rocks. The noble, instead of the broad lands and thronged halls of his ancestors, saw himself at best but the chief of some wandering horde, seeking a doubtful subsistence, like himself, by rapine. The peasantry, indeed, may be said to have gained by the exchange; and, in a situation in which all factitious distinctions were of less worth than individual prowess and efficiency, they rose in political consequence. Even slavery, a sore evil among the Visigoths, as indeed among all the barbarians of German origin, though not effaced, lost many of its most revolting features, under the more generous legislation of later times.<sup>9</sup>

under the Christian domination), to have been untouched by the Saracen invaders. See lib. 12, cap. 76.

<sup>9</sup> The lot of the Visigothic slave was sufficiently hard. The oppressions which this unhappy race endured were such as to lead Mr. Southey, in his excellent Introduction to the "Chronicle of the Cid," to impute to their co-operation, in part, the easy conquest of the country by the Arabs. But although the laws in relation to them seem to be taken up with determining their incapacities rather than their privileges, it is probable that they secured to them, on the whole, quite as great a degree of civil consequence as was enjoyed by similar classes in the rest of Europe. By the *Fuero Juzgo*, the slave was allowed to acquire property for himself, and with it to purchase his own redemption. (Lib. 5, tit. 4, ley 16.) A certain proportion

of every man's slaves were also required to bear arms, and to accompany their master to the field. (Lib. 9, tit. 2, ley 8.) But their relative rank is better ascertained by the amount of composition (that accurate measurement of civil rights with all the barbarians of the north) prescribed for any personal violence inflicted on them. Thus, by the *Salic law*, the life of a free Roman was estimated at only one-fifth of that of a Frank (*Lex Salica*, tit. 43, sec. 1, 8); while, by the law of the Visigoths, the life of a slave was valued at half of that of a freeman (lib. 6, tit. 4, ley 1). In the latter code, moreover, the master was prohibited, under the severe penalties of banishment and sequestration of property, from either murdering or maiming his own slave (lib. 6, tit. 5, leyes 12, 13); while, in other codes of the barbarians, the penalty was confined to similar trespasses



A sensible and salutary influence, at the same time, was exerted on the moral energies of the nation, which had been corrupted in the long enjoyment of uninterrupted prosperity. Indeed, so relaxed were the morals of the court, as well as of the clergy, and so enervated had all classes become in the general diffusion of luxury, that some authors have not scrupled to refer to these causes principally the perdition of the Gothic monarchy. An entire reformation in these habits was necessarily effected in a situation where a scanty subsistence could only be earned by a life of extreme temperance and toil, and where it was often to be sought, sword in hand, from an enemy far superior in numbers. Whatever may have been the vices of the Spaniards, they cannot have been those of effeminate sloth. Thus a sober, hardy, and independent race was gradually formed, prepared to assert their ancient inheritance, and to lay the foundations of far more liberal and equitable forms of government than were known to their ancestors.

At first their progress was slow and almost imperceptible. The Saracens, indeed, reposing under the sunny skies of Andalusia, so congenial with their own, seemed willing to relinquish the sterile regions of the north to an enemy whom they despised. But, when the Spaniards, quitting the shelter of their mountains, descended into the open plains of Leon and Castile, they found themselves exposed to the predatory incursions of the Arab cavalry, who, sweeping over the face of the country, carried off in a single foray the hard-earned produce of a summer's toil. It was not until they had reached some natural boundary, as the river Douro or the chain of the Guadarrama, that they were enabled, by constructing a line of fortifications

on the slaves of another; and, by the Salic law, no higher mulct was imposed for killing than for kidnapping a slave. (*Lex Salica*, tit. 11, sec. 1, 3.) The legislation of the Visigoths, in those particulars,

seems to have regarded this unhappy race as not merely a distinct species of property. It provided for their personal security, instead of limiting itself to the indemnification of their masters.

along these primitive bulwarks, to secure their conquests, and oppose an effectual resistance to the destructive inroads of their enemies.

Their own dissensions were another cause of their tardy progress. The numerous petty states, which rose from the ruins of the ancient monarchy, seemed to regard each other with even a fiercer hatred than that with which they viewed the enemies of their faith; a circumstance that more than once brought the nation to the verge of ruin. More Christian blood was wasted in these national feuds than in all their encounters with the infidel. The soldiers of Fernan Gonçalez, a chieftain of the tenth century, complained that their master made them lead the life of very devils, keeping them in the harness day and night, in wars, not against the Saracens, but one another.<sup>10</sup>

These circumstances so far palsied the arm of the Christians, that a century and a half elapsed after the invasion before they had penetrated to the Douro,<sup>11</sup> and nearly thrice that period before they had advanced the line of conquest to the Tagus,<sup>12</sup> notwithstanding this portion of the country had been comparatively deserted by the Mahometans. But it was easy to foresee that a people, living, as they did, under circumstances so well adapted to the development of both physical and moral energy, must ultimately prevail over a nation oppressed by despotism and the effeminate indulgence to which it was naturally disposed by a sensual religion and a voluptuous climate. In truth, the early Spaniard was urged by every motive that can give efficacy to human purpose. Pent up in his barren mountains, he beheld the pleasant valleys and fruitful vineyards of his ancestors delivered over to the spoiler, the holy places polluted by his abominable rites,

<sup>10</sup> Corónica general, part. 3, fol. 64. about 850.

<sup>11</sup> According to Morales (Corónica, lib. 13, cap. 67), this took place until 1085; Lisbon, in 1147.

and the crescent glittering on the domes which were once consecrated by the venerated symbol of his faith. His cause became the cause of Heaven. The church published her bulls of crusade, offering liberal indulgences to those who served, and Paradise to those who fell, in battle against the infidel. The ancient Castilian was remarkable for his independent resistance of papal encroachment; but the peculiarity of his situation subjected him in an uncommon degree to ecclesiastical influence at home. Priests mingled in the council and the camp, and, arrayed in their sacerdotal robes, not unfrequently led the armies to battle.<sup>13</sup> They interpreted the will of Heaven as mysteriously revealed in dreams and visions. Miracles were a familiar occurrence. The violated tombs of the saints sent forth thunders and lightnings to consume the invaders; and, when the Christians fainted in the fight, the apparition of their patron, St. James, mounted on a milk-white steed, and bearing aloft the banner of the Cross, was seen hovering in the air, to rally their broken squadrons and lead them on to victory.<sup>14</sup> Thus the Spaniard looked upon himself as in

<sup>13</sup> The archbishops of Toledo, whose revenues and retinues far exceeded those of the other ecclesiastics, were particularly conspicuous in these holy wars. Mariana, speaking of one of those belligerent prelates, considers it worthy of encomium that "it is not easy to decide whether he was most conspicuous for his good government in peace, or his conduct and valour in war." *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 14.

<sup>14</sup> The first occasion on which the military apostle condescended to reveal himself to the Leonese was the memorable day of Clavijo, A.D. 844, when 70,000 infidels fell on the field. From that time, the name of St. Jago became the battle-cry of the Spaniards. The truth of the story is attested by a contemporary charter of Ramiro I. to the church of the saint, granting it

an annual tribute of corn and wine from the towns in his dominions, and a knight's portion of the spoils of every victory over the Mussulmans. The *privilegio del voto*, as it is called, is given at length by Florez in his Collection (*España sagrada*, tom. xix. p. 329), and is unhesitatingly cited by most of the Spanish historians, as Garibay, Mariana, Morales, and others.—More sharp-sighted critics discover, in its anachronisms and other palpable blunders, ample evidence of its forgery. (Mondejar, *Advertencias á la Historia de Mariana* (Valencia, 1746), no. 157,—Masden, *Historia crítica de España y de la Cultura Española* (Madrid, 1783—1805), tom. xvi. suppl. 1. 8.) The canons of Compostella, however, seem to have found their account in it, as the tribute of good cheer, which it imposed, continued to be paid by

a peculiar manner the care of Providence. For him the laws of nature were suspended. He was a soldier of the Cross, fighting not only for his country, but for Christendom. Indeed, volunteers from the remotest parts of Christendom eagerly thronged to serve under his banner; and the cause of religion was debated with the same ardour in Spain as on the plains of Palestine.<sup>15</sup> Hence the national character became exalted by a religious fervour, which in later days, alas! settled into a fierce fanaticism. Hence that solicitude for the purity of the faith, the peculiar boast of the Spaniards, and that deep tinge of superstition, for which they have ever been distinguished among the nations of Europe.

The long wars with the Mahometans served to keep alive in their bosoms the ardent glow of patriotism; and this was still further heightened by the body of traditional minstrelsy which commemorated the heroic deeds performed in these wars. The influence of such popular compositions on a simple people is undeniable. A sagacious critic ventures to pronounce the poems of Homer the principal bond which united the Grecian states.<sup>16</sup> Such an opinion may be deemed somewhat extravagant. It cannot be doubted, however, that a poem like that of the "Cid," which appeared as early as the twelfth century,<sup>17</sup> by

some of the Castilian towns, according to Mariana, in his day. *Hist. de España*, tom. i. p. 416.

<sup>15</sup> French, Flemish, Italian, and English volunteers, led by men of distinguished rank, are recorded by the Spanish writers to have been present at the sieges of Toledo, Lisbon, Algeziras, and various others. More than sixty thousand, or, as some accounts state, a hundred thousand, joined the army before the battle of Navas de Tolosa; a round exaggeration, which, however, implies the great number of such auxiliaries. (*Gari-bay*, *Compendio historial de las*

*Crónicas de España* (Barcelona, 1628), lib. 12, cap. 33.) The crusades in Spain were as rational enterprises as those in the East were vain and chimerical. Pope Pascal II. acted like a man of sense when he sent back certain Spanish adventurers who had embarked in the wars of Palestine, telling them that "the cause of religion could be much better served by them at home."

<sup>16</sup> See Heeren, *Politics of Ancient Greece*, translated by Bancroft, chap. 7.

<sup>17</sup> The oldest manuscript extant of this poem (still preserved at

calling up the most inspiring national recollections in connection with their favourite hero, must have operated powerfully on the moral sensibilities of the people.

It is pleasing to observe, in the cordial spirit of these early effusions, little of the ferocious bigotry which sullied the character of the nation in after-ages.<sup>18</sup> The Mahometans of this period far excelled their enemies in general refinement, and had carried some branches of intellectual culture to a height scarcely surpassed by Europeans in later times. The Christians, therefore, not-

Bivar, the hero's birthplace) bears the date of 1207, or at latest 1307, for there is some obscurity in the writing. Its learned editor, Sanchez, has been led by the peculiarities of its orthography, metre, and idiom, to refer its composition to as early a date as 1153. (Coleccion de Poesias Castellanas anteriores al Siglo XV. (Madrid, 1779—90), tom. i. p. 223.) Some of the later Spanish antiquaries have manifested a scepticism in relation to the "Cid," truly alarming. A volume was published at Madrid, in 1792, by Risco, under the title of "Castilla, ó Historia de Rodrigo Diaz," etc., which the worthy father ushered into the world, with much solemnity, as a transcript of an original manuscript coeval with the time of the "Cid," and fortunately discovered by him in an obscure corner of some Leonese monastery. (Prólogo.) Masdeu, in an analysis of this precious document, has been led to scrutinize the grounds on which the reputed achievements of the "Cid" have rested from time immemorial, and concludes with the startling assertion that "of Rodrigo Diaz, el Campeador, we absolutely know nothing, with any degree of probability, not even his existence!" (Hist. crítica, tom. xx. p. 370.) There are probably few of his countrymen who will thus coolly acquiesce in the annihilation of their favourite hero, whose exploits

have been the burden of chronicle, as well as romance, from the twelfth century down to the present day. They may find a warrant for their fond credulity in the dispassionate judgment of one of the greatest of modern historians, John Müller, who, far from doubting the existence of the Campeador, has succeeded, in his own opinion at least, in clearing from his history the "mists of fable and extravagance" in which it had been shrouded. See his *Life of the Cid*, appended to Escobar's "Romancero," edited by the learned and estimable Dr. Julius, of Berlin. Frankfort, 1828.

"A modern minstrel inveighs loudly against this charity of his ancestors, who devoted their "cantos de cigarra" to the glorification of the "Moorish rabble," instead of celebrating the prowess of the Cid, Bernardo, and other worthies of their own nation. His discourtesy, however, is well rebuked by a more generous brother of the craft:

"No es culpa si de los Moros  
los valientes hechos cantan.  
pues tanto mas resplandecen  
nuestras celebres hazafias;  
que el encarecer los hechos  
del vencido en la batalla,  
engrandece al vencedor,  
aunque no hablen de el palabra."

Duran, *Romancero de Romanos Moriscos* (Madrid, 1828), p. 227.

withstanding their political aversion to the Saracens, conceded to them a degree of respect, which subsided into feelings of a very different complexion as they themselves rose in the scale of civilization. This sentiment of respect tempered the ferocity of a warfare which, although sufficiently disastrous in its details, affords examples of a generous courtesy that would do honour to the politest ages of Europe.<sup>19</sup> The Spanish Arabs were accomplished in all knightly exercises, and their natural fondness for magnificence, which shed a lustre over the rugged features of chivalry, easily communicated itself to the Christian cavaliers. In the intervals of peace, these latter frequented the courts of the Moorish princes, and mingled with their adversaries in the comparatively peaceful pleasures of the tourney, as in war they vied with them in feats of Quixotic gallantry.<sup>20</sup>

The nature of this warfare between two nations, in-

<sup>19</sup> When the empress queen of Alfonso VII. was besieged in the castle of Azeca, in 1139, she reproached the Moslem cavaliers for their want of courtesy and courage in attacking a fortress defended by a female. They acknowledged the justice of the rebuke, and only requested that she would condescend to show herself to them from her palace; when the Moorish chivalry, after paying their obeisance to her in the most respectful manner, instantly raised the siege, and departed. (Ferrerias, *Histoire générale d'Espagne*, traduite par d'Ifermilly (Paris, 1742—51), tom. iii. p. 410.) It was a frequent occurrence to restore a noble captive to liberty without ransom, and even with costly presents. Thus Alfonso XI. sent back to their father two daughters of a Moorish prince, who formed part of the spoils of the battle of Tarifa. (Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 32.) When this same Castilian sovereign, after a career of almost uninterrupted victory over the Moslems, died of

the plague before Gibraltar, in 1350, the knights of Granada put on mourning for him, saying that "he was a noble prince and one that knew how to honour his enemies as well as his friends." Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 149.

<sup>20</sup> One of the most extraordinary achievements in this way was that of the grand master of Alcantara, in 1394, who, after ineffectually challenging the king of Granada to meet him in single combat, or with a force double that of his own, marched boldly up to the gates of his capital, where he was assailed by such an overwhelming host that he with all his little band perished on the field. (Mariana, *Hist. de España*, lib. 19, cap. 3.) It was over this worthy compeer of Don Quixote that the epitaph was inscribed, "Here lies one who never knew fear," which led Charles V. to remark to one of his courtiers that "the good knight could never have tried to snuff a candle with his fingers."

habitants of the same country, yet so dissimilar in their religious and social institutions as to be almost the natural enemies of each other, was extremely favourable to the exhibition of the characteristic virtues of chivalry. The contiguity of the hostile parties afforded abundant opportunities for personal rencounter and bold romantic enterprise. Each nation had its regular military associations, who swore to devote their lives to the service of God and their country, in perpetual war against the *infidel*.<sup>21</sup> The Spanish knight became the true hero of romance, wandering over his own land, and even into the remotest climes, in quest of adventures; and, as late as the fifteenth century, we find him in the courts of England and Burgundy, doing battle in honour of his mistress, and challenging general admiration by his uncommon personal intrepidity.<sup>22</sup> This

<sup>21</sup> This singular fact, of the existence of an Arabic military order, is recorded by Conde. (*Domination de los Arabes*, tom. i. p. 619, note.) The brethren were distinguished for the simplicity of their attire, and their austere and frugal habits. They were stationed on the Moorish marches, and were bound by a vow of perpetual war against the Christian infidel. As their existence is traced as far back as 1030, they may possibly have suggested the organization of similar institutions in Christendom, which they preceded by a century at least. The loyal historians of the Spanish military orders, it is true, would carry that of St. Jago as far back as the time of Ramiro I., in the ninth century (*Caro de Torres, Historia de las Ordenes militares de Santiago, Calatrava y Alcantara* (Madrid, 1629), fol. 2.—*Rades y Andrada, Crónica de las tres Ordenes y Cavallerias* (Toledo, 1572), fol. 4); but less prejudiced critics, as Zurita and Mariana, are content with dating it from the papal bull of Alexander III., 1175.

<sup>22</sup> In one of the Paston letters we find the notice of a Spanish

knight appearing at the court of Henry VI., “wyth a Korcheff of Plesaunce iwrapped aboute hys arme, the gwyche Knight,” says the writor, “wyl ronne a cours wyth a sharpe spere from his sou’eyn lady sake.” (Fenn, *Original Letters* (1787), vol. i. p. 6.) The practice of using sharp spears, instead of the guarded and blunted weapons usual in the tournament, seems to have been affected by the chivalrous nobles of Castile; many of whom lost their lives from this circumstance, in the splendid tourney given in honour of the nuptials of Blanche of Navarre and Henry, son of John II. (*Crónica de D. Juan II.* (Valencia, 1779), p. 411.) Monstrelet records the adventures of a Spanish cavalier, who “travelled all the way to the court of Burgundy to seek honour and reverence” by his feats of arms. His antagonist was the lord of Chargny; on the second day they fought with battle-axes, and “the Castilian attracted general admiration by his uncommon daring in fighting with his visor up.” *Chroniques* (Paris, 1595), tom. ii. p. 109.

romantic spirit lingered in Castile long after the age of chivalry had become extinct in other parts of Europe, continuing to nourish itself on those illusions of fancy which were at length dispelled by the caustic satire of Cervantes.

Thus patriotism, religious loyalty, and a proud sense of independence, founded on the consciousness of owing their possessions to their personal valour, became characteristic traits of the Castilians previously to the sixteenth century, when the oppressive policy and fanaticism of the Austrian dynasty contrived to throw into the shade these generous virtues. Glimpses of them, however, might long be discerned in the haughty bearing of the Castilian noble, and in that erect, high-minded peasantry, whom oppression has not yet been able wholly to subdue.<sup>23</sup>

To the extraordinary position in which the nation was placed may also be referred the liberal forms of its political institutions, as well as a more early development of them than took place in other countries of Europe. From the exposure of the Castilian towns to the predatory incursions of the Arabs, it became necessary not only that they should be strongly fortified, but that every citizen should be trained to bear arms in their defence. An immense increase of consequence was given to the burgesses, who thus constituted the most effective part of the national militia. To this circumstance, as well as to the policy of inviting the settlement of frontier places by the grant of extraordinary privileges to the inhabitants, is to be imputed the early date, as well as liberal character, of the charters of community in Castile and Leon.<sup>24</sup> These, although

<sup>23</sup> The Venetian ambassador, Navagiero, speaking of the manners of the Castilian nobles in Charles V.'s time, remarks, somewhat bluntly, that, "if their power were equal to their pride, the whole world would not be able to withstand them." *Viaggio fatto in Spagna et in Francia* (Vinegia, 1563), fol. 10.

<sup>24</sup> The most ancient of these regular charters of incorporation, now extant, was granted by Alfonso V., in 1020, to the city of Leon and its territory. (Marina rejects those of an earlier date, adduced by Asso and Manuel and other writers. *Ensayo histórico-crítico sobre la antigua Legislacion de Castilla* (Madrid, 1808), pp. 80—



varying a good deal in their details, generally conceded to the citizens the right of electing their own magistrates for the regulation of municipal affairs. Judges were appointed by this body for the administration of civil and criminal law, subject to an appeal to the royal tribunal. No person could be affected in life or property except by a decision of this municipal court; and no cause, while pending before it, could be evoked thence into the superior tribunal. In order to secure the barriers of justice more effectually against the violence of power, so often superior to law in an imperfect state of society, it was provided, in many of the charters, that no nobles should be permitted to acquire real property within the limits of the community; that no fortress or palace should be erected by them there; that such as might reside within its territory should be subject to its jurisdiction; and that any violence offered by them to its inhabitants might be forcibly resisted with impunity. Ample and inalienable funds were provided for the maintenance of the municipal functionaries, and for other public expenses. A large extent of circumjacent country, embracing frequently many towns and villages, was annexed to each city, with the right of jurisdiction over it.

82.) It preceded, by a long interval, those granted to the burghesses in other parts of Europe, with the exception, perhaps, of Italy; where several of the cities, as Milan, Pavia, and Pisa, seem early in the eleventh century to have exercised some of the functions of independent states. But the extent of municipal immunities conceded to, or rather assumed by, the Italian cities at this early period, is very equivocal; for their indefatigable antiquary confesses that all, or nearly all, their archives previous to the time of Frederick I. (the latter part of the twelfth century) had perished amid their frequent civil convulsions. (See the subject in detail, in Muratori, *Dissertazioni sopra le Au-*

*tichità Italiane* (Napoli, 1752), dissert. 45.) Acts of enfranchisement became frequent in Spain during the eleventh century. Several of these are preserved, and exhibit, with sufficient precision, the nature of the privileges accorded to the inhabitants. Robertson, who wrote when the constitutional antiquities of Castile had been but slightly investigated, would seem, therefore, to have little authority for deriving the establishment of communities from Italy, and still less for tracing their progress through France and Germany to Spain. See his *History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles V.* (London, 1796), vol. i. pp. 29, 30.

All arbitrary tallages were commuted for a certain fixed and moderate rent. An officer was appointed by the crown to reside within each community, whose province it was to superintend the collection of this tribute, to maintain public order, and to be associated with the magistrates of each city in the command of the forces it was bound to contribute towards the national defence. Thus, while the inhabitants of the great towns in other parts of Europe were languishing in feudal servitude, the members of the Castilian corporations, living under the protection of their own laws and magistrates in time of peace, and commanded by their own officers in war, were in full enjoyment of all the essential rights and privileges of freemen.<sup>25</sup>

It is true that they were often convulsed by intestine feuds; that the laws were often loosely administered by incompetent judges; and that the exercise of so many important prerogatives of independent states inspired them with feelings of independence, which led to mutual rivalry, and sometimes to open collision. But, with all this, long after similar immunities in the free cities of other countries, as Italy for example,<sup>26</sup> had been sacrificed to the violence of faction or the lust of power, those of the Castilian cities not only remained unimpaired, but seemed to acquire additional stability with age. This circumstance is chiefly imputable to the constancy of the national legislature, which, until the voice of liberty was stifled by a military despotism, was ever ready to interpose its protecting arm in defence of constitutional rights.

The earliest instance on record of popular representation

<sup>25</sup> For this account of the ancient polity of the Castilian cities, the reader is referred to Sempere, *Histoire des Cortès d'Espagne* (Bordeaux, 1815), and Marina's valuable works, *Ensayo histórico-crítico sobre la antigua Legislacion de Castilla* (nos. 160—196), and *Teoría de las Cortes* (Madrid, 1813, part. 2, cap. 21—23), where the meagre out-

line given above is filled up with copious illustrations.

<sup>26</sup> The independence of the Lombard cities had been sacrificed, according to the admission of their enthusiastic historian, about the middle of the thirteenth century. Sismondi, *Histoire des Républiques Italiennes du Moyen-Age* (Paris, 1818), ch. 20.

in Castile occurred at Burgos, in 1169;<sup>27</sup> nearly a century antecedent to the celebrated Leicester parliament. Each city had but one vote, whatever might be the number of its representatives. A much greater irregularity, in regard to the number of cities required to send deputies to cortes on different occasions, prevailed in Castile, than ever existed in England;<sup>28</sup> though, previously to the fifteenth century, this does not seem to have proceeded from any design of infringing on the liberties of the people. The nomination of these was originally vested in the householders at large, but was afterwards confined to the municipalities,—a most mischievous alteration, which subjected their election eventually to the corrupt influence of the crown.<sup>29</sup> They assembled in the same chamber with the higher orders of the nobility and clergy, but, on questions of moment, retired to deliberate by themselves.<sup>30</sup> After

<sup>27</sup> Or in 1160, according to the *Corónica general* (part. 4, fol. 344, 345), where the fact is mentioned. Mariana refers this celebration of cortes to 1170 (*Hist. de España*, lib. 11, cap. 2); but Ferreras, who often rectifies the chronological inaccuracies of his predecessor, fixes it in 1169. (*Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 484.) Neither of these authors notices the presence of the commons in this assembly; although the phrase used by the Chronicle, *los ciudadanos*, is perfectly unequivocal.

<sup>28</sup> Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo de celebrar Cortes en Aragon, Cataluña y Valencia* (Madrid, 1821), pp. 230, 231.—Whether the convocation of the third estate to the national councils proceeded from politic calculation in the sovereign, or was in a manner forced on him by the growing power and importance of the cities, it is now too late to inquire. It is nearly as difficult to settle on what principles the selection of cities to be represented depended. Marina asserts that every great town and community was entitled to a seat in the legis-

lature, from the time of receiving its municipal charter from the sovereign (*Teoría*, tom. i. p. 138); and Sempere agrees that this right became general, from the first, to all who chose to avail themselves of it. (*Histoire des Cortès*, p. 56.) The right, probably, was not much insisted on by the smaller and poorer places, which, from the charges it involved, felt it often, no doubt, less of a boon than a burden. This, we know, was the case in England.

<sup>29</sup> It was an evil of scarcely less magnitude, that contested elections were settled by the crown. (Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 231.) The latter practice, and, indeed, the former to a certain extent, is to be met with in English history.

<sup>30</sup> Marina leaves this point in some obscurity. (*Teoría*, tom. i. cap. 28.) Indeed, there seems to have been some irregularity in the parliamentary usages themselves. From minutes of a meeting of cortes at Toledo in 1538, too soon for any material innovation on the ancient practice, we find the three estates sitting in separate chambers, from

the transaction of other business, their own petitions were presented to the sovereign, and his assent gave them the validity of laws. The Castilian commons, by neglecting to make their money grants depend on corresponding concessions from the crown, relinquished that powerful check on its operations so beneficially exerted in the British parliament, but in vain contended for even there, till a much later period than that now under consideration. Whatever may have been the right of the nobility and clergy to attend in cortes, their sanction was not deemed essential to the validity of legislative acts; <sup>31</sup> for their presence was not even required in many assemblies of the nation which occurred in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. <sup>32</sup> The extraordinary power thus committed to the commons was, on the whole, unfavourable to their liberties. It deprived them of the sympathy and co-operation of the great orders of the state, whose authority alone could have enabled them to withstand the encroachments of arbitrary power, and who, in fact, did eventually desert them in their utmost need. <sup>33</sup>

But, notwithstanding these defects, the popular branch of the Castilian cortes, very soon after its admission into that body, assumed functions and exercised a degree of

the very commencement to the close of the session. See the account drawn up by the count of Coruña, apud Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, pp. 240 et seq.

<sup>31</sup> This, however, so contrary to the analogy of other European governments, is expressly contradicted by the declaration of the nobles at the cortes of Toledo in 1538: "*Oida esta respuesta se dijo, que pues S. M. habia dicho que no eran Córtes ni habia Brazos, no podian tratar cosa alguna, que ellos sin procuradores, y los procuradores sin ellos, no seria válido lo que hicieren.*" *Relacion del Conde de Coruña*, apud Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 247.

<sup>32</sup> This omission of the privileged

orders was almost uniform under Charles V. and his successors. But it would be unfair to seek for constitutional precedent in the usages of a government whose avowed policy was altogether subversive of the constitution.

<sup>33</sup> During the famous war of the *Comunidades*, under Charles V. For the preceding paragraph consult Marina (*Teoría*, part. 1, cap. 10, 20, 26, 29), and Capmany (*Práctica y Estilo*, pp. 220—250). The municipalities of Castile seem to have reposed but a very limited confidence in their delegates, whom they furnished with instructions to which they were bound to conform themselves literally. See Marina, *Teoría*, part. 1, cap. 23.

power on the whole superior to what it acquired in other European legislatures. It was soon recognized as a fundamental principle of the constitution, that no tax could be imposed without its consent;<sup>84</sup> and an express enactment to this effect was suffered to remain on the statute-book after it had become a dead letter, as if to remind the nation of the liberties it had lost.<sup>85</sup> The commons showed a wise solicitude in regard to the mode of collecting the public revenue, oftentimes more onerous to the subject than the tax itself. They watched carefully over its appropriation to its destined uses. They restrained a too prodigal expenditure, and ventured more than once to regulate the economy of the royal household.<sup>86</sup> They kept a vigilant eye on the conduct of public officers, as well as on the right administration of justice, and commissions were appointed at their suggestion for inquiring into its abuses. They entered into negotiation for alliances with foreign powers, and, by determining the amount of supplies for the maintenance of troops in time of war, preserved a salutary check over military operations.<sup>87</sup> The nomination

<sup>84</sup> The term "fundamental principle" is fully authorized by the existence of repeated enactments to this effect. Sempere, who admits the "usage," objects to the phrase "fundamental law," on the ground that these acts were specific, not general, in their character. *Histoire des Cortès*, p. 254.

<sup>85</sup> "Los Reyes en nuestros Reynos progenitores establecieron por leyes y ordenanças fechas en Cortes, que no se echassen, ni repartiessen ningunos pechos, seruicios, pedidos, ni monedas, ni otros tributos nuevos, especial, ni generalmente en todos nuestros Reynos, sin que primeramente sean llamados á Cortes los procuradores de todas las Ciudades, y villas de nuestros Reynos, y sean otorgados por los dichos procuradores que á las Cortes vinieren." (*Recopilacion de las Leyes* (Madrid, 1640), tom. ii. fol.

124.) This law, passed under Alfonso XI., was confirmed by John II., Henry III., and Charles V.

<sup>86</sup> In 1258, they presented a variety of petitions to the king in relation to his own personal expenditure, as well as that of his courtiers; requiring him to diminish the charges of his table, attire, etc., and, bluntly, to "bring his appetite within a more reasonable compass;" to all which he readily gave his assent. (Sempere y Guarinos, *Historia del Luxo y de las Leyes suntuarias de España* (Madrid, 1788), tom. i. pp. 91, 92.) The English reader is reminded of a very different result which attended a similar interposition of the commons in the time of Richard II., more than a century later.

<sup>87</sup> Marina claims also the right of the cortes to be consulted on questions of war and peace, of which

of regencies was subject to their approbation, and they defined the nature of the authority to be intrusted to them. Their consent was esteemed indispensable to the validity of a title to the crown, and this prerogative, or at least the image of it, has continued to survive the wreck of their ancient liberties.<sup>88</sup> Finally, they more than once set aside the testamentary provisions of the sovereigns in regard to the succession.<sup>89</sup>

Without going further into detail, enough has been said to show the high powers claimed by the commons previously to the fifteenth century, which, instead of being confined to ordinary subjects of legislation, seem, in some instances, to have reached to the executive duties of the administration. It would, indeed, show but little acquaintance with the social condition of the Middle Ages, to suppose that the practical exercise of these powers always corresponded with their theory. We trace repeated instances, it is true, in which they were claimed and successfully exerted; while, on the other hand, the multiplicity of remedial statutes proves too plainly how often the rights of the people were invaded by the violence of the privileged orders, or the more artful and systematic usurpations of the crown. But, far from being intimidated by such acts, the representatives in cortes were ever ready to stand forward as the intrepid advocates of constitutional freedom; and the unqualified boldness of their language on such occasions, and the consequent concessions of the sovereign, are satisfactory

he adduces several precedents. (*Teoria*, part. 2, cap. 19, 20.) Their interference in what is so generally held the peculiar province of the executive was perhaps encouraged by the sovereign, with the politic design of relieving himself of the responsibility of measures whose success must depend eventually on their support. Hallam notices a similar policy of the crown, under Edward III., in his view of the English constitution during the

Middle Ages. *View of the State of Europe during the Middle Ages* (London, 1819), vol. iii. chap. 8.

<sup>88</sup> The recognition of the title of the heir apparent, by a cortes convoked for that purpose, has continued to be observed in Castile down to the present time. *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 229.

<sup>89</sup> For the preceding notice of the cortes, see *Marina*, *Teoria*, part. 2, cap. 13, 19, 20, 21, 31, 35, 37, 38.

evidence of the real extent of their power, and show how cordially they must have been supported by public opinion.

It would be improper to pass by without notice an anomalous institution peculiar to Castile, which sought to secure the public tranquillity by means scarcely compatible themselves with civil subordination. I refer to the celebrated *Hermandad*, or Holy Brotherhood, as the association was sometimes called,—a name familiar to most readers in the lively fictions of Le Sage, though conveying there no very adequate idea of the extraordinary functions which it assumed at the period under review. Instead of a regularly organized police, it then consisted of a confederation of the principal cities, bound together by a solemn league and covenant for the defence of their liberties in seasons of civil anarchy. Its affairs were conducted by deputies, who assembled at stated intervals for this purpose, transacting their business under a common seal, enacting laws which they were careful to transmit to the nobles and even the sovereign himself, and enforcing their measures by an armed force. This wild kind of justice, so characteristic of an unsettled state of society, repeatedly received the legislative sanction ; and, however formidable such a popular engine may have appeared to the eye of the monarch, he was often led to countenance it by a sense of his own impotence, as well as of the overweening power of the nobles, against whom it was principally directed. Hence these associations, although the epithet may seem somewhat overstrained, have received the appellation of “cortes extraordinary.”<sup>40</sup>

\* So at least they are styled by Marina. See his account of these institutions (Teoría, part. 2, cap. 39); also Salazar de Mendoza (Monarquía, lib. 3, cap. 15, 16), and Sempere (Histoire des Cortès, chap. 12, 13). One hundred cities associated in the Hermandad of 1315. In that of 1295, were thirty-four. The knights and inferior nobility

frequently made part of the association. The articles of confederation are given by Risco, in his continuation of Florez (España sagrada (Madrid, 1775—1826), tom. xxxvi. p. 162). In one of these articles it is declared that if any noble shall deprive a member of the association of his property, and refuse restitution, his house shall be razed

With these immunities, the cities of Castile attained a degree of opulence and splendour unrivalled, unless in Italy,\* during the Middle Ages. At a very early period, indeed, their contact with the Arabs had familiarized the people with a better system of agriculture, and a dexterity in the mechanic arts unknown in other parts of Christendom.<sup>41</sup> On the occupation of a conquered town, we find it distributed into quarters or districts, appropriated to the several crafts, whose members were incorporated into guilds, under the regulation of magistrates and by-laws of their own appointment. Instead of the unworthy disrepute into which the more humble occupations have since fallen in Spain, they were fostered by a liberal patronage, and their professors in some instances elevated to the rank of knight-hood.<sup>42</sup> The excellent breed of sheep, which early became an object of legislative solicitude, furnished them with an important staple, which, together with the simpler manufactures and the various products of a prolific soil, formed the materials of a profitable commerce.<sup>43</sup> Augmentation

to the ground. (Art. 4.) In another, that if any one, by command of the king, shall attempt to collect an unlawful tax, he shall be put to death on the spot. Art. 9.

\* [The statement needs to be still further qualified. There could be no rivalry in point of wealth, between the Castilian cities and the centres of trade and manufacturing industry in Italy and Flanders.—ED.]

<sup>41</sup> See Sempere, *Historia del Luxo*, tom. i. p. 97.—Masdeu, *Hist. critica*, tom. xiii. nos. 90, 91.—Gold and silver, curiously wrought into plate, were exported in considerable quantities from Spain in the tenth and eleventh centuries. They were much used in the churches. The tiara of the pope was so richly incrustated with the precious metals, says Masdeu, as to receive the name of *Spanoclista*. The familiar use of these metals as ornaments

of dress is attested by the ancient poem of the “*Cid*.” See, in particular, the description of the costume of the Campeador; vv. 3099 et seq.

<sup>42</sup> Zúñiga, *Annales eclesiásticos y seculares de Sevilla* (Madrid, 1677), pp. 74, 75.—Sempere, *Historia del Luxo*, tom. i. p. 80.

<sup>43</sup> The historian of Seville describes that city, about the middle of the fifteenth century, as possessing a flourishing commerce, and a degree of opulence unexampled since the conquest. It was filled with an active population, employed in the various mechanic arts. Its domestic fabrics, as well as natural products of oil, wine, wool, etc., supplied a trade with France, Flanders, Italy, and England. (Zúñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 341.—See also Sempere, *Historia del Luxo*, p. 81, nota 2.) The ports of Biscay, which belonged to the



of wealth brought with it the usual appetite for expensive pleasures; and the popular diffusion of luxury in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries is attested by the fashionable invective of the satirist, and by the impotence of repeated sumptuary enactments.<sup>44</sup> Much of this superfluous wealth, however, was expended on the construction of useful public works. Cities, from which the nobles had once been so jealously excluded, came now to be their favourite residence.<sup>45</sup> But, while their sumptuous edifices

Castilian crown, were the marts of an extensive trade with the north, during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. This province entered into repeated treaties of commerce with France and England; and her factories were established at Bruges, the great emporium of commercial intercourse during this period between the north and south, before those of any other people in Europe, except the Germans. (*Diccionario geográfico-histórico de España*, por la Real Academia de la Historia (Madrid, 1802), tom. i. p. 333.)

The institution of the *mesta* is referred, says Laborde (*Itinéraire descriptif de l'Espagne* (Paris, 1827—1830), tom. iv. p. 47), to the middle of the fourteenth century, when the great plague, which devastated the country so sorely, left large depopulated tracts open to pasturage. This popular opinion is erroneous, since it engaged the attention of government and became the subject of legislation as anciently as 1273, under Alfonso the Wise. (See Asso y Manuel, *Instituciones*, Introd. p. 56.) Capmany, however, dates the great improvement in the breed of Spanish sheep from the year 1394, when Catharine of Lancaster brought with her, as a part of her dowry to the heir apparent of Castile, a flock of English merinos, distinguished at that time above those of every other country for the beauty and delicacy of their fleece. (*Memorias históricas sobre la Marina, Comercio y Artes de*

Barcelona (Madrid, 1779—1792), tom. iii. pp. 336, 337.) This acute writer, after a very careful examination of the subject, differing from the authorities before quoted, considers the raw material for manufacture, and the natural productions of the soil, to have constituted almost the only articles of export from Spain, until after the fifteenth century. (*Ibid.*, p. 338.) We will remark, in conclusion of this desultory note, that the term *merinos* is derived, by Conde, from *moedinos*, signifying “wandering;” the name of an Arabian tribe, who shifted their place of residence with the season. (*Hist. de los Arabes en España*, tom. i. p. 488, nota.) The derivation might startle any but a professed etymologist.

<sup>44</sup> See the original acts, cited by Sempere. (*Historia del Luxu, passim.*) The archpriest of Hita inveighs freely against the luxury, cupidity, and other fashionable sins of his age. (See Sanchez, *Poesías Castellanas*, tom. iv.)—The influence of Mammon appears to have been as supreme in the fourteenth century as at any later period.

“Sea un ome nescio, et rudo labrador,  
Los dineros le fassen fidalgo e sabidor,  
Quanto mas algo tiene, tanto es mas de valor,  
El que no ha dineros, non es de si señor.” Vv. 465 et seq.

<sup>45</sup> Marina, *Ensayo*, nos. 199, 297. —Zufiiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 341.

and splendid retinues dazzled the eyes of the peaceful burghers, their turbulent spirit was preparing the way for those dismal scenes of faction which convulsed the little commonwealths to their centre during the latter half of the fifteenth century.

The flourishing condition of the communities gave their representatives a proportional increase of importance in the assembly. The liberties of the people seemed to take deeper root in the midst of those political convulsions, so frequent in Castile, which unsettled the ancient prerogatives of the crown. Every new revolution was followed by new concessions on the part of the sovereign, and the popular authority continued to advance with a steady progress until the accession of Henry the Third of Trastamara, in 1393, when it may be said to have reached its zenith. A disputed title and a disastrous war compelled the father of this prince, John the First, to treat the commons with a deference unknown to his predecessors. We find four of their number admitted into his privy council, and six associated in the regency, to which he confided the government of the kingdom during his son's minority.<sup>46</sup> A remarkable fact which occurred in this reign, showing the important advances made by the commons in political estimation, was the substitution of the sons of burgesses for an equal number of those of the nobility, who were stipulated to be delivered as hostages for the fulfilment of a treaty with Portugal, in 1393.<sup>47</sup> There will be occasion to notice in the first chapter of this History, some of the circumstances which, contributing to undermine the power of the commons, prepared the way for the eventual subversion of the constitution.

<sup>46</sup> Marina, Teoría, part. 2, cap. 28.—Mariana, Hist. de España, lib. 18, cap. 15.—The admission of citizens into the king's council would have formed a most important epoch for the commons, had they not soon been replaced by jurists,

whose studies and sentiments inclined them less to the popular side than to that of prerogative.

<sup>47</sup> Mariana, Hist. de España, lib. 18, cap. 17.

The peculiar situation of Castile, which had been so favourable to popular rights, was eminently so to those of the aristocracy. The nobles, embarked with their sovereign in the same common enterprise of rescuing their ancient patrimony from its invaders, felt entitled to divide with him the spoils of victory. Issuing forth, at the head of their own retainers, from their strongholds or castles (the great number of which was originally implied in the name of the country),<sup>48</sup> they were continually enlarging the circuit of their territories, with no other assistance than that of their own good swords.<sup>49</sup> This independent mode of effecting their conquests would appear unfavourable to the introduction of the feudal system, which, although its existence in Castile is clearly ascertained by positive law as well as usage, never prevailed to anything like the same extent as it did in the sister kingdom of Aragon, and other parts of Europe.<sup>50</sup>

\* *Castilla*. See Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. i. p. 108.—Livy mentions the great number of these towers in Spain in his day: “Multas et locis altis positas turres Hispania habet.” (Lib. 22, cap. 19.)—A castle was emblazoned on the escutcheon of Castile, as far back as the reign of Urraca, in the beginning of the twelfth century, according to Salazar de Mendoza (*Monarquía*, tom. i. p. 142), although Garibay discerns no vestige of these arms on any instrument of a much older date than the beginning of the thirteenth century. *Compendio*, lib. 12, cap. 32.

\* “Hizo guerra a los Moros,  
Ganando sus fortalezas  
Y sus villas.  
Y en las lides que venció  
Caballeros y caballos  
Se perdiéron,  
Y en este oficio ganó  
Las rentas y los vasallos  
Que le diéron.”

*Coplas de Manrique*, cople 31.

\* Asso and Manuel derive the

introduction of fiefs into Castile, from Catalonia. (*Instituciones*, p. 96.) The twenty-sixth title, part. 4, of Alfonso X.'s code (*Siete Partidas*) treats exclusively of them. (*De los Feudos*.) The laws 2, 4, 5, are expressly devoted to a brief exposition of the nature of a fief, the ceremonies of investiture, and the reciprocal obligations of lord and vassal. Those of the latter consisted in keeping his lord's counsel, maintaining his interest, and aiding him in war. With all this, there are anomalies in this code, and still more in the usages of the country, not easy to explain on the usual principles of the feudal relation; a circumstance which has led to much discrepancy of opinion on the subject in political writers, as well as to some inconsistency. Sempere, who entertains no doubt of the establishment of feudal institutions in Castile, tells us that “the nobles, after the conquest, succeeded in obtaining an exemption from military service,”—one of the most conspicuous and essential of all

The higher nobility, or *ricos hombres*, were exempted from general taxation; and the occasional attempt to infringe on this privilege, in seasons of great public emergency, was uniformly repelled by this jealous body.<sup>51</sup> They could not be imprisoned for debt, nor be subjected to torture, so repeatedly sanctioned in other cases by the municipal law of Castile. They had the right of deciding their private feuds by an appeal to arms; a right of which they liberally availed themselves.<sup>52</sup> They also claimed the privilege, when aggrieved, of denaturalizing themselves, or, in other words, of publicly renouncing their allegiance to their sovereign, and of enlisting under the banners of his enemy.<sup>53</sup> The number of petty states which swarmed over the Peninsula afforded ample opportunity for the exercise of this disorganizing prerogative. The Laras are particularly noticed by Mariana as having a "great relish for rebellion," and the Castros as being much in the habit of going over to the Moors.<sup>54</sup> They assumed the license of arraying themselves in armed confederacy against the monarch on any occasion of popular disgust, and they solemnized the act by the most imposing ceremonials of religion.<sup>55</sup> Their rights of jurisdiction, derived to them, it would seem, originally from royal grant,<sup>56</sup> were in a great measure defaced by the liberal charters of incorporation which, in imitation of the sovereign, they conceded to their vassals, as well as by the gradual encroachment of the royal judicatures.<sup>57</sup> In virtue of their birth they

the feudal relations. *Histoire des Cortès*, pp. 30, 72, 249.

<sup>51</sup> Asso y Manuel, *Instituciones*, p. 26.—Sempere, *Histoire des Cortès*, chap. 4.—The incensed nobles quitted the cortes in disgust, and threatened to vindicate their rights by arms, on one such occasion, 1176. Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. i. p. 644. See also tom. ii. p. 176.

<sup>52</sup> *Iidem auctores, ubi supra*.—Prieto y Sotelo, *Historia del Derecho real de España* (Madrid, 1738), lib.

2, cap. 23; lib. 3, cap. 8.

<sup>53</sup> *Siete Partidas* (ed. de la Real Acad., Madrid, 1807), part. 4, tit. 25, ley 11. On such occasions they sent him a formal defiance by their king-at-arms. Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. i. pp. 768, 912.

<sup>54</sup> *Ibid.*, tom. i. pp. 707, 713.

<sup>55</sup> The forms of this solemnity may be found in Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. i. p. 907.

<sup>56</sup> Marina, *Ensayo*, p. 128.

<sup>57</sup> John I., in 1390, authorized appeals from the seignorial tribunals

monopolized all the higher offices of state, as those of constable and admiral of Castile, *adelantados* or governors of the provinces, cities, etc.<sup>58</sup> They secured to themselves the grandmasterships of the military orders, which placed at their disposal an immense amount of revenue and patronage. Finally, they entered into the royal or privy council, and formed a constituent portion of the national legislature.

These important prerogatives were of course favourable to the accumulation of great wealth. Their estates were scattered over every part of the kingdom, and, unlike the grandees of Spain at the present day,<sup>59</sup> they resided on them in person, maintaining the state of petty sovereigns, and surrounded by a numerous retinue, who served the purposes of a pageant in time of peace and an efficient military force in war. The demesnes of John, lord of Biscay, confiscated by Alfonso the Eleventh to the use of the crown, in 1327, amounted to more than eighty towns and castles.<sup>60</sup> The "good constable" Davalos, in the time of Henry the Third, could ride through his own estates all the way from Seville to Compostella, almost the two extremities of the kingdom.<sup>61</sup> Alvaro de Luna, the powerful favourite of John the Second, could muster twenty thousand vassals.<sup>62</sup> A contemporary, who gives a catalogue of the annual rents of the principal Castilian nobility at the close of the fifteenth or beginning of the following century, computes several at fifty and sixty thousand ducats a year,<sup>63</sup>

to those of the crown. *Ibid.*, tom. ii. p. 179.

<sup>58</sup> The nature of these dignities is explained in Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. i. pp. 155, 166, 203.

<sup>59</sup> From the scarcity of these baronial residences, some fanciful etymologists have derived the familiar saying of "*châteaux en Espagne*." See Bourgoanne, *Travels in Spain*, tom. ii. chap. 12.

<sup>60</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*,

tom. i. p. 910.

<sup>61</sup> *Crónica de Don Alvaro de Luna* (ed. de la Acad., Madrid, 1784), App. p. 465.

<sup>62</sup> Guzman, *Generaciones y Semblanzas* (Madrid, 1775), cap. 84.—His annual revenue is computed by Perez de Guzman at 100,000 doblas of gold; a sum equivalent to 856,000 dollars at the present day.

<sup>63</sup> The former of these two sums is equivalent to \$438,875, or

an immense income, if we take into consideration the value of money in that age. The same writer estimates their united revenues as equal to one-third of those in the whole kingdom.<sup>64</sup>

These ambitious nobles did not consume their fortunes or their energies in a life of effeminate luxury. From their earliest boyhood they were accustomed to serve in the ranks against the infidel,<sup>65</sup> and their whole subsequent lives were occupied either with war or with those martial exercises which reflect the image of it. Looking back with pride to their ancient Gothic descent, and to those times when they had stood forward as the peers, the electors of their sovereign, they could ill brook the slightest indignity at his hand.<sup>66</sup> With these haughty feelings and martial habits,

£91,474 sterling; and the latter to \$526,650, or £109,716, nearly. I have been guided, in this History, in the reduction of sums, by a dissertation of Clemencin, in the sixth volume of the *Memorias de la Real Academia de la Historia* (Madrid, 1821, pp. 507—566). That treatise is very elaborate and ample, and brings under view all the different coins of Ferdinand and Isabella's time, settling their specific value with great accuracy. The calculation is attended with considerable difficulty, owing to the depreciation of the value of the precious metals, and the repeated adulteration of the *real*. In his tables, at the end, he exhibits the commercial value of the different denominations, ascertained by the quantity of wheat (as sure a standard as any) which they would buy at that day. Taking the average of values, which varied considerably in different years of Ferdinand and Isabella, it appears that the ducat, reduced to our own currency, will be equal to about eight dollars and seventy-seven cents, and the *dobla* to eight dollars and fifty-six cents.

"The ample revenues of the Spanish grandees of the present time, instead of being lavished on

a band of military retainers, as of yore, are sometimes dispensed in the more peaceful hospitality of supporting an almost equally formidable host of needy relations and dependents. According to Bourgoanne (*Travels in Spain*, vol. i. chap. 4), no less than three thousand of these gentry were maintained on the estates of the duke of Arcos, who died in 1780.

"Mendoza records the circumstance of the head of the family of Ponce de Leon (a descendant of the celebrated marquis of Cadiz) carrying his son, then thirteen years old, with him into battle; "an ancient usage," he says, "in that noble house." (*Guerra de Granada* (Valencia, 1776), p. 318.) The only son of Alfonso VI. was slain, fighting manfully in the ranks, at the battle of Ucles, in 1109, when only eleven years of age. Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. i. p. 565.

"The northern provinces, the theatre of this primitive independence, have always been consecrated by this very circumstance, in the eyes of a Spaniard. "The proudest lord," says Navagiero, "feels it an honour to trace his pedigree to this quarter." (*Viaggio*, fol. 44.) The same feeling has continued, and the

and this enormous assumption of power, it may readily be conceived that they would not suffer the anarchical provisions of the constitution, which seemed to concede an almost unlimited license of rebellion, to remain a dead letter. Accordingly, we find them perpetually convulsing the kingdom with their schemes of selfish aggrandizement. The petitions of the commons are filled with remonstrances on their various oppressions and the evils resulting from their long, desolating feuds. So that, notwithstanding the liberal forms of its constitution, there was probably no country in Europe, during the Middle Ages, so sorely afflicted with the vices of intestine anarchy as Castile. These were still further aggravated by the improvident donations of the monarch to the aristocracy, in the vain hope of conciliating their attachment, but which swelled their already overgrown power to such a height that by the middle of the fifteenth century it not only overshadowed that of the throne, but threatened to subvert the liberties of the state.

Their self-confidence, however, proved eventually their ruin. They disdained a co-operation with the lower orders in defence of their privileges, and relied too unhesitatingly on their power as a body to feel jealous of their exclusion from the national legislature, where alone they could have made an effectual stand against the usurpations of the crown. The course of this work will bring under review the dexterous policy by which the crown contrived to strip the aristocracy of its substantial privileges, and prepared the way for the period when it should retain possession only of a few barren though ostentatious dignities.<sup>67</sup>

meanest native of Biscay or the Asturias, at the present day, claims to be noble; a pretension which often contrasts ridiculously enough with the humble character of his occupation, and has furnished many a pleasant anecdote to travellers.

<sup>67</sup> An elaborate dissertation, by the advocate Don Alonso Carillo, on the pre-eminence and privileges of the Castilian grandee, is appended to Salazar de Mendoza's *Origen de las Dignidades seculares de Castilla* (Madrid, 1794). The

The inferior orders of nobility, the *hidalgos* (whose dignity, like that of the *ricos hombres*, would seem, as their name imports, to have been originally founded on wealth),<sup>68</sup> and the *cavalleros*, or knights, enjoyed many of the immunities of the higher class, especially that of exemption from taxation.<sup>69</sup> Knighthood appears to have been regarded with especial favour by the law of Castile. Its ample privileges and its duties are defined with a precision, and in a spirit of romance, that might have served for the court of King Arthur.<sup>70</sup> Spain was indeed the land of chivalry. The respect for the sex, which had descended from the Visigoths,<sup>71</sup> was mingled with the religious enthusiasm which had been kindled in the long wars with the infidel. The apotheosis of chivalry, in the person of their apostle and patron, St. James,<sup>72</sup> contributed still further to

most prized of these appears to be that of keeping the head covered in the presence of the sovereign; "prerogativa tan illustre," says the writer, "que ella sola imprime el principal caracter de la Grandeza. Y considerada por sus efectos admirables, ocupa dignamente el primero lugar." (Discurso 3.) The sentimental citizen Bourgoanne finds it necessary to apologize to his republican brethren for noticing these "important trifles." *Travels in Spain*, vol. i. chap. 4.

"Los llamaron fijosdalgo, que muestra a tanto como fijos de bien." (Siete Partidas, part. 2, tit. 21.) "Por hidalgos se entienden los hombres escogidos de buenos lugares é con algo." Asso y Manuel, *Instituciones*, pp. 33, 34.

"Recopilacion de las Leyes, lib. 6, tit. 1, leyes 2, 9; tit. 2, leyes, 3, 4, 10; tit. 14, leyes 14, 19.—They were obliged to contribute to the repair of fortifications and public works, although, as the statute expresses it, "tengan privilegios para que sean essentos de todos pechos."

"The knight was to array himself in light and cheerful vestments,

and, in the cities and public places, his person was to be enveloped in a long and flowing mantle, in order to impose greater reverence on the people. His good steed was to be distinguished by the beauty and richness of its caparisons. He was to live abstemiously, indulging himself in none of the effeminate delights of couch or banquet. During a repast, his mind was to be refreshed with the recital, from history, of deeds of ancient heroism; and in the fight he was commanded to invoke the name of his mistress, that it might infuse new ardour into his soul, and preserve him from the commission of unknighly actions. See *Siete Partidas*, part. 2, tit. 21, which is taken up with defining the obligations of chivalry.

"See *Fuero Juzgo*, lib. 3, which is devoted almost exclusively to the sex. Montesquieu discerns in the jealous surveillance which the Visigoths maintained over the honour of their women, so close an analogy with oriental usages, as must have greatly facilitated the conquest of the country by the Arabians. *Esprit des Loix*, liv. 14, chap. 14.

"Warton's expression. See his



this exaltation of sentiment, which was maintained by the various military orders, who devoted themselves, in the bold language of the age, to the service "of God and the ladies." So that the Spaniard may be said to have put in action what, in other countries, passed for the extravagancies of the minstrel. An example of this occurs in the fifteenth century, when a passage of arms was defended at Orbigo, not far from the shrine of Compostella, by a Castilian knight, named Suero de Quiñones, and his nine companions, against all comers, in the presence of John the Second and his court. Its object was to release the knight from the obligation, imposed on him by his mistress, of publicly wearing an iron collar round his neck every Thursday. The jousts continued for thirty days, and the doughty champions fought without shield or target, with weapons bearing points of Milan steel. Six hundred and twenty-seven encounters took place, and one hundred and sixty-six lances were broken, when the emprise was declared to be fairly achieved. The whole affair is narrated with becoming gravity by an eye-witness, and the reader may fancy himself perusing the adventures of a Launcelot or an Amadis.<sup>73</sup>

The influence of the ecclesiastics in Spain may be traced back to the age of the Visigoths, when they controlled the affairs of the state in the great national councils of Toledo. This influence was maintained by the extraordinary position of the nation after the conquest. The holy warfare in which it was embarked seemed to require the co-operation of the clergy, to propitiate Heaven in its behalf, to interpret its mysterious omens, and to move all the machinery of miracles, by which the imagination is so powerfully affected in a rude and superstitious age. They even condescended, in imitation of their patron saint, to mingle in the ranks,

History of English Poetry (London, 1824), vol. i. p. 245.

<sup>73</sup> See the "Passo honroso" ap-

pended to the *Cronica de Alvaro de Luna*.

and, with the crucifix in their hands, to lead the soldiers on to battle. Examples of these militant prelates are to be found in Spain so late as the sixteenth century.<sup>74</sup>

But, while the native ecclesiastics obtained such complete ascendancy over the popular mind, the Roman See could boast of less influence in Spain than in any other country in Europe. The Gothic liturgy was alone received as canonical until the eleventh century;<sup>75</sup> and, until the twelfth, the sovereign held the right of jurisdiction over all ecclesiastical causes, and of collating to benefices, or at least of confirming or annulling the election of the chapters. The code of Alfonso the Tenth, however, which borrowed its principles of jurisprudence from the civil and canon law, completed a revolution already begun, and transferred these important prerogatives to the pope, who now succeeded in establishing a usurpation over ecclesiastical rights in Castile, similar to that which had been before effected in other parts of Christendom. Some of these abuses, as that of the nomination of foreigners to benefices, were carried to such an impudent height as repeatedly provoked the indignant remonstrances of the cortes. The ecclesiastics, eager to indemnify themselves for what they had sacrificed to Rome, were more than ever solicitous to assert their independence of the royal jurisdiction. They particularly insisted on their immunity from taxation, and were even reluctant to divide with the laity the necessary burdens of a war which, from

<sup>74</sup> The present narrative will introduce the reader to more than one belligerent prelate, who filled the very highest post in the Spanish and, I may say, the Christian church, next to the papacy. (See Alvaro Gomez, *De Rebus gestis a Francisco Ximénio Cisnerio* (Compluti, 1569), fol. 110 et seq.) The practice, indeed, was familiar in other countries, as well as Spain, at this late period. In the bloody

battle of Ravenna, in 1512, two cardinal legates, one of them the future Leo X., fought on opposite sides. Paolo Giovio, *Vita Leonis X.*, apud "*Vitæ Illustrium Virorum*" (Basilæ, 1578), lib. 2.

<sup>75</sup> The contest for supremacy between the Mozarabic ritual and the Roman is familiar to the reader, in the curious narrative extracted by Robertson from Mariana, *Hist. de España*, lib. 9, cap. 18.

its sacred character, would seem to have had imperative claims on them.<sup>76</sup>

Notwithstanding the immediate dependence thus established on the head of the church by the legislation of Alfonso the Tenth, the general immunities secured by it to the ecclesiastics operated as a powerful bounty on their increase; and the mendicant orders in particular, that spiritual militia of the popes, were multiplied over the country to an alarming extent. Many of their members were not only incompetent to the duties of their profession, being without the least tincture of liberal culture, but fixed a deep stain on it by the careless laxity of their morals. Open concubinage was familiarly practised by the clergy, as well as laity, of the period, and, so far from being reprobated by the law of the land, seems anciently to have been countenanced by it.<sup>77</sup> This moral insensibility may probably be referred to the contagious example of their Mahometan neighbours; but, from whatever source derived, the practice was indulged to such a shameless extent that, as the nation advanced in refinement, in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, it became the subject of frequent legislative enactments, in which the concubines of the clergy are described as causing general scandal by their lawless effrontery and ostentatious magnificence of apparel.<sup>78</sup>

Notwithstanding this prevalent licentiousness of the Spanish ecclesiastics, their influence became every day more widely extended, while this ascendancy, for which they were particularly indebted in that rude age to their superior learning and capacity, was perpetuated by their

<sup>76</sup> Siete Partidas, part. 1, tit. 6.—Florez, España sagrada, tom. xx. p. 16.—The Jesuit Mariana appears to grudge this appropriation of the "sacred revenues of the Church" to defray the expenses of the holy war against the Saracen. (Hist. de España, tom. i. p. 177.) See also the Ensayo (nos. 322—364), where

VOL. I

Marina has analyzed and discussed the general import of the first of the Partidas.

<sup>77</sup> Marina, Ensayo, ubisupra, and nos. 220 et seq.

<sup>78</sup> See the original acts, quoted by Sempere in his Historia del Luxo, tom. i. pp. 168 et seq.

enormous acquisitions of wealth. Scarcely a town was reconquered from the Moors without a considerable portion of its territory being appropriated to the support of some ancient or the foundation of some new religious establishment. These were the common reservoir into which flowed the copious streams of private as well as royal bounty; and, when the consequences of these alienations in mortmain came to be visible in the impoverishment of the public revenue, every attempt at legislative interference was in a great measure defeated by the piety or superstition of the age. The abbess of the monastery of Huelgas, which was situated within the precincts of Burgos, and contained within its walls one hundred and fifty nuns of the noblest families in Castile, exercised jurisdiction over fourteen capital towns and more than fifty smaller places; and she was accounted inferior only to the queen in dignity.<sup>79</sup> The archbishop of Toledo, by virtue of his office primate of Spain and grand chancellor of Castile, was esteemed, after the pope, the highest ecclesiastical dignitary in Christendom. His revenues, at the close of the fifteenth century, exceeded eighty thousand ducats; while the gross amount of those of the subordinate beneficiaries of his church rose to one hundred and eighty thousand. He could muster a greater number of vassals than any other subject in the kingdom, and held jurisdiction over fifteen large and populous towns, besides a great number of inferior places.<sup>80</sup>

These princely funds, when intrusted to pious prelates,

<sup>79</sup> Lucio Marineo Siculo, *Cosas memorables de España* (Alcalá de Henares, 1539), fol. 16.

<sup>80</sup> Navagiero, *Viaggio*, fol. 9.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 12.—Laborde reckons the revenues of this prelate, in his tables, at 12,000,000 reals, or 600,000 dollars. (*Itinéraire*, tom. vi. p. 9.)—The estimate is grossly exaggerated for the present day. The rents of this

see, like those of every other in the kingdom, have been grievously clipped in the late political troubles. They are stated by the intelligent author of "A Year in Spain," on the authority of the clergy of the diocese, at only one-third of the above sum; an estimate confirmed by Mr. Inglis, who computes them at £40,000. Spain in 1830, vol. i. ch. 11.

were munificently dispensed in useful public works, and especially in the foundation of eleemosynary institutions, with which every great city in Castile was liberally supplied.<sup>81</sup> But in the hands of worldly men they were perverted from these noble uses to the gratification of personal vanity or the disorganizing schemes of faction. The moral perceptions of the people, in the mean time, were confused by the visible demeanour of the hierarchy, so repugnant to the natural conceptions of religious duty. They learned to attach an exclusive value to external rites, to the forms rather than the spirit of Christianity; estimating the piety of men by their speculative opinions rather than their practical conduct. The ancient Spaniards, notwithstanding their prevalent superstition, were untinctured with the fiercer religious bigotry of later times; and the uncharitable temper of their priests, occasionally disclosed in the heats of religious war, was controlled by public opinion, which accorded a high degree of respect to the intellectual as well as political superiority of the Arabs. But the time was now coming when these ancient barriers were to be broken down; when a difference of religious sentiment was to dissolve all the ties of human brotherhood; when uniformity of faith was to be purchased by the sacrifice of any rights, even those of intellectual freedom; when, in fine, the Christian and the Mussulman, the oppressor and the oppressed, were to be alike bowed down under the strong arm of ecclesiastical tyranny. The means by which a revolution so disastrous to Spain was effected, as well as the incipient stages of its progress, are topics that fall within the scope of the present history.

From the preceding survey of the constitutional privileges enjoyed by the different orders of the Castilian monarchy previous to the fifteenth century, it is evident

<sup>81</sup> Modern travellers, who condemn without reserve the corruption of the inferior clergy, bear

uniform testimony to the exemplary piety and munificent charities of the higher dignitaries of the church.

that the royal authority must have been circumscribed within very narrow limits. The numerous states into which the great Gothic empire was broken after the conquest were individually too insignificant to confer on their respective sovereigns the possession of extensive power, or even to authorize the assumption of that state by which it is supported in the eyes of the vulgar. When some more fortunate prince, by conquest or alliance, had enlarged the circle of his dominions, and thus in some measure remedied the evil, it was sure to recur upon his death, by the subdivision of his estates among his children. This mischievous practice was even countenanced by public opinion; for the different districts of the country, in their habitual independence of each other, acquired an exclusiveness of feeling which made it difficult for them ever cordially to coalesce; and traces of this early antipathy are to be discerned in the mutual jealousies and local peculiarities which still distinguish the different sections of the Peninsula, after their consolidation into one monarchy for more than three centuries.

The election to the crown, although no longer vested in the hands of the national assembly, as with the Visigoths, was yet subject to its approbation. The title of the heir apparent was formally recognized by a cortes convoked for the purpose; and, on the decease of his parent, the new sovereign again convened the estates to receive their oath of allegiance, which they cautiously withheld until he had first sworn to preserve inviolate the liberties of the constitution. Nor was this a merely nominal privilege, as was evinced on more than one memorable occasion.<sup>82</sup>

We have seen, in our review of the popular branch of the government, how closely its authority pressed even on the executive functions of the administration. The monarch was still further controlled, in this department,

<sup>82</sup> Marina, Teoría, part. 2, cap. 2, 5, 6.—A remarkable instance of this occurred as late as the accession of Charles V.

by his royal or privy council, consisting of the chief nobility and great officers of state, to which, in later times, a deputation of the commons was sometimes added.<sup>83</sup> This body, together with the king, had cognizance of the most important public transactions, whether of a civil, military, or diplomatic nature. It was established by positive enactment that the prince, without its consent, had no right to alienate the royal demesne, to confer pensions beyond a very limited amount, or to nominate to vacant benefices.<sup>84</sup> His legislative powers were to be exercised in concurrence with the cortes;<sup>85</sup> and, in the judicial department, his authority, during the latter part of

\* The earliest example of this permanent committee of the commons, residing at court, and entering into the king's council, was in the minority of Ferdinand IV., in 1296. The subject is involved in some obscurity, which Marina has not succeeded in dispelling. He considers the deputation to have formed a necessary and constituent part of the council, from the time of its first appointment. (*Teoría*, tom. ii. cap. 27, 28.) Sempere, on the other hand, discerns no warrant for this, after its introduction, till the time of the Austrian dynasty. (*Histoire des Cortès*, chap. 29.) Marina, who too often mistakes anomaly for practice, is certainly not justified, even by his own showing, in the sweeping conclusions at which he arrives. But, if his prejudices lead him to see more than has happened, on the one hand, those of Sempere, on the other, make him sometimes "high gravel blind."

\* The important functions and history of this body are investigated by Marina. (*Teoría*, part. 2, cap. 27, 28, 29.) See also Sempere (*Histoire des Cortès*, cap. 16), and the *Informe de Don Agustín Riol* (apud *Semanario erudito*, tom. iii. pp. 113 et seq.), where, however, its subsequent condition is chiefly

considered.

\* Not so exclusively, however, by any means, as Marina pretends. (*Teoría*, part. 2, cap. 17, 18.) He borrows a pertinent illustration from the famous code of Alfonso X., which was not received as law of the land till it had been formally published in cortes, in 1348, more than seventy years after its original compilation. In his zeal for popular rights, he omits to notice, however, the power, so frequently assumed by the sovereign, of granting *fueros*, or municipal charters; a right, indeed, which the great lords, spiritual and temporal, exercised in common with him, subject to his sanction. See a multitude of these seigniorial codes, enumerated by Asso and Manuel. (*Instituciones*, Introd., pp. 31 et seq.) The monarch claimed, moreover, though not by any means so freely as in later times, the privilege of issuing *pragmáticas*, ordinances of an executive character, or for the redress of grievances submitted to him by the national legislature. Within certain limits, this was undoubtedly a constitutional prerogative. But the history of Castile, like that of most other countries in Europe, shows how easily it was abused in the hands of an arbitrary prince.

the period under review, seems to have been chiefly exercised in the selection of officers for the higher judicatures, from a list of candidates presented to him on a vacancy by their members concurrently with his privy council.<sup>86</sup>

The scantiness of the king's revenue corresponded with that of his constitutional authority. By an ancient law, indeed, of similar tenor with one familiar to the Saracens, the sovereign was entitled to a fifth of the spoils of victory.<sup>87</sup> This, in the course of the long wars with the Moslems, would have secured him more ample possessions than were enjoyed by any other prince in Christendom. But several circumstances concurred to prevent this result.

The long minorities, with which Castile was afflicted perhaps more than any other country in Europe, frequently threw the government into the hands of the principal nobility, who perverted to their own emoluments the high powers intrusted to them. They usurped the possessions of the crown, and invaded some of its most valuable privileges; so that the sovereign's subsequent life was often consumed in fruitless attempts to repair the losses of his minority. He sometimes, indeed, in the impotence of

\* The civil and criminal business of the kingdom was committed, in the last resort, to the very ancient tribunal of *alcaldes de casa y corte*, until, in 1371, a new one, entitled the royal audience or chancery, was constituted under Henry II., with supreme and ultimate jurisdiction in civil causes. These, in the first instance, however, might be brought before the *alcaldes de la corte*, which continued, and has since continued, the high court in criminal matters. The *audiencia*, or chancery, consisted at first of seven judges, whose number varied a good deal afterwards. They were appointed by the crown, in the manner mentioned in the text. Their salaries were such as to secure their independence, as far as possible, of any undue influence;

and this was still further done by the supervision of cortes, whose acts show the deep solicitude with which it watched over the concerns and conduct of this important tribunal. For a notice of the original organization and subsequent modifications of the Castilian courts, consult Marina (*Teoría*, part. 2, cap. 21—25), Riol (*Informe*, apud *Semanario erudito*, tom. iii. pp. 129 et seq.), and Sempere (*Histoire des Cortès*, chap. 15), whose loose and desultory remarks show perfect familiarity with the subject, and presuppose more than is likely to be found in the reader.

<sup>86</sup> *Siete Partidas*, part. 2, tit. 26, leyes 5, 6, 7.—Mendoza notices this custom as recently as Philip II.'s day. *Guerra de Granada*, p. 170.



other resources, resorted to such unhappy expedients as treachery and assassination.<sup>88</sup> A pleasant tale is told by the Spanish historians, of the more innocent device of Henry the Third, for the recovery of the estates extorted from the crown by the rapacious nobles during his minority.

Returning home late one evening, fatigued and half famished, from a hunting expedition, he was chagrined to find no refreshment prepared for him, and still more so to learn from his steward that he had neither money nor credit to purchase it. The day's sport, however, fortunately furnished the means of appeasing the royal appetite; and, while this was in progress, the steward took occasion to contrast the indigent condition of the king with that of his nobles, who habitually indulged in the most expensive entertainments, and were that very evening feasting with the archbishop of Toledo. The prince, suppressing his indignation, determined, like the far-famed caliph in the "Arabian Nights," to inspect the affair in person, and, assuming a disguise, introduced himself privately into the archbishop's palace, where he witnessed with his own eyes the prodigal magnificence of the banquet, teeming with costly wines and the most luxurious viands.

The next day he caused a rumour to be circulated through the court, that he had fallen suddenly and dangerously ill. The courtiers, at these tidings, thronged to the palace; and, when they had all assembled, the king made his appearance among them, bearing his naked sword in his hand, and, with an aspect of unusual severity, seated himself on his throne at the upper extremity of the apartment.

After an interval of silence in the astonished assembly, the monarch, addressing himself to the primate, inquired of him how many sovereigns he had known in Castile.

<sup>88</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*, lib. 15, cap. 19, 20.

The prelate answering four, Henry put the same question to the duke of Benevente, and so on to the other courtiers in succession. None of them, however, having answered more than five, "How is this," said the prince, "that you, who are so old, should have known so few, while I, young as I am, have beheld more than twenty? Yes," continued he, raising his voice, to the astonished multitude, "you are the real sovereigns of Castile, enjoying all the rights and revenues of royalty, while I, stripped of my patrimony, have scarcely wherewithal to procure the necessaries of life." Then, giving a concerted signal, his guards entered the apartment, followed by the public executioner bearing along with him the implements of death. The dismayed nobles, not relishing the turn the jest appeared likely to take, fell on their knees before the monarch and besought his forgiveness, promising, in requital, complete restitution of the fruits of their rapacity. Henry, content with having so cheaply gained his point, allowed himself to soften at their entreaties, taking care, however, to detain their persons as security for their engagements, until such time as the rents, royal fortresses, and whatever effects had been filched from the crown, were restored. The story, although repeated by the gravest Castilian writers, wears, it must be owned, a marvellous tinge of romance. But, whether fact, or founded on it, it may serve to show the dilapidated condition of the revenues at the beginning of the fourteenth century, and its immediate causes.<sup>80</sup>

Another circumstance which contributed to impoverish

\* Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. p. 399.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 234, 235.—Pedro López de Ayala, chancellor of Castile and chronicler of the reigns of four of its successive monarchs, terminated his labours abruptly with the sixth year of Henry III., the subsequent period of whose administration is singularly barren of authentic ma-

terials for history. The editor of Ayala's Chronicle considers the adventure quoted in the text as fictitious, and probably suggested by a stratagem employed by Henry for the seizure of the duke of Benevente, and by his subsequent imprisonment at Burgos. See Ayala, *Crónica de Castilla*, p. 355, note (ed. de la Acad., 1780).

the exchequer was the occasional political revolutions in Castile, in which the adhesion of a faction was to be purchased only by the most ample concessions of the crown. Such was the violent revolution which placed the house of Trastamara on the throne, in the middle of the fourteenth century.

But perhaps a more operative cause than all these, of the alleged evil, was the conduct of those imbecile princes who, with heedless prodigality, squandered the public resources on their own personal pleasures and unworthy minions. The disastrous reigns of John the Second and Henry the Fourth, extending over the greater portion of the fifteenth century, furnish pertinent examples of this. It was not unusual, indeed, for the cortes, interposing its paternal authority, by passing an act for the partial resumption of grants thus illegally made, in some degree to repair the broken condition of the finances. Nor was such a resumption unfair to the actual proprietors. The promise to maintain the integrity of the royal demesnes formed an essential part of the coronation oath of every sovereign ; and the subject on whom he afterwards conferred them knew well by what a precarious, illicit tenure he was to hold them.

From the view which has been presented of the Castilian constitution at the beginning of the fifteenth century, it is apparent that the sovereign was possessed of less power, and the people of greater, than in other European monarchies at that period. It must be owned, however, as before intimated, that the practical operation did not always correspond with the theory of their respective functions in these rude times ; and that the powers of the executive, being susceptible of greater compactness and energy in their movements than could possibly belong to those of more complex bodies, were sufficiently strong in the hands of a resolute prince to break down the comparatively feeble barriers of the law. Neither were the relative privileges

assigned to the different orders of the state equitably adjusted. Those of the aristocracy were indefinite and exorbitant. The license of armed combinations too, so freely assumed both by this order and the commons, although operating as a safety-valve for the escape of the effervescing spirit of the age, was itself obviously repugnant to all principles of civil obedience, and exposed the state to evils scarcely less disastrous than those which it was intended to prevent.

It was apparent that, notwithstanding the magnitude of the powers conceded to the nobility and the commons, there were important defects, which prevented them from resting on any sound and permanent basis. The representation of the people in cortes, instead of partially emanating, as in England, from an independent body of landed proprietors, constituting the real strength of the nation, proceeded exclusively from the cities, whose elections were much more open to popular caprice and ministerial corruption, and whose numerous local jealousies prevented them from acting in cordial co-operation. The nobles, notwithstanding their occasional coalitions, were often arrayed in feuds against each other. They relied, for the defence of their privileges, solely on their physical strength, and heartily disdained, in any emergency, to support their own cause by identifying it with that of the commons. Hence it became obvious that the monarch, who, notwithstanding his limited prerogative, assumed the anomalous privilege of transacting public business with the advice of only one branch of the legislature, and of occasionally dispensing altogether with the attendance of the other, might, by throwing his own influence into the scale, give the preponderance to whichever party he should prefer, and, by thus dexterously availing himself of their opposite forces, erect his own authority on the ruins of the weaker. How far and how successfully this policy was pursued by

Ferdinand and Isabella, will be seen in the course of this History.

---

Notwithstanding the general diligence of the Spanish historians, they have done little towards the investigation of the constitutional antiquities of Castile, until the present century. Dr. Geddes's meagre notice of the cortes preceded probably by a long interval any native work upon that subject. Robertson frequently complains of the total deficiency of authentic sources of information respecting the laws and government of Castile; a circumstance that suggests to a candid mind an obvious explanation of several errors into which he has fallen. Capmany, in the preface to a work compiled by order of the central junta in Seville, in 1809, on the ancient organization of the cortes in the different states of the Peninsula, remarks that "no author has appeared, down to the present day, to instruct us in regard to the origin, constitution, and celebration of the Castilian cortes, on all which topics there remains the most profound ignorance." The melancholy results to which such an investigation must necessarily lead, from the contrast it suggests of existing institutions to the freer forms of antiquity, might well have deterred the modern Spaniard from these inquiries; which, moreover, it can hardly be supposed would have received the countenance of government. The brief interval, however, in the early part of the present century, when the nation so ineffectually struggled to resume its ancient liberties, gave birth to two productions which have gone far to supply the *desiderata* in this department. I allude to the valuable works of Marina, on the early legislation and on the cortes of Castile, to which repeated reference has been made in this section. The latter, especially, presents us with a full exposition of the appropriate functions assigned to the several departments of government, and with the parliamentary history of Castile deduced from original, unpublished records. It is unfortunate that his copious illustrations are arranged in so unskilful a manner as to give a dry and repulsive air to the whole work. The original documents on which it is established, instead of being reserved for an appendix, and their import only conveyed in the text, stare at the reader in every page, arrayed in all the technicalities, periphrases, and repetitions incident to legal enactments. The course of the investigation is, moreover, frequently interrupted by impertinent dissertations on the constitution of 1812, in which the author has fallen into abundance of crudities, which he would have escaped had he but witnessed the practical operation of those liberal forms of government which he so justly admires. The sanguine temper of Marina has also betrayed him into the error of putting, too uniformly, a favourable construction on the proceedings of the commons, and of frequently deriving a constitutional precedent from what can only be regarded as an accidental and transient exertion of power in a season of popular excitement.

The student of this department of Spanish history may consult, in conjunction with Marina, Sempere's little treatise, often quoted, on the History of the Castilian Cortes. It is, indeed, too limited and desultory in its plan to afford anything like a complete view of the subject. But, as a sensible commentary, by one well skilled in the topics that he discusses, it is of undoubted value. Since the political principles and bias of the author were of an opposite character to Marina's, they frequently lead him to opposite conclusions in the investigation of the same facts. Making all allowance for obvious prejudices, Sempere's work, therefore, may be of

much use in correcting the erroneous impressions made by the former writer, whose fabric of liberty too often rests, as exemplified more than once in the preceding pages, on an ideal basis. But, with every deduction, Marina's publications must be considered an important contribution to political science. They exhibit an able analysis of a constitution which becomes singularly interesting from its having furnished, together with that of the sister kingdom of Aragon, the earliest example of representative government, as well as from the liberal principles on which that government was long administered.

## SECTION II.

### REVIEW OF THE CONSTITUTION OF ARAGON, TO THE MIDDLE OF THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY.

Rise of Aragon.—Ricos Hombres.—Their Immunities.—Their Turbulence.—Privileges of Union.—The Legislature.—Its Forms.—Its Powers.—General Privilege.—Judicial Functions of Cortes.—The Justice.—His Great Authority.—Rise and Opulence of Barcelona.—Her Free Institutions.—Intellectual Culture.

THE political institutions of Aragon, although bearing a general resemblance to those of Castile, were sufficiently dissimilar to stamp a peculiar physiognomy on the character of the nation, which still continued after it had been incorporated with the great mass of the Spanish monarchy. It was not until the expiration of nearly five centuries after the Saracen invasion that the little district of Aragon, growing up under the shelter of the Pyrenees, was expanded into the dimensions of the province which now bears that name. During this period, it was painfully struggling into being, like the other states of the Peninsula, by dint of fierce, unintermitted warfare with the infidel.

Even after this period, it would probably have filled but an insignificant space in the map of history, and, instead of assuming an independent station, have been compelled, like Navarre, to accommodate itself to the politics of the potent monarchies by which it was surrounded, had it not extended its empire by a fortunate union with Catalonia in the twelfth, and the conquest of Valencia in the thirteenth century.<sup>1</sup> These new territories were not only far more

<sup>1</sup> Catalonia was united with Aragon by the marriage of Queen Petronilla with Raymond Beren-

gere, count of Barcelona, in 1150. Valencia was conquered from the Moors by James I. in 1238.

productive than its own, but, by their long line of coast and commodious ports, enabled the Aragonese, hitherto pent up within their barren mountains, to open a communication with distant regions.

The ancient county of Barcelona had reached a higher degree of civilization than Aragon, and was distinguished by institutions quite as liberal. The seaboard would seem to be the natural seat of liberty. There is something in the very presence, in the atmosphere of the ocean, which invigorates not only the physical but the moral energies of man. The adventurous life of the mariner familiarizes him with dangers, and early accustoms him to independence. Intercourse with various climes opens new and more copious sources of knowledge ; and increased wealth brings with it an augmentation of power and consequence. It was in the maritime cities scattered along the Mediterranean that the seeds of liberty, both in ancient and modern times, were implanted and brought to maturity. During the Middle Ages, when the people of Europe generally maintained a toilsome and infrequent intercourse with each other, those situated on the margin of this inland ocean found an easy mode of communication across the highroad of its waters. They mingled in war too as in peace, and this long period is filled with their international contests, while the other free cities of Christendom were wasting themselves in civil feuds and degrading domestic broils. In this wide and various collision their moral powers were quickened by constant activity ; and more enlarged views were formed, with a deeper consciousness of their own strength, than could be obtained by those inhabitants of the interior who were conversant with only a limited range of objects, and subjected to the influence of the same dull, monotonous circumstances.

Among these maritime republics, those of Catalonia were eminently conspicuous. By the incorporation of this country with the kingdom of Aragon, therefore, the



strength of the latter was greatly augmented. The Aragonese princes, well aware of this, liberally fostered institutions to which the country owed its prosperity, and skilfully availed themselves of its resources for the aggrandizement of their own dominions. They paid particular attention to the navy, for the more perfect discipline of which a body of laws was prepared by Peter the Fourth, in 1354, that was designed to render it invincible. No allusion whatever is made in this stern code to the mode of surrendering to or retreating from the enemy. The commander, who declined attacking any force not exceeding his own by more than one vessel, was punished with death.<sup>2</sup> The Catalan navy successfully disputed the empire of the Mediterranean with the fleets of Pisa, and still more of Genoa. With its aid, the Aragonese monarchs achieved the conquest successively of Sicily, Sardinia, and the Balearic Isles, and annexed them to the empire.<sup>3</sup> It penetrated into the farthest regions of the Levant; and the expedition of the Catalans into Asia, which terminated with the more splendid than useful acquisition of Athens, forms one of the most romantic passages in this stirring and adventurous era.<sup>4</sup>

But, while the princes of Aragon were thus enlarging the bounds of their dominion abroad, there was probably not a sovereign in Europe possessed of such limited authority at home. The three great states, with their

<sup>2</sup> Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. iii. pp. 45—47.—The Catalans were much celebrated during the Middle Ages for their skill with the crossbow; for a more perfect instruction in which, the municipality of Barcelona established games and gymnasia. *Ibid.*, tom. i. p. 113.

<sup>3</sup> Sicily revolted to Peter III. in 1282.—Sardinia was conquered by James II. in 1324, and the Balearic Isles by Peter IV. in 1343—4.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 247;

tom. ii. fol. 60.—Hermilly, *Histoire du Royaume de Majorque* (Maëstricht, 1777), pp. 227—268.

<sup>4</sup> Hence the title of duke of Athens, assumed by the Spanish sovereigns. The brilliant fortunes of Roger de Flor are related by count Moncada (*Expedicion de los Catalanes y Aragoneses contra Turcos y Griegos*, Madrid, 1805), in a style much commended by Spanish critics for its elegance. See Mondejar, *Advertencias*, p. 114.

dependencies, which constituted the Aragonese monarchy, had been declared by a statute of James the Second, in 1319, inalienable and indivisible.<sup>5</sup> Each of them, however, maintained a separate constitution of government, and was administered by distinct laws. As it would be fruitless to investigate the peculiarities of their respective institutions, which bear a very close affinity to one another, we may confine ourselves to those of Aragon, which exhibit a more perfect model than those either of Catalonia or Valencia, and have been far more copiously illustrated by her writers.

The national historians refer the origin of their government to a written constitution of about the middle of the ninth century, fragments of which are still preserved in certain ancient documents and chronicles. On occurrence of a vacancy in the throne, at this epoch, a monarch was elected by the twelve principal nobles, who prescribed a code of laws, to the observance of which he was obliged to swear before assuming the sceptre. The import of these laws was to circumscribe within very narrow limits the authority of the sovereign, distributing the principal functions to a *Justicia*, or Justice, and these same peers, who, in case of a violation of the compact by the monarch, were authorized to withdraw their allegiance, and, in the bold language of the ordinance, "to substitute any other ruler in his stead, even a pagan, if they listed."<sup>6</sup> The whole of this wears much of a fabulous aspect, and may remind the

<sup>5</sup> It was confirmed by Alfonso III., in 1329. Zurita, *Anales*, tom. ii. fol. 90.

<sup>6</sup> See the fragments of the *Fuero de Soprarbe*, cited by Blancas, *Aragonensium Rerum Commentarii* (Cæsaraugustæ, 1588), pp. 25—29. —The well-known oath of the Aragonese to their sovereign on his accession, "Nos que valemus tanto como vos," etc., frequently quoted by historians, rests on the authority of Antonio Perez, the

unfortunate minister of Philip II., who, however good a voucher for the usages of his own time, has made a blunder in the very sentence preceding this, by confounding the Privilege of Union with one of the Laws of Soprarbe, which shows him to be insufficient, especially as he is the only authority for this ancient ceremony. See Antonio Perez, *Relaciones* (Paris, 1598), fol. 92.

reader of the government which Ulysses met with in Phæacia; where King Alcinous is surrounded by his "twelve illustrious peers or archons," subordinate to himself, "who," says he, "rule over the people, I myself being the thirteenth."<sup>7</sup> But, whether true or not, this venerable tradition must be admitted to have been well calculated to repress the arrogance of the Aragonese monarchs, and to exalt the minds of their subjects by the image of ancient liberty which it presented.<sup>8</sup>

The great barons of Aragon were few in number. They affected to derive their descent from the twelve peers above mentioned, and were styled *ricos hombres de natura*, implying by this epithet that they were not indebted for their creation to the will of the sovereign. No estate could be legally conferred by the crown, as an *honour* (the denomination of fiefs in Aragon), on any but one of these high nobles. This, however, was in time evaded by the monarchs, who advanced certain of their own retainers to a level with the ancient peers of the land; a measure which proved a fruitful source of disquietude.<sup>9</sup> No baron could

<sup>7</sup> Δώδεκα γὰρ κατὰ δῆμον ἀριπρεπείς  
βασίλῃς  
Ἀρχοὶ κραίνουσι, τριακιδέκατος δ' ἐγὼ  
αὐτός.  
Odyss. ε. 390.

<sup>8</sup> In like manner Alfonso III. alludes to "the ancient times in Aragon, when there were as many kings as ricos hombres." See Zurita, Anales, tom. i. fol. 316.

<sup>9</sup> The authenticity of the "Fuero de Soprarbe" has been keenly debated by the Aragonese and Navarrese writers. Moret, in refutation of Blancas, who espouses it (see Commentarii, p. 289), states that, after a diligent investigation of the archives of that region, he finds no mention of the laws, or even of the name, of Soprarbe, until the eleventh century; a startling circumstance for the antiquary. (Investigaciones históricas de las

Antigüedades del Reyno de Navarra (Pamplona, 1766), tom. vi. lib. 2, cap. 11.) Indeed, the historians of Aragon admit that the public documents previous to the fourteenth century suffered so much from various causes as to leave comparatively few materials for authentic narrative. (Blancas, Commentarii, Pref. — Risco, España sagrada, tom. xxx. Prólogo.) Blancas transcribed his extract of the Laws of Soprarbe principally from Prince Charles of Viana's History, written in the fifteenth century. See Commentarii, p. 25.

<sup>9</sup> Asso y Manuel, Instituciones, pp. 39, 40.—Blancas, Commentarii, pp. 333, 334, 340.—Fueros y Observancias del Reyno de Aragon (Zaragoza, 1667), tom. i. fol. 130.—The *ricos hombres* thus created by the monarch were styled *de mesnada*, signifying "of the household." It

be divested of his fief, unless by public sentence of the Justice and the cortes. The proprietor, however, was required, as usual, to attend the king in council, and to perform military service, when summoned, during two months in the year, at his own charge.<sup>10</sup>

The privileges, both honorary and substantial, enjoyed by the *ricos hombres* were very considerable. They filled the highest posts in the state. They originally appointed judges in their domains for the cognizance of certain civil causes, and over a class of their vassals exercised an unlimited criminal jurisdiction. They were excused from taxation except in specified cases; were exempted from all corporal and capital punishment; nor could they be imprisoned, although their estates might be sequestered, for debt. A lower class of nobility, styled *infanzones*, equivalent to the Castilian *hidalgos*, together with the *cahalleros*, or knights, were also possessed of important though inferior immunities.<sup>11</sup>

The king distributed among the great barons the territory reconquered from the Moors, in proportions determined by the amount of their respective services. We find a stipulation to this effect from James the First to his nobles, previous to his invasion of Majorca.<sup>12</sup> On a similar principle they claimed nearly the whole of Valencia.<sup>13</sup> On occupying a city, it was usual to divide it into *barrios*, or districts, each of which was granted by way of fief to some one of the *ricos hombres*, from which he

was lawful for a *rico hombre* to bequeath his honours to whichever of his legitimate children he might prefer, and, in default of issue, to his nearest of kin. He was bound to distribute the bulk of his estates in fiefs among his knights, so that a complete system of subinfeudation was established. The knights, on restoring their fiefs, might change their suzerains at pleasure.

<sup>10</sup> Asso y Manuel, Instituciones,

p. 41.—Blancas, Commentarii, pp. 307, 322, 331.

<sup>11</sup> Fueros y Observancias, tom. i. fol. 130.—Martel, Forma de celebrar Cortes en Aragon (Zaragoza, 1641), p. 98.—Blancas, Commentarii, pp. 306, 312—317, 323, 360.—Asso y Manuel, Instituciones, pp. 40—43.

<sup>12</sup> Zurita, Anales, tom. i. fol. 124.

<sup>13</sup> Blancas, Commentarii, p. 334.

was to derive his revenue. What proportion of the conquered territory was reserved for the royal demesne does not appear.<sup>14</sup> We find one of these nobles, Bernard de Cabrera, in the latter part of the fourteenth century, manning a fleet of king's ships on his own credit; another, of the ancient family of Luna, in the fifteenth century, so wealthy that he could travel through an almost unbroken line of his estates all the way from Castile to France.<sup>15</sup> With all this, their incomes in general, in this comparatively poor country, were very inferior to those of the great Castilian lords.<sup>16</sup>

The laws conceded certain powers to the aristocracy, of a most dangerous character. They were entitled, like the nobles of the sister kingdom, to defy, and publicly renounce their allegiance to, their sovereign, with the whimsical privilege, in addition, of commending their families and estates to his protection, which he was obliged to accord until they were again reconciled.<sup>17</sup> The mischievous right of private war was repeatedly recognized by statute. It was claimed and exercised in its full extent, and occasionally with circumstances of peculiar atrocity. An instance is recorded by Zurita of a bloody feud between two of these nobles, prosecuted with such inveteracy that the parties bound themselves by solemn oath never to desist from it during their lives, and to resist every effort, even on the part of the crown itself, to effect a pacification.

<sup>14</sup> See the partition of Saragossa by Alonso the Warrior. Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 43.

<sup>15</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 198.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 218.

<sup>16</sup> See a register of these at the beginning of the sixteenth century, apud L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 25.

<sup>17</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. ii. fol. 127.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 324.—“Adhæc Ricis hominibus

*ipsis majorum more institutisque concedebatur, ut esse possent, dum ipsi, vellent, a nostrorum Regum jure et potestate, quasi nodum aliquem, expedire; neque expedire solum, sed dimisso prius, quo poterentur, Honore, bellum ipsis inferre; Reges vero Ricis hominis sic expediti uxorem, filios, familiam, res, bona, et fortunas omnes in suam recipere fidem tenebantur. Neque ulla erat eorum utilitatis facienda jactura.”*

between them.<sup>18</sup> This remnant of barbarism lingered longer in Aragon than in any other country in Christendom.

The Aragonese sovereigns, who were many of them possessed of singular capacity and vigour,<sup>19</sup> made repeated efforts to reduce the authority of their nobles within more temperate limits. Peter the Second, by a bold stretch of prerogative, stripped them of their most important rights of jurisdiction.<sup>20</sup> James the Conqueror artfully endeavoured to counterbalance their weight by that of the commons and the ecclesiastics.<sup>21</sup> But they were too formidable when united, and too easily united, to be successfully assailed. The Moorish wars terminated, in Aragon, with the conquest of Valencia, or rather the invasion of Murcia, by the middle of the thirteenth century. The tumultuous spirits of the aristocracy, therefore, instead of finding a vent, as in Castile, in these foreign expeditions, were turned within, and convulsed their own country with perpetual revolution. Haughty from the consciousness of their exclusive privileges and of the limited number who monopolized them, the Aragonese barons regarded themselves rather as the rivals of their sovereign than as his inferiors. Intrenched within the mountain fastnesses which the rugged nature of the country everywhere afforded, they easily bade defiance to his authority. Their small number gave a compactness and concert to their operations which could not have been obtained in a multitudinous body. Ferdinand the Catholic well discriminated the relative position of the Aragonese and Castilian nobility, by saying, "it was as difficult to divide the one as to unite the other."<sup>22</sup>

<sup>18</sup> *Fueros y Observancias*, tom. i. p. 84.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 350.

<sup>19</sup> Blancas somewhere boasts that no one of the kings of Aragon has been stigmatized by a cognomen of infamy, as in most of the other royal races of Europe. Peter IV., "the

Ceremonious," richly deserved one.

<sup>20</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 102.

<sup>21</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 198.—He recommended this policy to his son-in-law, the king of Castile.

<sup>22</sup> Sempere, *Histoire des Cortès*, p. 164.

These combinations became still more frequent after formally receiving the approbation of King Alfonso the Third, who, in 1287, signed the two celebrated ordinances entitled the "Privileges of Union," by which his subjects were authorized to resort to arms on an infringement of their liberties.<sup>23</sup> The *hermandad* of Castile had never been countenanced by legislative sanction; it was chiefly resorted to as a measure of police, and was directed more frequently against the disorders of the nobility than of the sovereign; it was organized with difficulty, and, compared with the Union of Aragon, was cumbrous and languid in its operations. While these privileges continued in force, the nation was delivered over to the most frightful anarchy. The least offensive movement on the part of the monarch, the slightest encroachment on personal right or privilege, was the signal for a general revolt. At the cry of *Union*, that "last voice," says the enthusiastic historian, "of the expiring republic, full of authority and majesty, and an open indication of the insolence of kings," the nobles and the citizens eagerly rushed to arms. The principal castles belonging to the former were pledged as security for their fidelity, and intrusted to conservators, as they were styled, whose duty it was to direct the operations and watch over the interests of the Union. A common seal was prepared, bearing the device of armed men kneeling before their king, intimating at once their loyalty and their resolution, and a similar device was displayed on the standard and the other military insignia of the confederates.<sup>24</sup>

The power of the monarch was as nothing before this formidable array. The Union appointed a council to control all his movements, and, in fact, during the whole period of its existence, the reigns of four successive

<sup>23</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 4, cap. 96.  
—Abarca dates this event in the year preceding. *Reyes de Aragon*, en *Anales históricos* (Madrid, 1682

—1684), tom. ii. fol. 8.

<sup>24</sup> Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 192, 193.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 266 et alibi.

monarchs, it may be said to have dictated law to the land. At length Peter the Fourth, a despot in heart, and naturally enough impatient of this eclipse of regal prerogative, brought the matter to an issue by defeating the army of the Union, at the memorable battle of Epila, in 1348, "the last," says Zurita, "in which it was permitted to the subject to take up arms against the sovereign for the cause of liberty." Then, convoking an assembly of the states at Saragossa, he produced before them the instrument containing the two Privileges, and cut it in pieces with his dagger. In doing this, having wounded himself in the hand, he suffered the blood to trickle upon the parchment, exclaiming that "a law which had been the occasion of so much blood should be blotted out by the blood of a king."<sup>25</sup> All copies of it, whether in the public archives or in the possession of private individuals, were ordered, under a heavy penalty, to be destroyed. The statute passed to that effect carefully omits the date of the detested instrument, that all evidence of its existence might perish with it.<sup>26</sup>

Instead of abusing his victory, as might have been anticipated from his character, Peter adopted a far more magnanimous policy. He confirmed the ancient privileges of the realm, and made in addition other wise and salutary concessions. From this period, therefore, is to be dated the possession of constitutional liberty in Aragon (for surely the reign of unbridled license, above described, is not deserving that name); and this not so much from the acquisition of new immunities, as from the more perfect

<sup>25</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. ii. fol. 126—130.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 195—197.—Hence he was styled "Peter of the Dagger;" and a statue of him, bearing in one hand this weapon and in the other the Privilege, stood in the Chamber of Deputation at Saragossa in Philip II.'s time. See Antonio Perez, *Relaciones*, fol. 95.

<sup>26</sup> See the statute, *De Prohibita Unione*, etc.—*Fueros y Observancias*, tom. i. fol. 178.—A copy of the original Privileges was detected by Blancas among the manuscripts of the archbishop of Saragossa; but he declined publishing it, from deference to the prohibition of his ancestors. *Commentarii*, p. 179.



security afforded for the enjoyment of the old. The court of the *Justicia*, that great barrier interposed by the constitution between despotism on the one hand and popular license on the other, was more strongly protected, and causes hitherto decided by arms were referred for adjudication to this tribunal.<sup>27</sup> From this period, too, the cortes, whose voice was scarcely heard amid the wild uproar of preceding times, was allowed to extend a beneficial and protecting sway over the land. And, although the social history of Aragon, like that of other countries in this rude age, is too often stained with deeds of violence and personal feuds, yet the state at large, under the steady operation of its laws, probably enjoyed a more uninterrupted tranquillity than fell to the lot of any other nation in Europe.

The Aragonese cortes was composed of four branches, or arms; <sup>28</sup> the ricos hombres, or great barons; the lesser nobles, comprehending the knights; the clergy; and the commons. The nobility of every denomination were entitled to a seat in the legislature. The ricos hombres were allowed to appear by proxy, and a similar privilege was enjoyed by baronial heiresses. The number of this body was very limited, twelve of them constituting a quorum.<sup>29</sup>

The arm of the ecclesiastics embraced an ample delegation from the inferior as well as higher clergy.<sup>30</sup> It is affirmed not to have been a component of the national legislature until more than a century and a half after the

<sup>27</sup> "Hæc itaque domestica Regis victoria, quæ miserrimum universæ Reipublicæ interitum videbatur esse allatura, stabilem nobis constituit pacem, tranquillitatem, et otium. Inde enim Magistratus Justitiæ Aragonum in eam, quam nunc colimus, amplitudinem dignitatis devenit." Ibid., p. 197.

<sup>28</sup> Martel, Forma de celebrar Cortes, cap. 8.—"Braços del reino, porque abraçan, y tienen en si."—The cortes consisted only of three arms in Catalonia and Valencia;

both the greater and lesser nobility sitting in the same chamber. Penguera, Cortes en Cataluña, and Matheu y Sanz, Constitucion de Valencia, apud Capmany, Práctica y Estilo, pp. 65, 183, 184.

<sup>29</sup> Martel, Forma de celebrar Cortes, cap. 10, 17, 21, 46.—Blancas, Modo de proceder en Cortes de Aragon (Zaragoza, 1641), fol. 17, 18.

<sup>30</sup> Capmany, Práctica y Estilo, p. 12.

admission of the commons.<sup>31</sup> Indeed, the influence of the church was much less sensible in Aragon than in the other kingdoms of the Peninsula. Notwithstanding the humiliating concessions of certain of their princes to the papal see, they were never recognized by the nation, who uniformly asserted their independence of the temporal supremacy of Rome, and who, as we shall see hereafter, resisted the introduction of the Inquisition, that last stretch of ecclesiastical usurpation, even to blood.<sup>32</sup>

The commons enjoyed higher consideration and civil privileges than in Castile. For this they were perhaps somewhat indebted to the example of their Catalan neighbours, the influence of whose democratic institutions naturally extended to other parts of the Aragonese monarchy. The charters of certain cities accorded to the inhabitants privileges of nobility, particularly that of immunity from taxation; while the magistrates of others were permitted to take their seats in the order of hidalgos.<sup>33</sup> From a very early period we find them employed in offices of public trust, and on important missions.<sup>34</sup> The epoch of their admission into the national assembly is traced as far back as 1133, several years earlier than the commencement of popular representation in Castile.<sup>35</sup> Each city had the right of sending two or

<sup>31</sup> Blancas, *Modo de proceder*, fol. 14,—and *Commentarii*, p. 374.—Zurita, indeed, gives repeated instances of their convocation in the thirteenth and twelfth centuries, from a date almost coeval with that of the commons; yet Blancas, who made this subject his particular study, who wrote posterior to Zurita, and occasionally refers to him, postpones the era of their admission into the legislature to the beginning of the fourteenth century.

<sup>32</sup> One of the monarchs of Aragon, Alfonso the Warrior, according to Mariana, bequeathed all his dominions to the Templars and Hospitallers. Another, Peter II.,

agreed to hold his kingdom as a fief of the see of Rome, and to pay it an annual tribute. (*Hist. de España*, tom. i. pp. 596, 664.) This so much disgusted the people that they compelled his successors to make a public protest against the claims of the church, before their coronation. — See Blancas, *Coronaciones de los serenísimos Reyes de Aragon* (Zaragoza, 1641), cap. 2.

<sup>33</sup> Martel, *Forma de celebrar Cortes*, cap. 22.—Asso y Manuel, *Instituciones*, p. 44.

<sup>34</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 163, A.D. 1250.

<sup>35</sup> *Ibid.*, tom. i. fol. 51.—The earliest appearance of popular representation in Catalonia is fixed

more deputies selected from persons eligible to its magistracy; but with the privilege of only one vote, whatever might be the number of its deputies. Any place which had been once represented in cortes might always claim to be so.<sup>36</sup>

By a statute of 1307, the convocation of the states, which had been annual, was declared biennial. The kings, however, paid little regard to this provision, rarely summoning them except for some specific necessity.<sup>37</sup> The great officers of the crown, whatever might be their personal rank, were jealously excluded from their deliberations. The session was opened by an address from the king in person, a point of which they were very tenacious; after which the different *arms* withdrew to their separate apartments.<sup>38</sup> The greatest scrupulousness was manifested in maintaining the rights and dignity of the body; and their intercourse with one another, and with the king, was regulated by the most precise forms of parliamentary etiquette.<sup>39</sup> The subjects of deliberation were referred to

by Ripoll at 1283 (apud Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 135). What can Capmany mean by postponing the introduction of the commons into the cortes of Aragon to 1300? (See p. 56.) Their presence and names are commemorated by the exact Zurita, several times before the close of the twelfth century.

<sup>36</sup> *Práctica y Estilo*, pp. 14, 17, 18, 30.—Martel, *Forma de celebrar Cortes*, cap. 10.—Those who followed a mechanical occupation, including *surgeons and apothecaries*, were excluded from a seat in cortes. (Cap. 17.) The faculty have rarely been treated with so little ceremony.

<sup>37</sup> Martel, *Forma de celebrar Cortes*, cap. 7.—The cortes appear to have been more frequently convoked in the fourteenth century than in any other. Blancas refers to no less than twenty-three within that period, averaging nearly one

in four years. (*Commentarii, Index, voce Comititia*.) In Catalonia and Valencia, the cortes was to be summoned every three years. Berart, *Discurso breve sobre la Celebracion de Cortes de Aragon* (1626), fol. 12.

<sup>38</sup> Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 15.—Blancas has preserved a specimen of an address from the throne, in 1398, in which the king, after selecting some moral apothegm as a text, rambles for the space of half-an-hour through Scripture, history, etc., and concludes with announcing the object of his convening the cortes together, in three lines. *Commentarii*, pp. 376—380.

<sup>39</sup> See the ceremonial detailed with sufficient prolixity by Martel (*Forma de celebrar Cortes*, cap. 52, 53), and a curious illustration of it in Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 313

a committee from each order, who, after conferring together, reported to their several departments. Every question, it may be presumed, underwent a careful examination ; as the legislature, we are told, was usually divided into two parties, "the one maintaining the rights of the monarch, the other, those of the nation," corresponding nearly enough with those of our day. It was in the power of any member to defeat the passage of a bill, by opposing to it his *veto* or dissent, formally registered to that effect. He might even interpose his negative on the proceedings of the house, and thus put a stop to the prosecution of all further business during the session. This anomalous privilege, transcending even that claimed in the Polish diet, must have been too invidious in its exercise, and too pernicious in its consequences, to have been often resorted to. This may be inferred from the fact that it was not formally repealed until the reign of Philip the Second, in 1592. During the interval of the sessions of the legislature, a deputation of eight was appointed, two from each arm, to preside over public affairs, particularly in regard to the revenue, and the security of justice ; with authority to convoke a cortes extraordinary, whenever the exigency might demand it.<sup>40</sup>

The cortes exercised the highest functions whether of a deliberative, legislative, or judicial nature. It had a right to be consulted on all matters of importance, especially on those of peace and war. No law was valid, no tax could be imposed, without its consent ; and it carefully provided for the application of the revenue to its destined uses.<sup>41</sup> It determined the succession to the

<sup>40</sup> Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, pp. 44 et seq.—Martel, *Forma de celebrar Cortes*, cap. 50, 60 et seq.—*Fueros y Observancias*, tom. i. fol. 229.—Blancas, *Modo de proceder*, fol. 2—4.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iii. fol. 321.—Robertson, misinterpreting a passage of Blancas

(*Commentarii*, p. 375), states that a "session of cortes continued forty days." (*History of Charles V.*, vol. i. p. 140.) It usually lasted months.

<sup>41</sup> *Fueros y Observancias*, fol. 6, tit. Privileg. Gen.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 371.—Capmany, *Prácti-*

crown, removed obnoxious ministers, reformed the household and domestic expenditure of the monarch, and exercised the power, in the most unreserved manner, of withholding supplies, as well as of resisting what it regarded as an encroachment on the liberties of the nation.<sup>42</sup>

The excellent commentators on the constitution of Aragon have bestowed comparatively little attention on the development of its parliamentary history; confining themselves too exclusively to mere forms of procedure. The defect has been greatly obviated by the copiousness of their general historians. But the statute-book affords the most unequivocal evidence of the fidelity with which the guardians of the realm discharged the high trust reposed in them, in the numerous enactments it exhibits for the security both of person and property. Almost the first page which meets the eye in this venerable record contains the General Privilege, the Magna Charta, as it has been well denominated, of Aragon. It was granted by Peter the Great to the cortes at Saragossa, in 1283. It embraces a variety of provisions for the fair and open administration of justice; for ascertaining the legitimate powers intrusted to the cortes; for the security of property against exactions of the crown; and for the conservation of their legal immunities to the municipal corporations and the different orders of nobility. In short, the distinguishing excellence of this instrument, like that of Magna Charta, consists in the wise and equitable protection which it affords to all classes of the community.<sup>43</sup> The General Privilege, instead

*tica y Estilo*, p. 51.—It was anciently the practice of the legislature to grant supplies of troops, but not of money. When Peter IV. requested a pecuniary subsidy, the cortes told him that "such things had not been usual; that his Christian subjects were wont to serve him with their persons, and it was only for Jews and Moors to serve him with money." Blancas, *Modo de pro-*

*ceder*, cap. 18.

<sup>42</sup> See examples of them in Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 51, 263; tom. ii. fol. 391, 394, 424. — Blancas, *Modo de proceder*, fol. 98, 106.

<sup>43</sup> "There was such a conformity of sentiment among all parties," says Zurita, "that the privileges of the nobility were no better secured than those of the commons. For the Aragonese deemed that the ex-

of being wrested, like King John's charter, from a pusillanimous prince, was conceded, reluctantly enough, it is true, in an assembly of the nation, by one of the ablest monarchs who ever sat on the throne of Aragon, at a time when his arms, crowned with repeated victory, had secured to the state the most important of her foreign acquisitions.

The Aragonese, who rightly regarded the General Privilege as the broadest basis of their liberties, repeatedly procured its confirmation by succeeding sovereigns. "By so many and such various precautions," says Blancas, "did our ancestors establish that freedom which their posterity have enjoyed; manifesting a wise solicitude that all orders of men, even kings themselves, confined within their own sphere, should discharge their legitimate functions without jostling or jarring with one another; for in this harmony consists the temperance of our government. Alas!" he adds, "how much of all this has fallen into desuetude from its antiquity, or been effaced by new customs!"<sup>44</sup>

The judicial functions of the cortes have not been sufficiently noticed by writers. They were extensive in their operation, and gave it the name of the General Court. They were principally directed to protect the subject from the oppressions of the crown and its officers; over all which cases it possessed original and ultimate jurisdiction. The suit was conducted before the Justice, as president of the cortes in its judicial capacity, who delivered an opinion conformable to the will of the

istence of the commonwealth depended not so much on its strength as on its liberties." (*Anales*, lib. 4, cap. 38.) In the confirmation of the privilege by James II., in 1325, torture, then generally recognized by the municipal law of Europe, was expressly prohibited in Aragon, "as unworthy of freemen." See Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 6, cap. 61, and *Fueros y Observancias*, tom. i. fol.

9, *Declaratio Priv. Generalis*.

"The patriotism of Blancas warms as he dwells on the illusory picture of ancient virtue and contrasts it with the degeneracy of his own day: "Et vero prisca hæc tanta severitas, desertaque illa et inculta vita, quando dies noctesque nostri armati concursabant, ac in bello et Maurorum sanguine assidui versabantur, verè quidem parsimonisæ,

majority.<sup>45</sup> The authority, indeed, of this magistrate in his own court was fully equal to providing adequate relief in all these cases.<sup>46</sup> But for several reasons this parliamentary tribunal was preferred. The process was both more expeditious and less expensive to the suitor. Indeed, "the most obscure inhabitant of the most obscure village in the kingdom, although a foreigner," might demand redress of this body; and, if he was incapable of bearing the burden himself, the state was bound to maintain his suit, and provide him with counsel at its own charge. But the most important consequence resulting from this legislative investigation was the remedial laws frequently attendant on it. "And our ancestors," says Blancas, "deemed it great wisdom patiently to endure contumely and oppression for a season, rather than seek redress before an inferior tribunal, since, by postponing their suit till the meeting of cortes, they would not only obtain a remedy for their own grievance, but one of a universal and permanent application."<sup>47</sup>

The Aragonese cortes maintained a steady control over the operations of government, especially after the dissolution

fortitudinis, temperantiae, ceterarumque virtutum omnium magistra fuit. In quâ maleficia ac scelera, quæ nunc in otiosâ hac nostrâ umbratili et delicatâ gignuntur, gigni non solebant; quin immo ita tunc æqualiter omnes omni genere virtutum floruerunt, ut egregia hæc laus videatur non hominum solum, verum illorum etiam temporum fuisse." (Commentarii, p. 340.)—The repeated confirmation of the General Privilege affords another point of analogy with Magna Charta, which, together with the Charter of the Forest, received, according to Lord Coke, the sanction of Parliament thirty-two several times. Institutes, part ii. Proeme.

<sup>45</sup> It was more frequently referred, both for the sake of expedition and of obtaining a more full

investigation, to commissioners nominated conjointly by the cortes and the party demanding redress. The nature of the *greuges*, or grievances, which might be brought before the legislature, and the mode of proceeding in relation to them, are circumstantially detailed by the parliamentary historians of Aragon. See Berart, Discurso sobre la Celebracion de Cortes, cap. 7.—Capmany, Práctica y Estilo, pp. 37—44.—Blancas, Modo de proceder, cap. 14.—Martel, Forma de celebrar Cortes, cap. 54—59.

<sup>46</sup> Blancas, Modo de proceder, cap. 14.—Yet Peter IV., in his dispute with the Justice Fernandez de Castro, denied this. Zurita, Anales, tom. ii. fol. 170.

<sup>47</sup> Blancas, Modo de proceder, ubi supra.

of the Union; and the weight of the commons was more decisive in it than in other similar assemblies of that period. Its singular distribution into four estates was favourable to this. The knights and *hidalgos*, an intermediate order between the great nobility and the people, when detached from the former, naturally lent additional support to the latter, with whom, indeed, they had considerable affinity. The representatives of certain cities, as well as a certain class of citizens, were entitled to a seat in this body;<sup>48</sup> so that it approached both in spirit and substance to something like a popular representation. Indeed, this arm of the cortes was so uniformly vigilant in resisting any encroachment on the part of the crown, that it has been said to represent, more than any other, the liberties of the nation.<sup>49</sup> In some other particulars the Aragonese commons possessed an advantage over those of Castile. 1. By postponing their money grants to the conclusion of the session, and regulating them in some degree by the previous dispositions of the crown, they availed themselves of an important lever relinquished by the Castilian cortes.<sup>50</sup> 2. The kingdom of Aragon proper was circumscribed within too narrow limits to allow of such local jealousies and estrangements, growing out of an apparent diversity of interests, as existed in the neighbouring monarchy. Their representatives, therefore, were enabled to move with a more hearty concert, and on a more consistent line of policy. 3. Lastly, the acknowledged right to a seat in cortes

<sup>48</sup> As for example the *ciudadanos honrados* of Saragossa. (Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 14.) A *ciudadano honrado* in Catalonia, and I presume the same in Aragon, was a landowner, who lived on his rents without being engaged in commerce or trade of any kind, answering to the French *propriétaire*. See Capmany, *Mém. de Barcelona*, tom. ii. Apend. no. 30.

<sup>49</sup> Blancas, *Modo de proceder*

fol. 102.

<sup>50</sup> Not, however, it must be allowed, without a manly struggle in its defence, and which, in the early part of Charles V.'s reign, in 1525, wrenched a promise from the crown to answer all petitions definitely before the rising of cortes. The law still remains on the statute-book (*Recop. de las Leyes*, lib. 6, tit. 7, ley 8), a sad commentary on the faith of princes.



possessed by every city which had once been represented there, and this equally whether summoned or not, if we may credit Capmany,<sup>51</sup> must have gone far to preserve the popular branch from the melancholy state of dilapidation to which it was reduced in Castile by the arts of despotic princes. Indeed, the kings of Aragon, notwithstanding occasional excesses, seem never to have attempted any systematic invasion of the constitutional rights of their subjects. They well knew that the spirit of liberty was too high among them to endure it. When the queen of Alfonso the Fourth urged her husband, by quoting the example of her brother the king of Castile, to punish certain refractory citizens of Valencia, he prudently replied, "My people are free, and not so submissive as the Castilians. They respect me as their prince, and I hold them for good vassals and comrades."<sup>52</sup>

No part of the constitution of Aragon has excited more interest, or more deservedly, than the office of the *Justicia*, or Justice;<sup>53</sup> whose extraordinary functions were far from being limited to judicial matters, although in these his authority was supreme. The origin of this institution is affirmed to have been coeval with that of the constitution or frame of government itself.<sup>54</sup> If it were so, his authority may be said, in the language of Blancas, "to have slept in the scabbard" until the dissolution of the Union; when the control of a tumultuous aristocracy was exchanged for the mild and uniform operation of the law, administered by this, its supreme interpreter.

His most important duties may be briefly enumerated. He was authorized to pronounce on the validity of all royal letters and ordinances. He possessed, as has been

<sup>51</sup> *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 14.

<sup>52</sup> "Y nos tenemos á ellos como buenos vassallos y compañeros." Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 7, cap. 17.

<sup>53</sup> The noun "*justicia*" was made masculine for the accommodation

of this magistrate, who was styled "*el justicia*." Antonio Perez, *Relaciones*, fol. 91.

<sup>54</sup> Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 26.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 9.

said, concurrent jurisdiction with the cortes over all suits against the crown and its officers. Inferior judges were bound to consult him in all doubtful cases, and to abide by his opinion, as of "equal authority," in the words of an ancient jurist, "with the law itself."<sup>55</sup> An appeal lay to his tribunal from those of the territorial and royal judges.<sup>56</sup> He could even evoke a cause, while pending before them, into his own court, and secure the defendant from molestation on his giving surety for his appearance. By another process, he might remove a person under arrest from the place in which he had been confined by order of an inferior court, to the public prison appropriated to this purpose, there to abide his own examination of the legality of his detention. These two provisions, by which the precipitate and perhaps intemperate proceedings of subordinate judicatures were subjected to the revision of a dignified and dispassionate tribunal, might seem to afford sufficient security for personal liberty and property.<sup>57</sup>

In addition to these official functions, the Justice of Aragon was constituted a permanent counsellor of the sovereign, and, as such, was required to accompany him wherever he might reside. He was to advise the king on all constitutional questions of a doubtful complexion; and

<sup>55</sup> Molinus, apud Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 343, 344.—*Fueros y Observancias*, tom. i. fol. 21, 25.

<sup>56</sup> Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 536.—The principal of these jurisdictions was the royal audience, in which the king himself presided in person. *Ibid.*, p. 355.

<sup>57</sup> *Fueros y Observancias*, tom. i. fol. 23, 60 et seq., 155, lib. 3, tit. De *Manifestationibus Personarum*.—Also fol. 137 et seq., tit. 7, De *Firmis Juris*.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 350, 351.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 10, cap. 37.—The first of these processes was styled *firma de derecho*, the last, *manifestacion*. The Spanish writers are warm in their encomiums of these two provisions. "Quibus duobus præsidii," says

Blancas, "ita nostræ reipublicæ status continetur, ut nulla pars communium fortunarum tutelâ vacua relinquitur." Both this author and Zurita have amplified the details respecting them, which the reader may find extracted and in part translated by Mr. Hallam, *Middle Ages*, vol. ii. pp. 75—77, notes. When complex litigation became more frequent, the Justice was allowed one, afterwards two, and at a still later period, in 1528, five lieutenants, as they were called, who aided him in the discharge of his onerous duties.—Martel, *Forma de celebrar Cortes*, *Notas de Uztarroz*, pp. 92—96.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 361—366.

finally, on a new accession to the throne, it was his province to administer the coronation oath; this he performed with his head covered, and sitting, while the monarch, kneeling before him bare-headed solemnly promised to maintain the liberties of the kingdom,—a ceremony eminently symbolical of that superiority of law over prerogative which was so constantly asserted in Aragon.<sup>58</sup>

It was the avowed purpose of the Institution of the Justicia to interpose such an authority between the crown and the people as might suffice for the entire protection of the latter. This is the express import of one of the laws of Soprarbe, which, whatever be thought of their authenticity, are undeniably of very high antiquity.<sup>59</sup> This part of his duties is particularly insisted on by the most eminent juridical writers of the nation. Whatever estimate, therefore, may be formed of the real extent of his powers, as compared with those of similar functionaries in other states of Europe, there can be no doubt that this ostensible object of their creation, thus openly asserted, must have had a great tendency to enforce their practical operation. Accordingly we find repeated examples, in the history of Aragon, of successful interposition on the part of the Justice for the protection of individuals persecuted by the crown, and in defiance of every attempt at intimidation.<sup>60</sup> The kings of Aragon,

<sup>58</sup> Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 343, 346, 347. — Idem, *Coronaciones*, pp. 200, 202. — Antonio Perez, *Relaciones*, fol. 92. — Sempere cites the opinion of an ancient canonist, Canellas, bishop of Huesca, as conclusive against the existence of the vast powers imputed by later commentators to the Justicia. (*Histoire des Cortés*, chap. 19.) The vague, rhapsodical tone of the extract shows it to be altogether undeserving of the emphasis laid on it; not to add that it was written more than a century before the period when the Justicia possessed the

influence or the legal authority claimed for him by Aragonese writers,—by Blancas in particular, from whom Sempere borrowed the passage at second hand.

<sup>59</sup> The law alluded to runs thus: —“*Ne quid autem damni detrimtive leges aut libertates nostras patiantur, iudex quidam medius adesto, ad quem a Rege provocare, si aliquem læserit, injuriasque arcere si quas forsan Reipub. intulerit, jus fasque esto.*” Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 26.

<sup>60</sup> Such instances may be found in Zurita, *Anales*, tom. ii. fol. 385,

chafed by this opposition, procured the resignation or deposition, on more than one occasion, of the obnoxious magistrate.<sup>61</sup> But, as such an exercise of prerogative must have been altogether subversive of an independent discharge of the duties of this office, it was provided by a statute of Alfonso the Fifth, in 1442, that the Justice should continue in office during life, removable only, on sufficient cause, by the king and the cortes united.<sup>62</sup>

Several provisions were enacted in order to secure the nation more effectually against the abuse of the high trust reposed in this officer. He was to be taken from the equestrian order, which, as intermediate between the high nobility and the people, was less likely to be influenced by undue partiality to either. He could not be selected from the *ricos hombres*, since this class was exempted from corporal punishment, while the Justice was made responsible to the cortes for the faithful discharge of his duties, under penalty of death.<sup>63</sup> As this supervision of the whole legislature was found unwieldy in practice, it was superseded, after various modifications, by a commission of members elected from each one of the four estates, empowered to sit every year in Saragossa, with authority to investigate the charges preferred against the Justice, and to pronounce sentence upon him.<sup>64</sup>

414.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 109, 202—206, 214, 225.—When Ximenes Cerdan, the independent Justice of John I., removed certain citizens from the prison in which they had been unlawfully confined by the king, in defiance equally of that officer's importunities and menaces, the inhabitants of Saragossa, says Abarca, came out in a body to receive him on his return to the city, and greeted him as the defender of their ancient and natural liberties. (*Reyes de Aragon*, tom. i. fol. 155.) So openly did the Aragonese support their magistrate

in the boldest exercise of his authority.

<sup>61</sup> This occurred once under Peter III., and twice under Alfonso V. (Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iii. fol. 255.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 174, 489, 499.) The Justice was appointed by the king.

<sup>62</sup> *Fueros y Observancias*, tom. i. fol. 22.

<sup>63</sup> *Ibid.*, fol. 25.

<sup>64</sup> *Ibid.*, tom. i. lib. 3, tit. *Forum Inquisitionis Officii Just. Arag.*, and tom. ii. fol. 37—41.—Blancas, *Commentarii*, pp. 391—399.—The examination was conducted in the

The Aragonese writers are prodigal of their encomiums on the pre-eminence and dignity of this functionary, whose office might seem, indeed, but a doubtful expedient for balancing the authority of the sovereign, depending for its success less on any legal powers confided to it than on the efficient and steady support of public opinion. Fortunately the Justice of Aragon received such support, and was thus enabled to carry the original design of the institution into effect, to check the usurpations of the crown, as well as to control the license of the nobility and the people. A series of learned and independent magistrates, by the weight of their own character, gave additional dignity to the office. The people, familiarized with the benignant operation of the law, referred to peaceful arbitration those great political questions which in other countries, at this period, must have been settled by sanguinary revolution.<sup>65</sup> While, in the rest of Europe, the law seemed only the web to ensnare the weak, the Aragonese historians could exult in the reflection that the fearless administration of justice in their land "protected the weak equally with the strong, the foreigner with the native." Well might their legislature assert that the

first instance before a court of four inquisitors, as they were termed, who, after a patient hearing of both sides, reported the result of their examination to a council of seventeen, chosen like them from the cortes, from whose decision there was no appeal. No lawyer was admitted into this council, lest the law might be distorted by verbal quibbles, says Blancas. The council, however, was allowed the advice of two of the profession. They voted by ballot, and the majority decided. Such, after various modifications, were the regulations ultimately adopted in 1461, or rather 1467. Robertson appears to have confounded the council of seventeen with the court of inquisition. See

his *History of Charles V.*, vol. i. note 31.

<sup>65</sup> Probably no nation of the period would have displayed a temperance similar to that exhibited by the Aragonese at the beginning of the fifteenth century, in 1412; when the people, having been split into factions by a contested succession, agreed to refer the dispute to a committee of judges, elected equally from the three great provinces of the kingdom; who, after an examination conducted with all the forms of law, and on the same equitable principles as would have guided the determination of a private suit, delivered an opinion, which was received as obligatory on the whole nation.

value of their liberties more than counterbalanced "the poverty of the nation and the sterility of their soil."<sup>66</sup>

The governments of Valencia and Catalonia, which, as has been already remarked, were administered independently of each other after their consolidation into one monarchy, bore a very near resemblance to that of Aragon.<sup>67</sup> No institution, however, corresponding in its functions with that of the Justicia, seems to have obtained in either.<sup>68</sup> Valencia, which had derived a large portion of its primitive population, after the conquest, from Aragon, preserved the most intimate relations with the parent kingdom, and was constantly at its side during the tempestuous season of the Union. The Catalans were peculiarly jealous of their exclusive privileges, and their civil institutions wore a more democratical aspect than those of any other of the confederated states; circumstances which led to important results that fall within the compass of our narrative.<sup>69</sup>

<sup>66</sup> See Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 8, cap. 29,—and the admirable sentiments cited by Blancas from the parliamentary acts in 1451. (*Commentarii*, p. 350.) From this independent position must be excepted, indeed, the lower classes of the peasantry, who seem to have been in a more abject state in Aragon than in most other feudal countries. "Era tan absoluto su dominio [of their lords] que podian matar con hambre, sed, y frio a sus vasallos de servidumbre." (*Asso y Manuel*, *Instituciones*, p. 40,—also Blancas, *Commentarii*, p. 309.) These serfs extorted, in an insurrection, the recognition of certain rights from their masters, on condition of paying a specific tax; whence the name *villanos de parada*.

<sup>67</sup> Although the legislatures of the different states of the crown of Aragon were never united in one body when convened in the same town, yet they were so averse to all appearance of incorporation, that the monarch frequently appointed for the places of meeting three dis-

tinged towns, within their respective territories, and contiguous, in order that he might pass the more expeditiously from one to the other. See Blancas, *Modo de proceder*, cap. 4.

<sup>68</sup> It is indeed true that Peter III., at the request of the Valencians, appointed an Aragonese knight Justice of that kingdom, in 1283. (*Zurita*, *Anales*, tom. i. fol. 281.) But we find no further mention of this officer, or of the office. Nor have I met with any notice of it in the details of the Valencian constitution, compiled by Capmany from various writers. (*Práctica y Estilo*, pp. 161—208.) An anecdote of Ximenes Cerdan, recorded by Blancas (*Commentarii*, p. 214), may lead one to infer that the places in Valencia which received the laws of Aragon acknowledged the jurisdiction of its Justicia.

<sup>69</sup> Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, pp. 62—214.—Capmany has collected copious materials, from a variety of authors, for the parlia-

The city of Barcelona, which originally gave its name to the county of which it was the capital, was distinguished from a very early period by ample municipal privileges.<sup>70</sup> After the union with Aragon in the twelfth century, the monarchs of the latter kingdom extended towards it the same liberal legislation; so that, by the thirteenth, Barcelona had reached a degree of commercial prosperity rivalling that of any of the Italian republics. She divided with them the lucrative commerce with Alexandria; and her port, thronged with foreigners from every nation, became a principal emporium in the Mediterranean for the spices, drugs, perfumes, and other rich commodities of the East, whence they were diffused over the interior of Spain and the European continent.<sup>71</sup> Her consuls, and her commercial factories, were established in every considerable port in the Mediterranean and in the north of Europe.<sup>72</sup> The natural products of her soil, and her various domestic fabrics, supplied her with abundant articles of export. Fine wool was imported by her in

mentary history of Catalonia and Valencia, forming a striking contrast to the scantiness of information he was able to glean respecting Castile. The indifference of the Spanish writers, till very recently, to the constitutional antiquities of the latter kingdom, so much more important than the other states of the Peninsula, is altogether inexplicable.

<sup>70</sup> Corbera, *Cataluña ilustrada* (Nápoles, 1678), lib. 1, c. 17.—*Petrus de Marca* cites a charter of Raymond Berenger, count of Barcelona, to the city, as ancient as 1025, confirming its former privileges. See *Marca Hispanica*, sive *Limes Hispanicus* (Parisii, 1688), Apend. no. 198.

<sup>71</sup> Navarrete, *Discurso histórico*, apud *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. v. pp. 81, 82, 112, 113.—Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. i. part. 1, pp. 4, 8, 10, 11.

<sup>72</sup> *Mem. de Barcelona*, part. 1, cap. 2, 3.—Capmany has given a register of the consuls, and of the numerous stations at which they were established throughout Africa and Europe, in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries (tom. ii. Apend. no. 23). These officers, during the Middle Ages, discharged much more important duties than at the present day, if we except those few residing with the Barbary powers. They settled the disputes arising between their countrymen in the ports where they were established; they protected the trade of their own nation with these ports; and were employed in adjusting commercial relations, treaties, etc. In short, they filled in some sort the post of a modern ambassador, or resident minister, at a period when this functionary was only employed on extraordinary occasions.

considerable quantities from England in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, and returned there manufactured into cloth; an exchange of commodities the reverse of that existing between the two nations at the present day.<sup>73</sup> Barcelona claims the merit of having established the first bank of exchange and deposit in Europe, in 1401; it was devoted to the accommodation of foreigners as well as of her own citizens. She claims the glory, too, of having compiled the most ancient written code, among the moderns, of maritime law now extant, digested from the usages of commercial nations, and which formed the basis of the mercantile jurisprudence of Europe during the Middle Ages.<sup>74</sup>

The wealth which flowed in upon Barcelona, as the result of her activity and enterprise, was evinced by her numerous public works, her docks, arsenal, warehouses, exchange, hospitals, and other constructions of general utility. Strangers, who visited Spain in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, expatiate on the magnificence of this city, its commodious private edifices, the cleanliness of its streets and public squares (a virtue by no means usual in that day), and on the amenity of its gardens and cultivated environs.<sup>75</sup>

But the peculiar glory of Barcelona was the freedom of

<sup>73</sup> Macpherson, *Annals of Commerce* (London, 1825), vol. i. p. 655.

—The woollen manufacture constituted the principal staple of Barcelona (Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. i. p. 241). The English sovereigns encouraged the Catalan traders by considerable immunities to frequent their ports during the fourteenth century. Macpherson, *ubi supra*, pp. 502, 551, 588.

<sup>74</sup> Heeren, *Essai sur l'Influence des Croisades*, traduit par Villers (Paris, 1808), p. 376.—Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. i. p. 213, also pp. 170—180.—Capmany fixes the date of the publication of the

*Consulado del Mar* at the middle of the thirteenth century, under James I. He discusses and refutes the claims of the Pisans to precedence in this codification. See his *Preliminary Discourse* to the *Costumbres marítimas de Barcelona*.

<sup>75</sup> Navagiero, *Viaggio*, fol. 3.—L. Marineo styles it “the most beautiful city he had ever seen, or, to speak more correctly, in the whole world.” (*Cosas memorables*, fol. 18.) Alfonso V., in one of his ordinances, in 1438, calls it “*urbs venerabilis in egregiis templis, tuta ut in optimis, pulchra in cæteris ædificiis*,” etc. Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. ii. *Apend.* no. 13.



her municipal institutions. Her government consisted of a senate or council of one hundred, and a body of *regidores* or counsellors, as they were styled, varying at times from four to six in number; the former intrusted with the legislative, the latter with the executive, functions of administration. A large proportion of these bodies were selected from the merchants, tradesmen, and mechanics of the city. They were invested not merely with municipal authority, but with many of the rights of sovereignty. They entered into commercial treaties with foreign powers; superintended the defence of the city in time of war; provided for the security of trade; granted letters of reprisal against any nation who might violate it; and raised and appropriated the public moneys for the construction of useful works, or the encouragement of such commercial adventures as were too hazardous or expensive for individual enterprise.<sup>76</sup>

The counsellors, who presided over the municipality, were complimented with certain honorary privileges, not even accorded to the nobility. They were addressed by the title of *magníficos*; were seated, with their heads covered, in the presence of royalty; were preceded by mace-bearers, or lictors, in their progress through the country; and deputies from their body to the court were admitted on the footing and received the honours of foreign ambassadors.<sup>77</sup> These, it will be recollected, were plebeians, —merchants and mechanics. Trade never was esteemed a degradation in Catalonia, as it came to be in Castile.<sup>78</sup> The professors of the different arts, as they were called, organized into guilds or companies, constituted so many independent associations, whose members were eligible to the highest municipal offices. And such was the import-

<sup>76</sup> Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, Apend. no. 24. — The senate or great council, though styled the "one hundred," seems to have fluctuated at different times between that number and double its amount.

<sup>77</sup> Corbera, *Cataluña ilustrada*, p. 84. — Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. ii. Apend. no. 29.

<sup>78</sup> Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. i. part. 3, p. 40, — tom. iii. part. 2, pp. 317, 318.

ance attached to these offices that the nobility, in many instances, resigning the privileges of their rank,—a necessary preliminary,—were desirous of being enrolled among the candidates for them.<sup>79</sup> One cannot but observe in the peculiar organization of this little commonwealth, and in the equality assumed by every class of its citizens, a close analogy to the constitutions of the Italian republics, which the Catalans, having become familiar with in their intimate commercial intercourse with Italy, may have adopted as the model of their own.

Under the influence of these democratic institutions, the burghers of Barcelona, and indeed of Catalonia in general, which enjoyed more or less of a similar freedom, assumed a haughty independence of character beyond what existed among the same class in other parts of Spain; and this, combined with the martial daring fostered by a life of maritime adventure and warfare, made them impatient not merely of oppression, but of contradiction, on the part of their sovereigns, who have experienced more frequent and more sturdy resistance from this quarter of their dominions than from every other.<sup>80</sup> Navagiero, the Venetian ambassador to Spain, early in the sixteenth century, although a republican himself, was so struck with what he deemed the insubordination of the Barcelonians,

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., tom. i. part. 2, p. 187,—tom. ii. Apend. 30.—Capmany says *principal nobleza*; yet it may be presumed that much the larger proportion of these noble candidates for office was drawn from the inferior class of the privileged orders, the knights and hidalgos. The great barons of Catalonia, fortified with extensive immunities and wealth, lived on their estates in the country, probably little relishing the levelling spirit of the burghers of Barcelona.

<sup>80</sup> Barcelona revolted and was twice besieged by the royal arms under John II., once under Philip

IV., twice under Charles II., and twice under Philip V. This last siege, 1713—14, in which it held out against the combined forces of France and Spain under Marshal Berwick, is one of the most memorable events in the eighteenth century. An interesting account of the siege may be found in Coxe's *Memoirs of the Kings of Spain of the House of Bourbon* (London, 1815), vol. ii. chap. 21.—The late monarch, Ferdinand VII., also had occasion to feel that the independent spirit of the Catalans did not become extinct with their ancient constitution.

that he asserts, "The inhabitants have so many privileges that the king scarcely retains any authority over them: their liberty," he adds, "should rather go by the name of license."<sup>81</sup> One example, among many, may be given of the tenacity with which they adhered to their most inconsiderable immunities.

Ferdinand the First, in 1416, being desirous, in consequence of the exhausted state of the finances on his coming to the throne, to evade the payment of a certain tax or subsidy customarily paid by the kings of Aragon to the city of Barcelona, sent for the president of the council, John Fiveller, to require the consent of that body to this measure. The magistrate, having previously advised with his colleagues, determined to encounter any hazard, says Zurita, rather than compromise the rights of the city. He reminded the king of his coronation oath, expressed his regret that he was willing so soon to deviate from the good usages of his predecessors, and plainly told him that he and his comrades would never betray the liberties intrusted to them. Ferdinand, indignant at this language, ordered the patriot to withdraw into another apartment, where he remained in much uncertainty as to the consequences of his temerity. But the king was dissuaded from violent measures, if he ever contemplated them, by the representation of his courtiers, who warned him not to reckon too much on the patience of the people, who bore small affection to his person, from *the little familiarity with which he had treated them* in comparison with their preceding monarchs, and who were already in arms to protect their magistrate. In consequence of these suggestions, Ferdinand deemed it prudent to release the counsellor, and withdrew abruptly from the city on the ensuing day, disgusted at the ill success of his enterprise.<sup>82</sup>

<sup>81</sup> Viaggio, fol. 3.

<sup>82</sup> Abarca, Reyes de Aragon, tom. ii. fol. 183.—Zurita, Anales,

tom. iii. lib. 12, cap. 59.—The king turned his back on the magistrates, who came to pay their respects to

The Aragonese monarchs well understood the value of their Catalan dominions, which sustained a proportion of the public burdens equal in amount to that of both the other states of the kingdom.<sup>83</sup> Notwithstanding the mortifications which they occasionally experienced from this quarter, therefore, they uniformly extended towards it the most liberal protection. A register of the various customs paid in the ports of Catalonia, compiled in 1413, under the above-mentioned Ferdinand, exhibits a discriminating legislation, extraordinary in an age when the true principles of financial policy were so little understood.<sup>84</sup> Under James the First, in 1227, a navigation act, limited in its application, was published, and another under Alfonso the Fifth, in 1454, embracing all the dominions of Aragon; thus preceding by some centuries the celebrated ordinance to which England owes so much of her commercial grandeur.<sup>85</sup>

The brisk concussion given to the minds of the Catalans in the busy career in which they were engaged seems to have been favourable to the development of poetical talent, in the same manner as it was in Italy. Catalonia may divide with Provence the glory of being the region where the voice of song was first awakened in modern Europe. Whatever may be the relative claims of the two countries

him on learning his intention of quitting the city. He seems, however, to have had the magnanimity to forgive, perhaps to admire, the independent conduct of Fiveller; for at his death, which occurred very soon after, we find this citizen mentioned as one of his executors. See Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. ii. *Append.* 29.

<sup>83</sup> The taxes were assessed in the ratio of one-sixth on Valencia, two-sixths on Aragon, and three-sixths on Catalonia. See Martel, *Forma de celebrar Cortes*, cap. 71.

<sup>84</sup> See the items specified by Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*,

tom. i. pp. 231, 232.

<sup>85</sup> *Idem*, tom. i. pp. 221, 234.—Capmany states that the statute of Alfonso V. prohibited "all foreign ships from taking cargoes in the ports of his dominions." (See also *Colec. Dipl.*, tom. ii. no. 187.) The object of this law, like that of the British Navigation Act, was the encouragement of the national marine. It deviated far, however, from the sagacious policy of the latter, which imposed no restriction on the exportation of domestic produce to foreign countries, except, indeed, its own colonies.

to precedence in this respect,<sup>86</sup> it is certain that under the family of Barcelona the Provençal of the south of France reached its highest perfection; and, when the tempest of persecution in the beginning of the thirteenth century fell on the lovely valleys of that unhappy country, its minstrels found a hospitable asylum in the court of the kings of Aragon, many of whom not only protected, but cultivated the *gay science* with considerable success.<sup>87</sup> Their names have descended to us, as well as those of less illustrious troubadours, whom Petrarch and his contemporaries did not disdain to imitate;<sup>88</sup> but their compositions, for the most part, lie still buried in those cemeteries of the intellect so numerous in Spain, and call loudly for the diligence of some Sainte-Palaye or Raynouard to disinter them.<sup>89</sup>

The languishing condition of the poetic art, at the close of the fourteenth century, induced John the First, who

<sup>86</sup> Andres, *Dell' Origine, de' Progressi, e dello Stato attuale d'ogni Letteratura* (Venezia, 1783), part. i. cap. 11.—Lampillas, *Saggio storico-apologetico della Letteratura Spagnuola* (Genova, 1778), part. i. dia. 6, sec. 7.—Andres conjectures, and Lampillas decides, in favour of Catalonia. *Arcades ambo*; and the latter critic the worst possible authority on all questions of national preference.

<sup>87</sup> Velazquez, *Orígenes, de la Poesía Castellana* (Málaga, 1797), pp. 20—22.—Andres, *Letteratura*, part. i. cap. 11.—Alfonso II., Peter II., Peter III., James I., Peter IV., have all left compositions in the Limousin tongue behind them; the three former in verse, the two latter in prose, setting forth the history of their own time. For a particular account of their respective productions, see Latassa (*Escritores Aragoneses*, tom. i. pp. 175—179, 185—189, 222, 224, 242—248,—tom. ii. p. 28), also Lanuza (*Historias eclesiásticas y seculares de Aragon* (Zaragoza, 1622), tom. i. p. 553). The Chronicle of James I.

is particularly esteemed for its fidelity.

<sup>88</sup> Whether Jordi stole from Petrarch, or Petrarch from Jordi, has been matter of hot debate between the Spanish and French *littérateurs*. Sanchez, after a careful examination of the evidence, candidly decides against his countryman. (*Poesías Castellanas*, tom. i. pp. 81—84.) A competent critic in the *Retrospective Review* (No. 7, art. 2), who enjoyed the advantage over Sanchez of perusing a MS. copy of Jordi's original poem, makes out a very plausible argument in favour of the originality of the Valencian poet. After all, as the amount stolen, or, to speak more reverently, borrowed, does not exceed half a dozen lines, it is not of vital importance to the reputation of either poet.

<sup>89</sup> The Abate Andres lamented, fifty years ago, that the worms and moths should be allowed to revel among the precious relics of ancient Castilian literature. (*Letteratura*, tom. ii. p. 306.) Have their revels been disturbed yet?

mingled somewhat of the ridiculous even with his most respectable tastes, to depute a solemn embassy to the king of France, requesting that a commission might be detached from the Floral Academy of Toulouse, into Spain, to erect there a similar institution. This was accordingly done, and the Consistory of Barcelona was organized in 1390. The kings of Aragon endowed it with funds, and with a library valuable for that day, presiding over its meetings in person, and distributing the poetical premiums with their own hands. During the troubles consequent on the death of Martin, this establishment fell into decay, until it was again revived, on the accession of Ferdinand the First, by the celebrated Henry, marquis of Villena, who transplanted it to Tortosa.<sup>90</sup>

The marquis, in his treatise on the *gaya sciencia*, details with becoming gravity the pompous ceremonial observed in his academy on the event of a public celebration. The topics of discussion were "the praises of the Virgin, love, arms, and other good usages." The performances of the candidates, "inscribed on parchment of various colours, richly enamelled with gold and silver, and beautifully illuminated," were publicly recited, and then referred to a committee, who made solemn oath to decide impartially and according to the rules of the art. On the delivery of the verdict, a wreath of gold was deposited on the victorious poem, which was registered in the academic archives; and the fortunate troubadour, greeted with a magnificent prize, was escorted to the royal palace amid a *cortége* of minstrelsy and chivalry; "thus manifesting to the world," says the marquis, "the superiority which God and nature have assigned to genius over dulness."<sup>91</sup>

The influence of such an institution in awakening a poetic

<sup>90</sup> Mayans y Siscar, *Orígenes de la Lengua Española* (Madrid, 1737), tom. ii. pp. 323, 324.—Crescimbeni, *Istoria della volgar Poesia* (Venezia, 1731), tom. ii. p. 170.—Mariana,

*Hist. de España*, tom. i. p. 183.—Velazquez, *Poesía Castellana*, pp. 23, 24.

<sup>91</sup> Mayans y Siscar, *Orígenes*, tom. ii. pp. 325—327.

spirit is at best very questionable. Whatever effect an academy may have in stimulating the researches of science, the inspirations of genius must come unbidden ;

"Adflata est numine quando  
Jam propiore dei."

The Catalans, indeed, seem to have been of this opinion ; for they suffered the Consistory of Tortosa to expire with its founder. Somewhat later, in 1430, was established the University of Barcelona, placed under the direction of the municipality, and endowed by the city with ample funds for instruction in the various departments of law, theology, medicine, and the belles-lettres. This institution survived until the commencement of the last century.<sup>92</sup>

During the first half of the fifteenth century, long after the genuine race of the troubadours had passed away, the Provençal or Limousin verse was carried to its highest excellence by the poets of Valencia.<sup>93</sup> It would be presumptuous for any one, who has not made the *romance* dialects his particular study, to attempt a discriminating criticism of these compositions, so much of the merit of which necessarily consists in the almost impalpable beauties of style and expression. The Spaniards, however, applaud, in the verses of Ausias March, the same musical combinations of sound, and the same tone of moral melancholy, which pervade the productions of Petrarch.<sup>94</sup> In prose, too, they have (to borrow the words of Andres) their

<sup>92</sup> Andres, *Letteratura*, tom. iv. pp. 85, 86. — Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. ii. Apend. no. 16. — There were thirty-two chairs, or professorships, founded and maintained at the expense of the city : six of theology ; six of jurisprudence ; five of medicine ; six of philosophy ; four of grammar ; one of rhetoric ; one of surgery ; one of anatomy ; one of Hebrew, and another of Greek. It is singular that none should have existed for

the Latin, so much more currently studied at that time, and of so much more practical application always than either of the other ancient languages.

<sup>93</sup> The Valencian, "the sweetest and most graceful of the Limousin dialects," says Mayans y Siscar, *Orígenes*, tom. i. p. 58.

<sup>94</sup> Nicolas Antonio, *Bibliotheca Hispana Vetus* (Matriti, 1788), tom. ii. p. 146. — Andres, *Letteratura*, tom. iv. p. 87.

Boccaccio in Martorell, whose fiction of "Tirante el Blanco" is honoured by the commendation of the curate in Don Quixote, as "the best book in the world of the kind, since the knights-errant in it eat, drink, sleep, and die quietly in their beds, like other folk, and very unlike most heroes of romance." The productions of these, and some other of their distinguished contemporaries, obtained a general circulation very early by means of the recently invented art of printing, and subsequently passed into repeated editions.<sup>95</sup> But their language has long since ceased to be the language of literature. On the union of the two crowns of Castile and Aragon, the dialect of the former became that of the court and of the Muses. The beautiful Provençal, once more rich and melodious than any other idiom in the Peninsula, was abandoned as a *patois* to the lower orders of the Catalans, who, with the language, may boast that they also have inherited the noble principles of freedom which distinguished their ancestors.

\* Cervantes, Don Quixote (ed. de Pellicer, Madrid, 1787), tom. i. p. 62.—Mendez, *Typographia Española* (Madrid, 1796), pp. 72—75.—Andree, *Letteratura*, ubi supra.—Pellicer seems to take Martorell's word in good earnest, that his book is only a version from the Castilian. The names of some of the most noted troubadours are collected by Velazquez, *Poesía Castellana* (pp.

20—24.—Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. ii. Apend. no. 5). Some extracts and pertinent criticisms on their productions may be found by the English reader in the *Retrospective Review*. (No. 7, art. 2.) It is to be regretted that the author has not redeemed his pledge of continuing his notices to the Castilian era of Spanish poetry.

---

The influence of free institutions in Aragon is perceptible in the familiarity displayed by its writers with public affairs, and in the freedom with which they have discussed the organization and general economy of its government. The creation of the office of national chronicler, under Charles V., gave wider scope to the development of historic talent. Among the most conspicuous of these historiographers was Jerome Blancas, several of whose productions, as the "Coronaciones de los Reyes," "Modo de proceder en Cortes," and "Commentarii Rerum Aragonensium," especially the last, have been repeatedly quoted in the preceding section. This work presents a view of the different orders of the state, and particularly of the office of the Justicia, with their peculiar functions and privileges. The author, omitting the usual details of history, has devoted himself to the illustration of the constitutional antiquities of his country, in the



execution of which he has shown a sagacity and erudition equally profound. His sentiments breathe a generous love of freedom, which one would scarcely suppose to have existed, and still less to have been promulgated, under Philip II. His style is distinguished by the purity and even elegance of its latinity. The first edition, being that which I have used, appeared in 1588, in folio, at Saragossa, executed with much typographical beauty. The work was afterwards incorporated into Schottus's "*Hispania Illustrata*."—Blancas, after having held his office for ten years, died in his native city of Saragossa, in 1590.

Jerome Martel, from whose little treatise, "*Forma de celebrar Cortes*," I have also liberally cited, was appointed public historiographer in 1597. His continuation of Zurita's *Annals*, which he left unpublished at his decease, was never admitted to the honours of the press, because, says his biographer, Uztarroz, *verdades lastiman*; a reason as creditable to the author as disgraceful to the government.

A third writer, and the one chiefly relied on for the account of Catalonia, is Don Antonio Capmany. His "*Memorias históricas de Barcelona*" (5 tom. 4to, Madrid, 1779—1792) may be thought somewhat too discursive and circumstantial for his subject; but it is hardly right to quarrel with information so rare and painfully collected; the sin of exuberance at any rate is much less frequent, and more easily corrected, than that of sterility. His work is a vast repertory of facts relating to the commerce, manufactures, general policy, and public prosperity, not only of Barcelona, but of Catalonia. It is written with an independent and liberal spirit, which may be regarded as affording the best commentary on the genius of the institutions which he celebrates.—Capmany closed his useful labours at Madrid, in 1810, at the age of fifty-six.

Notwithstanding the interesting character of the Aragonese constitution, and the amplitude of materials for its history, the subject has been hitherto neglected, as far as I am aware, by continental writers. Robertson and Hallam, more especially the latter, have given such a view of its prominent features to the English reader as must, I fear, deprive the sketch which I have attempted, in a great degree, of novelty. To these names must now be added that of the author of the "*History of Spain and Portugal*" (*Cabinet Cyclopædia*), whose work, published since the preceding pages were written, contains much curious and learned disquisition on the early jurisprudence and municipal institutions of both Castile and Aragon.

# GENEALOGY OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.

Henry II.  
of Trastamara,  
d. 1379.

Leonora  
of Aragon.

John I.  
of Castile,  
d. 1390.

Catharine  
of Lancaster.

Henry III.  
of Castile,  
d. 1406.

Ferdinand I.  
of Aragon,  
d. 1416.

Leonora  
of Albuquerque.

Mary  
of Aragon,  
(1st wife.)

John II.  
of Castile,  
d. 1454.

Isabella  
of Portugal,  
(2nd wife.)

John  
Henriquez,  
(2nd wife.)

Henry IV.  
of Castile,  
d. 1474.

Alfonso,  
d. 1468.

ISABELLA  
THE CATHOLIC.

Carlos, Blanche. Leonora.  
d. 1461.

FERDINAND  
THE CATHOLIC.

CHILD  
MEMORIAL  
LIBRARY

## PART FIRST.

1406—1492.

THE PERIOD WHEN THE DIFFERENT KINGDOMS OF SPAIN WERE FIRST UNITED UNDER ONE MONARCHY, AND A THOROUGH REFORM WAS INTRODUCED INTO THEIR INTERNAL ADMINISTRATION; OR THE PERIOD EXHIBITING MOST FULLY THE DOMESTIC POLICY OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.



## CHAPTER I.

### STATE OF CASTILE AT THE BIRTH OF ISABELLA.—REIGN OF JOHN II. OF CASTILE.

1406—1454.

Revolution of Trastamara.—Accession of John II.—Rise of Alvaro de Luna.—Jealousy of the Nobles.—Oppression of the Commons.—Its Consequences.—Early Literature of Castile.—Its Encouragement under John II.—Decline of Alvaro de Luna.—His Fall.—Death of John II.—Birth of Isabella.

THE fierce civil feuds which preceded the accession of the house of Trastamara in 1368 were as fatal to the nobility of Castile as the wars of the Roses were to that of England. There was scarcely a family of note which had not poured out its blood on the field or the scaffold. The influence of the aristocracy was, of course, much diminished with its numbers. The long wars with foreign powers, which a disputed succession entailed on the country, were almost equally prejudicial to the authority of the monarch, who was willing to buoy up his tottering title by the most liberal concession of privileges to the people. Thus the commons rose in proportion as the crown and the privileged orders descended in the scale; and, when the claims of the several competitors for the throne were finally extinguished, and the tranquillity of the kingdom was secured, by the union of Henry the Third with Catharine of Lancaster at the close of the fourteenth century, the third estate may be said to have attained to the highest degree of political consequence which it ever reached in Castile.

The healthful action of the body politic, during the long interval of peace that followed this auspicious union, en-

abled it to repair the strength which had been wasted in its murderous civil contests. The ancient channels of commerce were again opened; various new manufactures were introduced, and carried to a considerable perfection;<sup>1</sup> wealth, with its usual concomitants, elegance and comfort, flowed in apace; and the nation promised itself a long career of prosperity under a monarch who respected the laws in his own person and administered them with vigour. All these fair hopes were blasted by the premature death of Henry the Third, before he had reached his twenty-eighth year. The crown devolved on his son John the Second, then a minor, whose reign was one of the longest and the most disastrous in the Castilian annals.<sup>2</sup> As it was that, however, which gave birth to Isabella, the illustrious subject of our narrative, it will be necessary to pass its principal features under review, in order to obtain a correct idea of her government.

The wise administration of the regency, during a long minority, postponed the season of calamity; and, when it at length arrived, it was concealed for some time from the eyes of the vulgar by the pomp and brilliant festivities which distinguished the court of the young monarch. His indisposition, if not incapacity, for business, however, gradually became manifest; and, while he resigned himself without reserve to pleasures, which it must be confessed were not unfrequently of a refined and intellectual character, he abandoned the government of his kingdom to the control of favourites.

The most conspicuous of these was Alvaro de Luna, grand master of St. James, and constable of Castile. This remarkable person, the illegitimate descendant of a noble house in Aragon, was introduced very early as a page into the royal household, where he soon distinguished himself

<sup>1</sup> Sempere y Guarinos, *Historia del Luxo*, tom. i. p. 171.

<sup>2</sup> *Crónica de Enrique III.*, ed. de

la Academia (Madrid, 1780), *passim*.—*Crónica de Juan II.* (Valencia, 1779), p. 6.

by his amiable manners and personal accomplishments. He could ride, fence, dance, sing, if we may credit his loyal biographer, better than any other cavalier in the court; while his proficiency in music and poetry recommended him most effectually to the favour of the monarch, who professed to be a connoisseur in both. With these showy qualities, Alvaro de Luna united others of a more dangerous complexion. His insinuating address easily conciliated confidence, and enabled him to master the motives of others, while his own were masked by consummate dissimulation. He was as fearless in executing his ambitious schemes as he was cautious in devising them. He was indefatigable in his application to business, so that John, whose aversion to it we have noticed, willingly reposed on him the whole burden of government. The king, it was said, only signed, while the constable dictated and executed. He was the only channel of promotion to public office, whether secular or ecclesiastical. As his cupidity was insatiable, he perverted the great trust confided to him to the acquisition of the principal posts in the government for himself or his kindred, and at his death is said to have left a larger amount of treasure than was possessed by the whole nobility of the kingdom. He affected a magnificence of state corresponding with his elevated rank. The most considerable grandes in Castile contended for the honour of having their sons, after the fashion of the time, educated in his family. When he rode abroad he was accompanied by a numerous retinue of knights and nobles, which left his sovereign's court comparatively deserted; so that royalty might be said on all occasions, whether of business or pleasure, to be eclipsed by the superior splendours of its satellite.<sup>3</sup> The history of

<sup>3</sup> Crónica de Alvaro de Luna, ed. de la Academia (Madrid, 1784), tit. 3, 5, 68, 74.—Guzman, *Generaciones y Semblanzas* (Madrid, 1775), cap.

33, 34.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, en *Anales históricos*, tom. i. fol. 227.—Crónica de Juan II., *passim*. —He possessed sixty towns and

this man may remind the English reader of that of Cardinal Wolsey, whom he somewhat resembled in character, and still more in his extraordinary fortunes.

It may easily be believed that the haughty aristocracy of Castile would ill brook this exaltation of an individual so inferior to them in birth, and who withal did not wear his honours with exemplary meekness. John's blind partiality for his favourite is the key to all the troubles which agitated the kingdom during the last thirty years of his reign. The disgusted nobles organized confederacies for the purpose of deposing the minister. The whole nation took sides in this unhappy struggle. The heats of civil discord were still further heightened by the interference of the royal house of Aragon, which, descended from a common stock with that of Castile, was proprietor of large estates in the latter country. The wretched monarch beheld even his own son Henry, the heir to the crown, enlisted in the opposite faction, and saw himself reduced to the extremity of shedding the blood of his subjects in the fatal battle of Olmedo. Still the address, or the good fortune, of the constable enabled him to triumph over his enemies; and, although he was obliged occasionally to yield to the violence of the storm and withdraw a while from the court, he was soon recalled and reinstated in all his former dignities. This melancholy infatuation of the king is imputed by the writers of that age to sorcery on the part of the favourite.<sup>4</sup> But the only witchcraft which he used was the ascendancy of a strong mind over a weak one.

fortresses, and kept three thousand lances constantly in pay. Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS.

<sup>4</sup> Guzman, *Generaciones*, cap. 33. —*Crónica de Don Juan II.*, p. 491, et alibi.—His complaisance for the favourite, indeed, must be admitted, if we believe Guzman, to have been of a most extraordinary kind: "E

lo que con mayor maravilla se puede decir é oír, que aun en los autos naturales se dió así á la ordenanza del condestable, que seyendo él mozo bien complexionado, é teniendo á la reyna su muger moza y hermosa, si el condestable se lo contradixiese, no iria á dormir á su cama della." *Ubi supra*.



During this long-protracted anarchy, the people lost whatever they had gained in the two preceding reigns. By the advice of his minister, who seems to have possessed a full measure of the insolence so usual with persons suddenly advanced from low to elevated station, the king not only abandoned the constitutional policy of his predecessors in regard to the commons, but entered on the most arbitrary and systematic violation of their rights. Their deputies were excluded from the privy council, or lost all influence in it. Attempts were made to impose taxes without the legislative sanction. The municipal territories were alienated, and lavished on the royal minions. The freedom of elections was invaded, and delegates to cortes were frequently nominated by the crown; and, to complete the iniquitous scheme of oppression, *pragmáticas*, or royal proclamations, were issued, containing provisions repugnant to the acknowledged law of the land, and affirming in the most unqualified terms the right of the sovereign to legislate for his subjects.<sup>5</sup> The commons, indeed, when assembled in cortes, stoutly resisted the assumption of such unconstitutional powers by the crown, and compelled the prince not only to revoke his pretensions, but to accompany his revocation with the most humiliating concessions.<sup>6</sup> They even ventured so far, during this reign, as to regulate the expenses of the royal household;<sup>7</sup> and their language to the throne on all these occasions, though temperate and loyal, breathed a generous spirit of patriot-

<sup>5</sup> Marina, *Teoría*, tom. i. cap. 20, —tom. ii. pp. 216, 390, 391, —tom. iii. part. 2, no. 4.—Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, pp. 234, 235.—Semper, *Histoire des Cortès*, ch. 18, 24.

<sup>6</sup> Several of this prince's laws for redressing the alleged grievances are incorporated in the great code of Philip II. (*Recopilacion de las Leyes* (Madrid, 1640), lib. 6, tit. 7, leyes 6, 7, 2), which declares, in the most unequivocal language, the

right of the commons to be consulted on all important matters: "Porque en los hechos arduos de nuestros reynos es necessario consejo de nuestros subditos, y naturales, especialmente de los procuradores de las nuestras ciudades, villas, y lugares de los nuestros reynos." It was much easier to extort good laws from this monarch than to enforce them.

<sup>7</sup> Mariana, *Historia de España*, tom. ii. p. 299.

ism, evincing a perfect consciousness of their own rights, and a steady determination to maintain them.<sup>8</sup>

Alas! what could such resolution avail, in this season of misrule, against the intrigues of a cunning and profligate minister, unsupported, too, as the commons were, by any sympathy or co-operation on the part of the higher orders of the state! A scheme was devised for bringing the popular branch of the legislature more effectually within the control of the crown, by diminishing the number of its constituents. It has been already remarked, in the Introduction, that a great irregularity prevailed in Castile, as to the number of cities which, at different times, exercised the right of representation. During the fourteenth century, the deputation from this order had been uncommonly full. The king, however, availing himself of this indeterminateness, caused writs to be issued to a very small proportion of the towns which had usually enjoyed the privilege. Some of those that were excluded, indignantly, though ineffectually, remonstrated against this abuse. Others, previously despoiled of their possessions by the rapacity of the crown, or impoverished by the disastrous feuds into which the country had been thrown, acquiesced in the measure from motives of economy. From the same mistaken policy, several cities, again, as Burgos, Toledo, and others, petitioned the sovereign to defray the charges of their representatives from the royal treasury; a most ill-advised parsimony, which suggested to the crown a plausible pretext for the new system of exclusion. In this manner the Castilian cortes, which, notwithstanding its occasional fluctuations, had exhibited during the preceding century what might be regarded as a representation of the whole commonwealth, was gradually reduced, during the reigns of John the Second and his son Henry the Fourth, to the deputations of some seventeen or eighteen cities. And to

<sup>8</sup> *Marina, Teoría, ubi supra.*

this number, with slight variation, it has been restricted until the occurrence of the recent revolutionary movements in that kingdom.<sup>9</sup>

The non-represented were required to transmit their instructions to the deputies of the privileged cities. Thus Salamanca appeared in behalf of five hundred towns and fourteen hundred villages; and the populous province of Galicia was represented by the little town of Zamora, which is not even included within its geographical limits.<sup>10</sup> The privilege of *a voice in cortes*, as it was called, came at length to be prized so highly by the favoured cities, that when, in 1506, some of those which were excluded solicited the restitution of their ancient rights, their petition was opposed by the former on the impudent pretence that "the right of deputation had been reserved by ancient law and usage to only eighteen cities of the realm."<sup>11</sup> In this short-sighted and most unhappy policy, we see the operation of those local jealousies and estrangements to which we have alluded in the Introduction. But although the cortes, thus reduced in numbers, necessarily lost much of its weight, it still maintained a bold front against the usurpations of the crown. It does not appear, indeed, that any attempt was made under John the Second, or his successor, to corrupt its members, or to control the freedom of debate; although such a proceeding is not improbable, as altogether conformable to their ordinary policy, and as the natural result of their preliminary measures. But, however true the deputies continued to themselves and to those who sent them, it is evident that so limited and partial a selection no longer afforded a representation of the interests of the whole country. Their necessarily imperfect acquaint-

<sup>9</sup> Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 228. — Sempere, *Hist. des Cortès*, chap. 19. — Marina, *Teoría*, part. 1, cap. 16. — In 1656, the city of Palencia was content to repurchase its ancient right of representation from

the crown, at an expense of 80,000 ducats.

<sup>10</sup> Capmany, *Práctica y Estilo*, p. 230. — Sempere, *Hist. des Cortès*, chap. 19.

<sup>11</sup> Marina, *Teoría*, tom. i. p. 161.

ance with the principles or even wishes of their widely scattered constituents, in an age when knowledge was not circulated on the thousand wings of the press, as in our day, must have left them oftentimes in painful uncertainty, and deprived them of the cheering support of public opinion. The voice of remonstrance, which derives such confidence from numbers, would hardly now be raised in their deserted halls with the same frequency or energy as before; and, however the representatives of that day might maintain their integrity uncorrupted, yet, as every facility was afforded to the undue influence of the crown, the time might come when venality would prove stronger than principle, and the unworthy patriot be tempted to sacrifice his birthright for a mess of pottage. Thus early was the fair dawn of freedom overcast, which opened in Castile under more brilliant auspices, perhaps, than in any other country in Europe.

While the reign of John the Second is so deservedly odious in a political view, in a literary it may be inscribed with what Giovio calls "the golden pen of history." It was an epoch in the Castilian, corresponding with that of the reign of Francis the First in French literature, distinguished not so much by any production of extraordinary genius as by the effort made for the introduction of an elegant culture, by conducting it on more scientific principles than had been hitherto known. The early literature of Castile could boast of the "Poem of the Cid," in some respects the most remarkable performance of the Middle Ages. It was enriched, moreover, with other elaborate compositions, displaying occasional glimpses of a buoyant fancy, or of sensibility to external beauty, to say nothing of those delightful romantic ballads, which seemed to spring up spontaneously in every quarter of the country, like the natural wild flowers of the soil. But the unaffected beauties of sentiment, which seem rather the result of accident than design, were dearly purchased, in the more

extended pieces, at the expense of such a crude mass of grotesque and undigested verse as shows an entire ignorance of the principles of the art.<sup>12</sup>

The profession of letters itself was held in little repute by the higher orders of the nation, who were altogether untinctured with liberal learning. While the nobles of the sister kingdom of Aragon, assembled in their poetic courts, in imitation of their Provençal neighbours, vied with each other in lays of love and chivalry, those of Castile disdained these effeminate pleasures as unworthy of the profession of arms, the only one of any estimation in their eyes. The benignant influence of John was perceptible in softening this ferocious temper. He was himself sufficiently accomplished, for a king, and, notwithstanding his aversion to business, manifested, as has been noticed, a lively relish for intellectual enjoyment. He was fond of books, wrote and spoke Latin with facility, composed verses, and condescended occasionally to correct those of his loving subjects.<sup>13</sup> Whatever might be the value of his criticisms, that of his example cannot be doubted. The courtiers, with the quick scent for their own interest which distinguishes the tribe in every country, soon turned their attention to the same polite studies;<sup>14</sup> and thus Castilian poetry received very early the courtly stamp which continued its prominent characteristic down to the age of its meridian glory.

Among the most eminent of these noble *savans* was Henry, marquis of Villena, descended from the royal

<sup>12</sup> See the ample collections of Sanchez, "Poesías Castellanas anteriores al Siglo XV." 4 tom., Madrid, 1779—1790.

<sup>13</sup> Guzman, *Generaciones*, cap. 33.—Gomez de Cibdareal, *Centon epistolario* (Madrid, 1775), epist. 20, 49.—Cibdareal has given us a specimen of this royal criticism, which Juan de Mena, the subject of it,

was courtier enough to adopt.

<sup>14</sup> Velazquez, *Orígenes de la Poesía Castellana* (Málaga, 1797), p. 45.—Sanchez, *Poesías Castellanas*, tom. i. p. 10.—"The Cancioneros generales, in print and in manuscript," says Sanchez, "show the great number of dukes, counts, marquises, and other nobles who cultivated this art."

houses of Castile and Aragon,<sup>15</sup> but more illustrious, as one of his countrymen has observed, by his talents and attainments than by his birth. His whole life was consecrated to letters, and especially to the study of natural science. I am not aware that any specimen of his poetry, although much lauded by his contemporaries,<sup>16</sup> has come down to us.<sup>17</sup> He translated Dante's "*Commedia*" into prose, and is said to have given the first example of a version of the *Æneid* into a modern language.<sup>18</sup> He laboured assiduously to introduce a more cultivated taste among his countrymen, and his little treatise on the *gaya sciencia*, as the divine art was then called, in which he gives an historical and critical view of the poetical Consistory of Barcelona, is the first approximation, however faint, to an Art of Poetry in the Castilian tongue.<sup>19</sup> The exclusiveness with which he devoted himself to science, and especially astronomy, to the utter neglect of his

<sup>15</sup> He was the grandson, not, as Sanchez supposes (tom. i. p. 15), the son, of Alonso de Villena, the first marquis as well as constable created in Castile, descended from James II. of Aragon. (See Dormer, *Enmiendas y Advertencias de Zurita* (Zaragoza, 1683), pp. 371—376.) His mother was an illegitimate daughter of Henry II. of Castile. Guzman, *Generaciones*, cap. 28.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía de España* (Madrid, 1770), tom. i. pp. 203, 339.

<sup>16</sup> Guzman, *Generaciones*, cap. 28.—Juan de Mena introduces Villena into his "*Laberinto*," in an agreeable stanza, which has something of the mannerism of Dante:

"Aquel claro padre aquel dulce  
fuente  
aquel que en el castolo monte re-  
suena  
es don Enrique Señor de Villena  
honrra de España y del siglo pre-  
sente," etc.

Juan de Mena, *Obras* (Alcalá, 1566), fol. 138.

<sup>17</sup> The recent Castilian translators of Bouterwek's *History of Spanish Literature* have fallen into an error in imputing the beautiful *cancion* of the "*Querella de Amor*" to Villena. It was composed by the marquis of Santillana. (Bouterwek, *Historia de la Literatura Española*, traducida por Cortina y Hugalde y Mollinedo (Madrid, 1829), p. 196, and Sanchez, *Poesías Castellanas*, tom. i. pp. 38, 143.)—The mistake into which Nicolas Antonio had also fallen, in supposing Villena's "*Trabajos de Hercules*" written in verse, has been subsequently corrected by his learned commentator Bayer. See Nicolas Antonio, *Bibliotheca Hispana Vetust*, tom. ii. p. 222, nota.

<sup>18</sup> Velazquez, *Orígenes de la Poesía Castellana*, p. 45.—Bouterwek, *Literatura Española*, trad. de Cortina y Mollinedo, nota S.

<sup>19</sup> See an abstract of it in Mayans y Siscar, *Orígenes de la Lengua Española*, tom. ii. pp. 321 et seq.

temporal concerns, led the wits of that day to remark that "he knew much of heaven, and nothing of earth." He paid the usual penalty of such indifference to worldly weal, by seeing himself eventually stripped of his lordly possessions, and reduced, at the close of life, to extreme poverty.<sup>20</sup> His secluded habits brought on him the appalling imputation of necromancy. A scene took place at his death, in 1434, which is sufficiently characteristic of the age, and may possibly have suggested a similar adventure to Cervantes. The king commissioned his son's preceptor, Brother Lope de Barrientos, afterwards bishop of Cuenca, to examine the valuable library of the deceased; and the worthy ecclesiastic consigned more than a hundred volumes of it to the flames, as savouring too strongly of the black art. The Bachelor Cibdareal, the confidential physician of John the Second, in a lively letter on this occurrence to the poet John de Mena, remarks that "some would fain get the reputation of saints by making others necromancers;" and requests his friend "to allow him to solicit, in his behalf, some of the surviving volumes from the king, that in this way the soul of Brother Lope might be saved from further sin, and the spirit of the defunct marquis consoled by the consciousness that his books no longer rested on the shelves of the man who had converted him into a conjurer."<sup>21</sup> John de Mena denounces this *auto da fe* of science in a similar, but graver, tone of sarcasm, in his "Laberinto." These liberal sentiments in the Spanish writers of the fifteenth century may put to shame the more bigoted criticism of the seventeenth.<sup>22</sup>

<sup>20</sup> Zurita, *Anales de la Corona de Aragon*, tom. iii. p. 227.—Guzman, *Generaciones*, cap. 28.

<sup>21</sup> Centon epistolario, epist. 66.—The bishop endeavoured to transfer the blame of the conflagration to the king. There can be little doubt, however, that the good father infused the suspicions of necromancy into his master's bosom. "The

angels," he says in one of his works, "who guarded Paradise, presented a treatise on magic to one of the posterity of Adam, from a copy of which Villena derived his science." (See Juan de Mena, *Obras*, fol. 139, glosa.) One would think that such an orthodox source might have justified Villena in the use of it.

<sup>22</sup> Comp. Juan de Mena, *Obras*,

Another of the illustrious wits of this reign was Íñigo Lopez de Mendoza, marquis of Santillana, "the glory and delight of the Castilian nobility," whose celebrity was such that foreigners, it was said, journeyed to Spain from distant parts of Europe to see him. Although passionately devoted to letters, he did not, like his friend the marquis of Villena, neglect his public or domestic duties for them. On the contrary, he discharged the most important civil and military functions. He made his house an academy, in which the young cavaliers of the court might practise the martial exercises of the age; and he assembled around him, at the same time, men eminent for genius and science, whom he munificently recompensed, and encouraged by his example.<sup>23</sup> His own taste led him to poetry, of which he has left some elaborate specimens. They are chiefly of a moral and preceptive character; but, although replete with noble sentiment, and finished in a style of literary excellence far more correct than that of the preceding age, they are too much infected with mythology and metaphorical affectations to suit the palate of the present day. He possessed, however, the soul of a poet, and, when he abandons himself to his native *redondillas*, delivers his sentiments with a sweetness and grace inimitable. To him is to be ascribed the glory, such as it is, of having naturalized the Italian sonnet in Castile, which Boscan, many years later, claimed for himself with no small degree of self-congratulation.<sup>24</sup> His epistle on the primitive history of Spanish verse, although containing notices sufficiently curious from the age and the source

copl. 127, 128; and Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 220.

<sup>23</sup> Pulgar, *Claros Varones de Castilla, y Letras* (Madrid, 1755), tit. 4.—Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, lib. 10, cap. 9.—*Quincuagenas de Gonzalo de Oviedo*, MS., batalla 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8.

<sup>24</sup> Garcilasso de la Vega, *Obras*,

ed. de Herrera (1580), pp. 75, 76.—Sanchez, *Poesías Castellanas*, tom. i. p. 21.—Boscan, *Obras* (1543), fol. 19.—It must be admitted, however, that the attempt was premature, and that it required a riper stage of the language to give a permanent character to the innovation.



whence they proceed, has perhaps done more service to letters by the valuable illustrations it has called forth from its learned editor.<sup>25</sup>

This great man, who found so much leisure for the cultivation of letters amidst the busy strife of politics, closed his career at the age of sixty, in 1458. Though a conspicuous actor in the revolutionary scenes of the period, he maintained a character for honour and purity of motive, unimpeached even by his enemies. The king, notwithstanding his devotion to the faction of his son Henry, conferred on him the dignities of count of Real de Manzanares and marquis of Santillana; this being the oldest creation of a marquis in Castile, with the exception of Villena.<sup>26</sup> His eldest son was subsequently made duke of Infantado, by which title his descendants have continued to be distinguished to the present day.

But the most conspicuous, for his poetical talents, of the brilliant circle which graced the court of John the Second, was John de Mena, a native of fair Cordova, "the flower of science and of chivalry,"<sup>27</sup> as he fondly styles her. Although born in a middling condition of life, with humble prospects, he was early smitten with a love of letters; and, after passing through the usual course of discipline at Salamanca, he repaired to Rome, where, in the study of those immortal masters whose writings had but recently revealed the full capacities of a modern idiom, he imbibed principles of taste which gave a direction to his

<sup>25</sup> See Sanchez, *Poesías Castellanas*, tom. i. pp. 1—119.—A copious catalogue of the marquis de Santillana's writings is given in the same volume (pp. 33 et seq.). Several of his poetical pieces are collected in the *Cancionero general* (Anvers, 1673), fol. 34 et seq.

<sup>26</sup> Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 4.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. i. p. 218.—Idem, *Origen de las Dignidades seculares de Castilla y*

Leon (Madrid, 1794), p. 285.—Oviedo makes the marquis much older, seventy-five years of age, when he died. He left, besides daughters, six sons, who all became the founders of noble and powerful houses. See the whole genealogy, in Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8.

<sup>27</sup> "Flor de saber y caballería." *El Laberinto*, copla 114.

own genius, and, in some degree, to that of his countrymen. On his return to Spain, his literary merit soon attracted general admiration, and introduced him to the patronage of the great, and above all to the friendship of the marquis of Santillana.<sup>28</sup> He was admitted into the private circle of the monarch, who, as his gossiping physician informs us, "used to have Mena's verses lying on his table, as constantly as his prayer-book." The poet repaid the debt of gratitude by administering a due quantity of honeyed rhyme, for which the royal palate seems to have possessed a more than ordinary relish.<sup>29</sup> He continued faithful to his master amidst all the fluctuations of faction, and survived him less than two years. He died in 1456; and his friend the marquis of Santillana raised a sumptuous monument over his remains, in commemoration of his virtues and of their mutual affection.

John de Mena is affirmed by some of the national critics to have given a new aspect to Castilian poetry.<sup>30</sup> His great work was his "Laberinto," the outlines of whose plan may faintly remind us of that portion of the "Divina Commedia" where Dante resigns himself to the guidance of Beatrice. In like manner the Spanish poet, under the escort of a beautiful personification of Providence, witnesses the apparition of the most eminent individuals, whether of history or fable; and, as they revolve on the wheel of destiny, they give occasion to some animated portraiture, and much dull, pedantic disquisition. In these delineations we now and then meet with a touch of his pencil, which, from its simplicity and vigour, may be called truly *Dantesque*. Indeed, the Castilian Muse never before ventured on so bold a flight; and, notwithstanding the deformity of the general plan, the obsolete barbarisms of the phraseology, its quaintness and pedantry,

<sup>28</sup> Nic. Antonio, Bibliotheca Vetus, tom. ii. pp. 285 et seq.

epist. 47, 49.

<sup>29</sup> Cibdareal, Centon epistolario,

<sup>30</sup> See Velazquez, Poesía Castellana, p. 49.

notwithstanding the cantering dactylic measure in which it is composed, and which to the ear of a foreigner can scarcely be made tolerable, the work abounds in conceptions, nay, in whole episodes, of such mingled energy and beauty as indicate genius of the highest order. In some of his smaller pieces his style assumes a graceful flexibility too generally denied to his more strained and elaborate efforts.<sup>31</sup>

It will not be necessary to bring under review the minor luminaries of this period. Alfonso de Baena, a converted Jew, secretary of John the Second, compiled the fugitive pieces of more than fifty of these ancient troubadours into a *cancionero*, "for the disport and divertisement of his highness the king, when he should find himself too sorely oppressed with cares of state,"—a case we may imagine of no rare occurrence. The original manuscript of Baena, transcribed in beautiful characters of the fifteenth century, lies, or did lie until very lately, unheeded in the cemetery of the Escorial, with the dust of many a better worthy.<sup>32</sup> The extracts selected from it by Castro, although occasionally exhibiting some fluent graces with considerable variety of versification, convey, on the whole, no very high idea of taste or poetic talent.<sup>33</sup>

Indeed, this epoch, as before remarked, was not so much distinguished by uncommon displays of genius, as

<sup>31</sup> A collection of them is incorporated in the *Cancionero general*, fol. 41 et seq.

<sup>32</sup> Castro, *Biblioteca Española* (Madrid, 1781), tom. i. pp. 266, 267. —This interesting document, the most primitive of all the Spanish *cancioneros*, notwithstanding its local position in the library is specified by Castro with great precision, eluded the search of the industrious translators of Bouterwek, who think it may have disappeared during the French invasion. *Literatura Española*, trad. de Cortina y Molinero, p. 205, nota Hh.

<sup>33</sup> See these collected in Castro, VOL. I.

*Biblioteca Española*, tom. ii. p. 265 et seq.—The veneration entertained for the poetic art in that day may be conceived from Baena's whimsical prologue. "Poetry," he says, "or the gay science, is a very subtle and delightful composition. It demands in him who would hope to excel in it a curious invention, a sane judgment, a various scholarship, familiarity with courts and public affairs, high birth and breeding, a temperate, courteous, and liberal disposition, and, in fine, honey, sugar, salt, freedom, and hilarity in his discourse," p. 268.

by its general intellectual movement, and the enthusiasm kindled for liberal studies. Thus we find the corporation of Seville granting a hundred *doblas* of gold as the guerdon of a poet who had celebrated in some score of verses the glories of their native city, and appropriating the same sum as an annual premium for a similar performance.<sup>34</sup> It is not often that the productions of a poet-laureate have been more liberally recompensed even by royal bounty. But the gifted spirits of that day mistook the road to immortality. Disdaining the untutored simplicity of their predecessors, they sought to rise above them by an ostentation of learning, as well as by a more classical idiom. In the latter particular they succeeded. They much improved the external forms of poetry, and their compositions exhibit a high degree of literary finish, compared with all that preceded them. But their happiest sentiments are frequently involved in such a cloud of metaphor as to become nearly unintelligible; while they invoke the pagan deities with a shameless prodigality that would scandalize even a French lyric. This cheap display of schoolboy erudition, however it may have appalled their own age, has been a principal cause of their comparative oblivion with posterity. How far superior is one touch of nature, as the "*Finojosa*" or "*Querella de Amor*," for example, of the marquis of Santillana, to all this farrago of metaphor and mythology!

The impulse given to Castilian poetry extended to other departments of elegant literature. Epistolary and historical composition were cultivated with considerable success. The latter, especially, might admit of advantageous comparison with that of any other country in Europe at the same period; <sup>35</sup> and it is remarkable that,

<sup>34</sup> Castro, Biblioteca Española, tom. i. p. 273.

<sup>35</sup> Perhaps the most conspicuous of these historical compositions for mere literary execution is the Chronicle of Alvaro de Luna, to which I have had occasion to re-

fer, edited in 1784, by Flores, the diligent secretary of the Royal Academy of History. He justly commends it for the purity and harmony of its diction. The loyalty of the chronicler seduces him sometimes into a swell of panegyric

after such early promise, the modern Spaniards have not been more successful in perfecting a classical prose style.

Enough has been said to give an idea of the state of mental improvement in Castile under John the Second. The Muses, who had found a shelter in his court from the anarchy which reigned abroad, soon fled from its polluted precincts under the reign of his successor Henry the Fourth, whose sordid appetites were incapable of being elevated above the objects of the senses. If we have dwelt somewhat long on a more pleasing picture, it is because our road is now to lead us across a dreary waste exhibiting scarcely a vestige of civilization.

While a small portion of the higher orders of the nation was thus endeavouring to forget the public calamities in the tranquillizing pursuit of letters, and a much larger portion in the indulgence of pleasure,<sup>36</sup> the popular aversion for the minister Luna had been gradually infusing itself into the royal bosom. His too obvious assumption of superiority, even over the monarch who had raised him from the dust, was probably the real though secret cause of this disgust. But the habitual ascendancy of the favourite over his master prevented the latter from disclosing this feeling, until it was heightened by an occurrence which sets in a strong light the imbecility of the one and the presumption of the other. John, on the death of his wife, Maria of Aragon, had formed the design of con-

which may be thought to savour too strongly of the current defect of Castilian prose; but it more frequently imparts to his narrative a generous glow of sentiment, raising it far above the lifeless details of ordinary history, and occasionally even to positive eloquence.—Nic. Antonio, in the tenth book of his great repository, has assembled the biographical and bibliographical notices of the various Spanish authors of the fifteenth century, whose labours diffused a glimmering light over their own age, which

has become faint in the superior illumination of the succeeding.

<sup>36</sup> Sempere, in his *Historia del Luxo* (tom. i. p. 177), has published an extract from an unprinted manuscript of the celebrated marquis of Villena, entitled *Triunfo de las Doñas*, in which, adverting to the *petits-maitres* of his time, he recapitulates the fashionable arts employed by them for the embellishment of the person, with a degree of minuteness which might edify a modern dandy.

necting himself with a daughter of the king of France. But the constable, in the mean time, without even the privity of his master, entered into negotiations for his marriage with the princess Isabella, granddaughter of John the First of Portugal; and the monarch, with an unprecedented degree of complaisance, acquiesced in an arrangement professedly repugnant to his own inclinations.<sup>37</sup> By one of those dispensations of Providence, however, which often confound the plans of the wisest, as of the weakest, the column which the minister had so artfully raised for his support served only to crush him.

The new queen, disgusted with his haughty bearing, and probably not much gratified with the subordinate situation to which he had reduced her husband, entered heartily into the feelings of the latter, and indeed contrived to extinguish whatever spark of latent affection for his ancient favourite lurked within his breast. John, yet fearing the overgrown power of the constable too much to encounter him openly, condescended to adopt the dastardly policy of Tiberius on a similar occasion, by caressing the man whom he designed to ruin; and he eventually obtained possession of his person only by a violation of the royal safe-conduct. The constable's trial was referred to a commission of jurists and privy councillors, who, after a summary and informal investigation, pronounced on him the sentence of death on a specification of charges either general and indeterminate, or of the most trivial import. "If the king," says Garibay, "had dispensed similar justice to all his nobles who equally deserved it in those turbulent times, he would have had but few to reign over."<sup>38</sup>

The constable had supported his disgrace, from the first, with an equanimity not to have been expected from his

<sup>37</sup> Crónica de Juan II., p. 499.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa* (1679), tom. ii. pp. 335, 372.

<sup>38</sup> Crónica de Alvaro de Luna, tit. 128.—Crónica de Juan II., pp.

457, 460, 572.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 227, 228.—Garibay, *Compendio historial de las Crónicas de España* (Barcelona, 1628), tom. ii. p. 493.

elation in prosperity; and he now received the tidings of his fate with a similar fortitude. As he rode along the streets to the place of execution, clad in the sable livery of an ordinary criminal, and deserted by those who had been reared by his bounty, the populace, who before called so loudly for his disgrace, struck with this astonishing reverse of his brilliant fortunes, were melted into tears.<sup>39</sup> They called to mind the numerous instances of his magnanimity. They reflected that the ambitious schemes of his rivals had been not a whit less selfish, though less successful, than his own, and that, if his cupidity appeared insatiable, he had dispensed the fruits of it in acts of princely munificence. He himself maintained a serene and even cheerful aspect. Meeting one of the domestics of Prince Henry, he bade him request the prince "to reward the attachment of his servants with a different guerdon from what his master had assigned to him." As he ascended the scaffold, he surveyed the apparatus of death with composure, and calmly submitted himself to the stroke of the executioner, who, in the savage style of the executions of that day, plunged his knife into the throat of his victim, and deliberately severed his head from his body. A basin, for the reception of alms to defray the expenses of his interment, was placed at one extremity of the scaffold; and his mutilated remains, after having been exposed for several days to the gaze of the populace, were removed, by the brethren of a charitable order, to a place called the hermitage of St. Andrew, appropriated as the cemetery for malefactors.<sup>40</sup> (1453.)

Such was the tragical end of Alvaro de Luna,—a man

<sup>39</sup> Crónica de Alvaro de Luna, tit. 128.—What a contrast to all this is afforded by the vivid portrait, sketched by John de Mena, of the constable in the noontide of his glory!

"Este caualga sobre la fortuna  
y doma su cuello con asperas  
riendas

y aunque del tenga tan muchas  
de prendas  
ella non le osa tocar de ninguna,"  
etc.

Laberinto, coplas 235 et seq.

<sup>40</sup> Cibdareal, Centon epistolario, ep. 103.—Crónica de Juan II., p. 564.—Crónica de Alvaro de Luna, tit. 128, and Apend. p. 458.

who for more than thirty years controlled the counsels of the sovereign, or, to speak more properly, was himself the sovereign, of Castile. His fate furnishes one of the most memorable lessons in history. It was not lost on his contemporaries; and the marquis of Santillana has made use of it to point the moral of perhaps the most pleasing of his didactic compositions.<sup>41</sup> John did not long survive his favourite's death, which he was seen afterwards to lament even with tears. Indeed, during the whole of the trial he had exhibited the most pitiable agitation, having twice issued and recalled his orders countermanding the constable's execution; and, had it not been for the superior constancy or vindictive temper of the queen, he would probably have yielded to these impulses of returning affection.<sup>42</sup>

So far from deriving a wholesome warning from experience, John confided the entire direction of his kingdom to individuals not less interested, but possessed of far less enlarged capacities, than the former minister. Penetrated with remorse at the retrospect of his unprofitable life, and filled with melancholy presages of the future, the unhappy prince lamented to his faithful attendant Cibdareal, on his death-bed, that "he had not been born the son of a

<sup>41</sup> Entitled "Doctrinal de Privados." See the Cancionero general, fol. 37 et seq.—In the following stanza, the constable is made to moralize with good effect on the instability of worldly grandeur:

"Que se hizo la moneda  
que guarde para mis daños  
tantos tiempos tantos años  
plata joyas oro y seda  
y de todo no me queda  
sino este cadahalso;  
mundo malo mundo falso  
no ay quien contigo pueda."

Manrique has the same sentiments in his exquisite "Coplas." I give Longfellow's version, as spirited as it is literal:

"Spain's haughty Constable,—the  
great  
And gallant Master,—cruel fate  
Stripped him of all.  
Breathe not a whisper of his pride:  
He on the gloomy scaffold died,  
Ignoble fall!  
The countless treasures of his care,  
Hamlets and villas green and fair,  
His mighty power,—  
What were they all but grief and  
shame,  
Tears and a broken heart, when  
came  
The parting hour?"

Stanza 21.

<sup>42</sup> Cibdareal, Centon epistolario, ep. 103.—Crónica de Alvaro de Luna, tit. 128.



mechanic, instead of king of Castile." He died July 21st, 1454, after a reign of eight-and-forty years, if reign it may be called which was more properly one protracted minority. John left one child by his first wife, Henry, who succeeded him on the throne; and by his second wife two others, Alfonso, then an infant, and Isabella, afterwards queen of Castile, the subject of the present narrative. She had scarcely reached her fourth year at the time of her father's decease, having been born on the 22nd of April, 1451, at Madrigal. The king recommended his younger children to the especial care and protection of their brother Henry, and assigned the town of Cuellar, with its territory and a considerable sum of money, for the maintenance of the Infanta Isabella.<sup>43</sup>

<sup>43</sup> Crónica de Juan II., p. 576.—Cibdareal, Centon epistolario, epist. 105.—There has been considerable discrepancy, even among contemporary writers, both as to the place and the epoch of Isabella's birth, amounting, as regards the latter, to nearly two years. I have adopted the conclusion of Señor Clemencin, formed from a careful collation of

the various authorities, in the sixth volume of the *Memorias de la Real Academia de Historia* (Madrid, 1821), Ilust. 1, pp. 56—60. Isabella was descended both on the father's and mother's side from the famous John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster. See Florez, *Memorias de las Reynas Cathólicas* (2nd ed. Madrid, 1770), tom. ii. pp. 743, 787.

## CHAPTER II.

### CONDITION OF ARAGON DURING THE MINORITY OF FERDINAND.—REIGN OF JOHN II. OF ARAGON.

1452—1472.

*John of Aragon.—Difficulties with his Son Carlos.—Birth of Ferdinand. Insurrection of Catalonia.—Death of Carlos.—His Character—Tragical Story of Blanche.—Young Ferdinand besieged by the Catalans.—Treaty between France and Aragon.—Distress and Embarrassments of John.—Siege and Surrender of Barcelona.*

WE must now transport the reader to Aragon, in order to take a view of the extraordinary circumstances which opened the way for Ferdinand's succession in that kingdom. The throne, which had become vacant by the death of Martin, in 1410, was awarded, by the committee of judges to whom the nation had referred the great question of the succession, to Ferdinand, regent of Castile during the minority of his nephew, John the Second; and thus the sceptre, after having for more than two centuries descended in the family of Barcelona, was transferred to the same bastard branch of Trastamara that ruled over the Castilian monarchy.<sup>1</sup> Ferdinand the First was succeeded after a brief reign by his son Alfonso the Fifth, whose personal history belongs less to Aragon than to Naples, which kingdom he acquired by his own prowess, and where he established his residence, attracted, no doubt, by the superior amenity of the climate and the higher intellectual

<sup>1</sup> The reader who may be curious in this matter will find the pedigree exhibiting the titles of the several competitors to the crown given by Mr. Hallam. (*State of Europe*

during the Middle Ages (2nd ed. London, 1819), vol. ii. p. 60, note.) The claims of Ferdinand were certainly not derived from the usual laws of descent.

culture as well as the pliant temper of the people, far more grateful to the monarch than the sturdy independence of his own countrymen.

During his long absence, the government of his hereditary domains devolved on his brother John, as his lieutenant-general in Aragon.<sup>2</sup> This prince had married Blanche, widow of Martin, king of Sicily, and daughter of Charles the Third of Navarre. By her he had three children: Carlos, prince of Viana;<sup>3</sup> Blanche, married to and afterwards repudiated by Henry the Fourth of Castile;<sup>4</sup> and Eleanor, who espoused a French noble, Gaston, count of Foix. On the demise of the elder, Blanche, the crown of Navarre rightfully belonged to her son, the prince of Viana, conformably to a stipulation in her marriage contract, that on the event of her death, the eldest heir male, and, in default of sons, female, should inherit the kingdom to the exclusion of her husband.<sup>5</sup> (1442.) This provision, which, had been confirmed by her father, Charles the Third, in his testament, was also recognized in her own, accompanied, however, with a request that her son Carlos, then twenty-one years of age, would, before assuming the sovereignty, solicit "the good will and approbation of his father."<sup>6</sup> Whether this approbation was withheld, or whether it was

<sup>2</sup> The reader of Spanish history often experiences embarrassment from the identity of names in the various princes of the Peninsula. Thus, the John mentioned in the text, afterwards John II., might be easily confounded with his namesake and contemporary, John II. of Castile. The genealogical table at the beginning of this History will show their relationship to each other.

<sup>3</sup> His grandfather, Charles III., created this title in favour of Carlos, appropriating it as the designation henceforth of the heir apparent. Aleson, *Anales del Reyno de Navarra*, contin. de Moret (Pamplona, 1766), tom. iv. p. 398.—

Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. ii. p. 331.

<sup>4</sup> See Part I. chap. 3, note 5, of this History.

<sup>5</sup> This fact, vaguely and variously reported by Spanish writers, is fully established by Aleson, who cites the original instrument, contained in the archives of the counts of Lorin. *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 354, 365.

<sup>6</sup> See the reference to the original document in Aleson (tom. iv. pp. 365, 366). This industrious writer has established the title of Prince Carlos to Navarre, so frequently misunderstood or misrepresented by the national historians, on an incontestable basis.

ever solicited, does not appear. It seems probable, however, that Carlos, perceiving no disposition in his father to relinquish the rank and nominal title of king of Navarre, was willing he should retain them, so long as he himself should be allowed to exercise the actual rights of sovereignty; which indeed he did, as lieutenant-general or governor of the kingdom, at the time of his mother's decease, and for some years after.<sup>7</sup>

In 1447, John of Aragon contracted a second alliance, with Joan Henriquez, of the blood royal of Castile, and daughter of Don Frederick Henriquez, admiral of that kingdom;<sup>8</sup> a woman considerably younger than himself, of consummate address, intrepid spirit, and unprincipled ambition. Some years after this union, John sent his wife into Navarre, with authority to divide with his son Carlos the administration of the government there. This encroachment on his rights, for such Carlos reasonably deemed it, was not mitigated by the deportment of the young queen, who displayed all the insolence of sudden elevation, and who from the first seems to have regarded the prince with the malevolent eye of a stepmother.

Navarre was at that time divided by two potent factions, styled, from their ancient leaders, Beaumonts and Agramonts; whose hostility, originating in a personal feud, had continued long after its original cause had become extinct.<sup>9</sup> The prince of Viana was intimately connected with some of the principal partisans of the Beaumont faction, who heightened by their suggestions the indignation to which his naturally gentle temper had been roused by the usurpation of Joan, and who even called on him to assume openly, and in defiance of his father, the sovereignty which

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., tom. iv. p. 467.

<sup>8</sup> See Part I. chap. 3, of this work.

<sup>9</sup> Gaillard errs in referring the origin of these factions to this epoch. (*Histoire de la Rivalité*

de France et de l'Espagne (Paris, 1801), tom. iii. p. 227.) Aleson quotes a proclamation of John in relation to them in the lifetime of Queen Blanche. *Annales de Navarre*, tom. iv. p. 494.

of right belonged to him. The emissaries of Castile, too, eagerly seized this occasion of retaliating on John his interference in the domestic concerns of that monarchy, by fanning the spark of discord into a flame. The Agramonts, on the other hand, induced rather by hostility to their political adversaries than to the prince of Viana, vehemently espoused the cause of the queen. In this revival of half-buried animosities, fresh causes of disgust were multiplied, and matters soon came to the worst extremity. The queen, who had retired to Estella, was besieged there by the forces of the prince. The king, her husband, on receiving intelligence of this, instantly marched to her relief; and the father and son confronted each other at the head of their respective armies near the town of Aybar.<sup>10</sup>

The unnatural position in which they thus found themselves seems to have sobered their minds, and to have opened the way to an accommodation, the terms of which were actually arranged, when the long-smothered rancour of the ancient factions of Navarre thus brought in martial array against each other, refusing all control, precipitated them into an engagement. The royal forces were inferior in number, but superior in discipline, to those of the prince, who, after a well-contested action, saw his own party entirely discomfited, and himself a prisoner.<sup>11</sup> (1452.)

Some months before this event, Queen Joan had been delivered of a son, afterwards so famous as Ferdinand the Catholic,—whose humble prospects at the time of his birth, as a younger brother, afforded a striking contrast with the splendid destiny which eventually awaited him. This auspicious event occurred in the little town of Sos, in Aragon, on the 10th of March, 1452, and, as it was nearly

<sup>10</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iii. fol. 494—498.

278.—Lucio Marineo Siculo, *Coronista de sus Magestades*, *Las Cosas memorables de España* (Alcalá de Henares, 1539), fol. 104.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp.

<sup>11</sup> Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 223.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 501—503.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 105.

contemporary with the capture of Constantinople, is regarded by Garibay to have been providentially assigned to this period, as affording, in a religious view, an ample counterpoise to the loss of the capital of Christendom.<sup>12</sup>

The demonstrations of satisfaction exhibited by John and his court on this occasion contrasted strangely with the stern severity with which he continued to visit the offences of his elder offspring. It was not till after many months of captivity that the king, in deference to public opinion rather than the movements of his own heart, was induced to release his son, on conditions, however, so illiberal (his indisputable claim to Navarre not being even touched upon) as to afford no reasonable basis of reconciliation. The young prince accordingly, on his return to Navarre, became again involved in the factions which desolated that unhappy kingdom, and, after an ineffectual struggle against his enemies, resolved to seek an asylum at the court of his uncle Alfonso the Fifth of Naples, and to refer to him the final arbitration of his differences with his father.<sup>13</sup>

On his passage through France and the various courts of Italy, he was received with the attentions due to his rank,

<sup>12</sup> *Compendio*, tom. iii. p. 419.—L. Marineo describes the heavens as uncommonly serene at the moment of Ferdinand's birth. "The sun, which had been obscured with clouds during the whole day, suddenly broke forth with unwonted splendour. A crown was also beheld in the sky, composed of various brilliant colours like those of a rainbow. All which appearances were interpreted by the spectators as an omen that the child then born would be the most illustrious among men." (*Cosas memorables*, fol. 153.) Garibay postpones the nativity of Ferdinand to the year 1453, and L. Marineo, who ascertains with curious precision even the date of his con-

ception, fixes his birth in 1450 (fol. 153). But Alonso de Palencia in his *History* (*Verdadera Corónica de Don Enrique IV., Rei de Castilla y Leon, y del Rei Don Alonso su Hermano*, MS.), and Andrés Bernaldez, *Cura de Los Palacios* (*Historia de los Reyes Católicos*, MS., c. 8), both of them contemporaries, refer this event to the period assigned in the text; and, as the same epoch is adopted by the accurate Zurita (*Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 9), I have given it the preference.

<sup>13</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 3—48.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 508—526.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 105.

and still more to his personal character and misfortunes. Nor was he disappointed in the sympathy and favourable reception which he had anticipated from his uncle. Assured of protection from so high a quarter, Carlos might now reasonably flatter himself with the restitution of his legitimate rights, when these bright prospects were suddenly overcast by the death of Alfonso, who expired at Naples of a fever in the month of May, 1458, bequeathing his hereditary dominions of Spain, Sicily, and Sardinia to his brother John, and his kingdom of Naples to his illegitimate son Ferdinand.<sup>14</sup>

The frank and courteous manners of Carlos had won so powerfully on the affections of the Neapolitans, who distrusted the dark, ambiguous character of Ferdinand, Alfonso's heir, that a large party eagerly pressed the prince to assert his title to the vacant throne, assuring him of a general support from the people. But Carlos, from motives of prudence or magnanimity, declined engaging in this new contest,<sup>15</sup> and passed over to Sicily, whence he resolved to solicit a final reconciliation with his father. He was received with much kindness by the Sicilians, who, preserving a grateful recollection of the beneficent sway of his mother, Blanche, when queen of that island, readily transferred to the son their ancient attachment to the parent. An assembly of the states voted a liberal supply for his present exigencies, and even urged him, if we are to credit the Catalan ambassador at the court of Castile, to assume the sovereignty of the island.<sup>16</sup> Carlos, however,

<sup>14</sup> Giannone, *Istoria civile del Regno di Napoli* (Milano, 1823), lib. 26, c. 7.—Ferrerias, *Histoire générale d'Espagne*, trad. par D'Hermilly (Paris, 1751), tom. vii. p. 60.—L'*Histoire du Royaume de Navarre*, par l'un des Secrétaires-Interpretes de sa Majesté (Paris, 1596), p. 468.

<sup>15</sup> Compare the narrative of the Neapolitan historians Summonte (*Historia della Città e Regno di*

*Napoli* (Napoli, 1675), lib. 5, c. 2) and Giannone (*Istoria civile*, lib. 26, c. 7.—lib. 27, *Introd.*) with the opposite statements of L. Marineo, *Cosa memorables* (fol. 106), himself a contemporary, Aleson (*Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. p. 546), and other Spanish writers.

<sup>16</sup> Enriquez del Castillo, *Crónica de Enrique el Quarto* (Madrid, 1787), cap. 43.

far from entertaining so rash an ambition, seems to have been willing to seclude himself from public observation. He passed the greater portion of his time at a convent of Benedictine friars not far from Messina, where, in the society of learned men, and with the facilities of an extensive library, he endeavoured to recall the happier hours of youth in the pursuit of his favourite studies of philosophy and history.<sup>17</sup>

In the mean while, John, now king of Aragon and its dependencies, alarmed by the reports of his son's popularity in Sicily, became as solicitous for the security of his authority there as he had before been for it in Navarre. He accordingly sought to soothe the mind of the prince by the fairest professions, and to allure him back to Spain by the prospect of an effectual reconciliation. Carlos, believing what he most earnestly wished, in opposition to the advice of his Sicilian counsellors, embarked for Majorca, and, after some preliminary negotiations, crossed over to the coast of Barcelona. Postponing, for fear of giving offence to his father, his entrance into that city, which, indignant at his persecution, had made the most brilliant preparations for his reception, he proceeded to Igualada, where an interview took place between him and the king and queen, in which he conducted himself with unfeigned humility and penitence, reciprocated on their part by the most consummate dissimulation.<sup>18</sup>

All parties now confided in the stability of a pacification so anxiously desired, and effected with such ap-

<sup>17</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 97. — Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 282. — L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 106. — Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 250. — Carlos bargained with Pope Pius II. for a transfer of this library, particularly rich in the ancient classics, to Spain, which was eventually defeated by his death. Zurita, who visited the

monastery containing it nearly a century after this period, found its inmates possessed of many traditional anecdotes respecting the prince during his seclusion among them.

<sup>18</sup> Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 548—554. — Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 251. — Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 60—69.



parent cordiality. It was expected that John would hasten to acknowledge his son's title as heir apparent to the crown of Aragon, and convene an assembly of the states to tender him the customary oath of allegiance. But nothing was further from the monarch's intention. He indeed summoned the Aragonese cortes at Fraga for the purpose of receiving their homage to himself; but he expressly refused their request touching a similar ceremony to the prince of Viana; and he openly rebuked the Catalans for presuming to address him as the successor to the crown.<sup>19</sup> (1460.)

In this unnatural procedure it was easy to discern the influence of the queen. In addition to her original causes of aversion to Carlos, she regarded him with hatred as the insuperable obstacle to her own child Ferdinand's advancement. Even the affection of John seemed to be now wholly transferred from the offspring of his first to that of his second marriage; and, as the queen's influence over him was unbounded, she found it easy by artful suggestions to put a dark construction on every action of Carlos, and to close up every avenue of returning affection within his bosom.

Convinced at length of the hopeless alienation of his father, the prince of Viana turned his attention to other quarters, whence he might obtain support, and eagerly entered into a negotiation, which had been opened with him on the part of Henry the Fourth of Castile, for a union with his sister the princess Isabella. This was coming in direct collision with the favourite scheme of his parents. The marriage of Isabella with the young Ferdinand, which indeed, from the parity of their ages, was a much more suitable connection than that with Carlos, had long been the darling object of their policy, and they resolved to effect it in the face of every obstacle.

<sup>19</sup> Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, ubi fol. 70—75.—Aleson, *Anales de supra*.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. Navarra, tom. iv. p. 556.

In conformity with this purpose, John invited the prince of Viana to attend him at Lerida, where he was then holding the cortes of Catalonia. The latter, fondly, and indeed foolishly, after his manifold experience to the contrary, confiding in the relenting disposition of his father, hastened to obey the summons, in expectation of being publicly acknowledged as his heir in the assembly of the states. After a brief interview he was arrested, and his person placed in strict confinement.<sup>20</sup>

The intelligence of this perfidious procedure diffused general consternation among all classes. They understood too well the artifices of the queen and the vindictive temper of the king, not to feel the most serious apprehensions not only for the liberty but for the life of their prisoner. The cortes of Lerida, which, though dissolved on that very day, had not yet separated, sent an embassy to John, requesting to know the nature of the crimes imputed to his son. The permanent deputation of Aragon, and a delegation from the council of Barcelona, waited on him for a similar purpose, remonstrating at the same time against any violent and unconstitutional proceeding. To all these John returned a cold, evasive answer, darkly intimating a suspicion of conspiracy by his son against his life, and reserving to himself the punishment of the offence.<sup>21</sup>

No sooner was the result of their mission communicated, than the whole kingdom was thrown into a ferment. The high-spirited Catalans rose in arms, almost to a man. The royal governor, after a fruitless attempt to escape, was seized and imprisoned in Barcelona. Troops were levied, and placed under the command of experienced officers of the highest rank. The heated populace, outstripping the

<sup>20</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 108.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 3.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 556, 557.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 27.

<sup>21</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 108, 109.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 252.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 45.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. ii. p. 337.

tardy movement of military operations, marched forward to Lerida in order to get possession of the royal person. The king, who had seasonable notice of this, displayed his wonted presence of mind. He ordered supper to be prepared for him at the usual hour, but, on the approach of night, made his escape on horseback with one or two attendants only, on the road to Fraga, a town within the territory of Aragon; while the mob, traversing the streets of Lerida, and finding little resistance at the gate, burst into the palace, and ransacked every corner of it, piercing, in their fury, even the curtains and beds with their swords and lances.<sup>22</sup>

The Catalan army, ascertaining the route of the royal fugitive, marched directly on Fraga, and arrived so promptly that John, with his wife, and the deputies of the Aragonese cortes assembled there, had barely time to make their escape on the road to Saragossa, while the insurgents poured into the city from the opposite quarter. The person of Carlos, in the mean time, was secured in the inaccessible fortress of Morella, situated in a mountainous district on the confines of Valencia. John, on halting at Saragossa, endeavoured to assemble an Aragonese force capable of resisting the Catalan rebels. But the flame of insurrection had spread throughout Aragon, Valencia, and Navarre, and was speedily communicated to his transmarine possessions of Sardinia and Sicily. The king of Castile supported Carlos at the same time by an irruption into Navarre; and his partisans, the Beaumonts, co-operated with these movements by a descent on Aragon.<sup>23</sup>

John, alarmed at the tempest which his precipitate conduct had aroused, at length saw the necessity of releasing his prisoner; and, as the queen had incurred general odium as the chief instigator of his persecution, he affected to do

<sup>22</sup> Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. ii. p. 358.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 6.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 263.—L. Mari-

neo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 111.

<sup>23</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 6.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 111.

this in consequence of her interposition. As Carlos with his mother-in-law traversed the country on their way to Barcelona, he was everywhere greeted, by the inhabitants of the villages thronging out to meet him, with the most touching enthusiasm. The queen, however, having been informed by the magistrates that her presence would not be permitted in the capital, deemed it prudent to remain at Villa Franca, about twenty miles distant; while the prince, entering Barcelona, was welcomed with the triumphant acclamations due to a conqueror returning from a campaign of victories.<sup>24</sup>

The conditions on which the Catalans proposed to resume their allegiance to their sovereign were sufficiently humiliating. They insisted not only on his public acknowledgment of Carlos as his rightful heir and successor, with the office, conferred on him for life, of lieutenant-general of Catalonia, but on an obligation on his own part that he would never enter the province without their express permission. Such was John's extremity that he not only accepted these unpalatable conditions, but did it with affected cheerfulness.

Fortune seemed now weary of persecution, and Carlos, happy in the attachment of a brave and powerful people, appeared at length to have reached a haven of permanent security. But at this crisis he fell ill of a fever, or, as some historians insinuate, of a disorder occasioned by poison administered during his imprisonment,—a fact which, although unsupported by positive evidence, seems, notwithstanding its atrocity, to be nowise improbable, considering the character of the parties implicated. He expired on the 23rd of September, 1461, in the forty-first

<sup>24</sup> Castillo, Crónica, cap. 28.—Abarca, Reyes de Aragon, fol. 253, 254.—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 111, 112.—Aleson, Anales de Navarra, tom. iv. pp. 559, 560. The inhabitants of Tarraca closed

their gates upon the queen, and rung the bells on her approach, the signal of alarm on the appearance of an enemy or for the pursuit of a malefactor.

year of his age, bequeathing his title to the crown of Navarre, in conformity with the original marriage contract of his parents, to his sister Blanche and her posterity.<sup>25</sup>

Thus in the prime of life, and at the moment when he seemed to have triumphed over the malice of his enemies, died the prince of Viana, whose character, conspicuous for many virtues, has become still more so for his misfortunes. His first act of rebellion, if such, considering his legitimate pretensions to the crown, it can be called, was severely requited by his subsequent calamities; while the vindictive and persecuting temper of his parents excited a very general commiseration in his behalf, and brought him more effectual support than could have been derived from his own merits or the justice of his cause.

The character of Don Carlos has been portrayed by Lucio Marineo, who, as he wrote an account of these transactions by the command of Ferdinand the Catholic, cannot be suspected of any undue partiality in favour of the prince of Viana. "Such," says he, "were his temperance and moderation, such the excellence of his breeding, the purity of his life, his liberality and munificence, and such the sweetness of his demeanour, that no one thing seemed to be wanting in him which belongs to a true and perfect prince."<sup>26</sup> He is described by another contemporary as "in person somewhat above the middle stature, having a thin visage, with a serene and modest expression of countenance, and withal somewhat inclined to melancholy."<sup>27</sup> He was a considerable proficient in music, painting, and several mechanic arts. He frequently

<sup>25</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 51.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 114.—Alonso, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 561—563.—Zurita, *Anales*, cap. 19, 24.

<sup>26</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 106.—"Por quanto era la tompança y mesura de aquel principe; tan grande el concierto y su criança

y costumbres, la limpieza de su vida, su liberalidad y magnificencia, y finalmente su dulce conversacion, que ninguna cosa en el faltava de aquellas que pertenescen a recta vivir, y que arman el verdadero y perfecto principe y señor."

<sup>27</sup> Gundisalvus Garsias, apud Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 281.

amused himself with poetical composition, and was the intimate friend of some of the most eminent bards of his time. But he was above all devoted to the study of philosophy and history. He made a version of Aristotle's *Ethics* into the vernacular, which was first printed, nearly fifty years after his death, at Saragossa, in 1509. He compiled also a *Chronicle of Navarre* from the earliest period to his own times, which, although suffered to remain in manuscript, has been liberally used and cited by the Spanish antiquaries Garibay, Blancas, and others.<sup>28</sup> His natural taste and his habits fitted him much better for the quiet enjoyment of letters than for the tumultuous scenes in which it was his misfortune to be involved, and in which he was no match for enemies grown gray in the field and in the intrigues of the cabinet. But if his devotion to learning, so rare in his own age, and so very rare among princes in any age, was unpropitious to his success on the busy theatre on which he was engaged, it must surely elevate his character in the estimation of an enlightened posterity.

The tragedy did not terminate with the death of Carlos. His sister Blanche, notwithstanding the inoffensive gentleness of her demeanour, had long been involved, by her adhesion to her unfortunate brother, in a similar proscription with him. The succession to Navarre having now devolved on her, she became tenfold an object of jealousy both to her father, the present possessor of that kingdom, and to her sister Eleanor, countess of Foix, to whom the reversion of it had been promised by John, on his own decease. The son of this lady, Gaston de Foix, had lately married a sister of Louis the Eleventh of France; and, in a treaty subsequently contracted between that monarch and the king of Aragon, it was stipulated that Blanche should be delivered into the custody of the

<sup>28</sup> Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. pp. 281, 282.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 434.

countess of Foix, as surety for the succession of the latter, and of her posterity, to the crown of Navarre.<sup>29</sup>

Conformably to this provision, John endeavoured to persuade the princess Blanche to accompany him into France, under the pretext of forming an alliance for her with Louis's brother, the duke of Berri. The unfortunate lady, comprehending too well her father's real purpose, besought him with the most piteous entreaties not to deliver her into the hands of her enemies; but, closing his heart against all natural affection, he caused her to be torn from her residence at Olit, in the heart of her own dominions, and forcibly transported across the mountains into those of the count of Foix. On arriving at St. Jean Pied de Port, a little town on the French side of the Pyrenees, being convinced that she had nothing further to hope from human succour, she made a formal renunciation of her right to Navarre in favour of her cousin and former husband, Henry the Fourth of Castile, who had uniformly supported the cause of her brother Carlos. Henry, though debased by sensual indulgence, was naturally of a gentle disposition, and had never treated her personally with unkindness. In a letter which she now addressed to him, and which, says a Spanish historian, cannot be read, after the lapse of so many years, without affecting the most insensible heart,<sup>30</sup> she reminded him of the dawn of happiness which she had enjoyed under his protection, of his early engagements to her, and of her subsequent calamities; and, anticipating the gloomy destiny which awaited her, she settled on him her inheritance of Navarre, to the entire exclusion of her intended assassins, the count and countess of Foix.<sup>31</sup>

<sup>29</sup> This treaty was signed at Olit in Navarre, April 12th, 1462.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 38, 39.—Gaillard, *Rivalité*, tom. iii. p. 235.—Gaillard confounds it with the subsequent one made in the month of May, near the town of Salvatierra

in Béarn.

<sup>30</sup> Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. p. 110.

<sup>31</sup> *Hist. du Royaume de Navarre*, p. 496.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 590—593.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 268,

On the same day, the last of April, 1462, she was delivered over to one of their emissaries, who conducted her to the castle of Ortes in Béarn, where, after languishing in dreadful suspense for nearly two years, she was poisoned by the command of her sister.<sup>32</sup> The retribution of Providence not unfrequently overtakes the guilty even in this world. The countess survived her father to reign in Navarre only three short weeks; while the crown was ravished from her posterity for ever by that very Ferdinand whose elevation had been the object to his parents of so much solicitude and so many crimes.

Within a fortnight after the decease of Carlos, on the 6th of October, 1461, the customary oaths of allegiance, so pertinaciously withheld from that unfortunate prince, were tendered by the Aragonese deputation, at Calatayud, to his brother Ferdinand, then only ten years of age, as heir apparent of the monarchy; after which he was conducted by his mother into Catalonia, in order to receive the more doubtful homage of that province. The extremities of Catalonia at this time seemed to be in perfect repose, but the capital was still agitated by secret discontent. The ghost of Carlos was seen stalking by night through the streets of Barcelona, bewailing in piteous accents his untimely end, and invoking vengeance on his unnatural murderers. The manifold miracles wrought at his tomb soon gained him the reputation of a saint, and his image received the devotional honours reserved for such as have been duly canonized by the church.<sup>33</sup>

259.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 38.

<sup>32</sup> Lebrija, *De Bello Navariensi* (Granatæ, 1545), lib. 1, cap. 1, fol. 74.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, ubi supra.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 38.—The Spanish historians are not agreed as to the time or even mode of Blanche's death. All concur, however, in attributing it to assassination, and most of them, with the learned Antonio Lebrija, a

contemporary (*loc. cit.*), in imputing it to poison. The fact of her death, which Aleson, on I know not what authority, refers to the 2nd of December, 1464, was not publicly disclosed till some months after its occurrence, when disclosure became necessary in consequence of the proposed interposition of the Navarrese cortes.

<sup>33</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 51.—Zurita,



The revolutionary spirit of the Barcelonians, kept alive by the recollection of past injury, as well as by the apprehensions of future vengeance should John succeed in re-establishing his authority over them, soon became so alarming that the queen, whose consummate address, however, had first accomplished the object of her visit, found it advisable to withdraw from the capital; and she sought refuge, with her son and such few adherents as still remained faithful to them, in the fortified city of Gerona, about fifty miles north of Barcelona.

Hither, however, she was speedily pursued by the Catalan militia, embodied under the command of their ancient leader, Roger, count of Pallas, and eager to regain the prize which they had so inadvertently lost. The city was quickly entered; but the queen, with her handful of followers, had retreated to a tower belonging to the principal church in the place, which, as was very frequent in Spain in those wild times, was so strongly fortified as to be capable of maintaining a formidable resistance. To oppose this, a wooden fortress of the same height was constructed by the assailants, and planted with lombards and other pieces of artillery then in use, which kept up an unintermitting discharge of stone bullets on the little garrison.<sup>34</sup> The Catalans also succeeded in running a mine beneath the fortress, through which a considerable body of troops pene-

Anales, tom. iv. fol. 98.—Abarca, Reyes de Aragon, tom. ii. fol. 236.—Aleson, Anales de Navarra, tom. iv. pp. 563 et seq.—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 114.—According to Lanuza, who wrote nearly two centuries after the death of Carlos, the flesh upon his right arm, which had been amputated for the purpose of a more convenient application to the diseased members of the pilgrims who visited his shrine, remained in his day in a perfectly sound and healthful state! (Historias eclesiásticas y seculares de Aragon, tom. i. p. 553.) Aleson

wonders that any should doubt the truth of miracles attested by the monks of the very monastery in which Carlos was interred.

<sup>34</sup> L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 116.—Alonso de Palencia, Corónica, MS., part. 2, cap. 51.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 113.—The Spaniards, deriving the knowledge of artillery from the Arabs, had become familiar with it before the other nations of Christendom. The affirmation of Zurita, however, that five thousand balls were fired from the battery of the besiegers at Gerona in one day, is perfectly

trated into it, when, their premature cries of exultation having discovered them to the besieged, they were repulsed, after a desperate struggle, with great slaughter. The queen displayed the most intrepid spirit in the midst of these alarming scenes; unappalled by the sense of her own danger and that of her child, and by the dismal lamentations of the females by whom she was surrounded, she visited every part of the works in person, cheering her defenders by her presence and dauntless resolution. Such were the stormy and disastrous scenes in which the youthful Ferdinand commenced a career, whose subsequent prosperity was destined to be checkered by scarcely a reverse of fortune.<sup>35</sup>

In the mean while, John, having in vain attempted to penetrate through Catalonia to the relief of his wife, effected this by the co-operation of his French ally, Louis the Eleventh. That monarch, with his usual insidious policy, had covertly despatched an envoy to Barcelona on the death of Carlos, assuring the Catalans of his protection should they still continue averse to a reconciliation with their own sovereign. These offers were but coldly received; and Louis found it more for his interest to accept the propositions made to him by the king of Aragon himself, which subsequently led to most important consequences. By three several treaties, of the 3rd, 21st, and 23rd of May, 1462, it was stipulated that Louis should furnish his ally with seven hundred lances and a proportionate number of archers and artillery during the war with Barcelona, to be indemnified by the payment of two hundred thousand gold crowns within one year after the re-

absurd. So little was the science of gunnery advanced in other parts of Europe at this period, and indeed later, that it was usual for a field-piece not to be discharged more than twice in the course of an action, if we may credit Machiavelli, who, indeed, recommends dispensing with

the use of artillery altogether. *Arte della Guerra*, lib. 3 (Opere, Genova, 1798).

<sup>35</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 2, c. 51.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 116.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 113.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 259.

duction of that city; as security for which the counties of Roussillon and Cerdagne were pledged by John, with the cession of their revenues to the French king, until such time as the original debt should be redeemed. In this transaction both monarchs manifested their usual policy; Louis believing that this temporary mortgage would become a permanent alienation, from John's inability to discharge it; while the latter anticipated—as the event showed, with more justice—that the aversion of the inhabitants to the dismemberment of their country from the Aragonese monarchy would baffle every attempt on the part of the French to occupy it permanently.<sup>36</sup>

In pursuance of these arrangements, seven hundred French lances with a considerable body of archers and artillery<sup>37</sup> crossed the mountains, and, rapidly advancing on Gerona, compelled the insurgent army to raise the siege, and to decamp with such precipitation as to leave their cannon in the hands of the royalists. The Catalans now threw aside the thin veil with which they had hitherto covered their proceedings. The authorities of the principality, established in Barcelona, publicly renounced their allegiance to King John and his son Ferdinand, and proclaimed them enemies of the *republic*. Writings at the same time were circulated, denouncing from Scriptural authority, as well as natural reason, the doctrine of legitimacy in the broadest terms, and insisting that the Ara-

<sup>36</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 111.—Another 100,000 crowns were to be paid in case further assistance should be required from the French monarch after the reduction of Barcelona. This treaty has been incorrectly reported by most of the French and all the Spanish historians whom I have consulted, save the accurate Zurita. An abstract from the original documents, compiled by the Abbé Legrand, has been given by M. Petitot in his recent edition of the *Collection des*

*Mémoires relatifs à l'Histoire de France* (Paris, 1836), tom. xi. *Introd.* p. 245.

<sup>37</sup> A French lance of that day, according to L. Marineo, was accompanied by two horsemen; so that the whole contingent of cavalry to be furnished on this occasion amounted to 2100. (*Cosas memorables*, fol. 117.) Nothing could be more indeterminate than the complement of a lance in the Middle Ages. It is not unusual to find it reckoned at five or six horsemen.

gonese monarchs, far from being absolute, might be lawfully deposed for an infringement of the liberties of the nation. "The good of the commonwealth," it was said, "must always be considered paramount to that of the prince." Extraordinary doctrines these for the age in which they were promulged, affording a still more extraordinary contrast with those which have been since familiar in that unhappy country!<sup>38</sup>

The government then enforced levies of all such as were above the age of fourteen, and, distrusting the sufficiency of its own resources, offered the sovereignty of the principality to Henry the Fourth of Castile. The court of Aragon, however, had so successfully insinuated its influence into the council of this imbecile monarch, that he was not permitted to afford the Catalans any effectual support; and, as he abandoned their cause altogether before the expiration of the year,<sup>39</sup> the crown was offered to Don Pedro, constable of Portugal, a descendant of the ancient house of Barcelona. In the mean while, the old king of Aragon, attended by his youthful son, had made himself master, with his characteristic activity, of considerable acquisitions in the revolted territory, successively reducing Lerida,<sup>40</sup> Cervera, Amposta,<sup>41</sup> Tortosa, and the most important places in the south of Catalonia. (1464.) Many of these places were strongly fortified, and most of them defended with a resolution which cost the conqueror a

<sup>38</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 113—115.—Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 1.

<sup>39</sup> In conformity with the famous verdict given by Louis XI. at Bayonne, April 23rd, 1463, previously to the interview between him and Henry IV. on the shores of the Bidasoa. See Part I. chap. 3 of this History.

<sup>40</sup> This was the battle-ground of Julius Cæsar in his wars with Pompey. See his ingenious military manoeuvre as simply narrated in his own *Commentaries* (*De Bello Civili*,

tom. i. p. 54), and by Lucan (*Pharsalia*, lib. 4) with his usual swell of hyperbole.

<sup>41</sup> The cold was so intense at the siege of Amposta, that serpents of an enormous magnitude are reported by L. Marinco to have descended from the mountains and taken refuge in the camp of the besiegers. Portentous and supernatural voices were frequently heard during the nights. Indeed, the superstition of the soldiers appears to have been so lively as to have prepared them for seeing and hearing anything.

prodigious sacrifice of time and money. John, like Philip of Macedon, made use of gold even more than arms, for the reduction of his enemies; and, though he indulged in occasional acts of resentment, his general treatment of those who submitted was as liberal as it was politic. His competitor, Don Pedro, had brought little foreign aid to the support of his enterprise; he had failed altogether in conciliating the attachment of his new subjects; and, as the operations of the war had been conducted on his part in the most languid manner, the whole of the principality seemed destined soon to relapse under the dominion of its ancient master. At this juncture the Portuguese prince fell ill of a fever, of which he died on the 29th of June, 1466. This event, which seemed likely to lead to a termination of the war, proved ultimately the cause of its protraction.<sup>42</sup>

It appeared, however, to present a favourable opportunity to John for opening a negotiation with the insurgents. But so resolute were they in maintaining their independence, that the council of Barcelona condemned two of the principal citizens, suspected of defection from the cause, to be publicly executed; it refused moreover to admit an envoy from the Aragonese cortes within the city, and caused the despatches with which he was intrusted by that body to be torn in pieces before his face.

The Catalans then proceeded to elect René le Bon, as he was styled, of Anjou, to the vacant throne, brother of one of the original competitors for the crown of Aragon on the demise of Martin; whose cognomen of "Good" is indicative of a sway far more salutary to his subjects than

<sup>42</sup> Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 390.—Alonso de Palencia, MS., part. 2, cap. 60, 61.—Castillo, *Crónica*, pp. 43, 44, 46, 49, 50, 54.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. ii. fol. 116, 124, 127, 128, 130, 137, 147.—M. La Clède states that "Don

Pedro no sooner arrived in Catalonia than he was poisoned." (*Histoire générale de Portugal* (Paris, 1735), tom. iii. p. 245.) It must have been a very slow poison. He arrived January 21st, 1464, and died June 29th, 1466.

the more coveted and imposing title of Great.<sup>43</sup> This titular sovereign of half a dozen empires, in which he did not actually possess a rood of land, was too far advanced in years to assume this perilous enterprise himself; and he accordingly intrusted it to his son John, duke of Calabria and Lorraine, who, in his romantic expeditions in southern Italy, had acquired a reputation for courtesy and knightly prowess, inferior to none other of his time.<sup>44</sup> Crowds of adventurers flocked to the standard of a leader whose ample inheritance of pretensions had made him familiar with war from his earliest boyhood; and he soon found himself at the head of eight thousand effective troops. Louis the Eleventh, although not directly aiding his enterprise with supplies of men or money, was willing so far to countenance it as to open a passage for him through the mountain fastnesses of Roussillon, then in his keeping, and thus enable him to descend with his whole army at once on the northern borders of Catalonia.<sup>45</sup> (1467.)

The king of Aragon could oppose no force capable of resisting this formidable army. His exchequer, always

<sup>43</sup> Sir Walter Scott, in his "Anne of Geierstein," has brought into full relief the ridiculous side of René's character. The good king's fondness for poetry and the arts, however, although showing itself occasionally in puerile eccentricities, may compare advantageously with the coarse appetites and mischievous activity of most of the contemporary princes. After all, the best tribute to his worth was the earnest attachment of his people. His biography has been well and diligently compiled by the viscount of Villeneuve Bargemont (*Histoire de René d'Anjou*, Paris, 1825), who has, however, indulged in greater detail than was perhaps to have been desired by René, or by his readers.

<sup>44</sup> Comines says of him, "À tous alarmes c'estoit le premier homme armé, et de toutes pièces, et son

cheval toujours bardé. Il portoit un habillement que ces conducteurs portent en Italie, et sembloit bien prince et chef de guerre; et y avoit d'obéissance autant que monseigneur de Charolois, et luy obéissoit tout l'ost de meilleur cœur, car à la vérité il estoit digne d'estre honoré." Philippe de Comines, *Mémoires*, éd. Petitot (Paris, 1826), liv. 1, chap. 11.

<sup>45</sup> Villeneuve Bargemont, *Hist. de René*, tom. ii. pp. 168, 169.—*Histoire de Louys XI.*, autrement dicte *La Chronique scandaleuse*, par un Greffier de l'Hostel de Ville de Paris (Paris, 1620), p. 145.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 150, 153.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 17.—Palencia swells the numbers of the French in the service of the duke of Lorraine to 20,000.

low, was completely exhausted by the extraordinary efforts which he had made in the late campaigns; and, as the king of France, either disgusted with the long protraction of the war, or from secret good will to the enterprise of his feudal subject, withheld from King John the stipulated subsidies, the latter monarch found himself unable, with every expedient of loan and exaction, to raise sufficient money to pay his troops or to supply his magazines. In addition to this, he was now involved in a dispute with the count and countess of Foix, who, eager to anticipate the possession of Navarre, which had been guaranteed to them on their father's decease, threatened a similar rebellion, though on much less justifiable pretences, to that which he had just experienced from Don Carlos. To crown the whole of John's calamities, his eyesight, which had been impaired by exposure and protracted sufferings during the winter siege of Amposta, now failed him altogether.<sup>46</sup>

In this extremity, his intrepid wife, putting herself at the head of such forces as she could collect, passed by water to the eastern shores of Catalonia, besieging Rosas in person, and checking the operations of the enemy by the capture of several inferior places; while Prince Ferdinand, effecting a junction with her before Gerona, compelled the duke of Lorraine to abandon the siege of that important city. Ferdinand's ardour, however, had nearly proved fatal to him; as, in an accidental encounter with a more numerous party of the enemy, his jaded horse would infallibly have betrayed him into their hands, had it not been for the devotion of his officers, several of whom, throwing themselves between him and his pursuers, enabled him to escape by the sacrifice of their own liberty.

These ineffectual struggles could not turn the tide of

<sup>46</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 139.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 148, 149, 158.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. pp. 611—613.

—Duclos, *Hist. de Louis XI.* (Amsterdam, 1746), tom. ii. p. 114.—*Mém. de Comines*, Petitot, *Introd.* p. 258.

fortune. The duke of Lorraine succeeded in this and the two following campaigns in making himself master of all the rich district of Ampurdan, north-east of Barcelona. In the capital itself, his truly princely qualities and his popular address secured him the most unbounded influence. Such was the enthusiasm for his person, that, when he rode abroad, the people thronged around him, embracing his knees, the trappings of his steed, and even the animal himself, in their extravagance; while the ladies, it is said, pawned their rings, necklaces, and other ornaments of their attire, in order to defray the expenses of the war.<sup>47</sup>

King John, in the mean while, was draining the cup of bitterness to the dregs. In the winter of 1468, his queen, Joan Henriquez, fell a victim to a painful disorder, which had been secretly corroding her constitution for a number of years. In many respects, she was the most remarkable woman of her time. She took an active part in the politics of her husband, and may be even said to have given them a direction. She conducted several important diplomatic negotiations to a happy issue, and, what was more uncommon in her sex, displayed considerable capacity for military affairs. Her persecution of her stepson Carlos has left a deep stain on her memory. It was the cause of all her husband's subsequent misfortunes. Her invincible spirit, however, and the resources of her genius, supplied him with the best means of surmounting many of the difficulties in which she had involved him, and her loss at this crisis seemed to leave him at once without solace or support.<sup>48</sup>

<sup>47</sup> Villeneuve Bargemont, *Hist. de René*, tom. ii. pp. 182, 183.—L. Marineo, fol. 140.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 153—164.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. rey 29, cap. 7.

<sup>48</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 88.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 143.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. iv. p. 609.—The queen's death was said

to have been caused by a cancer. According to Aleson and some other Spanish writers, Joan was heard several times, in her last illness, to exclaim, in allusion, as was supposed, to her assassination of Carlos, "Alas! Ferdinand, how dear thou hast cost thy mother!" I find no notice of this improbable confession in any contemporary author.



At this period, he was further embarrassed, as will appear in the ensuing chapter, by negotiations for Ferdinand's marriage, which was to deprive him, in a great measure, of his son's co-operation in the struggle with his subjects, and which, as he lamented, while he had scarcely three hundred *enriques* in his coffers called on him for additional disbursements.

As the darkest hour, however, is commonly said to precede the dawning, so light now seemed to break upon the affairs of John. A physician in Lerida of the Hebrew race, which monopolized at that time almost all the medical science in Spain, persuaded the king to submit to the then unusual operation of couching, and succeeded in restoring sight to one of his eyes. As the Jew, after the fashion of the Arabs, debased his real science with astrology, he refused to operate on the other eye, since the planets, he said, wore a malignant aspect. But John's rugged nature was insensible to the timorous superstitions of his age, and he compelled the physician to repeat his experiment, which in the end proved perfectly successful. Thus restored to his natural faculties, the octogenarian chief, for such he might now almost be called, regained his wonted elasticity, and prepared to resume offensive operations against the enemy, with all his accustomed energy.<sup>49</sup>

Heaven, too, as if taking compassion on his accumulated misfortunes, now removed the principal obstacle to his success by the death of the duke of Lorraine, who was summoned from the theatre of his short-lived triumphs on the 16th of December, 1469.\* The Barcelonians were thrown into the greatest consternation by his death, imputed, as usual, though without apparent foundation, to poison; and their respect for his memory was attested by

<sup>49</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. memorables, fol. 141.—Alonso de ii. pp. 459, 460.—L. Marineo, *Cosas* Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 88.

\* [This date should be 1470. See Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 178, recto, and Lenglet, *Mém. de Comines*, *Preuves*, tom. iv. p. 384.—Ed.]

the honours no less than royal which they paid to his remains. His body, sumptuously attired, with his victorious sword by his side, was paraded in solemn procession through the illuminated streets of the city, and, after lying nine days in state, was deposited, amid the lamentations of the people, in the sepulchre of the sovereigns of Catalonia.<sup>50</sup>

As the father of the deceased prince was too old, and his children too young, to give effectual aid to their cause, the Catalans might be now said to be again without a leader. But their spirit was unbroken, and with the same resolution in which they refused submission more than two centuries after, in 1714, when the combined forces of France and Spain were at the gates of the capital, they rejected the conciliatory advances made them anew by John. That monarch, however, having succeeded by extraordinary efforts in assembling a competent force, was proceeding with his usual alacrity in the reduction of such places in the eastern quarter of Catalonia as had revolted to the enemy, while at the same time he instituted a rigorous blockade of Barcelona by sea and land. The fortifications were strong, and the king was unwilling to expose so fair a city to the devastating horrors of a storm. The inhabitants made one vigorous effort in a sally against the royal forces; but the civic militia were soon broken, and the loss of four thousand men, killed and prisoners, admonished them of their inability to cope with the veterans of Aragon.<sup>51</sup>

<sup>50</sup> Villeneuve Bargemont, *Hist. de René*, tom. ii. pp. 182, 333, 334. —L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 142.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, part. 2, cap. 39. —Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 178.—According to M. de Villeneuve Bargemont, the princess Isabella's hand had been offered to the duke of Lorraine, and the envoy despatched to notify his acceptance of it, on arriving at the court of Castile, re-

ceived from the lips of Henry IV. the first tidings of his master's death (tom. ii. p. 184). He must have learned too with no less surprise that Isabella had already been married at that time more than a year! See the date of the official marriage recorded in *Mom. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Apend.* no. 4.

<sup>51</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 29, 45.—Zurita,

At length, reduced to the last extremity, they consented to enter into negotiations, which were concluded by a treaty equally honourable to both parties. It was stipulated that Barcelona should retain all its ancient privileges and rights of jurisdiction, and, with some exceptions, its large territorial possessions. A general amnesty was to be granted for offences. The foreign mercenaries were to be allowed to depart in safety; and such of the natives as should refuse to renew their allegiance to their ancient sovereign within a year might have the liberty of removing with their effects wherever they would. One provision may be thought somewhat singular, after what had occurred; it was agreed that the king should cause the Barcelonians to be publicly proclaimed, throughout all his dominions, good, faithful, and loyal subjects; which was accordingly done!

The king, after the adjustment of the preliminaries, "declining," says a contemporary, "the triumphal car which had been prepared for him, made his entrance into the city by the gate of St. Antony, mounted on a white charger; and, as he rode along the principal streets, the sight of so many pallid countenances and emaciated figures, bespeaking the extremity of famine, smote his heart with sorrow." He then proceeded to the hall of the great palace, and on the 22nd of December, 1472, solemnly swore there to respect the constitution and laws of Catalonia.<sup>52</sup>

Thus ended this long, disastrous civil war, the fruit of parental injustice and oppression, which had nearly cost the king of Aragon the fairest portion of his dominions; which devoted to disquietude and disappointment more than ten years of life, at a period when repose is most

Anales, tom. iv. fol. 180—183.—  
Abarca. Reyes de Aragon, rey 29,  
cap. 29.

<sup>52</sup> L. Marineo, Cosas memorables,

VOL. I.

fol. 144, 147.—Zurita, Anales, tom.  
iv. fol. 187, 188.—Alonso de Pa-  
lencia, Corónica, MS., part. 2, cap. 1.

grateful; and which opened the way to foreign wars, that continued to hang like a dark cloud over the evening of his days. It was attended, however, with one important result; that of establishing Ferdinand's succession over the whole of the domains of his ancestors.

## CHAPTER III

### REIGN OF HENRY IV. OF CASTILE.—CIVIL WAR.— MARRIAGE OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.

1454—1469.

Henry IV. disappoints Expectations.—Oppression of the People.—League of the Nobles.—Extraordinary Scene at Avila.—Early Education of Isabella.—Death of her Brother Alfonso.—Intestine Anarchy.—The Crown offered to Isabella.—She declines it.—Her Suitors.—She accepts Ferdinand of Aragon.—Marriage Articles.—Critical Situation of Isabella.—Ferdinand enters Castile.—Their Marriage.

WHILE these stormy events were occurring in Aragon, the Infanta Isabella, whose birth was mentioned at the close of the first chapter, was passing her youth amidst scenes scarcely less tumultuous. At the date of her birth, her prospect of succeeding to the throne of her ancestors was even more remote than Ferdinand's prospect of inheriting that of his; and it is interesting to observe through what trials, and by what a series of remarkable events, Providence was pleased to bring about this result, and through it the union, so long deferred, of the great Spanish monarchies.

The accession of her elder brother, Henry the Fourth, was welcomed with an enthusiasm proportioned to the disgust which had been excited by the long-protracted and imbecile reign of his predecessor. Some few, indeed, who looked back to the time when he was arrayed in arms against his father, distrusted the soundness either of his principles or of his judgment. But far the larger portion of the nation was disposed to refer this to inexperience, or the ebullition of youthful spirit, and indulged the cheering

anticipations which are usually entertained of a new reign and a young monarch.<sup>1</sup> Henry was distinguished by a benign temper, and by a condescension, which might be called familiarity, in his intercourse with his inferiors, virtues peculiarly engaging in persons of his elevated station; and as vices which wear the gloss of youth are not only pardoned, but are oftentimes popular with the vulgar, the reckless extravagance in which he indulged himself was favourably contrasted with the severe parsimony of his father in his latter years, and gained him the surname of "the Liberal." His treasurer having remonstrated with him on the prodigality of his expenditure, he replied, "Kings, instead of hoarding treasure like private persons, are bound to dispense it for the happiness of their subjects. We must give to our enemies to make them friends, and to our friends to keep them so." He suited the action so well to the word, that in a few years there was scarcely a *maravedi* remaining in the royal coffers.<sup>2</sup>

He maintained greater state than was usual with the monarchs of Castile, keeping in pay a body-guard of thirty-six hundred lances, splendidly equipped, and officered by the sons of the nobility. He proclaimed a crusade against the Moors, a measure always popular in Castile, assuming the pomegranate branch, the device of Granada, on his escutcheon, in token of his intention to extirpate the Moslems from the Peninsula. He assembled the chivalry of the remote provinces; and, in the early part of his reign, scarce a year elapsed without one or more incursions into the hostile territory, with armies of thirty or forty

<sup>1</sup> "Nil pudet assuetos sceptris:  
mitissima sors est  
Regnorum sub rege novo."  
Lucan, *Pharsalia*, lib. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS.,  
bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8.—Rodericus  
Sanctius, *Historia Hispanica*, cap.  
38, 39.—Pulgar, *Claros Varones*,

tit. 1.—Castillo, *Crónica*, i. 20.—  
Guzman, *Generaciones*, cap. 33.—  
Although Henry's lavish expendi-  
ture, particularly on works of  
architecture, gained him in early  
life the appellation of "the Liberal,"  
he is better known on the roll of  
Castilian sovereigns by the less  
flattering title of "the Impotent."

thousand men. The results did not correspond with the magnificence of the apparatus ; and these brilliant expeditions too often evaporated in a mere border foray, or in an empty gasconade under the walls of Granada. Orchards were cut down, harvests plundered, villages burnt to the ground, and all the other modes of annoyance peculiar to this barbarous warfare put in practice by the invading armies, as they swept over the face of the country ; individual feats of prowess, too, commemorated in the romantic ballads of the time, were achieved ; but no victory was gained, no important post acquired. The king in vain excused his hasty retreats and abortive enterprises, by saying that " he prized the life of one of his soldiers more than those of a thousand Mussulmans." His troops murmured at this timorous policy ; and the people of the south, on whom the charges of the expeditions fell with peculiar heaviness, from their neighbourhood to the scene of operations, complained that " the war was carried on against them, not against the infidel." On one occasion an attempt was made to detain the king's person, and thus prevent him from disbanding his forces. So soon had the royal authority fallen into contempt ! The king of Granada himself, when summoned to pay tribute after a series of these ineffectual operations, replied that, " in the first years of Henry's reign, he would have offered anything, even his children, to preserve peace to his dominions ; but now he would give nothing."\*

The contempt to which the king exposed himself by his public conduct was still further heightened by his domestic. With even a greater indisposition to business than was manifested by his father,<sup>4</sup> he possessed none of the culti-

\* Zuñiga, *Anales eclesiásticos y seculares de Sevilla*, p. 344.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 20.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 415, 419.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 1, cap. 14 et seq.—The

surprise of Gibraltar, the unhappy source of feud between the families of Guzman and Ponce de Leon, did not occur till a later period, 1462.

<sup>4</sup> Such was his apathy, says Mariana, that he would subscribe

vated tastes which were the redeeming qualities of the latter. Having been addicted from his earliest youth to debauchery, when he had lost the powers he retained all the relish for the brutish pleasures of a voluptuary. He had repudiated his wife, Blanche of Aragon, after a union of twelve years, on grounds sufficiently ridiculous and humiliating.<sup>5</sup> In 1455, he espoused Joanna, a Portuguese princess, sister of Alfonso the Fifth, the reigning monarch. This lady, then in the bloom of youth, was possessed of personal graces and a lively wit, which, say the historians, made her the delight of the court of Portugal. She was accompanied by a brilliant train of maidens, and her entrance into Castile was greeted by the festivities and military pageants which belong to an age of chivalry. The light and lively manners of the young queen, however, which seemed to defy the formal etiquette of the Castilian court, gave occasion to the grossest suspicions. The tongue of scandal indicated Beltran de la Cueva, one of the handsomest cavaliers in the kingdom, and then newly risen in the royal graces, as the person to whom she most liberally dispensed her favours. This knight defended a passage of arms, in presence of the court, near Madrid, in which he maintained the superior beauty of his mistress, against all comers. The king was so much delighted with his prowess that he commemorated the event by the erection of a monastery dedicated to St. Jerome; a whimsical origin for a religious institution.<sup>6</sup>

his name to public ordinances without taking the trouble to acquaint himself with their contents. Hist. de España, tom. ii. p. 423.

<sup>5</sup> Pulgar, Crónica de los Reyes Católicos (Valencia, 1780), cap. 2.—Alonso de Palencia, Crónica, MS., part. 1, cap. 4.—Aleson, Anales de Navarra, tom. iv. pp. 519, 520.—The marriage between Blanche and Henry was publicly declared void by the bishop of Segovia, confirmed by the archbishop of Toledo, "por

*impotencia respectiva*, owing to some malign influence"!.

<sup>6</sup> La Clède, Hist. de Portugal, tom. iii. pp. 325, 345.—Flores, Reynas Cathólicas, tom. ii. pp. 763, 766.—Alonso de Palencia, Crónica, MS., part. 1, cap. 20, 21.—It does not appear, however, whom Beltran de la Cueva indicated as the lady of his love on this occasion. (See Castillo, Crónica, cap. 23, 24.) Two anecdotes may be mentioned as characteristic of the gallantry of



The queen's levity might have sought some justification in the unveiled licentiousness of her husband. One of the maids of honour, whom she brought in her train, acquired an ascendancy over Henry which he did not attempt to disguise; and the palace, after the exhibition of the most disgraceful scenes, became divided by the factions of the hostile fair ones. The archbishop of Seville did not blush to espouse the cause of the paramour, who maintained a magnificence of state which rivalled that of royalty itself. The public were still more scandalized by Henry's sacrilegious intrusion of another of his mistresses into the post of abbess of a convent in Toledo, after the expulsion of her predecessor, a lady of noble rank and irreproachable character.<sup>7</sup>

The stream of corruption soon finds its way from the higher to the more humble walks of life. The middling classes, imitating their superiors, indulged in an excess of luxury equally demoralizing, and ruinous to their fortunes. The contagion of example infected even the higher ecclesiastics; and we find the archbishop of St. James hunted from his see by the indignant populace, in consequence of an outrage attempted on a youthful bride as she was returning from church after the performance of the nuptial ceremony. The rights of the people could be but little consulted, or cared for, in a court thus abandoned to unbounded license. Accordingly we find a repetition of most of the unconstitutional and oppressive acts which occurred under John the Second of Castile,—attempts at arbitrary taxation, interference in the freedom of elections,

the times. The archbishop of Seville concluded a superb *fête*, given in honour of the royal nuptials, by introducing on the table two vases filled with rings garnished with precious stones, to be distributed among his female guests. At a ball given on another occasion, the young queen having conde-

scended to dance with the French ambassador, the latter made a solemn vow, in commemoration of so distinguished an honour, never to dance with any other woman.

<sup>7</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., cap. 42, 47.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 23.

and in the right exercised by the cities of nominating the commanders of such contingents of troops as they might contribute to the public defence. Their territories were repeatedly alienated, and, as well as the immense sums raised by the sale of papal indulgences for the prosecution of the Moorish war, were lavished on the royal satellites.<sup>8</sup>

But perhaps the most crying evil of this period was the shameless adulteration of the coin. Instead of five royal mints which formerly existed, there were now one hundred and fifty in the hands of authorized individuals, who debased the coin to such a deplorable extent that the most common articles of life were enhanced in value three, four, and even six fold. Those who owed debts eagerly anticipated the season of payment; and, as the creditors refused to accept it in the depreciated currency, it became a fruitful source of litigation and tumult, until the whole nation seemed on the verge of bankruptcy. In this general license, the right of the strongest was the only one which could make itself heard. The nobles, converting their castles into dens of robbers, plundered the property of the traveller, which was afterwards sold publicly in the cities. One of these robber chieftains, who held an important command on the frontiers of Murcia, was in the habit of carrying on an infamous traffic with the Moors by selling to them as slaves the Christian

<sup>8</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 35.—Sempere, *Hist. del Luxo*, tom. i. p. 183.—Idem, *Hist. des Cortès*, ch. 19.—Marina, *Teoría*, part. 1, cap. 20,—part. 2, pp. 390, 391.—Zufiiga, *Anales de Sevilla*, pp. 346, 349.—The papal bulls of crusade issued on these occasions, says Palencia, contained among other indulgences an exemption from the pains and penalties of purgatory, assuring to the soul of the purchaser, after death, an immediate translation into a state of glory. Some of the more orthodox

casuists doubted the validity of such a bull. But it was decided, after due examination, that, as the holy father possessed plenary power of absolution of all offences committed upon earth, and as purgatory is situated upon earth, it properly fell within his jurisdiction. (cap. 32.) Bulls of crusade were sold at the rate of 200 maravedis each; and it is computed by the same historian that no less than 4,000,000 maravedis were amassed by this traffic in Castile in the space of four years!

prisoners, of either sex, whom he had captured in his marauding expeditions. When subdued by Henry, after a sturdy resistance, he was again received into favour, and reinstated in his possessions.<sup>9</sup> The pusillanimous monarch knew neither when to pardon nor when to punish.

But no part of Henry's conduct gave such umbrage to his nobles as the facility with which he resigned himself to the control of favourites, whom he had created as it were from nothing, and whom he advanced over the heads of the ancient aristocracy of the land. Among those especially disgusted by this proceeding were Juan Pacheco, marquis of Villena, and Alfonso Carillo, archbishop of Toledo. These two personages exercised so important an influence over the destinies of Henry as to deserve more particular notice. The former was of noble Portuguese extraction, and originally a page in the service of the constable Alvaro de Luna, by whom he had been introduced into the household of Prince Henry during the lifetime of John the Second. His polished and plausible address soon acquired him a complete ascendancy over the feeble mind of his master, who was guided by his pernicious counsels in his frequent dissensions with his father. His invention was ever busy in devising intrigues, which he recommended by his subtile, insinuating eloquence; and he seemed to prefer the attainment of his purposes by a crooked rather than by a direct policy, even when the latter might equally well have answered. He sustained reverses with imperturbable composure; and, when his schemes were most successful, he was willing to risk all for the excitement of a new revolution. Although naturally humane, and without violent or revengeful passions, his restless spirit was perpetually involving his country in all the disasters of civil war. He was created marquis of Villena by John the Second; and his ample domains,

<sup>9</sup> Saez, *Monedas de Enrique IV.* de Palencia, *Corónica, MS.*, cap. 36, (Madrid, 1805), pp. 2—5.—Alonso 39.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 19.

lying on the confines of Toledo, Murcia, and Valencia, and embracing an immense extent of populous and well-fortified territory, made him the most powerful vassal in the kingdom.<sup>10</sup>

His uncle, the archbishop of Toledo, was of a sterner character. He was one of those turbulent prelates, not unfrequent in a rude age, who seem intended by nature for the camp rather than the church. He was fierce, haughty, intractable; and he was supported in the execution of his ambitious enterprises no less by his undaunted resolution than by the extraordinary resources which he enjoyed as primate of Spain. He was capable of warm attachments, and of making great personal sacrifices for his friends, from whom, in return, he exacted the most implicit deference; and, as he was both easily offended and implacable in his resentments, he seems to have been almost equally formidable as a friend and as an enemy.<sup>11</sup>

These early adherents of Henry, little satisfied with seeing their own consequence eclipsed by the rising glories of the newly-created favourites, began secretly to stir up cabals and confederacies among the nobles, until the occurrence of other circumstances obviated the necessity, and indeed the possibility, of further dissimulation. Henry had been persuaded to take part in the internal dissensions which then agitated the kingdom of Aragon, and had supported the Catalans in their opposition to their sovereign by seasonable supplies of men and money. He had even

<sup>10</sup> Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 6. —Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 15. —Mendoza, *Monarquía de España*, tom. i. p. 328. —The ancient marquisate of Villena, having been incorporated into the crown of Castile, devolved to Prince Henry of Aragon, on his marriage with the daughter of John II. It was subsequently confiscated by that monarch, in consequence of the repeated rebellions of Prince Henry; and the title, together with

a large proportion of the domains originally attached to it, was conferred on Don Juan Pacheco, by whom it was transmitted to his son, afterwards raised to the rank of duke of Escalona, in the reign of Isabella. Salazar de Mendoza, *Dignidades de Castilla y Leon*, lib. 3, cap. 12, 17.

<sup>11</sup> Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 20. —Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 10, 11.

made some considerable conquests for himself, when he was induced, by the advice of the marquis of Villena and the archbishop of Toledo, to refer the arbitration of his differences with the king of Aragon to Louis the Eleventh of France, a monarch whose habitual policy allowed him to refuse no opportunity of interference in the concerns of his neighbours.

The conferences were conducted at Bayonne, and an interview was subsequently agreed on between the kings of France and Castile, to be held near that city, on the banks of the Bidassoa, which divides the dominions of the respective monarchs. The contrast exhibited by the two princes at this interview, in their style of dress and equipage, was sufficiently striking to deserve notice. Louis, who was even worse attired than usual, according to Comines, wore a coat of coarse woollen cloth cut short, a fashion then deemed very unsuitable to persons of rank, with a doublet of fustian, and a weather-beaten hat, surmounted by a little leaden image of the Virgin. His imitative courtiers adopted a similar costume. The Castilians, on the other hand, displayed uncommon magnificence. The barge of the royal favourite, Beltran de la Cueva, was resplendent with sails of cloth of gold, and his apparel glittered with a profusion of costly jewels. Henry was escorted by his Moorish guard gorgeously equipped, and the cavaliers of his train vied with each other in the sumptuous decorations of dress and equipage. The two nations appear to have been mutually disgusted with the contrast exhibited by their opposite affectations. The French sneered at the ostentation of the Spaniards, and the latter, in their turn, derided the sordid parsimony of their neighbours; and thus the seeds of a national aversion were implanted, which, under the influence of more important circumstances, ripened into open hostility.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>12</sup> At least these are the important consequences imputed to this interview by the French writers. See Gaillard, *Rivalité*, tom. iii. pp.

The monarchs seem to have separated with as little esteem for each other as did their respective courtiers ; and Comines profits by the occasion to inculcate the inexpediency of such interviews between princes who have exchanged the careless jollity of youth for the cold and calculating policy of riper years. The award of Louis dissatisfied all parties ; a tolerable proof of its impartiality. The Castilians, in particular, complained that the marquis of Villena and the archbishop of Toledo had compromised the honour of the nation, by allowing their sovereign to cross over to the French shore of the Bidassoa, and its interests, by the cession of the conquered territory to Aragon. They loudly accused them of being pensioners of Louis,—a fact which does not appear improbable, considering the usual policy of this prince, who, as is well known, maintained an espionage over the councils of most of his neighbours. Henry was so far convinced of the truth of these imputations, that he dismissed the obnoxious ministers from their employments.<sup>13</sup>

The disgraced nobles instantly set about the organization of one of those formidable confederacies, which had so often shaken the monarchs of Castile upon their throne, and which, although not authorized by positive law, as in Aragon, seem to have derived somewhat of a constitutional sanction from ancient usage. Some of the members of this coalition were doubtless influenced exclusively by personal jealousies ; but many others entered into it from disgust at the imbecile and arbitrary proceedings of the crown.

241—243.—Comines, *Mémoires*, liv. 2, chap. 8.—Also Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 48, 49.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 50.

<sup>13</sup> Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. ii. p. 122.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 56.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 51, 52, 58.—The queen of Aragon, who was as skilful a diplomatist as her

husband, John I., assailed the vanity of Villena quite as much as his interest. On one of his missions to her court, she invited him to dine with her *tête-à-tête* at her own table, while during the repast they were served by the ladies of the palace. *Ibid.*, cap. 40.

In 1462, the queen had been delivered of a daughter, who was named like herself Joanna, but who, from her reputed father, Beltran de la Cueva, was better known in the progress of her unfortunate history by the cognomen of Beltraneja. Henry, however, had required the usual oath of allegiance to be tendered to her as presumptive heir to the crown. The confederates, assembled at Burgos, declared this oath of fealty a compulsory act, and that many of them had privately protested against it at the time, from a conviction of the illegitimacy of Joanna. In the bill of grievances which they now presented to the monarch, they required that he should deliver his brother Alfonso into their hands, to be publicly acknowledged as his successor; they enumerated the manifold abuses which pervaded every department of government, which they freely imputed to the unwholesome influence exercised by the favourite, Beltran de la Cueva, over the royal counsels, doubtless the true key to much of their patriotic sensibility; and they entered into a covenant, sanctioned by all the solemnities of religion usual on these occasions, not to re-enter the service of their sovereign, or accept any favour from him, until he had redressed their wrongs.<sup>14</sup>

The king, who by an efficient policy might perhaps have crushed these revolutionary movements in their birth, was naturally averse to violent, or even vigorous, measures. He replied to the bishop of Cuenca, his ancient preceptor, who recommended these measures, "You priests, who are not called to engage in the fight, are very liberal of the blood of others." To which the prelate rejoined, with more warmth than breeding, "Since you are not true to your own honour at a time like this, I shall live to see you

<sup>14</sup> See the memorial presented to the king, cited at length in Marina, *Teoría*, tom. iii. Apend. no. 7.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 58, 64.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 17, cap. 56.—Lebrija, *Hispanarum Rerum*

*Ferdinando Rege et Elisabe Regina Gestarum decades* (apud Granatam, 1645), lib. 1, cap. 1, 2.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 1, cap. 6.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 9.

the most degraded monarch in Spain; when you will repent too late this unseasonable pusillanimity."<sup>15</sup>

Henry, unmoved either by the entreaties or remonstrances of his adherents, resorted to the milder method of negotiation. He consented to an interview with the confederates, in which he was induced, by the plausible arguments of the marquis of Villena, to comply with most of their demands. He delivered his brother Alfonso into their hands, to be recognized as the lawful heir to the crown, on condition of his subsequent union with Joanna; and he agreed to nominate, in conjunction with his opponents, a commission of five, who should deliberate on the state of the kingdom, and provide an effectual reform of abuses.<sup>16</sup> The result of this deliberation, however, proved so prejudicial to the royal authority, that the feeble monarch was easily persuaded to disavow the proceedings of the commissioners, on the ground of their secret collusion with his enemies, and even to attempt the seizure of their persons. The confederates, disgusted with this breach of faith, and in pursuance, perhaps, of their original design, instantly decided on the execution of that bold measure which some writers denounce as a flagrant act of rebellion, and others vindicate as a just and constitutional proceeding.

In an open plain, not far from the city of Avila, they caused a scaffold to be erected, of sufficient elevation to be easily seen from the surrounding country. A chair of state was placed on it, and in this was seated an effigy of King Henry, clad in sable robes and adorned with all the insignia of royalty, a sword at its side, a sceptre in its hand, and a crown upon its head. A manifesto was then read, exhibiting in glowing colours the tyrannical conduct

<sup>15</sup> Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 65.

<sup>16</sup> See copies from the original instruments which are still preserved in the archives of the house of Villena, in *Marina, Teoría*, tom.

iii. part. 2, Ap. 6, 8. — Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 66, 67. — Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 1, cap. 57.



of the king, and the consequent determination to depose him; and vindicating the proceeding by several precedents drawn from the history of the monarchy. The archbishop of Toledo then, ascending the platform, tore the diadem from the head of the statue; the marquis of Villena removed the sceptre, the count of Placencia the sword, the grand master of Alcantara and the counts of Benavente and Paredes the rest of the regal insignia; when the image, thus despoiled of its honours, was rolled in the dust, amid the mingled groans and clamours of the spectators. The young prince Alfonso, at that time only eleven years of age, was seated on the vacant throne, and the assembled grandees severally kissed his hand in token of their homage; the trumpets announced the completion of the ceremony, and the populace greeted with joyful acclamations the accession of their new sovereign.<sup>17</sup> (1465.)

Such are the details of this extraordinary transaction, as recorded by the two contemporary historians of the rival factions. The tidings were borne, with the usual celerity of evil news, to the remotest parts of the kingdom. The pulpit and the forum resounded with the debates of disputants, who denied, or defended, the right of the subject to sit in judgment on the conduct of his sovereign. Every man was compelled to choose his side in this strange division of the kingdom. Henry received intelligence of the defection, successively, of the capital cities of Burgos, Toledo, Cordova, Seville, together with a large part of the southern provinces, where lay the estates of some of the most powerful partisans of the opposite faction. The unfortunate monarch, thus deserted by his subjects, abandoned himself to despair, and expressed the extremity of his anguish in the strong language of Job: "Naked came I from my mother's womb, and naked must I go down to the earth!"<sup>18</sup>

<sup>17</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 1, cap. 62. — Castillo,

*Crónica*, cap. 68, 69, 74.

<sup>18</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*,

A large—probably the larger—part of the nation, however, disapproved of the tumultuous proceedings of the confederates. However much they contemned the person of the monarch, they were not prepared to see the royal authority thus openly degraded. They indulged, too, some compassion for a prince whose political vices, at least, were imputable to mental incapacity, and to evil counsellors, rather than to any natural turpitude of heart. Among the nobles who adhered to him, the most conspicuous were “the good count of Haro,” and the powerful family of Mendoza, the worthy scions of an illustrious stock. The estates of the marquis of Santillana, the head of this house, lay chiefly in the Asturias, and gave him a considerable influence in the northern provinces,<sup>19</sup> the majority of whose inhabitants remained constant in their attachment to the royal cause.

When Henry’s summons, therefore, was issued for the attendance of all his loyal subjects capable of bearing arms, it was answered by a formidable array of numbers, that must have greatly exceeded that of his rival, and which is swelled by his biographer to seventy thousand foot and fourteen thousand horse; a much smaller force, under the direction of an efficient leader, would doubtless have sufficed to extinguish the rising spirit of revolt. But Henry’s temper led him to adopt a more conciliatory policy, and to try what could be effected by negotiation,

MS., part. 1, cap. 63, 70.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 75, 76.

<sup>19</sup> The celebrated marquis of Santillana died in 1458, at the age of sixty. (Sanchez, *Poesías Castellanas*, tom. i. p. 23.) The title descended to his eldest son, Diego Hurtado de Mendoza, who is represented by his contemporaries to have been worthy of his sire. Like him, he was imbued with a love of letters; he was conspicuous for his magnanimity and chivalrous honour, his moderation, constancy, and

uniform loyalty to his sovereign,—virtues of rare worth in those rapacious and turbulent times. (Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 9.) Ferdinand and Isabella created him duke del Infantado. This domain derives its name from its having been once the patrimony of the *infantes* of Castile. See Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. i. p. 219,—and *Dignidades de Castilla*, lib. 3, cap. 17.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8.

before resorting to arms. In the former, however, he was no match for the confederates, or rather the marquis of Villena, their representative on these occasions. This nobleman, who had so zealously co-operated with his party in conferring the title of king on Alfonso, had intended to reserve the authority to himself. He probably found more difficulty in controlling the operations of the jealous and aspiring aristocracy, with whom he was associated, than he had imagined; and he was willing to aid the opposite party in maintaining a sufficient degree of strength to form a counterpoise to that of the confederates, and thus, while he made his own services the more necessary to the latter, to provide a safe retreat for himself, in case of the shipwreck of their fortunes.<sup>20</sup>

In conformity with this dubious policy, he had, soon after the occurrence at Avila, opened a secret correspondence with his former master, and suggested to him the idea of terminating their differences by some amicable adjustment. In consequence of these intimations, Henry consented to enter into a negotiation with the confederates; and it was agreed that the forces on both sides should be disbanded, and that a suspension of hostilities for six months should take place, during which some definitive and permanent scheme of reconciliation might be devised. Henry, in compliance with this arrangement, instantly disbanded his levies; they retired overwhelmed with indignation at the conduct of their sovereign, who so readily relinquished the only means of redress that he possessed, and whom they now saw it would be unavailing to assist, since he was so ready to desert himself.<sup>21</sup>

It would be an unprofitable task to attempt to unravel all the fine-spun intrigues by which the marquis of Villena contrived to defeat every attempt at an ultimate accommodation between the parties, until he was very generally

<sup>20</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, Crónica, cap. 78.  
MS., part. 1, cap. 64. — Castillo,

<sup>21</sup> Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 80, 82.

execrated as the real source of the disturbances in the kingdom. In the mean while, the singular spectacle was exhibited of two monarchs presiding over one nation, surrounded by their respective courts, administering the laws, convoking cortes, and in fine assuming the state and exercising all the functions of sovereignty. It was apparent that this state of things could not last long, and that the political ferment which now agitated the minds of men from one extremity of the kingdom to the other, and which occasionally displayed itself in tumults and acts of violence, would soon burst forth with all the horrors of a civil war.

At this juncture, a proposition was made to Henry for detaching the powerful family of Pacheco from the interests of the confederates, by the marriage of his sister Isabella with the brother of the marquis of Villena, Don Pedro Giron, grand master of the order of Calatrava, a nobleman of aspiring views, and one of the most active partisans of his faction. The archbishop of Toledo would naturally follow the fortunes of his nephew, and thus the league, deprived of its principal supports, must soon crumble to pieces. Instead of resenting this proposal as an affront upon his honour, the abject mind of Henry was content to purchase repose even by the most humiliating sacrifice. He acceded to the conditions; application was made to Rome for a dispensation from the vows of celibacy imposed on the grand master as the companion of a religious order; and splendid preparations were instantly commenced for the approaching nuptials.<sup>22</sup>

Isabella was then in her sixteenth year. On her father's death, she retired with her mother to the little town of Arevalo, where, in seclusion, and far from the voice of flattery and falsehood, she had been permitted to unfold

<sup>22</sup> Bades y Andrada, *Crónica de las tres Ordenes y Cavallerías* (Toledo, 1572), fol. 76. — Castillo,

*Crónica*, cap. 85.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 1, cap. 73.

the natural graces of mind and person, which might have been blighted in the pestilent atmosphere of a court. Here, under the maternal eye, she was carefully instructed in those lessons of practical piety, and in the deep reverence for religion, which distinguished her maturer years. On the birth of the princess Joanna, she was removed, together with her brother, Alfonso, by Henry to the royal palace, in order more effectually to discourage the formation of any faction adverse to the interests of his supposed daughter. In this abode of pleasure, surrounded by all the seductions most dazzling to youth, she did not forget the early lessons that she had imbibed; and the blameless purity of her conduct shone with additional lustre amid the scenes of levity and licentiousness by which she was surrounded.<sup>23</sup>

The near connection of Isabella with the crown, as well as her personal character, invited the application of numerous suitors. Her hand was first solicited for that very Ferdinand who was destined to be her future husband, though not till after the intervention of many inauspicious circumstances. She was next betrothed to his elder brother, Carlos, and some years after his decease, when thirteen years of age, was promised by Henry to Alfonso of Portugal. Isabella was present with her brother at a personal interview with that monarch in 1464, but neither threats nor entreaties could induce her to accede to a union so unsuitable from the disparity of their years; and with her characteristic discretion, even at this early age, she rested her refusal on the ground that "the infantas of Castile could not be disposed of in marriage without the consent of the nobles of the realm."<sup>24</sup>

When Isabella understood in what manner she was now

<sup>23</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 154.—Florez, *Reynas Cathólicas*, tom. ii. p. 789.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 37.

<sup>24</sup> Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*,

tom. iv. pp. 561, 562.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 16, cap. 46,—lib. 17, cap. 3.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 31, 57.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 55.

to be sacrificed to the selfish policy of her brother, in the prosecution of which compulsory measures, if necessary, were to be employed, she was filled with the liveliest emotions of grief and resentment. The master of Calatrava was well known as a fierce and turbulent leader of faction, and his private life was stained with most of the licentious vices of the age. He was even accused of having invaded the privacy of the queen dowager, Isabella's mother, by proposals of the most degrading nature,—an outrage which the king had either not the power or not the inclination to resent.<sup>25</sup> With this person, then, so inferior to her in birth, and so much more unworthy of her in every other point of view, Isabella was now to be united. On receiving the intelligence, she confined herself to her apartment, abstaining from all nourishment and sleep for a day and night, says a contemporary writer, and imploring Heaven, in the most piteous manner, to save her from this dishonour by her own death or that of her enemy. As she was bewailing her hard fate to her faithful friend, Beatriz de Bobadilla, "God will not permit it," exclaimed the high-spirited lady, "neither will I;" then, drawing forth a dagger from her bosom, which she kept there for the purpose, she solemnly vowed to plunge it in the heart of the master of Calatrava as soon as he appeared!<sup>26</sup>

Happily her loyalty was not put to so severe a test. No sooner had the grand master received the bull of dispensation from the pope, than, resigning his dignities in his military order, he set about such sumptuous preparations for his wedding as were due to the rank of his intended

<sup>25</sup> Decad. de Palencia, apud Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. p. 66, nota.

<sup>26</sup> Alonso de Palencia, Corónica, MS., cap. 73.—Mariana, Hist. de España, tom. ii. p. 450.—Garibay, Compendio, tom. ii. p. 532.—This lady, Doña Beatriz Fernandez de Bobadilla, the most intimate personal friend of Isabella, will appear

often in the course of our narrative. Gonzalo de Oviedo, who knew her well, describes her as "illustrating her generous lineage by her conduct, which was wise, virtuous, and valiant." (Quincuagenas, MS., dial. de Cabrera.) The last epithet, rather singular for a female character, was not unmerited.

bride. When these were completed, he began his journey from his residence at Almagro to Madrid, where the nuptial ceremony was to be performed, attended by a splendid retinue of friends and followers. But, on the very first evening after his departure, he was attacked by an acute disorder while at Villarubia, a village not far from Ciudad Real, which terminated his life in four days. He died, says Palencia, with imprecations on his lips, because his life had not been spared some few weeks longer.<sup>27</sup> His death was attributed by many to poison, administered to him by some of the nobles, who were envious of his good fortune. But, notwithstanding the seasonableness of the event, and the familiarity of the crime in that age, no shadow of imputation was ever cast on the pure fame of Isabella.<sup>28</sup> (1466.)

The death of the grand master dissipated, at a blow, all the fine schemes of the marquis of Villena, as well as every hope of reconciliation between the parties. The passions which had been only smothered now burst forth into open hostility; and it was resolved to refer the decision of the question to the issue of a battle. The two armies met on the plains of Olmedo, where, two-and-twenty years before, John, the father of Henry, had been in like manner confronted by his insurgent subjects. The royal army was

<sup>27</sup> Palencia imputes his death to an attack of the quinsy. *Corónica*, MS., cap. 73.

<sup>28</sup> Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, fol. 77.—Caro de Torres, *Historia de las Ordenes militares de Santiago, Calatrava y Alcantara* (Madrid, 1629), lib. 2, cap. 59.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 85.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 73.—Gaillard remarks on this event, "Chacun crut sur cette mort ce qu'il voulut." And again in a few pages after, speaking of Isabella, he says, "On remarqua que tous ceux qui pouvoient faire obstacle à la satisfaction ou à la fortune d'Isa-

belle, mouroient toujours à propos pour elle." (*Rivalité*, tom. iii. pp. 280, 286.) This ingenious writer is fond of seasoning his style with those piquant sarcasms in which oftentimes more is meant than meets the ear, and which Voltaire rendered fashionable in history. I doubt, however, if, amid all the heats of controversy and faction, there is a single Spanish writer of that age, or indeed of any subsequent one, who has ventured to impute to the contrivance of Isabella any one of the fortunate coincidences to which the author alludes.

considerably the larger ; but the deficiency of numbers in the other was amply supplied by the intrepid spirit of its leaders. The archbishop of Toledo appeared at the head of its squadrons, conspicuous by a rich scarlet mantle, embroidered with a white cross, thrown over his armour. The young prince Alfonso, scarcely fourteen years of age, rode by his side, clad like him in complete mail. Before the action commenced, the archbishop sent a message to Beltran de la Cueva, then raised to the title of duke of Albuquerque, cautioning him not to venture in the field, as no less than forty cavaliers had sworn his death. The gallant nobleman, who, on this as on some other occasions, displayed a magnanimity which in some degree excused the partiality of his master, returned by the envoy a particular description of the dress he intended to wear,—a chivalrous defiance which well-nigh cost him his life. Henry did not care to expose his person in the engagement, and, on receiving erroneous intelligence of the discomfiture of his party, retreated precipitately with some thirty or forty horsemen to the shelter of a neighbouring village. The action lasted three hours, until the combatants were separated by the shades of evening, without either party having decidedly the advantage, although that of Henry retained possession of the field of battle. The archbishop of Toledo and Prince Alfonso were the last to retire ; and the former was seen repeatedly to rally his broken squadrons, notwithstanding his arm had been pierced through with a lance early in the engagement. The king and the prelate may be thought to have exchanged characters in this tragedy.<sup>29</sup> (1467.)

The battle was attended with no result, except that of inspiring appetites which had tasted of blood with a relish for more unlicensed carnage. The most frightful anarchy

<sup>29</sup> Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, lib. 1, cap. 2. — Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 18, cap. 10.—Castillo,

*Crónica*, cap. 93, 97. — Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 1, cap. 80.



now prevailed throughout the kingdom, dismembered by factions, which the extreme youth of one monarch and the imbecility of the other made it impossible to control. In vain did the papal legate, who had received a commission to that effect from his master, interpose his mediation, and even fulminate sentence of excommunication against the confederates. The independent barons plainly told him that "those who advised the pope that he had a right to interfere in the temporal concerns of Castile deceived him; and that they had a perfect right to depose their monarch on sufficient grounds, and should exercise it."<sup>30</sup>

Every city, nay, almost every family, became now divided within itself. In Seville and in Cordova, the inhabitants of one street carried on open war against those in another. The churches, which were fortified, and occupied with bodies of armed men, were many of them sacked and burnt to the ground. In Toledo no less than four thousand dwellings were consumed in one general conflagration. The ancient family feuds, as those between the great houses of Guzman and Ponce de Leon in Andalusia, being revived, carried new division into the cities, whose streets literally ran with blood.<sup>31</sup> In the country, the nobles and gentry, issuing from their castles, captured the defenceless traveller, who was obliged to redeem his liberty by the payment of a heavier ransom than was exacted even by the Mahometans. All communication on the highroads was suspended, and no man,

<sup>30</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 82.

<sup>31</sup> *Zuñiga, Anales de Sevilla*, pp. 351, 352.—*Carta del Levantamiento de Toledo*, apud *Castillo, Crónica*, p. 109.—The historian of Seville has quoted an animated apostrophe addressed to the citizens by one of their number in this season of discord:

"Mezquina Sevilla en la sangre  
bañada

de los tus hijos, i tus cavalleros,  
que fado enemigo te tiene min-  
guada," etc.

The poem concludes with a summons to throw off the yoke of their oppressors:

"Despierta Sevilla e sacude el im-  
perio,  
que faze a tus nobles tanto vitu-  
perio."

See *Anales*, p. 359.

says a contemporary, dared move abroad beyond the walls of his city, unless attended by an armed escort. The organization of one of those popular confederacies known under the name of *Hermandad*, in 1465, which continued in operation during the remainder of this gloomy period, brought some mitigation to these evils, by the fearlessness with which it exercised its functions, even against offenders of the highest rank, some of whose castles were razed to the ground by its orders. But this relief was only partial; and the successful opposition which the hermandad sometimes encountered on these occasions served to aggravate the horrors of the scene. Meanwhile, fearful omens, the usual accompaniments of such troubled times, were witnessed; the heated imagination interpreted the ordinary operations of nature as signs of celestial wrath;<sup>22</sup> and the minds of men were filled with dismal bodings of some inevitable evil, like that which overwhelmed the monarchy in the days of their Gothic ancestors.<sup>23</sup>

At this crisis, a circumstance occurred which gave a new face to affairs, and totally disconcerted the operations of the confederates. This was the loss of their young leader, Alfonso, who was found dead in his bed, on the 5th of July, 1468, at the village of Cardenosa, about two leagues from Avila, which had so recently been the theatre of his glory. His sudden death was imputed, in the usual suspicious temper of that corrupt age, to poison, supposed to have been conveyed to him in a trout on which he dined the day preceding. Others attributed it to the plague, which had followed in the train of evils that desolated this

<sup>22</sup> "Quod in pace fors, seu natura, tunc fatum et ira dei vocabatur," says Tacitus (*Historiæ*, lib. 4, cap. 28), adverting to a similar state of excitement.

<sup>23</sup> Saez quotes a MS. letter of a contemporary, exhibiting a frightful picture of these disorders. (*Monedas de Enrique IV.*, p. 1, note.--

Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 83, 87, et passim.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 451.—Marina, *Teoría*, tom. ii. p. 487.—Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 1, cap. 69.) The active force kept on duty by the hermandad amounted to 3000 horse. *Ibid.*, cap. 89, 90.

unhappy country. Thus at the age of fifteen, and after a brief reign, if reign it may be called, of three years, perished this young prince, who, under happier auspices and in maturer life, might have ruled over his country with a wisdom equal to that of any of its monarchs. Even in the disadvantageous position in which he had been placed, he gave clear indications of future excellence. A short time before his death, he was heard to remark, on witnessing the oppressive acts of some of the nobles, "I must endure this patiently until I am a little older." On another occasion, being solicited by the citizens of Toledo to approve of some act of extortion which they had committed, he replied, "God forbid I should countenance such injustice!" And on being told that the city, in that case, would probably transfer its allegiance to Henry, he added, "Much as I love power, I am not willing to purchase it at such a price." Noble sentiments, but not at all palatable to the grandees of his party, who saw with alarm that the young lion, when he had reached his strength, would be likely to burst the bonds with which they had enthralled him.<sup>34</sup>

It is not easy to consider the reign of Alfonso in any other light than that of a usurpation; although some Spanish writers, and among the rest Marina, a competent critic when not blinded by prejudice, regard him as a rightful sovereign, and as such to be enrolled among the monarchs of Castile.<sup>35</sup> Marina, indeed, admits the ceremony at Avila to have been originally the work of a faction, and in itself informal and unconstitutional; but he considers it to have received a legitimate sanction from its subsequent recognition by the people. But I do not find that the deposition of Henry the Fourth was ever confirmed by an act of cortes. He still continued to reign with the consent of a

<sup>34</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 87, 92.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 94.—Garibay, *Compendio*, lib. 17, cap. 20.

<sup>35</sup> Marina, *Teoría*, part. 2, cap. 38.

large portion, probably the majority, of his subjects; and it is evident that proceedings so irregular as those at Avila could have no pretence to constitutional validity, without a very general expression of approbation on the part of the nation.

The leaders of the confederates were thrown into consternation by an event which threatened to dissolve their league and to leave them exposed to the resentment of an offended sovereign. In this conjuncture, they naturally turned their eyes on Isabella, whose dignified and commanding character might counterbalance the disadvantages arising from the unsuitableness of her sex for so perilous a situation, and justify her election in the eyes of the people. She had continued in the family of Henry during the greater part of the civil war; until the occupation of Segovia by the insurgents, after the battle of Olmedo, enabled her to seek the protection of her younger brother Alfonso, to which she was the more inclined by her disgust with the license of a court where the love of pleasure scorned even the veil of hypocrisy. On the death of her brother, she withdrew to a monastery at Avila, where she was visited by the archbishop of Toledo, who, in behalf of the confederates, requested her to occupy the station lately filled by Alfonso, and allow herself to be proclaimed queen of Castile.<sup>36</sup>

Isabella discerned too clearly, however, the path of duty and probably of interest. She unhesitatingly refused the seductive proffer, and replied that, "while her brother Henry lived, none other had a right to the crown; that the country had been divided long enough under the rule of two contending monarchs; and that the death of Alfonso might perhaps be interpreted into an indication from Heaven of its disapprobation of their cause." She

<sup>36</sup> Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, lib. 1, cap. 3.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 1,

cap. 92.—Flores, *Reynas Cathólicas*, tom. ii. p. 790.

expressed herself desirous of establishing a reconciliation between the parties, and offered heartily to co-operate with her brother in the reformation of existing abuses. Neither the eloquence nor entreaties of the primate could move her from her purpose; and when a deputation from Seville announced to her that that city, in common with the rest of Andalusia, had unfurled its standards in her name and proclaimed her sovereign of Castile, she still persisted in the same wise and temperate policy.<sup>27</sup>

The confederates were not prepared for this magnanimous act from one so young, and in opposition to the advice of her most venerated counsellors. No alternative remained, however, but that of negotiating an accommodation on the best terms possible with Henry, whose facility of temper and love of repose naturally disposed him to an amicable adjustment of his differences. With these dispositions, a reconciliation was effected between the parties on the following conditions: namely, that a general amnesty should be granted by the king for all past offences; that the queen, whose dissolute conduct was admitted to be matter of notoriety, should be divorced from her husband and sent back to Portugal; that Isabella should have the principality of the Asturias (the usual demesne of the heir apparent to the crown) settled on her, together with a specific provision suitable to her rank; that she should be immediately recognized heir to the crowns of Castile and Leon; that a cortes should be convoked within forty days for the purpose of bestowing a legal sanction on her title, as well as of reforming the various abuses of government; and, finally, that Isabella should not be constrained to marry in opposition to her own wishes, nor should she do so without the consent of her brother.<sup>28</sup>

<sup>27</sup> Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, lib. 1, cap. 3. — Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. p. 218. — Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, part. 1, cap. 92, — part. 2, cap. 5.

<sup>28</sup> See a copy of the original compact cited at length by Marina, *Teoría*, Apend. no. 11. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 1, cap. 2.

In pursuance of these arrangements, an interview took place between Henry and Isabella, each attended by a brilliant cortége of cavaliers and nobles, at a place called Toros de Guisando,<sup>39</sup> in New Castile. (Sept. 9, 1468.) The monarch embraced his sister with the tenderest marks of affection, and then proceeded solemnly to recognize her as his future and rightful heir. An oath of allegiance was repeated by the attendant nobles, who concluded the ceremony by kissing the hand of the princess in token of their homage. In due time the representatives of the nation, convened in cortes at Ocaña, unanimously concurred in their approbation of these preliminary proceedings, and thus Isabella was announced to the world as the lawful successor to the crowns of Castile and Leon.<sup>40</sup>

It can hardly be believed that Henry was sincere in subscribing conditions so humiliating; nor can his easy and lethargic temper account for his so readily relinquishing the pretensions of the princess Joanna, whom, notwithstanding the popular imputations on her birth, he seems always to have cherished as his own offspring.\* He was

<sup>39</sup> So called from four bulls, sculptured in stone, discovered there, with Latin inscriptions thereon, indicating it to have been the site of one of Julius Cæsar's victories during the civil war. (Estrada, *Poblacion general de España* (Madrid, 1748), tom. i. p. 306.)—Gallindez de Carbajal, a contemporary, fixes the date of this convention in August. *Anales del Rey Fernando el Católico*, MS., año 1468.

<sup>40</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 4.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 118.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 461, 462.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 1, cap. 2.—Castillo affirms that Henry,

incensed by his sister's refusal of the king of Portugal, dissolved the cortes at Ocaña before it had taken the oath of allegiance to her. (*Crónica*, cap. 127.) This assertion, however, is counterbalanced by the opposite one of Pulgar, a contemporary writer like himself. (*Reyes Católicos*, cap. 5.) And as Ferdinand and Isabella, in a letter addressed, after their marriage, to Henry IV., transcribed also by Castillo, allude incidentally to such a recognition as to a well-known fact, the balance of testimony must be admitted to be in favour of it. See Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 114.

\*[It is, however, asserted in a document dated November 27, 1470, that Henry had twice confessed the illegitimacy of Juana and taken a solemn oath to that effect. (See the Protest of Diego Ferrandes de Quifones, conde de Luna, when summoned by Henry IV. to swear fealty to the princess Juana, *Coleccion de Documentos inéditos para la Historia de España*, tom. xiv.) This testimony is, perhaps, insufficient;

accused, even while actually signing the treaty, of a secret collusion with the marquis of Villena for the purpose of evading it,—an accusation which derives a plausible colouring from subsequent events.

The new and legitimate basis on which the pretensions of Isabella to the throne now rested drew the attention of neighbouring princes, who contended with each other for the honour of her hand. Among these suitors was a brother of Edward the Fourth of England, not improbably Richard, duke of Gloucester, since Clarence was then engaged in his intrigues with the earl of Warwick, which led a few months later to his marriage with the daughter of that nobleman. Had she listened to his proposals, the duke would in all likelihood have exchanged his residence in England for Castile, where his ambition, satisfied with the certain reversion of a crown, might have been spared the commission of the catalogue of crimes which blackens his memory.<sup>41</sup>

<sup>41</sup> Isabella, who in a letter to Henry IV., dated Oct. 12th, 1469, adverts to these proposals of the English prince, as being under consideration at the time of the convention of Toros de Guisando, does not specify which of the brothers of Edward IV. was intended. (Castillo, Crónica, cap. 136.)—Mr. Turner, in his History of England during the Middle Ages (London, 1825), quotes part of the address

---

but it is at least evident that, on the occasions referred to, Henry, by consenting to recognize first Alfonso, and subsequently Isabella, as rightful heir to the crown, abandoned the claims of Juana and gave an implied sanction to the popular belief in regard to her paternity. Such an act, if it sprang from mere weakness, would leave the historical question unsettled; but it certainly justified the action of the cortes and also the course of Isabella in asserting her right to the succession. Yet Bergenroth, in speaking of these events, says, "The history of this usurpation is one of the most disgraceful on record. . . . Isabel branded the heiress to the throne with the disparaging name of *la Beltraneja*, forced her to flee, and seated herself on the throne of Castile." (Supplement to Volume I. and Volume II. of Letters, Despatches, and State Papers, Introduction, p. xxvii.) Isabella, however, was not the first to assert the illegitimacy of Juana, nor was the assertion originally made in her interest. On the contrary, it had given rise to a civil war at a time when she could take no part in the dispute and had no claim which could be affected by the decision. The claim which devolved upon her on the death of Alfonso was established, while she still remained passive, by a treaty to which the sovereign was a party and which was ratified by the representatives of the nation. How, then, can her assertion of it after Henry's death be considered an act of usurpation?—ED.]

Another suitor was the duke of Guienne, the unfortunate brother of Louis the Eleventh, and at that time the presumptive heir of the French monarchy. Although the ancient intimacy which subsisted between the royal families of France and Castile in some measure favoured his pretensions, the disadvantages resulting from such a union were too obvious to escape attention. The two countries were too remote from each other,<sup>42</sup> and their inhabitants too dissimilar in character and institutions, to permit the idea of their ever cordially coalescing as one people under a common sovereign. Should the duke of Guienne fail in the inheritance of the crown, it was argued, he would be every way an unequal match for the heiress of Castile; should he succeed to it, it might be feared that, in case of a union, the smaller kingdom would be considered only as an appendage, and sacrificed to the interests of the larger.<sup>43</sup>

The person on whom Isabella turned the most favourable eye was her kinsman Ferdinand of Aragon. The superior advantages of a connection which should be the means of uniting the people of Aragon and Castile into one nation were indeed manifest. They were the descendants of one common stock, speaking one language, and living under the influence of similar institutions, which had moulded them into a common resemblance of character and manners. From their geographical position, too, they seemed destined by nature to be one nation; and, while separately they

delivered by the Spanish envoy to Richard III., in 1483, in which the orator speaks of "the unkindness which his queen Isabella had conceived for Edward IV., for *his refusal of her*, and his taking instead to wife a widow of England." (Vol. iii. p. 274.) The old chronicler Hall, on the other hand, mentions that it was currently reported, although he does not appear to credit it, that the earl of Warwick had been despatched into Spain in order to request the hand of the princess Isabella for his master,

Edward IV., in 1463. (See his *Chronicle of England* (London, 1809), pp. 263, 264.)—I find nothing in the Spanish accounts of that period which throws any light on these obvious contradictions.

<sup>42</sup> The territories of France and Castile touched, indeed, on one point (Guipuscoa), but were separated along the whole remaining line of frontier by the kingdoms of Aragon and Navarre.

<sup>43</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 8.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 10.



were condemned to the rank of petty and subordinate states, they might hope, when consolidated into one monarchy, to rise at once to the first class of European powers. While arguments of this public nature pressed on the mind of Isabella, she was not insensible to those which most powerfully affect the female heart. Ferdinand was then in the bloom of life, and distinguished for the comeliness of his person. In the busy scenes in which he had been engaged from his boyhood, he had displayed a chivalrous valour, combined with maturity of judgment far above his years. Indeed, he was decidedly superior to his rivals in personal merit and attractions.<sup>44</sup> But, while private inclinations thus happily coincided with considerations of expediency for inclining her to prefer the Aragonese match, a scheme was devised in another quarter for the express purpose of defeating it.

A fraction of the royal party, with the family of Mendoza at their head, had retired in disgust with the convention of Toros de Guisando, and openly espoused the cause of the princess Joanna. They even instructed her to institute an appeal before the tribunal of the supreme pontiff, and caused a placard, exhibiting a protest against the validity of the late proceedings, to be nailed secretly in the night to the gate of Isabella's mansion.<sup>45</sup> Thus were sown the seeds of new dissensions, before the old were completely

"Isabella, in order to acquaint herself more intimately with the personal qualities of her respective suitors, had privately despatched her confidential chaplain, Alonso de Coca, to the courts of France and of Aragon, and his report on his return was altogether favourable to Ferdinand. The duke of Guienne he represented as "a feeble, effeminate prince, with limbs so emaciated as to be almost deformed, and with eyes so weak and watery as to incapacitate him for the ordinary exercises of chivalry; while Ferdi-

nand, on the other hand, was possessed of a comely, symmetrical figure, a graceful demeanour, and a spirit that was up to anything;" *mui dispuesto para toda cosa que hacer quisiese*. It is not improbable that the queen of Aragon condescended to practise some of those agreeable arts on the worthy chaplain which made so sensible an impression on the marquis of Villena.

"Alonso de Palencia, Corónica, MS., part. 2, cap. 5.

eradicated. With this disaffected party the marquis of Villena, who, since his reconciliation, had resumed his ancient ascendancy over Henry, now associated himself. Nothing, in the opinion of this nobleman, could be more repugnant to his interests than the projected union between the houses of Castile and Aragon; to the latter of which, as already noticed,<sup>46</sup> once belonged the ample domains of his own marquisate, which he imagined would be held by a very precarious tenure should any of this family obtain a footing in Castile.

In the hope of counteracting this project, he endeavoured to revive the obsolete pretensions of Alfonso, king of Portugal; and, the more effectually to secure the co-operation of Henry, he connected with his scheme a proposition for marrying his daughter Joanna with the son and heir of the Portuguese monarch; and thus this unfortunate princess might be enabled to assume at once a station suitable to her birth, and at some future opportunity assert with success her claim to the Castilian crown. In furtherance of this complicated intrigue, Alfonso was invited to renew his addresses to Isabella in a more public manner than he had hitherto done; and a pompous embassy, with the archbishop of Lisbon at its head, appeared at Ocaña, where Isabella was then residing, bearing the proposals of their master. The princess returned, as before, a decided though temperate refusal.<sup>47</sup> Henry, or rather the marquis of Villena, piqued at this opposition to his wishes, resolved to intimidate her into compliance, and menaced her with imprisonment in the royal fortress at Madrid. Neither her tears nor entreaties would have availed against this tyrannical proceeding; and the marquis was only deterred from putting it in execution by his fear of the inhabitants of Ocaña, who openly espoused the cause of Isabella.

<sup>46</sup> See ante, note 10.

<sup>47</sup> Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 391.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 121, 127.—Alonso de

Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 7.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*, lib. 1, cap. 7.

Indeed, the common people of Castile very generally supported her in her preference of the Aragonese match. Boys paraded the streets, bearing banners emblazoned with the arms of Aragon, and singing verses prophetic of the glories of the auspicious union. They even assembled round the palace gates, and insulted the ears of Henry and his minister by the repetition of satirical stanzas which contrasted Alfonso's years with the youthful graces of Ferdinand.<sup>48</sup> Notwithstanding this popular expression of opinion, however, the constancy of Isabella might at length have yielded to the importunity of her persecutors, had she not been encouraged by her friend the archbishop of Toledo, who had warmly entered into the interests of Aragon, and who promised, should matters come to extremity, to march in person to her relief at the head of a sufficient force to insure it. (1469.)

Isabella, indignant at the oppressive treatment which she experienced from her brother, as well as at his notorious infraction of almost every article in the treaty of Toros de Guisando, felt herself released from her corresponding engagements, and determined to conclude the negotiations relative to her marriage without any further deference to his opinion. Before taking any decisive step, however, she was desirous of obtaining the concurrence of the leading nobles of her party. This was effected without difficulty, through the intervention of the archbishop of Toledo, and of Don Frederick Henriquez, admiral of Castile, and the maternal grandfather of Ferdinand; a person of high consideration, both from his rank and character, and connected by blood with the principal families in the kingdom.<sup>49</sup> Fortified by their approbation, Isabella dismissed the Aragonese envoy with a favourable answer to his master's suit.<sup>50</sup>

\* Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 7.—Alonso de Palencia, Corónica, MS., part. 2, cap. 7.

\* Pulgar, Claros Varones, tit. 2.

\* L. Marineo, Cosas memorables,

fol. 154.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 162.—Alonso de Palencia, Corónica, MS., part. 2, cap. 7.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap. 9.

Her reply was received with almost as much satisfaction by the old king of Aragon, John the Second, as by his son. This monarch, who was one of the shrewdest princes of his time, had always been deeply sensible of the importance of consolidating the scattered monarchies of Spain under one head. He had solicited the hand of Isabella for his son when she possessed only a contingent reversion of the crown. But, when her succession had been settled on a more secure basis, he lost no time in effecting this favourite object of his policy. With the consent of the states, he had transferred to his son the title of king of Sicily, and associated him with himself in the government at home, in order to give him greater consequence in the eyes of his mistress. He then despatched a confidential agent into Castile, with instructions to gain over to his interests all who exercised any influence on the mind of the princess; furnishing him for this purpose with *cartes blanches*, signed by himself and Ferdinand, which he was empowered to fill at his discretion.<sup>a</sup>

Between parties thus favourably disposed there was no unnecessary delay. The marriage articles were signed, and sworn to by Ferdinand at Cervera on the 7th of January, 1469. He promised faithfully to respect the laws and usages of Castile; to fix his residence in that kingdom, and not to quit it without the consent of Isabella; to alienate no property belonging to the crown; to prefer no foreigners to municipal offices, and indeed to make no appointments of a civil or military nature, without her consent and approbation; and to resign to her exclusively the right of nomination to ecclesiastical benefices. All ordinances of a public nature were to be subscribed equally by both. Ferdinand engaged, moreover, to prosecute the war against the Moors; to respect King Henry; to suffer every noble to remain unmolested in the possession of his dignities; and not to demand restitution of the domains

<sup>a</sup> Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 157, 163.

formerly owned by his father in Castile. The treaty concluded with a specification of a magnificent dower to be settled on Isabella, far more ample than that usually assigned to the queens of Aragon.<sup>52</sup> The circumspection of the framers of this instrument is apparent from the various provisions introduced into it solely to calm the apprehensions and to conciliate the good will of the party disaffected to the marriage; while the national partialities of the Castilians in general were gratified by the jealous restrictions imposed on Ferdinand, and the relinquishment of all the essential rights of sovereignty to his consort.

While these affairs were in progress, Isabella's situation was becoming extremely critical. She had availed herself of the absence of her brother and the marquis of Villena in the south, whither they had gone for the purpose of suppressing the still lingering spark of insurrection, to transfer her residence from Ocaña to Madrigal, where, under the protection of her mother, she intended to abide the issue of the pending negotiations with Aragon. Far, however, from escaping the vigilant eye of the marquis of Villena by this movement, she laid herself more open to it. She found the bishop of Burgos, the nephew of the marquis, stationed at Madrigal, where he served as an effectual spy upon her actions. Her most confidential servants were corrupted, and conveyed intelligence of her proceedings to her enemy. Alarmed at the actual progress made in the negotiations for her marriage, the marquis was now convinced that he could only hope to defeat them by resorting to the coercive system which he had before abandoned. He accordingly instructed the archbishop of Seville to march at once to Madrigal with a sufficient force to secure Isabella's person; and letters were at the

<sup>52</sup> See the copy of the original marriage contract, as it exists in the archives of Simancas, extracted in tom. vi. of *Memorias de la Acad.*

*de Hist.*, Apend. no. 1.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 18, cap. 31.—Ferrerías, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. p. 236.

same time addressed by Henry to the citizens of that place, menacing them with his resentment if they should presume to interpose in her behalf. The timid inhabitants disclosed the purport of the mandate to Isabella, and besought her to provide for her own safety. This was perhaps the most critical period in her life. Betrayed by her own domestics, deserted even by those friends of her own sex who might have afforded her sympathy and counsel, but who fled affrighted from the scene of danger, and on the eve of falling into the snares of her enemies, she beheld the sudden extinction of those hopes which she had so long and so fondly cherished.<sup>53</sup>

In this exigency, she contrived to convey a knowledge of her situation to Admiral Henriquez and the archbishop of Toledo. The active prelate, on receiving the summons, collected a body of horse, and, reinforced by the admiral's troops, advanced with such expedition to Madrigal that he succeeded in anticipating the arrival of the enemy. Isabella received her friends with unfeigned satisfaction; and bidding adieu to her dismayed guardian, the bishop of Burgos, and his attendants, she was borne off by her little army in a sort of military triumph to the friendly city of Valladolid, where she was welcomed by the citizens with a general burst of enthusiasm.<sup>54</sup>

In the mean time, Gutierre de Cardenas, one of the household of the princess,<sup>55</sup> and Alonso de Palencia, the faithful chronicler of these events, were despatched into

<sup>53</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 12.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 128, 131, 136.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 162. — Beatriz de Bobadilla and Mencia de la Torre, the two ladies most in her confidence, had escaped to the neighbouring town of Coca.

<sup>54</sup> Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 136.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 12.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 69.

<sup>55</sup> This cavalier, who was of an ancient and honourable family in Castile, was introduced to the princess's service by the archbishop of Toledo. He is represented by Gonzalo de Oviedo as a man of much sagacity and knowledge of the world, qualities with which he united a steady devotion to the interests of his mistress. Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 1.

Aragon in order to quicken Ferdinand's operations during the auspicious interval afforded by the absence of Henry in Andalusia. On arriving at the frontier town of Osma, they were dismayed to find that the bishop of that place, together with the duke of Medina Celi, on whose active co-operation they had relied for the safe introduction of Ferdinand into Castile, had been gained over to the interests of the marquis of Villena.<sup>56</sup> The envoys, however, adroitly concealing the real object of their mission, were permitted to pass unmolested to Saragossa, where Ferdinand was then residing. They could not have arrived at a more inopportune season. The old king of Aragon was in the very heat of the war against the insurgent Catalans, headed by the victorious John of Anjou. Although so sorely pressed, his forces were on the eve of disbanding, for want of the requisite funds to maintain them. His exhausted treasury did not contain more than three hundred *enriques*.<sup>57</sup> In this exigency he was agitated by the most distressing doubts. As he could spare neither the funds nor the force necessary for covering his son's entrance into Castile, he must either send him unprotected into a hostile country already aware of his intended enterprise and in arms to defeat it, or abandon the long-cherished object of his policy at the moment when his plans were ripe for execution. Unable to extricate himself from this dilemma, he referred the whole matter to Ferdinand and his council.<sup>58</sup>

It was at length determined that the prince should undertake the journey, accompanied by half a dozen attendants only, in the disguise of merchants, by the direct route from Saragossa; while another party, in order to divert the attention of the Castilians, should proceed in

<sup>56</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 14. — The bishop told Palencia that, "if his own servants deserted him, he would oppose the entrance of Ferdinand into the kingdom."

<sup>57</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 18, cap. 26.—The *enrique* was a gold coin, so denominated from Henry II.

<sup>58</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 18, cap. 26. —Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. p. 273.

a different direction, with all the ostentation of a public embassy from the king of Aragon to Henry the Fourth. The distance was not great which Ferdinand and his suite were to travel before reaching a place of safety; but this intervening country was patrolled by squadrons of cavalry for the purpose of intercepting their progress; and the whole extent of the frontier, from Almazan to Guadalajara, was defended by a line of fortified castles in the hands of the family of Mendoza.<sup>60</sup> The greatest circumspection, therefore, was necessary. The party journeyed chiefly in the night; Ferdinand assumed the disguise of a servant, and, when they halted on the road, took care of the mules, and served his companions at table. In this guise, with no other disaster except that of leaving at an inn the purse which contained the funds for the expedition, they arrived, late on the second night, at a little place called the Burgo, or Borough, of Osma, which the count of Treviño, one of the partisans of Isabella, had occupied with a considerable body of men-at-arms. On knocking at the gate, cold and faint with travelling, during which the prince had allowed himself to take no repose, they were saluted by a large stone discharged by a sentinel from the battlements, which, glancing near Ferdinand's head, had wellnigh brought his romantic enterprise to a tragical conclusion; when his voice was recognized by his friends within, and, the trumpets proclaiming his arrival, he was received with great joy and festivity by the count and his followers. The remainder of his journey, which he commenced before dawn, was performed under the convoy of a numerous and well-armed escort; and on the 9th of October he reached Dueñas in the kingdom of Leon, where the Castilian nobles and cavaliers of his party eagerly thronged to render him the homage due to his rank.<sup>61</sup>

<sup>60</sup> Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. MS., part. 2, cap. 14. — Zurita, vi. p. 78, Ilust. 2. Anales. loc. cit.

<sup>61</sup> Alonso de Palencia, Corónica,



The intelligence of Ferdinand's arrival diffused universal joy in the little court of Isabella at Valladolid. Her first step was to transmit a letter to her brother Henry, in which she informed him of the presence of the prince in his dominions, and of their intended marriage. She excused the course she had taken by the embarrassments in which she had been involved by the malice of her enemies. She represented the political advantages of the connection, and the sanction it received from the Castilian nobles; and she concluded with soliciting his approbation of it, giving him at the same time affectionate assurances of the most dutiful submission on the part both of Ferdinand and of herself.<sup>61</sup> Arrangements were then made for an interview between the royal pair, in which some courtly parasites would fain have persuaded their mistress to require some act of homage from Ferdinand, in token of the inferiority of the crown of Aragon to that of Castile; a proposition which she rejected with her usual discretion.<sup>62</sup>

Agreeably to these arrangements, Ferdinand, on the evening of the 15th of October, passed privately from Dueñas, accompanied by only four attendants, to the neighbouring city of Valladolid, where he was received by the archbishop of Toledo and conducted to the apartment of his mistress.<sup>63</sup> Ferdinand was at this time in the eighteenth year of his age. His complexion was fair, though somewhat bronzed by constant exposure to the sun; his eye quick and cheerful; his forehead ample, and approaching to baldness. His muscular and well-proportioned frame was invigorated by the toils of war, and

<sup>61</sup> This letter, dated October 12th, is cited at length by Castillo, *Orónica*, cap. 136.

<sup>62</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 15.

<sup>63</sup> Gutierre de Cardenas was the first who pointed him out to the princess, exclaiming at the same time, "*Ese es, ese es*," "This is he."

in commemoration of which he was permitted to place on his escutcheon the letters SS, whose pronunciation in Spanish resembles that of the exclamation which he had uttered. *Ibid.*, part. 2, cap. 15. — Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 1.

by the chivalrous exercises in which he delighted. He was one of the best horsemen in his court, and excelled in field sports of every kind. His voice was somewhat sharp, but he possessed a fluent eloquence; and, when he had a point to carry, his address was courteous and even insinuating. He secured his health by extreme temperance in his diet, and by such habits of activity that it was said he seemed to find repose in business.<sup>64</sup> Isabella was a year older than her lover. In stature she was somewhat above the middle size. Her complexion was fair; her hair of a bright chestnut colour, inclining to red; and her mild blue eye beamed with intelligence and sensibility. She was exceedingly beautiful; "the handsomest lady," says one of her household, "whom I ever beheld, and the most gracious in her manners."<sup>65</sup> The portrait still existing of her in the royal palace is conspicuous for an open symmetry of features, indicative of the natural serenity of temper, and that beautiful harmony of intellectual and moral qualities, which most distinguished her. She was dignified in her demeanour, and modest even to a degree of reserve. She spoke the Castilian language with more than usual elegance, and early imbibed a relish for letters, in which she was superior to Ferdinand, whose education in this particular seems to have been neglected.<sup>66</sup> It is not easy to obtain a dispassionate portrait of Isabella. The Spaniards who revert to her glorious reign are so smitten with her moral perfections that, even in depicting her personal, they borrow somewhat of the exaggerated colouring of romance.

<sup>64</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 182.—Garibay, *Compendio*, lib. 18, cap. 1.—"Tan amigo de los negocios," says Mariana, "que parecia con el trabajo descansaba." *Hist. de España*, lib. 26, cap. 18.

<sup>65</sup> "En hermosura, puestas delante S. A. todas las mugeres que yo he visto, ninguna vi tan graciosa,

ni tanto de ver como su persona, ni de tal manera e sanctidad honestisima." Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS.

<sup>66</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 201.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. p. 362.—Garibay, *Compendio*, lib. 18, cap. 1.

The interview lasted more than two hours, when Ferdinand retired to his quarters at Dueñas as privately as he came. The preliminaries of the marriage, however, were first adjusted; but so great was the poverty of the parties that it was found necessary to borrow money to defray the expenses of the ceremony.<sup>67</sup> Such were the humiliating circumstances attending the commencement of a union destined to open the way to the highest prosperity and grandeur of the Spanish monarchy!

The marriage between Ferdinand and Isabella was publicly celebrated, on the morning of the 19th of October, 1469, in the palace of John de Vivero, the temporary residence of the princess, and subsequently appropriated to the chancery of Valladolid. The nuptials were solemnized in the presence of Ferdinand's grandfather, the admiral of Castile, of the archbishop of Toledo, and a multitude of persons of rank, as well as of inferior condition, amounting in all to no less than two thousand.<sup>68</sup> A papal bull of dispensation was produced by the archbishop, relieving the parties from the impediment incurred by their falling within the prohibited degrees of consanguinity. This spurious document was afterwards discovered to have been devised by the old king of Aragon, Ferdinand, and the archbishop, who were deterred from applying to the court of Rome by the zeal with which it openly espoused the interests of Henry, and who knew that Isabella would never consent to a union repugnant to the canons of the established church, and one which involved such heavy ecclesiastical censures. A genuine bull of dispensation was obtained, some years later, from Sixtus the Fourth; but Isabella, whose honest mind abhorred everything like artifice, was filled with no little uneasiness and

<sup>67</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 465.

<sup>68</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1469. — Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 16. — Zurita,

*Anales*, lib. 18, cap. 26. — See a copy of the official record of the marriage, *Mem. de la Acad.*, tom. vi. *Apend. 4*. See also the *Ilust. 2*.

mortification at the discovery of the imposition.<sup>66</sup> The ensuing week was consumed in the usual festivities of this joyous season; at the expiration of which the new-married pair attended publicly the celebration of mass, agreeably to the usage of the time, in the collegiate church of Santa Maria.<sup>70</sup>

An embassy was despatched by Ferdinand and Isabella to Henry, to acquaint him with their proceedings, and again request his approbation of them. They repeated their assurances of loyal submission, and accompanied the message with a copious extract from such of the articles of marriage as, by their import, would be most likely to conciliate his favourable disposition. Henry coldly replied that "he must advise with his ministers."<sup>71</sup>

<sup>66</sup> The intricacies of this affair, at once the scandal and the stumbling-block of the Spanish historians, have been unravelled by Señor Clemencin, with his usual perspicuity. See *Mem. de la Acad.*, tom. vi. pp. 105—116, *Ilust.* 2.

<sup>70</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 16. — A lively

narrative of the adventures of Prince Ferdinand, detailed in this chapter, may be found in Cushing's *Reminiscences of Spain* (Boston, 1833), vol. i. pp. 225—255.

<sup>71</sup> Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 137. — Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 16.

---

Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés, author of the "Quincuagenas" frequently cited in this History, was born at Madrid, in 1478. He was of noble Asturian descent. Indeed, every peasant in the Asturias claims nobility as his birthright. At the age of twelve he was introduced into the royal palace, as one of the pages of Prince John. He continued with the court several years, and was present, though a boy, in the closing campaigns of the Moorish war. In 1514, according to his own statement, he embarked for the Indies, where, although he revisited his native country several times, he continued during the remainder of his long life. The time of his death is uncertain. Oviedo occupied several important posts under the government, and he was appointed to one of a literary nature, for which he was well qualified by his long residence abroad,—that of historiographer of the Indies. It was in this capacity that he produced his principal work, "*Historia general de las Indias*," in fifty books. Las Casas denounces the book as a wholesale fabrication, "as full of lies, almost, as pages." (*Euvres*, trad. de Llorente, tom. i. p. 382.) But Las Casas entertained too hearty an aversion for the man, whom he publicly accused of rapacity and cruelty, and was too decidedly opposed to his ideas on the government of the Indies, to be a fair critic. Oviedo, though somewhat loose and rambling, possessed extensive stores of information, by which those who have had occasion to follow in his track have liberally profited.

The work with which we are concerned is his *Quincuagenas*. It is entitled "Las Quincuagenas de los generosos é ilustres é no menos famosos Reyes, Principes, Duques, Marqueses y Condes et Caballeros, et Personas notables de España, que escribió el Capitan Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdez, Alcáide de sus Magestades de la Fortaleza de la Cibdad é Puerto de Sancto Domingo de la Isla Española, Coronista de las Indias," etc. At the close of the third volume is this record of the octogenarian author: "Acabé de escribir de mi mano este famoso tractado de la nobleza de España, domingo 1º día de Pascua de Pentecostes XXIII. de mayo de 1556 años. Laus Deo. Y de mi edad 79 años." This very curious work is in the form of dialogues, in which the author is the chief interlocutor. It contains a very full and, indeed, prolix notice of the principal persons in Spain, their lineage, revenues, and arms, with an inexhaustible fund of private anecdote. The author, who was well acquainted with most of the individuals of note in his time, amused himself, during his absence in the New World, with keeping alive the images of home by this minute record of early reminiscences. In this mass of gossip there is a good deal, indeed, of very little value. It contains, however, much for the illustration of domestic manners, and copious particulars, as I have intimated, respecting the characters and habits of eminent personages, which could have been known only to one familiar with them. On all topics of descent and heraldry he is uncommonly full; and one would think his services in this department alone might have secured him, in a land where these are so much respected, the honours of the press. His book, however, still remains in manuscript, apparently little known, and less used, by Castilian scholars. Besides the three folio volumes in the Royal Library at Madrid, from which the transcript in my possession was obtained, Clemencin, whose commendations of this work, as illustrative of Isabella's reign, are unqualified (*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 10), enumerates three others, two in the king's private library, and one in that of the Academy.

## CHAPTER IV.

### FACTIONS IN CASTILE.—WAR BETWEEN FRANCE AND ARAGON.—DEATH OF HENRY IV. OF CASTILE.

1469—1474.

Factions in Castile.—Ferdinand and Isabella.—Gallant Defence of Perpignan against the French.—Ferdinand raises the siege.—Isabella's Party gains Strength.—Interview between King Henry IV. and Isabella.—The French invade Roussillon.—Ferdinand's summary Justice.—Death of Henry IV. of Castile.—Influence of his Reign.

THE marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella disconcerted the operations of the marquis of Villena, or, as he should be styled, the grand master of St. James, since he had resigned his marquisate to his elder son on his appointment to the command of the military order above mentioned, a dignity inferior only to the primacy in importance. It was determined, however, in the councils of Henry, to oppose at once the pretensions of the princess Joanna to those of Isabella; and an embassy was gladly received from the king of France, offering to the former lady the hand of his brother the duke of Guienne, the rejected suitor of Isabella. Louis the Eleventh was willing to engage his relative in the unsettled politics of a distant state, in order to relieve himself from his pretensions at home.<sup>1</sup>

An interview took place between Henry the Fourth and the French ambassadors in a little village in the vale of Lozoya, in October, 1470. A proclamation was read, in which Henry declared his sister to have forfeited whatever claims she had derived from the treaty of Toros de

<sup>1</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 21.—Gaillard, *Rivalité*, tom. iii. p. 284.—Rades y

Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, fol. 65. —Caro de Torres, *Ordenes militares*, fol. 43.

Guisando, by marrying contrary to his approbation. He then with his queen swore to the legitimacy of the princess Joanna, and announced her as his true and lawful successor. The attendant nobles took the usual oaths of allegiance; and the ceremony was concluded by affiancing the princess, then in the ninth year of her age, with the formalities ordinarily practised on such occasions, to the count of Boulogne, the representative of the duke of Guienne.<sup>2</sup>

This farce, in which many of the actors were the same persons who performed the principal parts at the convention of Toros de Guisando, had on the whole an unfavourable influence on Isabella's cause. It exhibited her rival to the world as one whose claims were to be supported by the whole authority of the court of Castile, with the probable co-operation of France. Many of the most considerable families in the kingdom, as the Pachecos,<sup>3</sup> the Mendozas in all their extensive ramifications,<sup>4</sup> the Zuñigas, the Velascos,<sup>5</sup> the Pimentels,<sup>6</sup> unmindful of the homage so

<sup>2</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 23.—Castillo, *Crónica*, p. 298.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 24.—Henry, well knowing how little all this would avail without the constitutional sanction of the cortes, twice issued his summons in 1470 for the convocation of the deputies, to obtain a recognition of the title of Joanna; but without effect. In the letters of convocation issued for a third assembly of the states, in 1471, this purpose was prudently omitted, and thus the claims of Joanna failed to receive the countenance of the only body which could give them validity. See the copies of the original writs, addressed to the cities of Toledo and Segovia, cited by Marina, *Teoría*, tom. ii. pp. 87—89.

<sup>3</sup> The grand master of St. James, and his son, the marquis of Villena, afterwards duke of Escalona. The rents of the former nobleman, whose avarice was as insatiable as his influence over the feeble mind of

Henry IV. was unlimited, exceeded those of any other grandee in the kingdom. See Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 6.

<sup>4</sup> The marquis of Santillana, first duke of Infantado, and his brothers, the counts of Coruña and Tendilla, and above all Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza, afterwards Cardinal of Spain and archbishop of Toledo, who was indebted for the highest dignities in the church less to his birth than his abilities. See Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 4, 9, and Salazar de Mendoza, *Dignidades*, lib. 3, cap. 17.

<sup>5</sup> Alvaro de Zuñiga, count of Palencia, and created by Henry IV. duke of Arevalo.—Pedro Fernandez de Velasco, count of Haro, was raised to the post of constable of Castile in 1473, and the office continued to be hereditary in the family from that period. Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 3.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Dignidades*, lib. 3, cap. 21.

<sup>6</sup> The Pimentels, counts of Bena-

recently rendered to Isabella, now openly testified their adhesion to her niece.

Ferdinand and his consort, who held their little court at Dueñas,<sup>7</sup> were so poor as to be scarcely capable of defraying the ordinary charges of their table. The northern provinces of Biscay and Guipuscoa had, however, loudly declared against the French match ; \* and the populous province of Andalusia, with the house of Medina Sidonia at its head, still maintained its loyalty to Isabella unshaken. But her principal reliance was on the archbishop of Toledo, whose elevated station in the church and ample revenues gave him perhaps less real influence than his commanding and resolute character, which had enabled him to triumph over every obstacle devised by his more crafty adversary, the grand master of St. James. The prelate, however, with all his generous self-devotion, was far from being a comfortable ally. He would willingly have raised Isabella to the throne, but he would have her indebted for her elevation exclusively to himself. He looked with a jealous eye on her most intimate friends, and complained that neither she nor her husband deferred sufficiently to his counsel. The princess could not always conceal her disgust at these humours ; and Ferdinand, on one occasion, plainly told him

vente, had estates which gave them 60,000 ducats a year ; a very large income for that period, and far exceeding that of any other grandee

of similar rank in the kingdom. L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 25.

<sup>7</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 70.

---

\* [In letters addressed to Louis XI. by the king and queen of Castile and the grand master, in 1471, the French monarch is urged to accelerate the departure of his brother, who, he is assured, will be cordially welcomed in Biscay and Guipuscoa, receiving the treatment due to the eldest son of the sovereign. As a further bait, Henry represents himself as weary of the government and desirous to resign it to his son-in-law. (Lenglet, *Mém. de Comines*, *Preuves*, tom. iii. p. 157.) A similar eagerness for the conclusion of the marriage is shown in a letter from the chancellor of the princess Juana to the duke of Guienne, whom the writer addresses as Prince of Asturias and the "eldest son" of Castile and Leon. (*Ibid.*, p. 156.) But although Louis, in a letter to Henry IV., expresses satisfaction with the match (*ibid.*, *ubi supra*), his real wishes in regard to his brother were of a different nature : they received their accomplishment, two years later, in Charles's death.—Ed.]



that "he was not to be put in leading-strings, like so many of the sovereigns of Castile." The old king of Aragon, alarmed at the consequences of a rupture with so indispensable an ally, wrote in the most earnest manner to his son, representing the necessity of propitiating the offended prelate. But Ferdinand, although educated in the school of dissimulation, had not yet acquired that self-command which enabled him in after-life to sacrifice his passions, and sometimes indeed his principles, to his interests.\*

The most frightful anarchy at this period prevailed throughout Castile. While the court was abandoned to corrupt or frivolous pleasure, the administration of justice was neglected, until crimes were committed with a frequency and on a scale which menaced the very foundations of society. The nobles conducted their personal feuds with an array of numbers which might compete with those of powerful princes. The duke of Infantado, the head of the house of Mendoza,<sup>9</sup> could bring into the field, at four-and-twenty hours' notice, one thousand lances and ten thousand foot. The battles, far from assuming the character of those waged by the Italian *condottieri* at this period, were of the most sanguinary and destructive kind. Andalusia was in particular the theatre of this savage warfare. The whole of that extensive district was divided by the factions of the Guzmans and Ponces de Leon. The chiefs of these ancient houses having recently died, the inheritance descended to young men, whose hot blood soon revived the feuds which had been permitted to cool under the temperate sway of their fathers. One of these fiery cavaliers was Rodrigo Ponce de Leon, so deservedly

\* Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 170.  
—Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., cap. 45.

<sup>9</sup> This nobleman, Diego Hurtado, "muy gentil caballero y gran señor," as Oviedo calls him, was at this time only marquis of Santillana, and was not raised to the

title of duke of Infantado till the reign of Isabella (Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8). To avoid confusion, however, I have given him the title by which he is usually recognized by Castilian writers.

celebrated afterwards in the wars of Granada as the marquis of Cadiz. He was an illegitimate and younger son of the count of Arcos, but was preferred by his father to his other children in consequence of the extraordinary qualities which he evinced at a very early period. He served his apprenticeship to the art of war in the campaigns against the Moors, displaying on several occasions an uncommon degree of enterprise and personal heroism. On succeeding to his paternal honours, his haughty spirit, impatient of a rival, led him to revive the old feud with the duke of Medina Sidonia, the head of the Guzmans, who, though the most powerful nobleman in Andalusia, was far his inferior in capacity and military science.<sup>10</sup>

On one occasion the duke of Medina Sidonia mustered an army of twenty thousand men against his antagonist; on another, no less than fifteen hundred houses of the Ponce faction were burnt to the ground in Seville. Such were the potent engines employed by these petty sovereigns in their conflicts with one another, and such the havoc which they brought on the fairest portion of the Peninsula. The husbandman, stripped of his harvest and driven from his fields, abandoned himself to idleness, or sought subsistence by plunder. A scarcity ensued in the years 1472 and 1473, in which the prices of the most necessary commodities rose to such an exorbitant height as put them beyond the reach of any but the affluent. But it would be wearisome to go into all the loathsome details of wretchedness and crime brought on this unhappy country by an imbecile government and a disputed succession, and portrayed with lively fidelity in the chronicles, the letters, and the satires of the time.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>10</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 3.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Crónica del Gran Cardenal de España*, Don Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza (Toledo, 1625), pp. 138, 150.—Zufiiga, *Anales de Sevilla*, p.

362.

<sup>11</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 4, 5, 7.—Zufiiga, *Anales de Sevilla*, pp. 363, 364.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 35, 38, 39, 42.—Saez, *Mone-*

While Ferdinand's presence was more than ever necessary to support the drooping spirits of his party in Castile, he was unexpectedly summoned into Aragon to the assistance of his father. No sooner had Barcelona submitted to King John, as mentioned in a preceding chapter,<sup>12</sup> than the inhabitants of Roussillon and Cerdagne, which provinces, it will be remembered, were placed in the custody of France, as a guaranty for the king of Aragon's engagements, oppressed by the grievous exactions of their new rulers, determined to break the yoke, and to put themselves again under the protection of their ancient master, provided they could obtain his support. The opportunity was favourable. A large part of the garrisons in the principal cities had been withdrawn by Louis the Eleventh, to cover the frontier on the side of Burgundy and Brittany. John, therefore, gladly embraced the proposal; and on a concerted day a simultaneous insurrection took place throughout the provinces, when such of the French, in the principal towns, as had not the good fortune to escape into the citadels, were indiscriminately massacred. Of all the country, Salces, Collioure, and the castle of Perpignan alone remained in the hands of the French. John then threw himself into the last-named city with a small body of troops, and instantly set about the construction of works to protect the inhabitants against the fire of the

das de Enrique IV., pp. 1—5.—Pulgar, in an epistle addressed, in the autumn of 1473, to the bishop of Coria, adverts to several circumstances which set in a strong light the anarchical state of the kingdom and the total deficiency of police. The celebrated satirical eclogue, also, entitled "Mingo Revulgo," exposes, with coarse but cutting sarcasm, the license of the court, the corruption of the clergy, and the prevalent depravity of the people. In one of its stanzas it boldly ventures to promise another and a better sovereign to the country. This performance, even

more interesting to the antiquary than to the historian, has been attributed by some to Pulgar (see Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 475), and by others to Rodrigo Cota (see Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 264), but without satisfactory evidence in favour of either. Bouterwek is much mistaken in asserting it to have been aimed at the government of John II. The gloss of Pulgar, whose authority as a contemporary must be considered decisive, plainly proves it to have been directed against Henry IV.

<sup>12</sup> See chap. ii.

French garrison in the castle, as well as from the army which might soon be expected to besiege them from without.<sup>13</sup>

Louis the Eleventh, deeply incensed at the defection of his new subjects, ordered the most formidable preparations for the siege of their capital. John's officers, alarmed at these preparations, besought him not to expose his person at his advanced age to the perils of a siege and of captivity. But the lion-hearted monarch saw the necessity of animating the spirits of the besieged by his own presence; and, assembling the inhabitants in one of the churches of the city, he exhorted them resolutely to stand to their defence, and made a solemn oath to abide the issue with them to the last.

Louis, in the mean while, had convoked the *ban* and *arrière-ban* of the contiguous French provinces, and mustered an array of chivalry and feudal militia amounting, according to the Spanish historians, to thirty thousand men. With these ample forces, his lieutenant-general, the duke of Savoy,\* closely invested Perpignan, and, as he was provided with a numerous train of battering artillery, instantly opened a heavy fire on the inhabitants. John, thus exposed to the double fire of the fortress and the besiegers, was in a very critical situation. Far from being disheartened, however, he was seen, armed cap-a-pie, on horseback from dawn till evening, rallying the spirits of his troops, and always present at the point of danger. He succeeded perfectly in communicating his own enthusiasm to the soldiers. The French garrison were defeated in several sorties, and their governor taken prisoner; while supplies were introduced into the city in the very face of the blockading army.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>13</sup> Alonso de Palencia, Corónica, MS., cap. 56.—Mariana, Hist. de España, tom. ii. p. 481.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 191.—Barante,

Histoire des Ducs de Bourgogne (Paris, 1825), tom. ix. pp. 101—106.

<sup>14</sup> Alonso de Palencia, Corónica,

\* [The person here spoken of, Philip of Savoy, Seigneur de Bresse, did not become duke until 1496, the year before his death.—ED.]

Ferdinand, on receiving intelligence of his father's perilous situation, instantly resolved, by Isabella's advice, to march to his relief. Putting himself at the head of a body of Castilian horse, generously furnished him by the archbishop of Toledo and his friends, he passed into Aragon, where he was speedily joined by the principal nobility of the kingdom, and an army amounting in all to thirteen hundred lances and seven thousand infantry. With this corps he rapidly descended the Pyrenees, by the way of Manzanara, in the face of a driving tempest, which concealed him for some time from the view of the enemy. The latter, during their protracted operations, for nearly three months, had sustained a serious diminution of numbers in their repeated skirmishes with the besieged, and still more from an epidemic which broke out in their camp. They also began to suffer not a little from want of provisions. At this crisis, the apparition of this new army, thus unexpectedly descending on their rear, filled them with such consternation that they raised the siege at once, setting fire to their tents, and retreating with such precipitation as to leave most of the sick and wounded a prey to the devouring element. John marched out, with colours flying and music playing, at the head of his little band, to greet his deliverers; and, after an affecting interview in the presence of the two armies, the father and son returned in triumph into Perpignan.<sup>15</sup>

The French army, reinforced by command of Louis, made a second ineffectual attempt (their own writers call it only a feint) upon the city; and the campaign was finally concluded by a treaty between the two monarchs, in which it was arranged that the king of Aragon should

MS., cap. 70.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 482.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 148.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 195.—Anquetil, *Histoire de France* (Paris, 1805), tom. v. pp. 60, 61.

<sup>15</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 196.—Barante, *Hist. des Ducs de Bourgogne*, tom. x. pp. 105, 106.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 149.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., cap. 70 71 72.

disburse within the year the sum originally stipulated for the services rendered him by Louis in his late war with his Catalan subjects, and that, in case of failure, the provinces of Roussillon and Cerdagne should be permanently ceded to the French crown. The commanders of the fortified places in the contested territory, selected by one monarch from the nominations of the other, were excused during the interim from obedience to the mandates of either,—at least so far as they might contravene their reciprocal engagements.<sup>16</sup> (Sept. 1473.)

There is little reason to believe that this singular compact was subscribed in good faith by either party. John, notwithstanding the temporary succour which he had received from Louis at the commencement of his difficulties with the Catalans, might justly complain of the infraction of his engagements at a subsequent period of the war, when he not only withheld the stipulated aid, but indirectly gave every facility in his power to the invasion of the duke of Lorraine. Neither was the king of Aragon in a situation, had he been disposed, to make the requisite disbursements. Louis, on the other hand, as the event soon proved, had no other object in view but to gain time to reorganize his army, and to lull his adversary into security, while he took effectual measures for recovering the prize which had so unexpectedly eluded him.

During these occurrences Isabella's prospects were daily brightening in Castile. The duke of Guienne, the destined spouse of her rival, Joanna, had died in France; but not until he had testified his contempt of his engagements with the Castilian princess by openly soliciting the hand of the heiress of Burgundy.<sup>17</sup> Subsequent negotiations for

<sup>16</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 200.—Gaillard, *Bivalité*, tom. iii. p. 266.—See the articles of the treaty cited by Duclos, *Hist. de Louis XI.*, tom. ii. pp. 99, 101.—Alonso de Palencia, *Córónica*, MS., cap. 73.

<sup>17</sup> Louis XI. is supposed with much probability to have assassinated his brother. M. de Barante sums up his examination of the evidence with this remark: "Le roi Louis XI. ne fit peut-être pas

her marriage with two other princes had entirely failed. The doubts which hung over her birth, and which the public protestations of Henry and his queen, far from dispelling, served only to augment, by the necessity which they implied for such an extraordinary proceeding, were sufficient to deter any one from a connection which must involve the party in all the disasters of a civil war.<sup>18</sup>

Isabella's own character, moreover, contributed essentially to strengthen her cause. Her sedate conduct, and the decorum maintained in her court, formed a strong contrast with the frivolity and license which disgraced that of Henry and his consort. Thinking men were led to conclude that the sagacious administration of Isabella must eventually secure to her the ascendancy over her rival; while all who sincerely loved their country could not but prognosticate for it, under her beneficent sway, a degree of prosperity which it could never reach under the rapacious and profligate ministers who directed the councils of Henry, and most probably would continue to direct those of his daughter.

Among the persons whose opinions experienced a decided revolution from these considerations, was Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza, archbishop of Seville and cardinal of Spain; a prelate whose lofty station in the church was supported by talents of the highest order, and whose restless ambition led him, like many of the churchmen of the time, to take an active interest in politics, for which he was admirably adapted by his knowledge of affairs and discernment of character. Without deserting his former

*mourir son frère, mais personne ne pensa qu'il en fut incapable." Hist. des Ducs de Bourgogne, tom. ix. p. 433.*

<sup>18</sup> The two princes alluded to were the duke of Segorbe, a cousin of Ferdinand, and the king of Portugal. The former, on his entrance into Castile, assumed such sovereign

state (giving his hand, for instance, to the grandees to kiss) as disgusted these haughty nobles, and was eventually the occasion of breaking off the match. Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 62.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 392.

master, he privately entered into a correspondence with Isabella; and a service which Ferdinand, on his return from Aragon, had an opportunity of rendering the duke of Infantado, the head of the Mendozas,<sup>19</sup> secured the attachment of the other members of this powerful family.<sup>20</sup>

A circumstance occurred at this time which seemed to promise an accommodation between the adverse factions, or at least between Henry and his sister. The government of Segovia, whose impregnable citadel had been made the depository of the royal treasure, was intrusted to Andres de Cabrera, an officer of the king's household. This cavalier, influenced in part by personal pique to the grand master of St. James, and still more perhaps by the importunities of his wife, Beatriz de Bobadilla, the early friend and companion of Isabella, entered into a correspondence with the princess, and sought to open the way for her permanent reconciliation with her brother. He accordingly invited her to Segovia, where Henry occasionally resided, and, to dispel any suspicions which she might entertain of his sincerity, despatched his wife secretly by night, disguised in the garb of a peasant, to Aranda, where Isabella then held her court. The latter, confirmed by the assurances of her friend, did not hesitate to comply with the invitation, and, accompanied by the archbishop of Toledo, proceeded to Segovia, where an interview took place between her and Henry the Fourth, in which she vindicated her past conduct, and endeavoured to obtain her brother's sanction to her union with Ferdinand. (Dec. 1473.) Henry,

<sup>19</sup> Oviedo assigns another reason for this change,—the disgust occasioned by Henry IV.'s transferring the custody of his daughter from the family of Mendoza to the Pachecos. *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8.

<sup>20</sup> Salazar de Mendoza, *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, p. 133.—Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 46, 92.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap.

163.—The influence of these new allies, especially of the cardinal, over Isabella's councils, was an additional ground of umbrage to the archbishop of Toledo, who, in a communication with the king of Aragon, declared himself, though friendly to their cause, to be released from all further obligations to serve it. See Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. lib. 46, cap. 19.



who was naturally of a placable temper, received her communication with complacency, and, in order to give public demonstration of the good understanding now subsisting between him and his sister, condescended to walk by her side, holding the bridle of her palfrey, as she rode along the streets of the city. Ferdinand, on his return into Castile, hastened to Segovia, where he was welcomed by the monarch with every appearance of satisfaction. A succession of *fêtes* and splendid entertainments, at which both parties assisted, seemed to announce an entire oblivion of all past animosities, and the nation welcomed with satisfaction these symptoms of repose after the vexatious struggle by which it had been so long agitated.<sup>21</sup>

The repose, however, was of no great duration. The slavish mind of Henry gradually relapsed under its ancient bondage; and the grand master of St. James succeeded, in consequence of an illness with which the monarch was suddenly seized after an entertainment given by Cabrera, in infusing into his mind suspicions of an attempt at assassination. Henry was so far incensed or alarmed by the suggestion that he concerted a scheme for privately seizing the person of his sister, which was defeated by her own prudence and the vigilance of her friends.<sup>22</sup> But, if the visit to Segovia failed in its destined purpose of a reconciliation with Henry, it was attended with the important consequence of securing to Isabella a faithful partisan in Cabrera, who, from the control which his situation gave him over the royal coffers, proved a most seasonable ally in her subsequent struggle with Joanna.

<sup>21</sup> Carbajal, Anales, MS., años 73, 74.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 27.—Castillo, Crónica, cap. 164.—Alonso de Palencia, Corónica, MS., part. 2, cap. 76.—Oviedo, Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 23.

<sup>22</sup> Mendoza, Crón. del Gran Cardenal, pp. 141, 142.—Castillo, Cró-

nica, cap. 164.—Oviedo has given a full account of this cavalier, who was allied to an ancient Catalan family, but who raised himself to such pre-eminence by his own deserts, says that writer, that he may well be considered the founder of his house. Loc. cit.

Not long after this event, Ferdinand received another summons from his father to attend him in Aragon, where the storm of war, which had been for some time gathering in the distance, now burst with pitiless fury. In the beginning of February, 1474, an embassy consisting of two of his principal nobles, accompanied by a brilliant train of cavaliers and attendants, had been deputed by John to the court of Louis XI., for the ostensible purpose of settling the preliminaries of the marriage, previously agreed on, between the dauphin and the infanta Isabella, daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella, then little more than three years of age.<sup>23</sup> The real object of the mission was to effect some definitive adjustment or compromise of the differences relating to the contested territories of Roussillon and Cerdagne. The king of France, who, notwithstanding his late convention with John, was making active preparations for the forcible occupation of these provinces, determined to gain time by amusing the ambassadors with a show of negotiation, and interposing every obstacle which his ingenuity could devise to their progress through his dominions. He succeeded so well in this latter part of his scheme that the embassy did not reach Paris until the close of Lent. Louis, who seldom resided in his capital, took good care to be absent at this season. The ambassadors in the interim were entertained with balls, *fêtes*, military reviews, and whatever else might divert them from the real objects of their mission. All communication was cut off with their own government, as their couriers were stopped and their despatches intercepted, so that John knew as little of his envoys or their proceedings as if they had been in Siberia or Japan. In the mean time, formidable preparations were making in the south of France for a descent on Roussillon; and when the ambassadors, after a fruitless attempt at negotiation,

<sup>23</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 70.      Ferdinand and Isabella, born Oct. 1st,  
—This was the eldest child of Fer-      1470, afterwards queen of Portugal.

which evaporated in mutual crimination and recrimination, set out on their return to Aragon, they were twice detained, at Lyons and Montpellier, from an extreme solicitude, as the French government expressed it, to ascertain the safest route through a country infested by hostile armies; and all this, notwithstanding their repeated protestations against this obliging disposition, which held them prisoners in opposition to their own will and the law of nations. The prince who descended to such petty trickery passed for the wisest of his time.<sup>24</sup>

In the mean while, the Seigneur du Lude had invaded Roussillon at the head of nine hundred French lances and ten thousand infantry, supported by a powerful train of artillery, while a fleet of Genoese transports, laden with supplies, accompanied the army along the coast. Elna surrendered after a sturdy resistance; the governor and some of the principal prisoners were shamefully beheaded as traitors; and the French then proceeded to invest Perpignan. The king of Aragon was so much impoverished by the incessant wars in which he had been engaged, that he was not only unable to recruit his army, but was even obliged to pawn the robe of costly fur which he wore to defend his person against the inclemencies of the season, in order to defray the expense of transporting his baggage. In this extremity, finding himself disappointed in the co-operation on which he had reckoned, of his ancient allies the dukes of Burgundy and Brittany, he again summoned Ferdinand to his assistance, who, after a brief interview with his father in Barcelona, proceeded to Saragossa, to solicit aid from the estates of Aragon.

An incident occurred on this visit of the prince, worth noticing, as strongly characteristic of the lawless habits of the age. A citizen of Saragossa, named Ximenes Gordo,

<sup>24</sup> Gaillard, *Rivalité*, tom. iii. pp. 267—276.—Duclos, *Hist. de Louis XI.*, tom. ii. pp. 113, 115.—Chronique scandaleuse, ed. Pétitot, tom. xiii. pp. 443, 444.

of noble family, but who had relinquished the privileges of his rank in order to qualify himself for municipal office, had acquired such ascendancy over his townsmen as to engross the most considerable posts in the city for himself and his creatures. This authority he abused in a shameless manner, making use of it not only for the perversion of justice, but for the perpetration of the most flagrant crimes. Although these facts were notorious, yet such were his power and popularity with the lower classes that Ferdinand, despairing of bringing him to justice in the ordinary way, determined on a more summary process. As Gordo occasionally visited the palace to pay his respects to the prince, the latter affected to regard him with more than usual favour, showing him such courtesy as might dissipate any distrust he had conceived of him. Gordo, thus assured, was invited at one of these interviews to withdraw into a retired apartment, where the prince wished to confer with him on business of moment. On entering the chamber he was surprised by the sight of the public executioner, the hangman of the city, whose presence, together with that of a priest, and the apparatus of death with which the apartment was garnished, revealed at once the dreadful nature of his destiny.

He was then charged with the manifold crimes of which he had been guilty, and sentence of death was pronounced on him. In vain did he appeal to Ferdinand, pleading the services which he had rendered on more than one occasion to his father. Ferdinand assured him that these should be gratefully remembered in the protection of his children, and then, bidding him unburden his conscience to his confessor, consigned him to the hand of the executioner. His body was exposed that very day in the market-place of the city, to the dismay of his friends and adherents, most of whom paid the penalty of their crimes in the ordinary course of justice. This extraordinary proceeding is highly characteristic of the unsettled times in which it

occurred; when acts of violence often superseded the regular operation of the law, even in those countries whose forms of government approached the nearest to a determinate constitution. It will doubtless remind the reader of the similar proceeding imputed to Louis the Eleventh, in the admirable sketch given us of that monarch in "Quentin Durward."<sup>25</sup>

The supplies furnished by the Aragonese cortes were inadequate to King John's necessities, and he was compelled, while hovering with his little force on the confines of Roussillon, to witness the gradual reduction of its capital, without being able to strike a blow in its defence. The inhabitants, indeed, who fought with a resolution worthy of ancient Numantia or Saguntum, were reduced to the last extremity of famine, supporting life by feeding on the most loathsome offal, on cats, dogs, the corpses of their enemies, and even on such of their own dead as had fallen in battle! And when at length an honourable capitulation was granted them on the 14th of March, 1475, the garrison who evacuated the city, reduced to the number of four hundred, were obliged to march on foot to Barcelona, as they had consumed their horses during the siege.<sup>26</sup>

The terms of capitulation, which permitted every inhabitant to evacuate, or reside unmolested in the city, at his option, were too liberal to satisfy the vindictive temper of the king of France. He instantly wrote to his generals, instructing them to depart from their engagements, to keep the city so short of supplies as to compel an emigration of its original inhabitants, and to confiscate for their own use the estates of the principal nobility; and after delineating in detail the perfidious policy which they

<sup>25</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 83.—Ferrerias, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. p. 400.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. lib. 19, cap. 12.

<sup>26</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*,

fol. 150.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. lib. 19, cap. 13.—*Chronique scandaleuse*, ed. Petitot, tom. xiii. p. 456.—Alonso de Palencia, *Crónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 91.

were to pursue, he concluded with the assurance "that, by the blessing of God and our Lady, and Monsieur St. Martin, he would be with them before the winter, in order to aid them in its execution."<sup>77</sup> Such was the miserable medley of hypocrisy and superstition which characterized the politics of the European courts in this corrupt age, and which dimmed the lustre of names most conspicuous on the page of history.

The occupation of Roussillon was followed by a truce of six months between the belligerent parties. The regular course of the narrative has been somewhat anticipated, in order to conclude that portion of it relating to the war with France, before again reverting to the affairs of Castile, where Henry the Fourth, pining under an incurable malady, was gradually approaching the termination of his disastrous reign.

This event, which, from the momentous consequences it involved, was contemplated with the deepest solicitude, not only by those who had an immediate and personal interest at stake, but by the whole nation, took place on the night of the 11th of December, 1474.<sup>78</sup> It was precipitated by the death of the grand master of St. James, on whom the feeble mind of Henry had been long accustomed to rest for its support, and who was cut off by an acute disorder but a few months previous, in the full prime of his ambitious schemes. The king, notwithstanding the linger-

<sup>77</sup> See copies of the original letters, as given by M. Barante, in his *History of the Dukes of Burgundy*, in which the author has so happily seized the tone and picturesque

colouring of the ancient chronicles; tom. x. pp. 289—298.\*

<sup>78</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 10.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 74.—Castillo, *Crónica*, cap. 148.

\* [These letters and instructions were addressed, not to the generals who had granted the obnoxious terms, and whom Louis, on this account, denounced as rank traitors, but to the Sire du Bouchage, whom he had sent to remove them, to appoint others in their places, and to take the most effective measures for securing the possession of Roussillon, the restoration of which to Aragon had just been formally demanded, through a special embassy, by Ferdinand and Isabella. (Legrand MSS., Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.) The king's orders in regard to the inhabitants of Perpignan were not carried out.—ED.]

ing nature of his disease gave him ample time for preparation, expired without a will, or even, as generally asserted, the designation of a successor. This was the more remarkable, not only as being contrary to established usage, but as occurring at a period when the succession had been so long and hotly debated.<sup>29</sup> The testaments of the Castilian sovereigns, though never esteemed positively binding, and occasionally, indeed, set aside,<sup>30</sup> when deemed unconstitutional or even inexpedient by the legislature, were always allowed to have great weight with the nation.

With Henry the Fourth terminated the male line of the house of Trastámara, who had kept possession of the throne

<sup>29</sup> This topic is involved in no little obscurity, and has been reported with much discrepancy as well as inaccuracy by the modern Spanish historians. Among the ancient, Castillo, the historiographer of Henry IV., mentions certain "testamentary executors," without, however, noticing in any more direct way the existence of a will. (Orón., c. 168.) The Curate of Los Palacios refers to a clause reported, he says, to have existed in the testament of Henry IV., in which he declares Joanna his daughter and heir. (Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 10.) Alonso de Palencia states positively that there was no such instrument, and that Henry, on being asked who was to succeed him, referred to his secretary Juan Gonzalez for a knowledge of his intention. (Orón., c. 92.) L. Marineo also states that the king, "with his usual improvidence," left no will. (Cosas memorables, fol. 155.) Pulgar, another contemporary, expressly declares that he executed no will, and quotes the words dictated by him to his secretary, in which he simply designates two of the grantees as "executors of his soul" (*albaceas de su anima*), and four others in conjunction with them as the guardians of his daughter Joanna. (Reyes Cat., p. 31.) It seems not improbable that the

existence of this document has been confounded with that of a testament, and that, with reference to it, the phrase above quoted of Castillo, as well as the passage of Bernaldez, is to be interpreted. Carbajal's wild story of the existence of a will, of its secretion for more than thirty years, and its final suppression by Ferdinand, is too naked of testimony to deserve the least weight with the historian. (See his *Anales*, MS., año 74.) It should be remembered, however, that most of the above-mentioned writers compiled their works after the accession of Isabella, and that none, save Castillo, were the partisans of her rival. It should also be added that in the letters addressed by the princess Joanna to the different cities of the kingdom, on her assuming the title of queen of Castile (bearing date May, 1475), it is expressly stated that Henry IV., on his death-bed, solemnly affirmed her to be his only daughter and lawful heir. These letters were drafted by John de Oviedo (Juan Gonzalez), the confidential secretary of Henry IV. See Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 235—239.

<sup>30</sup> As was the case with the testaments of Alfonso of Leon and Alfonso the Wise, in the thirteenth century, and with that of Peter the Cruel, in the fourteenth.

for more than a century, and in the course of only four generations had exhibited every gradation of character, from the bold and chivalrous enterprise of the first Henry of that name, down to the drivelling imbecility of the last.

The character of Henry the Fourth has been sufficiently delineated in that of his reign. He was not without certain amiable qualities, and may be considered as a weak rather than a wicked prince. In persons, however, intrusted with the degree of power exercised by sovereigns of even the most limited monarchies of this period, a weak man may be deemed more mischievous to the state over which he presides than a wicked one. The latter, feeling himself responsible in the eyes of the nation for his actions, is more likely to consult appearances, and, where his own passions or interests are not immediately involved, to legislate with reference to the general interests of his subjects. The former, on the contrary, is too often a mere tool in the hands of favourites, who, finding themselves screened by the interposition of royal authority from the consequences of measures for which they should be justly responsible, sacrifice without remorse the public weal to the advancement of their private fortunes. Thus the state, made to minister to the voracious appetites of many tyrants, suffers incalculably more than it would from one. So fared it with Castile under Henry the Fourth; dismembered by faction, her revenues squandered on worthless parasites, the grossest violations of justice unredressed, public faith become a jest, the treasury bankrupt, the court a brothel, and private morals too loose and audacious to seek even the veil of hypocrisy! Never had the fortunes of the kingdom reached so low an ebb since the great Saracen invasion.

---

The historian cannot complain of a want of authentic materials for the reign of Henry IV. Two of the chroniclers of that period, Alonso de Palencia and Enriquez del Castillo, were eye-witnesses and conspicuous actors in the scenes which they recorded, and connected with opposite



*factions*. The former of these writers, Alonso de Palencia, was born, as appears from his work, "*De Synonymis*," cited by Pellicer (*Bibliotheca de Traductores*, p. 7), in 1423. Nic. Antonio has fallen into the error of dating his birth nine years later. (*Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 331.) At the age of seventeen, he became page to Alfonso of Carthage, bishop of Burgos, and, in the family of that estimable prelate, acquired a taste for letters, which never deserted him during a busy political career. He afterwards visited Italy, where he became acquainted with Cardinal Bessarion, and through him with the learned Greek Trapezuntius, whose lectures on philosophy and rhetoric he attended. On his return to his native country, he was raised to the dignity of royal historiographer by Alfonso, younger brother of Henry IV., and competitor with him for the crown. He attached himself to the fortunes of Isabella, after Alfonso's death, and was employed by the archbishop of Toledo in many delicate negotiations, particularly in arranging the marriage of the princess with Ferdinand, for which purpose he made a secret journey into Aragon. On the accession of Isabella, he was confirmed in the office of national chronicler, and passed the remainder of his life in the composition of philological and historical works and translations from the ancient classics. The time of his death is uncertain. He lived to a good old age, however, since it appears from his own statement (see Mendez, *Typographia Española* (Madrid, 1796), p. 190) that his version of Josephus was not completed till the year 1492.

The most popular of Palencia's writings are his "*Chronicle of Henry IV.*," and his Latin "*Decades*," continuing the reign of Isabella down to the capture of Baza, in 1489. His historical style, far from scholastic pedantry, exhibits the business-like manner of a man of the world. His *Chronicle*, which, being composed in the Castilian, was probably intended for popular use, is conducted with little artifice, and indeed with a prolixity and minuteness of detail, arising no doubt from the deep interest which as an actor he took in the scenes he describes. His sentiments are expressed with boldness, and sometimes with the acerbity of party feeling. He has been much commended by the best Spanish writers, such as Zurita, Zuñiga, Marina, Clemencin, for his veracity. The internal evidence of this is sufficiently strong in his delineation of those scenes in which he was personally engaged; in his account of others, it will not be difficult to find examples of negligence and inaccuracy. His Latin "*Decades*" were probably composed with more care, as addressed to a learned class of readers; and they are lauded by Nic. Antonio as an elegant commentary, worthy to be assiduously studied by all who would acquaint themselves with the history of their country. The art of printing has done less perhaps for Spain than for any other country in Europe; and these two valuable histories are still permitted to swell the rich treasure of manuscripts with which her libraries are overloaded.

Enriquez del Castillo, a native of Segovia, was the chaplain and historiographer of King Henry IV., and a member of his privy council. His situation made him acquainted not only with the policy and intrigues of the court, but with the personal feelings of the monarch, who reposed entire confidence in him, which Castillo repaid with uniform loyalty. He appears very early to have commenced his *Chronicle of Henry's reign*. On the occupation of Segovia by the young Alfonso, after the battle of Olmedo, in 1467, the chronicler, together with the portion of his history then compiled, was unfortunate enough to fall into the enemy's hands. The author was soon summoned to the presence of Alfonso and his counsellors, to hear and justify, as he could, certain passages of what they termed his "*false and frivolous narrative*." Cas-

tillo, hoping little from a defence before such a prejudiced tribunal, resolutely kept his peace; and it might have gone hard with him, had it not been for his ecclesiastical profession. He subsequently escaped, but never recovered his manuscripts, which were probably destroyed; and, in the Introduction to his Chronicle, he laments that he has been obliged to rewrite the first half of his master's reign.

Notwithstanding Castillo's familiarity with public affairs, his work is not written in the business-like style of Palencia's. The sentiments exhibit a moral sensibility scarcely to have been expected, even from a minister of religion, in the corrupt court of Henry IV.; and the honest indignation of the writer at the abuses which he witnessed sometimes breaks forth in a strain of considerable eloquence. The spirit of his work, notwithstanding its abundant loyalty, may be also commended for its candour in relation to the partisans of Isabella; which has led some critics to suppose that it underwent a *refacimento* after the accession of that princess to the throne.

Castillo's Chronicle, more fortunate than that of his rival, has been published in a handsome form under the care of Don José Miguel de Flores, Secretary of the Spanish Academy of History, to whose learned labours in this way Castilian literature is so much indebted.

## CHAPTER V.

### ACCESSION OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.—WAR OF THE SUCCESSION.—BATTLE OF TORO.

1474—1476.

*Isabella proclaimed Queen.—Settlement of the Crown.—Alfonso of Portugal supports Joanna.—Invades Castile.—Retreat of the Castilians.—Appropriation of the Church Plate.—Reorganization of the Army.—Battle of Toro.—Submission of the whole Kingdom.—Peace with France and Portugal.—Joanna takes the Veil.—Death of John II. of Aragon.*

Most of the contemporary writers are content to derive Isabella's title to the crown of Castile from the illegitimacy of her rival Joanna. But as this fact, whatever probability it may receive from the avowed licentiousness of the queen, and some other collateral circumstances, was never established by legal evidence, or even made the subject of legal inquiry, it cannot reasonably be adduced as affording in itself a satisfactory basis for the pretensions of Isabella.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The popular belief of Joanna's illegitimacy was founded on the following circumstances:—1. King Henry's first marriage with Blanche of Navarre was dissolved, after it had subsisted twelve years, on the publicly alleged ground of "impotence in the parties." 2. The princess Joanna, the only child of his second queen, Joanna of Portugal, was not born until the eighth year of her marriage, and long after she had become notorious for her gallantries. 3. Although Henry kept several mistresses, whom he maintained in so ostentatious a manner as to excite general scandal, he was never known to have had

issue by any one of them.—To counterbalance the presumption afforded by these facts, it should be stated that Henry appears, to the day of his death, to have cherished the princess Joanna as his own offspring, and that Beltran de la Cueva, duke of Albuquerque, her reputed father, instead of supporting her claims to the crown on the demise of Henry, as would have been natural had he been entitled to the honour of paternity, attached himself to the adverse faction of Isabella.

Queen Joanna survived her husband about six months only. Father Florez (*Reynas Cathólicas*, tom. ii.

These are to be derived from the will of the nation as expressed by its representatives in cortes. The power of this body to interpret the laws regulating the succession, and to determine the succession itself, in the most absolute manner, is incontrovertible, having been established by repeated precedents from a very ancient period.<sup>2</sup> In the present instance, the legislature, soon after the birth of Joanna, tendered the usual oaths of allegiance to her as heir apparent to the monarchy. On a subsequent occasion, however, the cortes, for reasons deemed sufficient by itself, and under a conviction that its consent to the preceding measure had been obtained through an undue influence on the part of the crown, reversed its former acts, and did homage to Isabella as the only true and lawful successor.<sup>3</sup> In this disposition the legislature continued so resolute that, notwithstanding Henry twice convoked the states for the express purpose of renewing their allegiance to Joanna, they refused to comply with the summons;<sup>4</sup> and thus Isabella, at the time of her brother's death, possessed a title to the crown unimpaired, and derived from the sole authority which could give it a constitutional validity. It may be added that the princess was so well aware of the real basis of her pretensions that in her several manifestoes, although she adverts to the popular notion of her rival's illegitimacy, she rests the strength of her cause on the sanction of the cortes.

pp. 760—786) has made a flimsy attempt to whitewash her character; but, to say nothing of almost every contemporary historian, as well as of the official documents of that day (see Marina, *Teoría*, tom. iii. part. 2, num. 11), the stain has been too deeply fixed by the repeated testimony of Castillo, the loyal adherent of her own party, to be thus easily effaced.

It is said, however, that the queen died in the odour of sanctity; and Ferdinand and Isabella caused

her to be deposited in a rich mausoleum, erected by the ambassador to the court of the Great Tamerlane for himself, but from which his remains were somewhat unceremoniously ejected, in order to make room for those of his royal mistress.

<sup>2</sup> See this subject discussed *in extenso*, by Marina, *Teoría*, part. 2, cap. 1—10.—See also *Introd. sect. 1* of this History.

<sup>3</sup> See Part I. chap. 3.

<sup>4</sup> See Part I. chap. 4, note 2.

On learning Henry's death, Isabella signified to the inhabitants of Segovia, where she then resided, her desire of being proclaimed queen in that city, with the solemnities usual on such occasions.<sup>f</sup> Accordingly, on the following morning, being the 13th of December, 1474, a numerous assembly, consisting of the nobles, clergy, and public magistrates in their robes of office, waited on her at the alcazar, or castle, and, receiving her under a canopy of rich brocade, escorted her in solemn procession to the principal square of the city, where a broad platform or scaffold had been erected for the performance of the ceremony. Isabella, royally attired, rode on a Spanish jennet, whose bridle was held by two of the civic functionaries, while an officer of her court preceded her on horseback, bearing aloft a naked sword, the symbol of sovereignty. On arriving at the square, she alighted from her palfrey, and, ascending the platform, seated herself on a throne which had been prepared for her. A herald with a loud voice proclaimed, "Castile, Castile for the king Don Ferdinand and his consort Doña Isabella, queen proprietor (*reina propietaria*) of these kingdoms!" The royal standards were then unfurled, while the peal of bells and the discharge of ordnance from the castle publicly announced the accession of the new sovereign. Isabella, after receiving the homage of her subjects, and swearing to maintain inviolate the liberties of the realm, descended from the platform, and, attended by the same cortége, moved slowly towards the cathedral church; where, after *Te Deum* had been chanted, she prostrated herself before the principal altar, and, returning thanks to the Almighty for the protection hitherto vouchsafed her, implored him to enlighten her future

<sup>f</sup> Fortunately, this strong place, in which the royal treasure was deposited, was in the keeping of Andres de Cabrera, the husband of Isabella's friend, Beatriz de Bobadilla. His co-operation at this

juncture was so important that Oviedo does not hesitate to declare, "It lay with him to make Isabella or her rival queen, as he listed." *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 23.

counsels, so that she might discharge the high trust reposed in her with equity and wisdom. Such were the simple forms that attended the coronation of the monarchs of Castile, previously to the sixteenth century.<sup>6</sup>

The cities favourable to Isabella's cause, comprehending far the most populous and wealthy throughout the kingdom, followed the example of Segovia, and raised the royal standard for their new sovereign. The principal grandees, as well as most of the inferior nobility, soon presented themselves from all quarters, in order to tender the customary oaths of allegiance; and an assembly of the estates, convened for the ensuing month of February at Segovia, imparted, by a similar ceremony, a constitutional sanction to these proceedings.<sup>7</sup>

On Ferdinand's arrival from Aragon, where he was staying at the time of Henry's death, occupied with the war of Roussillon, a disagreeable discussion took place in regard to the respective authority to be enjoyed by the husband and wife in the administration of the government. Ferdinand's relatives, with the admiral Henriquez at their head, contended that the crown of Castile, and of course the exclusive sovereignty, was limited to him, as the nearest male representative of the house of Trastamara. Isabella's friends, on the other hand, insisted that these rights devolved solely on her, as the lawful heir and proprietor of the kingdom. The affair was finally referred to

\* Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 10.—Carbajal, Anales, MS., año 75.—Alonso de Palencia, Crónica, MS., part. 2, cap. 93.—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 155.—Oviedo, Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 3.

<sup>7</sup> Marina, whose peculiar researches and opportunities make him the best, is my only authority for this convention of the cortes. (Teoría, tom. ii. pp. 63, 89.) The extracts he makes from the writ of summons, however, seem to imply

that the object was not the recognition of Ferdinand and Isabella, but of their daughter, as successor to the crown. Among the nobles who openly testified their adhesion to Isabella were no less than four of the six individuals to whom the late king had intrusted the guardianship of his daughter Joanna: viz. the grand cardinal of Spain, the constable of Castile, the duke of Infantado, and the count of Benavente.

the arbitration of the cardinal of Spain and the archbishop of Toledo, who, after careful examination, established by undoubted precedent that the exclusion of females from the succession did not obtain in Castile and Leon, as was the case in Aragon;<sup>8</sup> that Isabella was consequently sole heir of these dominions; and that whatever authority Ferdinand might possess could only be derived through her. A settlement was then made on the basis of the original marriage contract.<sup>9</sup> All municipal appointments, and collation to ecclesiastical benefices, were to be made in the name of both with the advice and consent of the queen. All fiscal nominations, and issues from the treasury, were to be subject to her order. The commanders of the fortified places were to render homage to her alone. Justice was to be administered by both conjointly when residing in the same place, and by each independently when separate. Proclamations and letters patent were to be subscribed with the signatures of both; their images were to be stamped on the public coin, and the united arms of Castile and Aragon emblazoned on a common seal.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>8</sup> A precedent for female inheritance, in the latter kingdom, was subsequently furnished by the undisputed succession and long reign of Joanna, daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella, and mother of Charles V. The introduction of the Salic law, under the Bourbon dynasty, opposed a new barrier, indeed; but this has been since swept away by the decree of the late monarch, Ferdinand VII., and the paramount authority of the cortes; and we may hope that the successful assertion of her lawful rights by Isabella II. will put this much vexed question at rest for ever.

<sup>9</sup> See Part I. chap. 3.—Ferdinand's powers are not so narrowly limited, at least not so carefully defined, in this settlement as in the marriage articles. Indeed, the instrument is much more concise and

general in its whole import.

<sup>10</sup> Salazar de Mendoza, Crón. del Gran Cardenal, lib. 1, cap. 40.—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 155, 156.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 222—224.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, pp. 35, 36.—See the original instrument signed by Ferdinand and Isabella, cited at length in Dormer's *Discursos varios de Historia* (Zaragoza, 1683), pp. 295—313.—It does not appear that the settlement was ever confirmed by, or indeed presented to, the cortes. Marina speaks of it, however, as emanating from that body. (Teoria, tom. ii. pp. 63, 64.) From Pulgar's statement, as well as from the instrument itself, it seems to have been made under no other auspices or sanction than that of the great nobility and cavaliers. Marina's eagerness to find a precedent for the interference

Ferdinand, it is said, was so much dissatisfied with an arrangement which vested the essential rights of sovereignty in his consort, that he threatened to return to Aragon; but Isabella reminded him that this distribution of power was rather nominal than real; that their interests were indivisible; that his will would be hers; and that the principle of the exclusion of females from the succession, if now established, would operate to the disqualification of their only child, who was a daughter. By these and similar arguments the queen succeeded in soothing her offended husband, without compromising the prerogatives of her crown.

Although the principal body of the nobility, as has been stated, supported Isabella's cause, there were a few families, and some of them the most potent in Castile, who seemed determined to abide the fortunes of her rival. Among these was the marquis of Villena, who, inferior to his father in talent for intrigue, was of an intrepid spirit, and is commended by one of the Spanish historians as "the best lance in the kingdom." His immense estates, stretching from Toledo to Murcia, gave him an extensive influence over the southern regions of New Castile. The duke of Arevalo possessed a similar interest in the frontier province of Estremadura. With these were combined the grand master of Calatrava and his brother, together with the young marquis of Cadiz, and, as it soon appeared, the archbishop of Toledo. This latter dignitary, whose heart had long swelled with secret jealousy at the rising fortunes of the cardinal Mendoza, could no longer brook the ascendancy which that prelate's consummate sagacity and insinuating address had given him over the counsels of his young sovereigns. After some awkward excuses, he

of the popular branch in all the great concerns of government has usually quickened, but sometimes clouded, his optics. In the present instance he has undoubtedly con-

founded the irregular proceedings of the aristocracy exclusively with the deliberate acts of the legislature.



abruptly withdrew to his own estates; nor could the most conciliatory advances on the part of the queen, nor the deprecatory letters of the old king of Aragon, soften his inflexible temper, or induce him to resume his station at the court; until it soon became apparent, from his correspondence with Isabella's enemies, that he was busy in undermining the fortunes of the very individual whom he had so zealously laboured to elevate.<sup>11</sup>

Under the auspices of this coalition, propositions were made to Alfonso the Fifth, king of Portugal, to vindicate the title of his niece Joanna to the throne of Castile, and, by espousing her, to secure to himself the same rich inheritance. An exaggerated estimate was at the same time exhibited of the resources of the confederates, which, when combined with those of Portugal, would readily enable them to crush the usurpers, unsupported as the latter must be by the co-operation of Aragon, whose arms already found sufficient occupation with the French.

Alfonso, whose victories over the Barbary Moors had given him the cognomen of "the African," was precisely of a character to be dazzled by the nature of this enterprise. The protection of an injured princess, his near relative, was congenial with the spirit of chivalry; while the conquest of an opulent territory, adjacent to his own, would not only satisfy his dreams of glory, but the more solid cravings of avarice. In this disposition he was confirmed by his son, Prince John, whose hot and enterprising temper found a nobler scope for ambition in such a war than in the conquest of a horde of African savages.<sup>12</sup>

Still there were a few among Alfonso's counsellors

<sup>11</sup> Alonso de Palencia, *Corónica*, MS., part. 2, cap. 94.—Garibay, *Compendio*, lib. 18, cap. 3.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 10, 11.—Pulgar, *Letras* (Madrid, 1776), let. 3, al Arzobispo de Toledo.—The archbishop's jealousy of Cardinal Mendoza is uniformly re-

ported by the Spanish writers as the true cause of his defection from the queen.

<sup>12</sup> Ruy de Pina, *Crónica d'el Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 173, apud *Collecção de Livros inéditos de Historia Portuguesa* (Lisboa, 1790—1793), tom. i.

possessed of sufficient coolness to discern the difficulties of the undertaking. They reminded him that the Castilian nobles on whom he principally relied were the very persons who had formerly been most instrumental in defeating the claims of Joanna and securing the succession to her rival; that Ferdinand was connected by blood with the most powerful families of Castile; that the great body of the people, the middle as well as the lower classes, were fully penetrated not only with a conviction of the legality of Isabella's title, but with a deep attachment to her person; while, on the other hand, their proverbial hatred of Portugal would make them too impatient of interference from that quarter to admit the prospect of permanent success.<sup>18</sup>

These objections, sound as they were, were overruled by John's impetuosity and the ambition or avarice of his father. War was accordingly resolved on; and Alfonso, after a vaunting and, as may be supposed, ineffectual summons to the Castilian sovereigns to resign their crown in favour of Joanna, prepared for the immediate invasion of the kingdom at the head of an army amounting, according to the Portuguese historians, to five thousand six hundred horse and fourteen thousand foot. This force, though numerically not so formidable as might have been expected, comprised the flower of the Portuguese chivalry, burning with the hope of reaping similar laurels to those won of old by their fathers on the plains of Aljubarrotta, while its deficiency in numbers was to be amply compensated by recruits from the disaffected party in Castile, who

<sup>18</sup> The ancient rivalry between the two nations was exasperated into the most deadly rancour by the fatal defeat at Aljubarrotta, in 1235, in which fell the flower of the Castilian nobility. King John I. wore mourning, it is said, to the day of his death, in commemoration of this disaster. (Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 394—396.—*La Clède*, *Hist. de Por-*

*tugal*, tom. iii. pp. 357—359.) Pulgar, the secretary of Ferdinand and Isabella, addressed, by their order, a letter of remonstrance to the king of Portugal, in which he endeavours, by numerous arguments founded on expediency and justice, to dissuade him from his meditated enterprise. Pulgar, *Le tras*, no. 7.

would eagerly flock to its banners on its advance across the borders. At the same time negotiations were entered into with the king of France, who was invited to make a descent upon Biscay, by a promise, somewhat premature, of a cession of the conquered territory.

Early in May (1475), the king of Portugal put his army in motion, and, entering Castile by the way of Estremadura, held a northerly course towards Placencia, where he was met by the duke of Arevalo and the marquis of Villena, and by the latter nobleman presented to the princess Joanna, his destined bride. On the 12th of the month he was affianced with all becoming pomp to this lady, then scarcely thirteen years of age; and a messenger was despatched to the court of Rome, to solicit a dispensation for their marriage, rendered necessary by the consanguinity of the parties. The royal pair were then proclaimed, with the usual solemnities, sovereigns of Castile; and circulars were transmitted to the different cities, setting forth Joanna's title and requiring their allegiance.<sup>14</sup>

After some days given to festivity, the army resumed its march, still in a northerly direction, upon Arevalo, where Alfonso determined to await the arrival of the reinforcements which he expected from his Castilian allies. Had he struck at once into the southern districts of Castile, where most of those friendly to his cause were to be found, and immediately commenced active operations with the aid of the marquis of Cadiz, who it was understood was prepared to support him in that quarter, it is

<sup>14</sup> Ruy de Pina, *Crónica d'el Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 174—178.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 16, 17, 18.—Bernaldez states that Alfonso, previously to his invasion, caused largesses of plate and money to be distributed among the Castilian nobles whom he imagined to be well affected towards him. Some of them, the duke of Alva in particular, received his

presents and used them in the cause of Isabella.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 396—398.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 230—240.—La Clède, *Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iii. pp. 360—362.—Pulgar, *Crónica*, p. 51.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 156.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 3.

difficult to say what might have been the result. Ferdinand and Isabella were so wholly unprepared at the time of Alfonso's invasion, that it is said they could scarcely bring five hundred horse to oppose it. By this opportune delay at Arevalo they obtained space for preparation. Both of them were indefatigable in their efforts. Isabella, we are told, was frequently engaged through the whole night in dictating despatches to her secretaries. She visited in person such of the garrisoned towns as required to be confirmed in their allegiance, performing long and painful journeys on horseback with surprising celerity, and enduring fatigues which, as she was at that time in delicate health, wellnigh proved fatal to her constitution.<sup>15</sup> On an excursion to Toledo, she determined to make one effort more to regain the confidence of her ancient minister, the archbishop. She accordingly sent an envoy to inform him of her intention to wait on him in person at his residence in Alcalá de Henares. But as the surly prelate, far from being moved by this condescension, returned for answer that, "if the queen entered by one door, he would go out at the other," she did not choose to compromise her dignity by any further advances.

By Isabella's extraordinary exertions, as well as those of her husband, the latter found himself, in the beginning of July, at the head of a force amounting in all to four thousand men-at-arms, eight thousand light horse, and thirty thousand foot, an ill-disciplined militia, chiefly drawn from the mountainous districts of the north, which manifested peculiar devotion to his cause; his partisans in the south being preoccupied with suppressing domestic revolt, and with incursions on the frontiers of Portugal.<sup>16</sup>

Meanwhile Alfonso, after an unprofitable detention of

<sup>15</sup> The queen, who was at that time in a state of pregnancy, brought on a miscarriage by her incessant personal exposure. Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 234.

<sup>16</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 75. —Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 45—55. —Ferrerías, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. p. 411. —Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 23.

nearly two months at Arevalo, marched on Toro, which, by a preconcerted agreement, was delivered into his hands by the governor of the city, although the fortress, under the conduct of a woman, continued to maintain a gallant defence. While occupied with its reduction, Alfonso was invited to receive the submission of the adjacent city and castle of Zamora. The defection of these places, two of the most considerable in the province of Leon, and peculiarly important to the king of Portugal from their vicinity to his dominions, was severely felt by Ferdinand, who determined to advance at once against his rival and bring their quarrel to the issue of a battle; in this, acting in opposition to the more cautious counsel of his father, who recommended the policy, usually judged most prudent for an invaded country, of acting on the defensive, instead of risking all on the chances of a single action.

Ferdinand arrived before Toro on the 19th of July, and immediately drew up his army before its walls in order of battle. As the king of Portugal, however, still kept within his defences, Ferdinand sent a herald into his camp, to defy him to a fair field of fight with his whole army, or, if he declined this, to invite him to decide their differences by personal combat. Alfonso accepted the latter alternative; but, a dispute arising respecting the guaranty for the performance of the engagements on either side, the whole affair evaporated, as usual, in an empty vaunt of chivalry.

The Castilian army, from the haste with which it had been mustered, was wholly deficient in battering artillery, and in other means for annoying a fortified city; and, as its communications were cut off in consequence of the neighbouring fortresses being in possession of the enemy, it soon became straitened for provisions. It was accordingly decided in a council of war to retreat without further delay. No sooner was this determination known than it excited general dissatisfaction throughout the camp. The

soldiers loudly complained that the king was betrayed by his nobles; and a party of over-loyal Biscayans, inflamed by the suspicions of a conspiracy against his person, actually broke into the church where Ferdinand was conferring with his officers, and bore him off in their arms to his own tent, notwithstanding his reiterated explanations and remonstrances. The ensuing retreat was conducted in so disorderly a manner by the mutinous soldiery that Alfonso, says a contemporary, had he but sallied with two thousand horse, might have routed and perhaps annihilated the whole army. Some of the troops were detached to reinforce the garrisons of the loyal cities, but most of them dispersed again among their native mountains. The citadel of Toro soon afterwards capitulated. The archbishop of Toledo, considering these events as decisive of the fortunes of the war, now openly joined the king of Portugal at the head of five hundred lances, boasting at the same time that he "had raised Isabella from the distaff, and would soon send her back to it again."<sup>17</sup>

So disastrous an introduction to the campaign might indeed well fill Isabella's bosom with anxiety. The revolutionary movements which had so long agitated Castile had so far unsettled every man's political principles, and the allegiance of even the most loyal hung so loosely about them, that it was difficult to estimate how far it might be shaken by such a blow occurring at this crisis.<sup>18</sup> Fortunately, Alfonso was in no condition to profit by his success. His Castilian allies had experienced the greatest difficulty in enlisting their vassals in the Portuguese cause, and, far

<sup>17</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 18.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 398—400.—Pulgar, *Crónica*, pp. 55—60.—Ruy de Pina, *Crón. del Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 179.—La Clède, *Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iii. p. 366.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 240—243.

<sup>18</sup> "Pues no os maravillais de eso," says Oviedo, in relation to these troubles, "que nó solo entre hermanos suele haber esas diferencias, mas entre padre é hijo lo vimos ayer, como suelen decir." *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quina. 2, dial. 3.

from furnishing him with the contingents which he had expected, found sufficient occupation in the defence of their own territories against the loyal partisans of Isabella. At the same time, numerous squadrons of light cavalry from Estremadura and Andalusia, penetrating into Portugal, carried the most terrible desolation over the whole extent of its unprotected borders. The Portuguese knights loudly murmured at being cooped up in Toro while their own country was made the theatre of war; and Alfonso saw himself under the necessity of detaching so considerable a portion of his army for the defence of his frontier as entirely to cripple his future operations. So deeply, indeed, was he impressed by these circumstances with the difficulty of his enterprise, that, in a negotiation with the Castilian sovereigns at this time, he expressed a willingness to resign his claims to their crown in consideration of the cession of Galicia, together with the cities of Toro and Zamora, and a considerable sum of money. Ferdinand and his ministers, it is reported, would have accepted the proposal; but Isabella, although acquiescing in the stipulated money payment, would not consent to the dismemberment of a single inch of the Castilian territory.

In the mean time both the queen and her husband, undismayed by past reverses, were making every exertion for the reorganization of an army on a more efficient footing. To accomplish this object, an additional supply of funds became necessary, since the treasure of King Henry, delivered into their hands by Andres de Cabrera at Segovia, had been exhausted by the preceding operations.<sup>19</sup> The old king of Aragon advised them to imitate their

<sup>19</sup> The royal coffers were found to contain about 10,000 marks of silver. (Pulgar, Reyes Catól., p. 54.) Isabella presented Cabrera with a golden goblet from her table, engaging that a similar present should be regularly made to him and his successors on the anni-

versary of his surrender of Segovia. She subsequently gave a more solid testimony of her gratitude, by raising him to the rank of marquis of Moya, with the grant of an estate suitable to his new dignity. —Oviedo, Quincuagenas, MS., bat 1, quinc. 1, dial. 23.

ancestor Henry the Second, of glorious memory, by making liberal grants and alienations in favour of their subjects, which they might, when more firmly seated on the throne, resume at pleasure. Isabella, however, chose rather to trust to the patriotism of her people than have recourse to so unworthy a stratagem. She accordingly convened an assembly of the states, in the month of August, 1475, at Medina del Campo. As the nation had been too far impoverished under the late reign to admit of fresh exactions, a most extraordinary expedient was devised for meeting the stipulated requisitions. It was proposed to deliver into the royal treasure half the amount of plate belonging to the churches throughout the kingdom, to be redeemed in the term of three years, for the sum of thirty *cuentos*, or millions, of maravedis. The clergy, who were very generally attached to Isabella's interests, far from discouraging this startling proposal, endeavoured to vanquish the queen's repugnance to it by arguments and pertinent illustrations drawn from Scripture. This transaction certainly exhibits a degree of disinterestedness, on the part of this body, most unusual in that age and country, as well as a generous confidence in the good faith of Isabella, of which she proved herself worthy by the punctuality with which she redeemed it.<sup>20</sup>

Thus provided with the necessary funds, the sovereigns set about enforcing new levies and bringing them under better discipline, as well as providing for their equipment in a manner more suitable to the exigencies of the service than was done for the preceding army. The remainder of

<sup>20</sup> The indignation of Dr. Salazar de Mendoza is roused by this misapplication of the church's money, which he avers "no necessity whatever could justify." This worthy canon flourished in the seventeenth century. (*Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, p. 147.—*Pulgar, Reyes Catól.*, pp. 60—62.—*Faria y Sousa, Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 400.—*Rades*

y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, part. 1, fol. 67.—*Zurita, Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 243.—*Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 18, 20.) *Zufiga* gives some additional particulars respecting the grant of the cortes, which I do not find verified by any contemporary author. *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 372.



the summer and the ensuing autumn were consumed in these preparations, as well as in placing their fortified towns in a proper posture of defence, and in the reduction of such places as held out against them. The king of Portugal, all this while, lay with his diminished forces in Toro, making a sally on one occasion only, for the relief of his friends, which was frustrated by the sleepless vigilance of Isabella.

Early in December, Ferdinand passed from the siege of Burgos, in Old Castile, to Zamora, whose inhabitants expressed a desire to return to their ancient allegiance; and, with the co-operation of the citizens, supported by a large detachment from his main army, he prepared to invest its citadel. As the possession of this post would effectually intercept Alfonso's communications with his own country, he determined to relieve it at every hazard, and for this purpose despatched a messenger into Portugal, requiring his son, Prince John, to reinforce him with such levies as he could speedily raise. All parties now looked forward with eagerness to a general battle, as to a termination of the evils of this long-protracted war.

The Portuguese prince, having with difficulty assembled a corps amounting to two thousand lances and eight thousand infantry, took a northerly circuit round Galicia, and effected a junction with his father in Toro, on the 14th of February, 1476. Alfonso, thus reinforced, transmitted a pompous circular to the pope, the king of France, his own dominions, and those well affected to him in Castile, proclaiming his immediate intention of taking the usurper, or of driving him from the kingdom. On the night of the 17th, having first provided for the security of the city by leaving in it a powerful reserve, Alfonso drew off the residue of his army, probably not much exceeding three thousand five hundred horse and five thousand foot, well provided with artillery and with arquebuses, which latter engine was still of so clumsy and unwieldy con-

struction as not to have entirely superseded the ancient weapons of European warfare. The Portuguese army, traversing the bridge of Toro, pursued their march along the southern side of the Douro, and reached Zamora, distant only a few leagues, before the dawn.<sup>21</sup>

At break of day, the Castilians were surprised by the array of floating banners and martial panoply glittering in the sun from the opposite side of the river, while the discharges of artillery still more unequivocally announced the presence of the enemy. Ferdinand could scarcely believe that the Portuguese monarch, whose avowed object had been the relief of the castle of Zamora, should have selected a position so obviously unsuitable for this purpose. The intervention of the river between him and the fortress situated at the northern extremity of the town, prevented him from relieving it, either by throwing succours into it, or by annoying the Castilian troops, who, intrenched in comparative security within the walls and houses of the city, were enabled by means of certain elevated positions, well garnished with artillery, to inflict much heavier injury on their opponents than they could possibly receive from them. Still Ferdinand's men, exposed to the double fire of the fortress and the besiegers, would willingly have come to an engagement with the latter; but the river, swollen by winter torrents, was not fordable, and the bridge, the only direct avenue to the city, was enfiladed by the enemy's cannon, so as to render a sally in that direction altogether impracticable. During this time, Isabella's squadrons of light cavalry, hovering on the skirts of the Portuguese camp, effectually cut off its

<sup>21</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., años 75, 76.—Ruy de Pina, *Crón. d'el Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 187, 189.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 20, 22.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 63—78.—L. Maríneo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 156.—Faria

y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 401, 404.—Several of the contemporary Castilian historians compute the Portuguese army at double the amount given in the text.

supplies, and soon reduced it to great straits for subsistence. This circumstance, together with the tidings of the rapid advance of additional forces to the support of Ferdinand, determined Alfonso, contrary to all expectation, on an immediate retreat; and accordingly, on the morning of the 1st of March, being little less than a fortnight from the time in which he commenced this empty gasconade, the Portuguese army quitted its position before Zamora, with the same silence and celerity with which it had occupied it.

Ferdinand's troops would instantly have pushed after the fugitives, but the latter had demolished the southern extremity of the bridge before their departure; so that, although some few effected an immediate passage in boats, the great body of the army was necessarily detained until the repairs were completed, which occupied more than three hours. With all the expedition they could use, therefore, and leaving their artillery behind them, they did not succeed in coming up with the enemy until nearly four o'clock in the afternoon, as the latter was defiling through a narrow pass formed by a crest of precipitous hills on the one side, and the Douro on the other, at the distance of about five miles from the city of Toro.<sup>22</sup>

A council of war was then called, to decide on the expediency of an immediate assault. It was objected, that the strong position of Toro would effectually cover the retreat of the Portuguese in case of their discomfiture; that they would speedily be reinforced by fresh recruits from that city, which would make them more than a match for Ferdinand's army, exhausted by a toilsome march, as well as by its long fast, which it had not broken since the morning; and that the celerity with which it had moved had compelled it not only to abandon its artillery, but to leave a considerable portion of the heavy-

<sup>22</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, pp. 82—85.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 252, 253.—Faria y Sousa, Europa Portuguesa, tom. ii. pp.

VOL. I.

404, 405.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 23.—Ruy de Pina, Crón. d'el Rey Alfonso V., cap. 190.

P

armed infantry in the rear. Notwithstanding the weight of these objections, such were the high spirit of the troops and their eagerness to come to action, sharpened by the view of the quarry, which after a wearisome chase seemed ready to fall into their hands, that they were thought more than sufficient to counterbalance every physical disadvantage; and the question of battle was decided in the affirmative.

As the Castilian army emerged from the defile into a wide and open plain, they found that the enemy had halted, and was already forming in order of battle. The king of Portugal led the centre, with the archbishop of Toledo on his right wing, its extremity resting on the Douro; while the left, comprehending the arquebusiers and the strength of the cavalry, was placed under the command of his son, Prince John. The numerical force of the two armies, although in favour of the Portuguese, was nearly equal, amounting probably in each to less than ten thousand men, about one-third being cavalry. Ferdinand took his station in the centre, opposite his rival, having the admiral and the duke of Alva on his left; while his right wing, distributed into six battles or divisions, under their several commanders, was supported by a detachment of men-at-arms from the provinces of Leon and Galicia.

The action commenced in this quarter. The Castilians, raising the war-cry of "St. James and St. Lazarus," advanced on the enemy's left under Prince John, but were saluted with such a brisk and well-directed fire from his arquebusiers, that their ranks were disconcerted. The Portuguese men-at-arms, charging them at the same time, augmented their confusion, and compelled them to fall back precipitately on the narrow pass in their rear, where, being supported by some fresh detachments from the reserve, they were with difficulty rallied by their officers, and again brought into the field. In the mean while,

Ferdinand closed with the enemy's centre, and the action soon became general along the whole line. The battle raged with redoubled fierceness in the quarter where the presence of the two monarchs infused new ardour into their soldiers, who fought as if conscious that this struggle was to decide the fate of their masters. The lances were shattered at the first encounter, and, as the ranks of the two armies mingled with each other, the men fought hand to hand with their swords, with a fury sharpened by the ancient rivalry of the two nations, making the whole a contest of physical strength rather than skill.<sup>28</sup>

The royal standard of Portugal was torn to shreds in the attempt to seize it on the one side and to preserve it on the other; while its gallant bearer, Edward de Almeyda, after losing first his right arm, and then his left, in its defence, held it firmly with his teeth until he was cut down by the assailants. The armour of this knight was to be seen as late as Mariana's time, in the cathedral church of Toledo, where it was preserved as a trophy of this desperate act of heroism, which brings to mind a similar feat recorded in Grecian story.

The old archbishop of Toledo, and the cardinal Mendoza, who, like his reverend rival, had exchanged the crosier for the corselet, were to be seen on that day in the thickest of the *mêlée*. The holy wars with the infidel perpetuated the unbecoming spectacle of militant ecclesiastics among the Spaniards, to a still later period, and long after it had disappeared from the rest of civilized Europe.

At length, after an obstinate struggle of more than three hours, the valour of the Castilian troops prevailed, and the Portuguese were seen to give way in all directions. The duke of Alva, by succeeding in turning their flank while

<sup>28</sup> Carbajal, Anales, MS., año 76.  
—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 158.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, pp. 85—89.—Faria y Sousa, Europa Portuguesa, tom. ii. pp. 404, 405.

—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 23.—La Clède, Hist. de Portugal, tom. iii. pp. 378—383.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 252—255.

they were thus vigorously pressed in front, completed their disorder, and soon converted their retreat into a rout. Some, attempting to cross the Douro, were drowned; and many, who endeavoured to effect an entrance into Toro, were entangled in the narrow defile of the bridge, and fell by the sword of their pursuers, or miserably perished in the river, which, bearing along their mutilated corpses, brought tidings of the fatal victory to Zamora. Such were the heat and fury of the pursuit, that the intervening night, rendered darker than usual by a driving rain-storm, alone saved the scattered remains of the army from destruction. Several Portuguese companies, under favour of this obscurity, contrived to elude their foes by shouting the Castilian battle-cry. Prince John, retiring with a fragment of his broken squadrons to a neighbouring eminence, succeeded, by lighting fires and sounding his trumpets, in rallying round him a number of fugitives; and, as the position he occupied was too strong to be readily forced, and the Castilian troops were too weary, and well satisfied with their victory, to attempt it, he retained possession of it till morning, when he made good his retreat into Toro. The king of Portugal, who was missing, was supposed to have perished in the battle, until, by advices received from him late on the following day, it was ascertained that he had escaped without personal injury, and with three or four attendants only, to the fortified castle of Castro Nuño, some leagues distant from the field of action. Numbers of his troops, attempting to escape across the neighbouring frontiers into their own country, were maimed or massacred by the Spanish peasants, in retaliation of the excesses wantonly committed by them in their invasion of Castile. Ferdinand, shocked at this barbarity, issued orders for the protection of their persons, and freely gave safe-conducts to such as desired to return into Portugal. He even, with a degree of humanity more honourable, as well as more rare, than military success, distributed clothes and money

to several prisoners brought into Zamora in a state of utter destitution, and enabled them to return in safety to their own country.<sup>24</sup>

The Castilian monarch remained on the field of battle till after midnight, when he returned to Zamora, being followed in the morning by the cardinal of Spain and the admiral Henriquez, at the head of the victorious legions. Eight standards, with the greater part of the baggage, were taken in the engagement, and more than two thousand of the enemy slain or made prisoners. Queen Isabella, on receiving tidings of the event at Tordesillas, where she then was, ordered a procession to the church of St. Paul in the suburbs, in which she herself joined, walking barefoot with all humility, and offered up a devout thanksgiving to the God of battles for the victory with which he had crowned her arms.<sup>25</sup>

It was indeed a most auspicious victory, not so much from the immediate loss inflicted on the enemy, as from its moral influence on the Castilian nation. Such as had before vacillated in their faith, and, in the expressive language of Bernaldez, “estaban aviva quien vence,”—were prepared to take sides with the strongest,—now openly proclaimed their allegiance to Ferdinand and Isabella; while most of those who had been arrayed in arms, or had

<sup>24</sup> Faria y Sousa claims the honours of the victory for the Portuguese, because Prince John kept the field till morning. Even M. La Clède, with all his deference to the Portuguese historian, cannot swallow this.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 405–410.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, lib. 1, cap. 46.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 85–90.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 158.—Cerbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 76.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 23.—Buy de Pina, *Crón. d'el Rey*

Alfonso V., cap. 191.—Ferdinand, in allusion to Prince John, wrote to his wife, that, “if it had not been for the chicken, the old cock would have been taken.” Garibay, *Compendio*, lib. 18, cap. 8.

<sup>25</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, p. 90.—The sovereigns, in compliance with a previous vow, caused a superb monastery, dedicated to St. Francis, to be erected in Toledo, with the title of San Juan de los Reyes, in commemoration of their victory over the Portuguese. This edifice was still to be seen in Mariana's time.

manifested by any other overt act their hostility to the government, vied with each other in demonstrations of the most loyal submission, and sought to make the best terms for themselves which they could. Among these latter, the duke of Arevalo, who indeed had made overtures to this effect some time previous through the agency of his son, together with the grand master of Calatrava, and his brother, the count of Urueña, experienced the lenity of government, and were confirmed in the entire possession of their estates. The two principal delinquents, the marquis of Villena and the archbishop of Toledo, made a show of resistance for some time longer, but, after witnessing the demolition of their castles, the capture of their towns, the desertion of their vassals, and the sequestration of their revenues, were fain to purchase a pardon at the price of the most humble concessions, and the forfeiture of an ample portion of their domains.

The castle of Zamora, expecting no further succours from Portugal, speedily surrendered, and this event was soon followed by the reduction of Madrid, Baeza, Toro, and other principal cities; so that, in little more than six months from the date of the battle, the whole kingdom, with the exception of a few insignificant posts still garrisoned by the enemy, had acknowledged the supremacy of Ferdinand and Isabella.<sup>26</sup>

Soon after the victory of Toro, Ferdinand was enabled to concentrate a force amounting to fifty thousand men, for the purpose of repelling the French from Guipuscoa, from which they had already twice been driven by the intrepid natives, and whence they again retired with precipitation on receiving news of the king's approach.<sup>27</sup>

<sup>26</sup> Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, tom. ii. fol. 79, 80.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 48—50, 55, 60.—Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 19, cap. 46, 48, 54, 58.—Ferrerías, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. pp. 476—478, 517—519, 546.—Bernaldez,

*Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 10.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8.

<sup>27</sup> Gaillard, *Rivalité*, tom. iii. pp. 290—292.—Cabajal, *Anales*, MS., año 76.



Alfonso, finding his authority in Castile thus rapidly melting away before the rising influence of Ferdinand and Isabella, withdrew with his virgin bride into Portugal, where he formed the resolution of visiting France in person, and soliciting succour from his ancient ally, Louis the Eleventh. In spite of every remonstrance, he put this extraordinary scheme into execution. He reached France, with a retinue of two hundred followers, in the month of September. He experienced everywhere the honours due to his exalted rank, and to the signal mark of confidence which he thus exhibited towards the French king. The keys of the cities were delivered into his hands, the prisoners were released from their dungeons, and his progress was attended by a general jubilee. His brother monarch, however, excused himself from affording more substantial proofs of his regard, until he should have closed the war then pending between him and Burgundy, and until Alfonso should have fortified his title to the Castilian crown by obtaining from the pope a dispensation for his marriage with Joanna.

The defeat and death of the duke of Burgundy, whose camp before Nancy Alfonso visited in the depth of winter, with the chimerical purpose of effecting a reconciliation between him and Louis, removed the former of these impediments;\* as, in good time, the compliance of the pope did the latter. But the king of Portugal found himself no nearer the object of his negotiations; and, after waiting a whole year a needy suppliant at the court of Louis, he at length ascertained that his insidious host was concerting an arrangement with his mortal foes, Ferdinand and Isabella. Alfonso, whose character always had a spice of Quixotism in it, seems to have completely lost his wits at

---

\* [The death of the duke of Burgundy, instead of closing or averting the war for which Louis had assembled his forces, was the signal for its commencement, being followed by an immediate invasion of the Burgundian dominions.—ED.]

this last reverse of fortune. Overwhelmed with shame at his own credulity, he felt himself unable to encounter the ridicule which awaited his return to Portugal, and secretly withdrew, with two or three domestics only, to an obscure village in Normandy, whence he transmitted an epistle to Prince John, his son, declaring "that, as all earthly vanities were dead within his bosom, he resolved to lay up an imperishable crown by performing a pilgrimage to the Holy Land, and devoting himself to the service of God in some retired monastery;" and he concluded with requesting his son "to assume the sovereignty at once, in the same manner as if he had heard of his father's death."<sup>28</sup>

Fortunately Alfonso's retreat was detected before he had time to put his extravagant project in execution, and his trusty followers succeeded, though with considerable difficulty, in diverting him from it; while the king of France, willing to be rid of his importunate guest, and unwilling perhaps to incur the odium of having driven him to so desperate an extremity as that of his projected pilgrimage, provided a fleet of ships to transport him back to his own dominions, where, to complete the farce, he arrived just five days after the ceremony of his son's coronation as king of Portugal (Nov. 15, 1478). Nor was it destined that the luckless monarch should solace himself, as he had hoped, in the arms of his youthful bride; since the pliant pontiff, Sixtus the Fourth, was ultimately persuaded by the court of Castile to issue a new bull overruling the dispensation formerly conceded, on the ground that it had been obtained by a misrepresentation of facts.

Prince John, whether influenced by filial piety or prudence, resigned the crown of Portugal to his father, soon

<sup>28</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 27.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 56, 57. — Gaillard, *Rivalité*, tom. iii. pp. 290—292. — Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 19, cap. 56, lib. 20,

cap. 10.—Ruy de Pina, *Crónica d'el Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 194—202. —Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 412—415.—Comines, *Mémoires*, liv. 5, chap. 7.

after his return;<sup>29</sup> and the old monarch was no sooner reinstated in his authority than, burning with a thirst for vengeance, which made him insensible to every remonstrance, he again prepared to throw his country into combustion by reviving his enterprise against Castile.<sup>30</sup>

While these hostile movements were in progress (1478), Ferdinand, leaving his consort in possession of a sufficient force for the protection of the frontiers, made a journey into Biscay for the purpose of an interview with his father, the king of Aragon, to concert measures for the pacification of Navarre, which still continued to be rent with those sanguinary feuds that were bequeathed like a precious legacy from one generation to another.<sup>31</sup> In the autumn of the same year a treaty of peace was definitely adjusted between the plenipotentiaries of Castile and France, at St. Jean de Luz, in which it was stipulated, as a principal article, that Louis the Eleventh should disconnect himself from his alliance with Portugal, and give no further support to the pretensions of Joanna.<sup>32</sup>

<sup>29</sup> According to Faria y Sousa, John was walking along the shores of the Tagus, with the duke of Braganza, and the cardinal archbishop of Lisbon, when he received the unexpected tidings of his father's return to Portugal. On his inquiring of his attendants how he should receive him, "How but as your king and father?" was the reply; at which John, knitting his brow, skimmed a stone which he held in his hand, with much violence, across the water. The cardinal, observing this, whispered to the duke of Braganza, "I will take good care that that stone does not rebound on me." Soon after, he left Portugal for Rome, where he fixed his residence. The duke lost his life on the scaffold for imputed treason, soon after John's accession. — *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 416.

<sup>30</sup> Comines, *Mémoires*, liv. 5, chap. 7. — Faria y Sousa, *Europa*

*Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 116. — Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 20, cap. 25. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 27.

<sup>31</sup> This was the first meeting between father and son since the elevation of the latter to the Castilian throne. King John would not allow Ferdinand to kiss his hand; he chose to walk on his left; he attended him to his quarters, and, in short, during the whole twenty days of their conference, manifested towards his son all the deference which, as a parent, he was entitled to receive from him. This he did on the ground that Ferdinand, as king of Castile, represented the elder branch of Trastámara, while he represented only the younger. It will not be easy to meet with an instance of more punctilious etiquette, even in Spanish history. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 75.

<sup>32</sup> Salazar de Mendosa, *Orón*, del

Thus released from apprehension in this quarter, the sovereigns were enabled to give their undivided attention to the defence of the western borders. Isabella, accordingly, early in the ensuing winter, passed into Estremadura for the purpose of repelling the Portuguese, and still more of suppressing the insurrectionary movements of certain of her own subjects, who, encouraged by the vicinity of Portugal, carried on from their private fortresses a most desolating and predatory warfare over the circumjacent territory. Private mansions and farm-houses were pillaged and burnt to the ground, the cattle and crops swept away in their forays, the highways beset, so that all travelling was at an end, all communication cut off, and a rich and populous district converted at once into a desert. Isabella, supported by a body of regular troops and a detachment of the Holy Brotherhood, took her station at Truxillo, as a central position, whence she might operate on the various points with greatest facility. Her counsellors remonstrated against this exposure of her person in the very heart of the disaffected country; but she replied that "it was not for her to calculate perils or fatigues in her own cause, nor by an unseasonable timidity to dishearten her friends, with whom she was now resolved to remain until she had brought the war to a conclusion." She then gave immediate orders for laying siege at the same time to the fortified towns of Medellin, Merida, and Deleytosa.

At this juncture the infanta Doña Beatriz of Portugal, sister-in-law of King Alfonso, and maternal aunt of Isabella, touched with grief at the calamities in which she saw her country involved by the chimerical ambition of her brother, offered herself as the mediator of peace between the bel-ligerent nations. Agreeably to her proposal, an interview took place between her and Queen Isabella at the frontier town of Alcantara. As the conferences of the fair negoti-

Gran Cardenal, p. 162.—Zurita, Anales, MS., año 79.  
Anales, lib. 20, cap. 25.—Carbajal,

ators experienced none of the embarrassments usually incident to such deliberations, growing out of jealousy, distrust, and a mutual design to overreach, but were conducted in perfect good faith, and a sincere desire, on both sides, of establishing a cordial reconciliation, they resulted, after eight days' discussion, in a treaty of peace, with which the Portuguese infanta returned into her own country, in order to obtain the sanction of her royal brother. The articles contained in it, however, were too unpalatable to receive an immediate assent; and it was not until the expiration of six months, during which Isabella, far from relaxing, persevered with increased energy in her original plan of operations, that the treaty was formally ratified by the court of Lisbon (Sept. 24, 1479).<sup>33</sup>

It was stipulated in this compact that Alfonso should relinquish the title and armorial bearings which he had assumed as king of Castile; that he should resign his claims to the hand of Joanna, and no longer maintain her pretensions to the Castilian throne; that that lady should make the election within six months, either to quit Portugal for ever, or to remain there on the condition of wedding Don John, the infant son of Ferdinand and Isabella,<sup>34</sup> so soon as he should attain a marriageable age, or to retire into a convent and take the veil; that a general amnesty should be granted to all such Castilians as had supported Joanna's cause; and, finally, that the concord between the two nations should be cemented by the union of Alonso, son of the prince of Portugal, with the infanta Isabella of Castile.<sup>35</sup>

<sup>33</sup> Ruy de Pina, *Crón. d'al Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 206.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 166, 167.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 85, 89, 90.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii, pp. 420, 421.—Ferrerás, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii, p. 538.—Carbajal, *Anales, MS.*, año 79.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos, MS.*, cap. 28, 36, 37.

<sup>34</sup> Born the preceding year, June 28th, 1478. Carbajal, *Anales, MS.*, anno eodem.

<sup>35</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 168.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 91.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii, pp. 420, 421.—Ruy de Pina, *Crón. d'al Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 206.

Thus terminated, after a duration of four years and a half, the War of the Succession. It had fallen with peculiar fury on the border provinces of Leon and Estremadura, which, from their local position, had necessarily been kept in constant collision with the enemy. Its baneful effects were long visible there, not only in the general devastation and distress of the country, but in the moral disorganization which the licentious and predatory habits of the soldiers necessarily introduced among a simple peasantry. In a personal view, however, the war had terminated most triumphantly for Isabella, whose wise and vigorous administration, seconded by her husband's vigilance, had dispelled the storm which threatened to overwhelm her from abroad, and established her in undisturbed possession of the throne of her ancestors.

Joanna's interests alone were compromised, or rather sacrificed, by the treaty. She readily discerned in the provision for her marriage with an infant still in the cradle, only a flimsy veil intended to disguise the king of Portugal's desertion of her cause. Disgusted with a world in which she had hitherto experienced nothing but misfortune herself, and been the innocent cause of so much to others, she determined to renounce it for ever, and seek a shelter in the peaceful shades of the cloister. She accordingly entered the convent of Santa Clara at Coimbra, where, in the following year, she pronounced the irrevocable vows which divorce the unhappy subject of them for ever from her species. Two envoys from Castile, Ferdinand de Talavera, Isabella's confessor, and Dr. Diaz de Madrigal, one of her council, assisted at this affecting ceremony; and the reverend father, in a copious exhortation addressed to the youthful novice, assured her "that she had chosen the better part approved in the Evangelists; that, as spouse of the church, her chastity would be prolific of all spiritual delights; her subjection, liberty,—the only true liberty, partaking more of Heaven

than of earth. No kinsman," continued the disinterested preacher, "no true friend, or faithful counsellor, would divert you from so holy a purpose."<sup>36</sup>

Not long after this event, King Alfonso, penetrated with grief at the loss of his destined bride,—the "excellent lady," as the Portuguese continue to call her,—resolved to imitate her example, and exchange his royal robes for the humble habit of a Franciscan friar. He consequently made preparation for resigning his crown anew, and retiring to the monastery of Varatojo, on a bleak eminence near the Atlantic Ocean, when he suddenly fell ill, at Cintra, of a disorder which terminated his existence, on the 28th of August, 1481. Alfonso's fiery character, in which all the elements of love, chivalry, and religion were blended together, resembled that of some paladin of romance; as the chimerical enterprises in which he was perpetually engaged seem rather to belong to the age of knight-errantry than to the fifteenth century.<sup>37</sup>

In the beginning of the same year in which the pacification with Portugal secured to the sovereigns the undisputed possession of Castile, another crown devolved on

\* Ruy de Pina, *Chrón. d'el Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 20.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 421.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 92.—L. Marineo speaks of the *Señora muy excelente*, as an inmate of the cloister at the period in which he was writing, 1522 (fol. 168). Notwithstanding her "irrevocable vows," however, Joanna several times quitted the monastery, and maintained a royal state under the protection of the Portuguese monarchs, who occasionally threatened to revive her dormant claims to the prejudice of the Castilian sovereigns. She may be said, consequently, to have formed the pivot on which turned, during her whole life, the diplomatic relations between the courts of Castile and Portugal, and to have been a prin-

cipal cause of those frequent intermarriages between the royal families of the two countries by which Ferdinand and Isabella hoped to detach the Portuguese crown from her interests. Joanna affected a royal style and magnificence, and subscribed herself "I the Queen," to the last. She died in the palace at Lisbon, in 1530, in the 69th year of her age, having survived most of her ancient friends, suitors, and competitors.—Joanna's history subsequent to her taking the veil has been collected, with his usual precision, by Señor Clemencin, *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi., Ilust. 19.

\* Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 423.—Ruy de Pina, *Chrón. d'el Rey Alfonso V.*, cap. 212.

Ferdinand by the death of his father, the king of Aragon, who expired at Barcelona, on the 20th of January, 1479, in the eighty-third year of his age.<sup>38</sup> Such was his admirable constitution, that he retained not only his intellectual but his bodily vigour unimpaired to the last. His long life was consumed in civil faction or foreign wars; and his restless spirit seemed to take delight in these tumultuous scenes, as best fitted to develop its various energies. He combined, however, with this intrepid and even ferocious temper, an address in the management of affairs, which led him to rely, for the accomplishment of his purposes, much more on negotiation than on positive force. He may be said to have been one of the first monarchs who brought into vogue that refined science of the cabinet, which was so profoundly studied by statesmen at the close of the fifteenth century, and on which his own son Ferdinand furnished the most practical commentary.

The crown of Navarre, which he had so shamelessly usurped, devolved, on his decease, on his guilty daughter Leonora, countess of Foix, who, as we have before noticed, survived to enjoy it only three short weeks. Aragon, with its extensive dependencies, descended to Ferdinand. Thus the two crowns of Aragon and Castile, after a separation of more than four centuries, became indissolubly united, and the foundations were laid of the magnificent empire which was destined to overshadow every other European monarchy.

Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 79.  
—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS.,  
cap. 42.—Mariana, *Hist de Es-*

paña (ed. Valencia), tom. viii. p.  
204, nota. — Abarca, *Reyes de*  
*Aragon*, tom. ii, fol. 295.



## CHAPTER VI.

### INTERNAL ADMINISTRATION OF CASTILE.

1475—1482.

Schemes of Reform.—Holy Brotherhood.—Tumult at Segovia.—The Queen's Presence of Mind.—Severe Execution of Justice.—Royal Progress through Andalusia.—Reorganization of the Tribunals.—Castilian Jurisprudence.—Plans for reducing the Nobles.—Revocation of Grants.—Military Orders of Castile.—Masterships annexed to the Crown.—Ecclesiastical Usurpations resisted.—Restoration of Trade.—Prosperity of the Kingdom.

I HAVE deferred to the present chapter a consideration of the important changes introduced into the interior administration of Castile, after the accession of Isabella, in order to present a connected and comprehensive view of them to the reader without interrupting the progress of the military narrative. The subject may afford an agreeable relief to the dreary details of blood and battle with which we have been so long occupied, and which were rapidly converting the garden of Europe into a wilderness. Such details, indeed, seem to have the deepest interest for contemporary writers; but the eye of posterity, unclouded by personal interest or passion, turns with satisfaction from them to those cultivated arts which can make the wilderness to blossom as the rose.

If there be any being on earth that may be permitted to remind us of the Deity himself, it is the ruler of a mighty empire, who employs the high powers intrusted to him exclusively for the benefit of his people; who, endowed with intellectual gifts corresponding with his station, in an age of comparative barbarism, endeavours

to impart to his land the light of civilization which illumines his own bosom, and to create from the elements of discord the beautiful fabric of social order. Such was Isabella; and such the age in which she lived. And fortunate was it for Spain that her sceptre, at this crisis, was swayed by a sovereign possessed of sufficient wisdom to devise, and energy to execute, the most salutary schemes of reform, and thus to infuse a new principle of vitality into a government fast sinking into premature decrepitude.

The whole plan of reform introduced into the government by Ferdinand and Isabella, or more properly by the latter, to whom the internal administration of Castile was principally referred, was not fully unfolded until the completion of her reign. But the most important modifications were adopted previously to the war of Granada in 1482. These may be embraced under the following heads. I. The efficient administration of justice. II. The codification of the laws. III. The depression of the nobles. IV. The vindication of ecclesiastical rights belonging to the crown from the usurpation of the papal see. V. The regulation of trade. VI. The pre-eminence of the royal authority.

I. The administration of justice. In the dismal anarchy which prevailed in Henry the Fourth's reign, the authority of the monarch and of the royal judges had fallen into such contempt that the law was entirely without force. The cities afforded no better protection than the open country. Every man's hand seemed to be lifted against his neighbour. Property was plundered; persons were violated; the most holy sanctuaries profaned; and the numerous fortresses scattered throughout the country, instead of sheltering the weak, converted into dens of robbers.<sup>1</sup> Isabella saw no better way of checking this

<sup>1</sup> Among other examples, Pulgar mentions that of the alcaide of Castro-Nuño, Pedro de Mendana, who, from the strongholds in his

unbounded license than to direct against it that popular engine, the *Santa Hermandad*, or Holy Brotherhood, which had more than once shaken the Castilian monarchs on their throne.

The project for the reorganization of this institution was introduced into the cortes held, the year after Isabella's accession, at Madrigal, in 1476. It was carried into effect by the *junta* of deputies from the different cities of the kingdom, convened at Dueñas in the same year. The new institution differed essentially from the ancient *hermandades*, since, instead of being partial in its extent, it was designed to embrace the whole kingdom; and, instead of being directed, as had often been the case, against the crown itself, it was set in motion at the suggestion of the latter, and limited in its operation to the maintenance of public order. The crimes reserved for its jurisdiction were all violence or theft committed on the highways or in the open country, and in cities by such offenders as escaped into the country; house-breaking; rape; and resistance of justice. The specification of these crimes shows their frequency; and the reason for designating the open country, as the particular theatre for the operations of the hermandad, was the facility which criminals possessed there for eluding the pursuit of justice, especially under shelter of the strongholds or fortresses with which it was plentifully studded.

An annual contribution of eighteen thousand maravedis was assessed on every hundred *vecinos* or householders, for the equipment and maintenance of a horseman, whose duty it was to arrest offenders and enforce the sentence of

possession, committed such grievous devastations throughout the country, that the cities of Burgos, Avila, Salamanca, Segovia, Valladolid, Medina, and others in that quarter, were fain to pay him a tribute (black mail) to protect their territories from his rapacity. His

successful example was imitated by many other knightly freebooters of the period. (*Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 66.)—See also extracts cited by Saez from manuscript notices by contemporaries of Henry IV. *Monedas de Enrique IV.*, pp. 1, 2.

the law. On the flight of a criminal, the tocsins of the villages through which he was supposed to have passed were sounded, and the *quadrilleros* or officers of the brotherhood, stationed on the different points, took up the pursuit with such promptness as left little chance of escape. A court of two *alcaldes* was established in every town containing thirty families, for the trial of all crimes within the jurisdiction of the *hermandad*; and an appeal lay from them in specified cases to a supreme council. A general *junta*, composed of deputies from the cities throughout the kingdom, was annually convened for the regulation of affairs, and their instructions were transmitted to provincial *juntas*, who superintended the execution of them. The laws enacted at different times in these assemblies were compiled into a code, under the sanction of the *junta* general, at Tordelaguna, in 1485.<sup>2</sup> The penalties for theft, which are literally written in blood, are specified in this code with singular precision. The most petty larceny was punished with stripes, the loss of a member, or of life itself; and the law was administered with an unsparing rigour, which nothing but the extreme necessity of the case could justify. Capital executions were conducted by shooting the criminal with arrows. The enactment relating to this provides that "the convict shall receive the sacrament like a Catholic Christian, and after that be executed as speedily as possible, in order that his soul may pass the more securely."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>2</sup> The *Quaderno* of the laws of the *hermandad* has now become very rare. That in my possession was printed at Burgos, in 1527. It has since been incorporated, with considerable extension, into the *Recopilacion* of Philip II.

<sup>3</sup> *Quaderno de las Leyes nuevas de la Hermandad* (Burgos, 1527), leyes 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 8, 16, 20, 36, 37.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 51. — L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 160, ed. 1539. —

*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Ilust. 4.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 76.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*, fol. 36.—By one of the laws, the inhabitants of such seignorial towns as refused to pay the contributions of the *hermandad* were excluded from its benefits, as well as from traffic with, and even the power of recovering their debts from, other natives of the kingdom. Ley 33.

Notwithstanding the popular constitution of the hermandad, and the obvious advantages attending its introduction at this juncture, it experienced so decided an opposition from the nobility, who discerned the check it was likely to impose on their authority, that it required all the queen's address and perseverance to effect its general adoption. The constable de Haro, however, a nobleman of great weight from his personal character, and the most extensive landed proprietor in the north, was at length prevailed on to introduce it among his vassals. His example was gradually followed by others of the same rank ; and when the city of Seville and the great lords of Andalusia had consented to receive it, it speedily became established throughout the kingdom. Thus a standing body of troops, two thousand in number, thoroughly equipped and mounted, was placed at the disposal of the crown, to enforce the law and suppress domestic insurrection. The supreme junta, which regulated the counsels of the hermandad, constituted moreover a sort of inferior cortes, relieving the exigencies of government, as we shall see hereafter, on more than one occasion, by important supplies of men and money. By the activity of this new military police, the country was, in the course of a few years, cleared of its swarms of banditti, as well as of the robber chieftains, whose strength had enabled them to defy the law. The ministers of justice found a sure protection in the independent discharge of their duties ; and the blessings of personal security and social order, so long estranged from the nation, were again restored to it.

The important benefits resulting from the institution of the hermandad secured its confirmation by successive cortes, for the period of twenty-two years, in spite of the repeated opposition of the aristocracy. At length, in 1498, the objects for which it was established having been completely obtained, it was deemed advisable to relieve the nation from the heavy charges which its maintenance

imposed. The great salaried officers were dismissed; a few subordinate functionaries were retained for the administration of justice, over whom the regular courts of criminal law possessed appellate jurisdiction; and the magnificent apparatus of the *Santa Hermandad*, stripped of all but the terrors of its name, dwindled into an ordinary police, such as it has existed, with various modifications of form, down to the present century.<sup>4</sup>

Isabella was so intent on the prosecution of her schemes of reform, that, even in the minuter details, she frequently superintended the execution of them herself. For this she was admirably fitted by her personal address, and presence of mind in danger, and by the influence which a conviction of her integrity gave her over the minds of the people. A remarkable exemplification of this occurred, the year but one after her coronation, at Segovia. The inhabitants, secretly instigated by the bishop of that place and some of the principal citizens, rose against Cabrera, marquis of Moya, to whom the government of the city had been intrusted, and who had made himself generally unpopular by his strict discipline. They even proceeded so far as to obtain possession of the outworks of the citadel, and to compel the deputy of the *alcayde*, who was himself absent, to take shelter, together with the Princess Isabella, then the only daughter of the sovereigns, in the interior defences, where they were rigorously blockaded.

The queen, on receiving tidings of the event at Tordesillas, mounted her horse and proceeded with all possible despatch towards Segovia, attended by Cardinal Mendoza, the count of Benavente, and a few others of her court. At some distance from the city, she was met by a deputation of the inhabitants, requesting her to leave behind the count

<sup>4</sup> Recopilacion de las Leyes (Madrid, 1640), lib. 8, tit. 13, ley 44.—Zuñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 379.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 61.—*Mem. de la Acad. de*

*Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 6.—Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decad.*, fol. 37, 38.—*Las Pragmáticas del Reyno* (Sevilla, 1520), fol. 85.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 160.

of Benavente and the marchioness of Moya (the former of whom as the intimate friend, and the latter as the wife, of the alcaide, were peculiarly obnoxious to the citizens), or they could not answer for the consequences. Isabella haughtily replied that "she was queen of Castile; that the city was hers, moreover, by right of inheritance; and that she was not used to receive conditions from rebellious subjects." Then, pressing forward with her little retinue through one of the gates, which remained in the hands of her friends, she effected her entrance into the citadel.

The populace, in the mean while, assembling in greater numbers than before, continued to show the most hostile dispositions, calling out, "Death to the alcaide! Attack the castle!" Isabella's attendants, terrified at the tumult, and at the preparations which the people were making to put their menaces into execution, besought their mistress to cause the gates to be secured more strongly, as the only mode of defence against the infuriated mob. But, instead of listening to their counsel, she bade them remain quietly in the apartment, and descended herself into the court-yard, where she ordered the portals to be thrown open for the admission of the people. She stationed herself at the further extremity of the area, and, as the populace poured in, calmly demanded the cause of the insurrection. "Tell me," said she, "what are your grievances, and I will do all in my power to redress them; for I am sure that what is for your interest must be also for mine, and for that of the whole city." The insurgents, abashed by the unexpected presence of their sovereign, as well as by her cool and dignified demeanour, replied that all they desired was the removal of Cabrera from the government of the city. "He is deposed already," answered the queen, "and you have my authority to turn out such of his officers as are still in the castle, which I shall intrust to one of my own servants, on whom I can rely." The people, pacified by these

assurances, shouted, "Long live the queen!" and eagerly hastened to obey her mandates.

After thus turning aside the edge of popular fury, Isabella proceeded with her retinue to the royal residence in the city, attended by the fickle multitude, whom she again addressed on arriving there, admonishing them to return to their vocations, as this was no time for calm inquiry, and promising that, if they would send three or four of their number to her on the morrow to report the extent of their grievances, she would examine into the affair, and render justice to all parties. The mob accordingly dispersed, and the queen, after a candid examination, having ascertained the groundlessness or gross exaggeration of the charges against Cabrera, and traced the source of the conspiracy to the jealousy of the bishop of Segovia and his associates, reinstated the deposed alcaide in the full possession of his dignities, which his enemies, either convinced of the altered dispositions of the people, or believing that the favourable moment for resistance had escaped, made no further attempts to disturb. Thus by a happy presence of mind, an affair which threatened, at its outset, disastrous consequences, was settled without bloodshed, or compromise of the royal dignity.<sup>5</sup>

In the summer of the following year, 1477, Isabella resolved to pay a visit to Estremadura and Andalusia, for the purpose of composing the dissensions, and introducing a more efficient police, in these unhappy provinces; which, from their proximity to the stormy frontier of Portugal, as well as from the feuds between the great houses of Guzman

<sup>5</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 76. —Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 59. —Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. p. 477. —Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decad.*, fol. 41, 42. —Gonzalo de Oviedo lavishes many encomiums on Cabrera, for "his generous qualities, his singular prudence in government, and his

solicitude for his vassals, whom he inspired with the deepest attachment." (*Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quino. 1, dial. 23.) The best panegyric on his character is the unshaken confidence which his royal mistress reposed in him to the day of her death.



and Ponce de Leon, were plunged in the most frightful anarchy. Cardinal Mendoza and her other ministers remonstrated against this imprudent exposure of her person, where it was so little likely to be respected. But she replied, "it was true there were dangers and inconveniences to be encountered; but her fate was in God's hands, and she felt a confidence that He would guide to a prosperous issue such designs as were righteous in themselves and resolutely conducted."

Isabella experienced the most loyal and magnificent reception from the inhabitants of Seville, where she established her head-quarters. The first days of her residence there were consumed in *fêtes*, tourneys, tilts of reeds, and other exercises of the Castilian chivalry. After this she devoted her whole time to the great purpose of her visit, the reformation of abuses. She held her court in the saloon of the alcazar, or royal castle, where she revived the ancient practice of the Castilian sovereigns, of presiding in person over the administration of justice. Every Friday, she took her seat in her chair of state, on an elevated platform covered with cloth of gold, and surrounded by her council, together with the subordinate functionaries, and the insignia of a court of justice. The members of her privy council, and of the high court of criminal law, sat in their official capacity every day in the week, and the queen herself received such suits as were referred to her adjudication, saving the parties the usual expense and procrastination of justice.

By the extraordinary despatch of the queen and her ministers, during the two months that she resided in the city, a vast number of civil and criminal causes were disposed of, a large amount of plundered property was restored to its lawful owners, and so many offenders were brought to condign punishment, that no less than four thousand suspected persons, it is computed, terrified by the prospect of speedy retribution for their crimes, escaped into the

neighbouring kingdoms of Portugal and Granada. The worthy burghers of Seville, alarmed at this rapid depopulation of the city, sent a deputation to the queen, to deprecate her anger, and to represent that faction had been so busy of late years in their unhappy town, that there was scarcely a family to be found in it some of whose members were not more or less involved in the guilt. Isabella, who was naturally of a benign disposition, considering that enough had probably been done to strike a salutary terror into the remaining delinquents, was willing to temper justice with mercy, and accordingly granted an amnesty for all past offences, save heresy, on the condition, however, of a general restitution of such property as had been unlawfully seized and retained during the period of anarchy.<sup>6</sup>

But Isabella became convinced that all arrangements for establishing permanent tranquillity in Seville would be ineffectual so long as the feud continued between the great families of Guzman and Ponce de Leon. The duke of Medina Sidonia and the marquis of Cadiz, the heads of these houses, had possessed themselves of the royal towns and fortresses, as well as of those which, belonging to the city, were scattered over its circumjacent territory, where, as has been previously stated, they carried on war against each other, like independent potentates. The former of these grandees had been the loyal supporter of Isabella in the War of the Succession. The marquis of Cadiz, on the other hand, connected by marriage with the house of Pacheco, had cautiously withheld his allegiance, although he had not testified his hostility by any overt act. While the queen was hesitating as to the course she should pursue in reference to the marquis, who still kept himself aloof in his fortified castle of Xerez, he suddenly presented himself

<sup>6</sup> Zufiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 381.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 65, 70, 71. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 29. —

Carbajal, *Anales*, año 77.—L. Marinero, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 162; who says no less than 8000 guilty fled from Seville and Cordova.

by night at her residence in Seville, accompanied only by two or three attendants. He took this step, doubtless, from the conviction that the Portuguese faction had nothing further to hope in a kingdom where Isabella reigned not only by the fortune of war, but by the affections of the people; and he now eagerly proffered his allegiance to her, excusing his previous conduct as he best could. The queen was too well satisfied with the submission, however tardy, of this formidable vassal, to call him to severe account for past delinquencies. She exacted from him, however, the full restitution of such domains and fortresses as he had filched from the crown and from the city of Seville, on condition of similar concessions by his rival, the duke of Medina Sidonia. She next attempted to establish a reconciliation between these belligerent grandees; but, aware that, however pacific might be their demonstrations for the present, there could be little hope of permanently allaying the inherited feuds of a century whilst the neighbourhood of the parties to each other must necessarily multiply fresh causes of disgust, she caused them to withdraw from Seville to their estates in the country, and by this expedient succeeded in extinguishing the flame of discord.<sup>7</sup>

In the following year, 1478, Isabella accompanied her husband in a tour through Andalusia, for the immediate purpose of reconnoitring the coast. In the course of this progress, they were splendidly entertained by the duke and marquis at their patrimonial estates. They afterwards proceeded to Cordova, where they adopted a similar policy to that pursued at Seville, compelling the count de Cabra, connected with the blood royal, and Alonso de Aguilar, lord of Montilla, whose factions had long desolated this fair city, to withdraw into the country, and restore the

<sup>7</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 29.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 283.—Zúñiga, Annales de Sevilla, p. 382.—Lebrija, Rerum

Gestarum Decades, lib. 7. — L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, ubi supra.—Garibay, Compendio, lib. 18, cap. 11.

immense possessions which they had usurped both from the municipality and the crown.<sup>8</sup>

One example among others may be mentioned, of the rectitude and severe impartiality with which Isabella administered justice, that occurred in the case of a wealthy Galician knight, named Alvaro Yañez de Lugo. This person, being convicted of a capital offence, attended with the most aggravating circumstances, sought to obtain a commutation of his punishment by the payment of forty thousand *doblas* of gold to the queen, a sum exceeding at that time the annual rents of the crown. Some of Isabella's counsellors would have persuaded her to accept the donative and appropriate it to the pious purposes of the Moorish war. But, far from being blinded by their sophistry, she suffered the law to take its course, and, in order to place her conduct above every suspicion of a mercenary motive, allowed his estates, which might legally have been confiscated to the crown, to descend to his natural heirs. Nothing contributed more to re-establish the supremacy of law in this reign than the certainty of its execution, without respect to wealth or rank; for the insubordination prevalent throughout Castile was chiefly imputable to persons of this description, who, if they failed to defeat justice by force, were sure of doing so by the corruption of its ministers.<sup>9</sup>

Ferdinand and Isabella employed the same vigorous measures in the other parts of their dominions, which had proved so successful in Andalusia, for the extirpation of the hordes of banditti, and of the robber-knights, who differed in no respect from the former but in their superior power. In Galicia alone, fifty fortresses, the strongholds

<sup>8</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 30.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, part. 2, cap. 78.

<sup>9</sup> "Era muy inclinada," says Pulgar, "á facer justicia, tanto que le era imputado seguir mas la

via de rigor que de la piedad; y esto facia por remediar á la gran corrupcion de crimines que falló en el Reyno quando subcedió en él." Reyes Católicos, p. 37.

of tyranny, were razed to the ground, and fifteen hundred malefactors, it was computed, were compelled to fly the kingdom. "The wretched inhabitants of the mountains," says a writer of that age, "who had long since despaired of justice, blessed God for their deliverance, as it were, from a deplorable captivity."<sup>10</sup>

While the sovereigns were thus personally occupied with the suppression of domestic discord, and the establishment of an efficient police, they were not inattentive to the higher tribunals, to whose keeping, chiefly, were intrusted the personal rights and property of the subject. They reorganized the royal or privy council, whose powers, although, as has been noticed in the Introduction, principally of an administrative nature, had been gradually encroaching on those of the superior courts of law. During the last century, this body had consisted of prelates, knights, and lawyers, whose numbers and relative proportions had varied in different times. The right of the great ecclesiastics and nobles to a seat in it was, indeed, recognized, but the transaction of business was reserved for the counsellors specially appointed.<sup>11</sup> Much the larger proportion of these, by the new arrangement, was made up of jurists, whose professional education and experience eminently qualified them for the station. The specific duties and interior management of the council were prescribed with sufficient accuracy. Its authority as a court of justice was carefully limited; but, as it was charged with the principal executive duties of government, it was consulted in all important transactions by the sovereigns, who paid great deference to its opinions, and very frequently assisted at its deliberations.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>10</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, part. 2, cap. 97, 98.—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 162.

<sup>11</sup> Ordenanças Reales de Castilla (Burgos, 1528), lib. 2, tit. 3, ley 31.—This constitutional—though, as it would seem, impotent—right of

the nobility is noticed by Sempere (Hist. des Cortès, pp. 123, 129.) It should not have escaped Marina.

<sup>12</sup> Lib. 2, tit. 3, of the Ordenanças Reales is devoted to the royal council. The number of the members was limited to one prelate, as

No change was made in the high criminal court of *alcaldes de corte*, except in its forms of proceeding. But the royal audience, or chancery, the supreme and final court of appeal in civil causes, was entirely remodelled. The place of its sittings, before indeterminate, and consequently occasioning much trouble and cost to the litigants, was fixed at Valladolid. Laws were passed to protect the tribunal from the interference of the crown, and the queen was careful to fill the bench with magistrates whose wisdom and integrity would afford the best guarantee for a faithful interpretation of the law.<sup>13</sup>

In the cortes of Madrigal (1476), and still more in the celebrated one of Toledo (1480), many excellent provisions were made for the equitable administration of justice, as well as for regulating the tribunals. The judges were to ascertain every week, either by personal inspection or

president, three knights, and eight or nine jurists. (Prólogo.) The sessions were to be held every day, in the palace. (Leyes 1, 2.) They were instructed to refer to the other tribunals all matters not strictly coming within their own jurisdiction. (Ley 4.) Their acts, in all cases except those specially reserved, were to have the force of law without the royal signature. (Leyes 23, 24.) See also Los Doctores Asso y Manuel, *Instituciones del Derecho civil de Castilla* (Madrid, 1792), Introd. p. 111; and Santiago Agustín Riol, *Informe, apud Semanario erudito* (Madrid, 1788), tom. iii. p. 114, who is mistaken in stating the number of jurists in the council, at this time, at sixteen,—a change which did not take place till Philip II.'s reign. (Recop. de las Leyes, lib. 2, tit. 4, ley 1.)

Marina denies that the council could constitutionally exercise any judicial authority, at least in suits between private parties, and quotes a passage from Pulgar, showing that its usurpations in this way were restrained by Ferdinand and

Isabella. (Teoría, part. 2, cap. 29.) Powers of this nature, however, to a considerable extent, appear to have been conceded to it by more than one statute under this reign. See Recop. de las Leyes (lib. 2, tit. 4, leyes 20, 22, and tit. 5, ley 12), and the unqualified testimony of Riol, *Informe, apud Semanario erudito, ubi supra*.

<sup>13</sup> Ordenanzas Reales, lib. 2, tit. 4.—Marina, *Teoría de las Cortes*, part. 2, cap. 25.

By one of the statutes (ley 4), the commission of the judges, which before extended to life, or a long period, was abridged to one year. This important innovation was made at the earnest and repeated remonstrance of cortes, who traced the remissness and corruption, too frequent of late in the court, to the circumstance that its decisions were not liable to be reviewed during life. (Teoría, *ubi supra*.) The legislature probably mistook the true cause of the evil. Few will doubt, at any rate, that the remedy proposed must have been fraught with far greater.

report, the condition of the prisons, the number of the prisoners, and the nature of the offences for which they were confined. They were required to bring them to a speedy trial, and afford every facility for their defence. An attorney was provided at the public expense, under the title of "advocate for the poor," whose duty it was to defend the suits of such as were unable to maintain them at their own cost. Severe penalties were enacted against venality in the judges, a gross evil under the preceding reigns, as well as against such counsel as took exorbitant fees, or even maintained actions that were manifestly unjust. Finally, commissioners were appointed to inspect and make report of the proceedings of municipal and other inferior courts throughout the kingdom.<sup>14</sup>

The sovereigns testified their respect for the law by reviving the ancient but obsolete practice of presiding personally in the tribunals, at least once a week. "I well remember," says one of their court, "to have seen the queen, together with the Catholic king, her husband, sitting in judgment in the alcazar of Madrid, every Friday, dispensing justice to all such, great and small, as came to demand it. This was indeed the golden age of justice," continues the enthusiastic writer, "and since our sainted mistress has been taken from us, it has been more difficult, and far more costly, to transact business with a stripling of a secretary, than it was with the queen and all her ministers."<sup>15</sup>

By the modifications then introduced, the basis was laid of the judiciary system, such as it has been perpetuated to the present age. The law acquired an authority which, in the language of a Spanish writer,

<sup>14</sup> Ordenanzas Reales, lib. 2, tit. 1, 3, 4, 15, 16, 17, 19; lib. 3, tit. 2. — Recop. de las Leyes, lib. 2, tit. 4, 5, 16. — Pulgar, Reyes Católicos part. 2, cap. 94.

<sup>15</sup> Oviedo, Quincuagenas, MS. By one of the statutes of the cortes

of Toledo, in 1480, the king was required to take his seat in the council every Friday. (Ordenanzas Reales, lib. 2, tit. 3, ley 32.) It was not so new for the Castilians to have good laws, as for their monarchs to observe them.

"caused a decree, signed by two or three judges, to be more respected since that time than an army before."<sup>16</sup> But perhaps the results of this improved administration cannot be better conveyed than in the words of an eye-witness. "Whereas," says Pulgar, "the kingdom was previously filled with banditti and malefactors of every description, who committed the most diabolical excesses, in open contempt of law, there was now such terror impressed on the hearts of all, that no one dared to lift his arm against another, or even to assail him with contumelious or discourteous language. The knight and the squire, who had before oppressed the labourer, were intimidated by the fear of that justice which was sure to be executed on them; the roads were swept of the banditti; the fortresses, the strongholds of violence, were thrown open, and the whole nation, restored to tranquillity and order, sought no other redress than that afforded by the operation of the law."<sup>17</sup>

II. Codification of the laws. Whatever reforms might have been introduced into the Castilian judicatures, they would have been of little avail without a corresponding improvement in the system of jurisprudence by which their decisions were to be regulated. This was made up of the Visigothic code, as the basis, the *fueros* of the Castilian princes, as far back as the eleventh century, and the "Siete Partidas," the famous compilation of Alfonso the Tenth, digested chiefly from maxims of the civil law.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>16</sup> Sempere, Hist. des Cortès, p. 263.

<sup>17</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 167.—See the strong language, also, of Peter Martyr, another contemporary witness of the beneficial changes in the government. *Opus Epistolarum* (Amstelodami, 1670), ep. 31.

<sup>18</sup> Prieto y Sotelo, *Historia del Derecho real de España* (Madrid, 1738), lib. 3, cap. 16—21.—Marina has made an elaborate commentary

on Alfonso's celebrated code, in his *Ensayo histórico-crítico sobre la antigua Legislación de Castilla* (Madrid, 1808), pp. 269 et seq. The English reader will find a more succinct analysis in Dr. Dunham's *History of Spain and Portugal* (London, 1832), in Lardner's *Cyclopædia*, vol. iv. pp. 121—150. The latter has given a more exact and, at the same time, extended view of the early Castilian legislation, probably, than is to be found,



The deficiencies of these ancient codes had been gradually supplied by such an accumulation of statutes and ordinances as rendered the legislation of Castile in the highest degree complex, and often contradictory. The embarrassment resulting from this occasioned, as may be imagined, much tardiness, as well as uncertainty, in the decisions of the courts, who, despairing of reconciling the discrepancies in their own law, governed themselves almost exclusively by the Roman, so much less accommodated, as it was, than their own, to the genius of the national institutions, as well as to the principles of freedom.<sup>19</sup>

The nation had long felt the pressure of these evils, and made attempts to redress them in repeated cortes. But every effort proved unavailing during the stormy or imbecile reigns of the princes of Trastámara. At length, the subject having been resumed in the cortes of Toledo, in 1480, Dr. Alfonso Diaz de Montalvo, whose professional science had been matured under the reigns of three successive sovereigns, was charged with the commission of revising the laws of Castile, and of compiling a code which should be of general application throughout the kingdom.

This laborious undertaking was accomplished in little more than four years; and his work, which subsequently bore the title of *Ordenanças Reales*, was published, or, as the privilege expresses it, "written with types," *escrito de letra de molde*, at Huete, in the beginning of 1485. It was one of the first works, therefore, which received the honours of the press in Spain; and surely none could

in the same compass, in any of the Peninsular writers.

<sup>19</sup> Marina (in his *Ensayo histórico-crítico*, p. 388) quotes a popular satire of the fifteenth century, directed, with considerable humour, against these abuses, which lead the writer in the last stanza to envy even the summary style of Mahometan justice:

"En tierra de Moros un solo alcalde  
Libra lo civil e lo creminal,  
E todo el día se esta de valde  
Por la justicia andar muy igual:  
Allí non es Azo, nin es Decretal,  
Nin es Roberto, nin la Clementina,  
Salvo discrecion e buena doctrina,  
La qual muestra a todos vevir  
communal."—p. 389.

have been found, at that period, more deserving of them. It went through repeated editions in the course of that and the commencement of the following century.<sup>20</sup> It was admitted as paramount authority throughout Castile; and, although the many innovations which were introduced in that age of reform required the addition of two subsidiary codes in the latter years of Isabella, the "Ordenanças" of Montalvo continued to be the guide of the tribunals down to the time of Philip the Second, and may be said to have suggested the idea, as indeed it was the basis, of the comprehensive compilation, "Nueva Recopilacion," which has since formed the law of the Spanish monarchy.<sup>21</sup>

III. Depression of the nobles. In the course of the preceding chapters, we have seen the extent of the privileges constitutionally enjoyed by the aristocracy, as well as the enormous height to which they had swollen under the profuse reigns of John the Second and Henry the Fourth. This was such, at the accession of Ferdinand and Isabella, as to disturb the balance of the constitution, and to give serious cause of apprehension both to the monarch and the people. The nobles had introduced themselves into every great post of profit or authority. They had ravished from the crown the estates on which it depended for its maintenance as well as dignity. They coined money in their own mints, like sovereign princes; and they covered the

<sup>20</sup> Mendez enumerates no less than five editions of this code, by 1500; a sufficient evidence of its authority, and general reception throughout Castile. *Typographia Española*, pp. 203, 261, 270.

<sup>21</sup> *Ordenanças Reales*, Prólogo.—*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Ilust. 9.—*Marina*, *Ensayo histórico-crítico*, pp. 390 et seq.—Mendez, *Typographia Española*, p. 261.—The authors of the three last-mentioned works abundantly disprove Asso y Manuel's insinuation, that Montalvo's code was the fruit of

his private study, without any commission for it, and that it gradually usurped an authority which it had not in its origin. (*Discurso preliminar al Ord. de Alcalá*.) The injustice of the last remark, indeed, is apparent from the positive declaration of Bernaldez: "Los Reyes mandaron tener en todas las ciudades, villas é lugares el libro de Montalvo, é por él determinar todas las cosas de justicia para cortar los pléitos." *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 42.

country with their fortified castles, whence they defied the law, and desolated the unhappy land with interminable feuds. It was obviously necessary for the new sovereigns to proceed with the greatest caution against this powerful and jealous body, and, above all, to attempt no measure of importance in which they would not be supported by the hearty co-operation of the nation.

The first measure which may be said to have clearly developed their policy was the organization of the *hermandad*, which, although ostensibly directed against offenders of a more humble description, was made to bear indirectly upon the nobility, whom it kept in awe by the number and discipline of its forces, and the promptness with which it could assemble them on the most remote points of the kingdom; while its rights of jurisdiction tended materially to abridge those of the seignorial tribunals. It was accordingly resisted with the greatest pertinacity by the aristocracy; although, as we have seen, the resolution of the queen, supported by the constancy of the commons, enabled her to triumph over all opposition, until the great objects of the institution were accomplished.

Another measure, which insensibly operated to the depression of the nobility, was making official preferment depend less exclusively on rank, and much more on personal merit, than before. "Since the hope of *guerdon*," says one of the statutes enacted at Toledo, "is the spur to just and honourable actions, when men perceive that offices of trust are not to descend by inheritance, but to be conferred on merit, they will strive to excel in virtue, that they may attain its reward."<sup>22</sup> The sovereigns, instead of confining themselves to the *grandees*, frequently advanced persons of humble origin, and especially those learned in the law, to the most responsible stations, consulting them, and paying great deference to their opinions, on all matters of importance. The nobles, finding that rank was no

<sup>22</sup> *Ordenanças Reales*, lib. 7, tit. 2, ley 13.

longer the sole, or indeed the necessary, avenue to promotion, sought to secure it by attention to more liberal studies, in which they were greatly encouraged by Isabella, who admitted their children into her palace, where they were reared under her own eye.<sup>23</sup>

But the boldest assaults on the power of the aristocracy were made in the famous cortes of Toledo, in 1480, which Carbajal enthusiastically styles "*cosa divina para reformation y remedio de las desordenes pasadas.*"<sup>24</sup> The first object of its attention was the condition of the exchequer, which Henry the Fourth had so exhausted by his reckless prodigality that the clear annual revenue amounted to no more than thirty thousand ducats, a sum much inferior to that enjoyed by many private individuals; so that, stripped of his patrimony, it at last came to be said, he was "king only of the highways." Such had been the royal necessities that blank certificates of annuities assigned on the public rents were hawked about the market, and sold at such a depreciated rate that the price of an annuity did not exceed the amount of one year's income. The commons saw with alarm the weight of the burdens which must devolve on them for the maintenance of the crown thus impoverished in its resources; and they resolved to meet the difficulty by advising at once a resumption of the grants unconstitutionally made during the latter half of Henry the Fourth's reign, and the commencement of the present.<sup>25</sup> This measure, however violent and repugnant to good faith it may appear at the present time, seems then to have admitted of justification, as far as the nation

<sup>23</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 44.—Sempere notices this feature of the royal policy. *Hist. des Cortès*, chap. 24.

<sup>24</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS. año 80.

<sup>25</sup> See the emphatic language, on this and other grievances, of the Castilian commons, in their memorial to the sovereigns, *Apendice*,

No. 10, of Clemencin's valuable compilation. The commons had pressed the measure, as one of the last necessity to the crown, as early as the cortes of Madrigal, in 1476. The reader will find the whole petition extracted by Marina, *Teoría*, tom. ii. cap. 6.

was concerned; since such alienation of the public revenue was in itself illegal, and contrary to the coronation oath of the sovereign; and those who accepted his obligations held them subject to the liability of their revocation, which had frequently occurred under the preceding reigns.

As the intended measure involved the interests of most of the considerable proprietors in the kingdom, who had thriven on the necessities of the crown, it was deemed proper to require the attendance of the nobility and great ecclesiastics in cortes by a special summons, which it seems had been previously omitted. Thus convened, the legislature appears, with great unanimity, and much to the credit of those most deeply affected by it, to have acquiesced in the proposed resumption of the grants, as a measure of absolute necessity. The only difficulty was to settle the principles on which the retrenchment might be most equitably made, with reference to creditors, whose claims rested on a great variety of grounds. The plan suggested by Cardinal Mendoza seems to have been partially adopted. It was decided that all whose pensions had been conferred without any corresponding services on their part should forfeit them entirely; that those who had purchased annuities should return their certificates on a reimbursement of the price paid for them; and that the remaining creditors, who composed the largest class, should retain such a proportion only of their pensions as might be judged commensurate with their services to the state.<sup>26</sup>

By this important reduction, the final adjustment and execution of which were intrusted to Fernando de Talavera, the queen's confessor, a man of austere probity, the gross amount of thirty millions of maravedis, a sum equal to three-fourths of the whole revenue on Isabella's acces-

<sup>26</sup> Salazar de Mendoza, Crón. del Gran Cardenal, cap. 51.—Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 5.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, part. 2, cap. 95.—Ordenanzas Reales, lib.

6, tit. 4, ley 26;—incorporated also into the Recopilacion of Philip II., lib. 5, tit. 10, cap. 17. See also leyes 3 and 15.

sion, was annually saved to the crown. The retrenchment was conducted with such strict impartiality that the most confidential servants of the queen, and the relatives of her husband, were among those who suffered the most severely.<sup>27</sup> It is worthy of remark that no diminution whatever was made of the stipends settled on literary and charitable establishments. It may be also added that Isabella appropriated the first-fruits of this measure, by distributing the sum of twenty millions of maravedis among the widows and orphans of those loyalists who had fallen in the War of the Succession.<sup>28</sup> This resumption of grants may be considered as the basis of those economical reforms which, without oppression to the subject, augmented the public revenue more than twelvefold during this auspicious reign.<sup>29</sup>

Several other acts were passed by the same cortes, which had a more exclusive bearing on the nobility. They were prohibited from quartering the royal arms on their escutcheons, from being attended by a mace-bearer and a body-guard, from imitating the regal style of address in their written correspondence, and other insignia of royalty which they had arrogantly assumed. They were forbidden to erect new fortresses, and we have already seen the activity of the queen in procuring the demolition or restitution of the old. They were expressly restrained from duels, an inveterate source of mischief, for engaging

<sup>27</sup> Admiral Enriquez, for instance, resigned 240,000 maravedis of his annual income;—the duke of Alva, 575,000;—the duke of Medina Sidonia, 180,000.—The loyal family of the Mendozas were also great losers, but none forfeited so much as the overgrown favourite of Henry IV., Beltran de la Cueva, duke of Albuquerque, who had uniformly supported the royal cause, and whose retrenchment amounted to 1,400,000 maravedis of yearly rent. See the scale of reduction given at length by Señor

Clemencin, in *Mem. de la Acad.*, tom. vi. loc. cit.

<sup>28</sup> “No monarch,” said the high-minded queen, “should consent to alienate his demesnes; since the loss of revenue necessarily deprives him of the best means of rewarding the attachment of his friends, and of making himself feared by his enemies.” Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 1, cap. 4.

<sup>29</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.—*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. loc. cit.

in which the parties, both principals and seconds, were subjected to the penalties of treason. Isabella evinced her determination to enforce this law on the highest offenders, by imprisoning, soon after its enactment, the counts of Luna and Valencia for exchanging a cartel of defiance, until the point at issue should be settled by the regular course of justice.<sup>30</sup>

It is true the haughty nobility of Castile winced more than once at finding themselves so tightly curbed by their new masters. On one occasion, a number of the principal grandees, with the duke of Infantado at their head, addressed a letter of remonstrance to the king and queen, requiring them to abolish the hermandad, as an institution burdensome to the nation, deprecating the slight degree of confidence which their highnesses reposed in their order, and requesting that four of their number might be selected to form a council for the general direction of affairs of state, by whose advice the king and queen should be governed in all matters of importance, as in the time of Henry the Fourth.

Ferdinand and Isabella received this unseasonable remonstrance with great indignation, and returned an answer couched in the haughtiest terms. "The hermandad," they said, "is an institution most salutary to the nation, and is approved by it as such. It is our province to determine who are best entitled to preferment, and to make merit the standard of it. You may follow the court, or retire to your estates, as you think best; but, so long as Heaven permits us to retain the

<sup>30</sup> Ordenanças Reales, lib. 2, tit. 1, ley 2; lib. 4, tit. 9, ley 11.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, part. 2, cap. 96, 101.—Recop. de las Leyes, lib. 8, tit. 8, ley 10 et al.—These affairs were conducted in the true spirit of knight-errantry. Oviedo mentions one, in which two young men of the noble houses of Velasco

and Ponce de Leon agreed to fight on horseback, with sharp spears (*puntas de diamantes*), in doublet and hose, without defensive armour of any kind. The place appointed for the combat was a narrow bridge across the Xarama, three leagues from Madrid. Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 23.

rank with which we have been intrusted, we shall take care not to imitate the example of Henry the Fourth, in becoming a tool in the hands of our nobility." The discontented lords, who had carried so high a hand under the preceding imbecile reign, feeling the weight of an authority which rested on the affections of the people, were so disconcerted by the rebuke, that they made no attempt to rally, but condescended to make their peace separately as they could, by the most ample acknowledgments.<sup>81</sup>

An example of the impartiality as well as spirit with which Isabella asserted the dignity of the crown is worth recording. During her husband's absence in Aragon in the spring of 1481, a quarrel occurred, in the antechamber of the palace at Valladolid, between two young noblemen, Ramiro Nuñez de Guzman, lord of Toral, and Frederick Henriquez, son of the admiral of Castile, King Ferdinand's uncle. The queen, on receiving intelligence of it, granted a safe-conduct to the lord of Toral, as the weaker party, until the affair should be adjusted between them. Don Frederick, however, disregarding this protection, caused his enemy to be waylaid by three of his followers, armed with bludgeons, and sorely beaten one evening in the streets of Valladolid.

Isabella was no sooner informed of this outrage on one whom she had taken under the royal protection, than, burning with indignation, she immediately mounted her horse, though in the midst of a heavy storm of rain, and proceeded alone towards the castle of Simancas, then in possession of the admiral, the father of the offender, where she supposed him to have taken refuge, travelling all the while with such rapidity that she was not overtaken by the officers of her guard until she had reached the fortress. She instantly summoned the admiral to deliver up his son

<sup>81</sup> Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. pp. 487, 488.



to justice; and, on his replying that "Don Frederick was not there, and that he was ignorant where he was," she commanded him to surrender the keys of the castle, and, after a fruitless search, again returned to Valladolid. The next day Isabella was confined to her bed by an illness occasioned as much by chagrin as by the excessive fatigue which she had undergone. "My body is lame," said she, "with the blows given by Don Frederick in contempt of my safe-conduct."

The admiral, perceiving how deeply he and his family had incurred the displeasure of the queen, took counsel with his friends, who were led by their knowledge of Isabella's character to believe that he would have more to hope from the surrender of his son than from further attempts at concealment. The young man was accordingly conducted to the palace by his uncle, the constable de Haro, who deprecated the queen's resentment by representing the age of his nephew, scarcely amounting to twenty years. Isabella, however, thought proper to punish the youthful delinquent, by ordering him to be publicly conducted as a prisoner, by one of the *alcaldes* of her court, through the great square of Valladolid to the fortress of Arevalo, where he was detained in strict confinement, all privilege of access being denied to him; and when at length, moved by the consideration of his consanguinity with the king, she consented to his release, she banished him to Sicily, until he should receive the royal permission to return to his own country.<sup>82</sup>

Notwithstanding the strict impartiality as well as vigour of the administration, it could never have maintained itself by its own resources alone, in its offensive operations against the high-spirited aristocracy of Castile. Its most direct approaches, however, were made, as we have seen, under cover of the cortes. The sovereigns showed great

<sup>82</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 80.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 100.

deference, especially in this early period of their reign, to the popular branch of this body; and, far from pursuing the odious policy of preceding princes in diminishing the amount of represented cities, they never failed to direct their writs to all those which, at their accession, retained the right of representation, and subsequently enlarged the number by the conquest of Granada; while they exercised the anomalous privilege, noticed in the Introduction to this History, of omitting altogether, or issuing only a partial sunmons to, the nobility.<sup>33</sup> By making merit the standard of preferment, they opened the path of honour to every class of the community. They uniformly manifested the greatest tenderness for the rights of the commons in reference to taxation; and, as their patriotic policy was obviously directed to secure the personal rights and general prosperity of the people, it insured the co-operation of an ally whose weight, combined with that of the crown, enabled them eventually to restore the equilibrium which had been disturbed by the undue preponderance of the aristocracy.

It may be well to state here the policy pursued by Ferdinand and Isabella in reference to the Military Orders of Castile, since, although not fully developed until a much later period, it was first conceived, and indeed partly executed, in that now under discussion.

The uninterrupted warfare, which the Spaniards were compelled to maintain for the recovery of their native land from the infidel, nourished in their bosoms a flame of enthusiasm similar to that kindled by the crusades for the recovery of Palestine, partaking in an almost equal degree of a religious and a military character. This similarity of sentiment gave birth also to similar institutions of chivalry.

<sup>33</sup> For example, at the great cortes of Toledo, in 1480, it does not appear that any of the nobility were summoned, except those in immediate attendance on the court,

until the measure for the resumption of the grants, which so nearly affected that body, was brought before the legislature.

Whether the military orders of Castile were suggested by those of Palestine, or whether they go back to a remoter period, as is contended by their chroniclers, or whether, in fine, as Conde intimates, they were imitated from corresponding associations known to have existed among the Spanish Arabs,<sup>34</sup> there can be no doubt that the forms under which they were permanently organized were derived, in the latter part of the twelfth century, from the monastic orders established for the protection of the Holy Land. The Hospitallers, and especially the Templars, obtained more extensive acquisitions in Spain than in any, perhaps every, other country in Christendom; and it was partly from the ruins of their empire that were constructed the magnificent fortunes of the Spanish orders.<sup>35</sup>

The most eminent of these was the order of St. Jago, or St. James, of Compostella. The miraculous revelation of the body of the apostle, after the lapse of eight centuries from the date of his interment, and his frequent apparition in the ranks of the Christian armies in their desperate struggles with the infidel, had given so wide a celebrity to the obscure town of Compostella in Galicia, which con-

<sup>34</sup> Conde gives the following account of these chivalric associations among the Spanish Arabs, which, as far as I know, have hitherto escaped the notice of European historians. "The Moslem *fronteros* professed great austerity in their lives, which they consecrated to perpetual war, and bound themselves by a solemn vow to defend the frontier against the incursions of the Christians. They were choice cavaliers, possessed of consummate patience, and enduring fatigue, and always prepared to die rather than desert their posts. It appears highly probable that the Moorish fraternities suggested the idea of those military orders, so renowned for their valour in Spain and in Palestine, which rendered such essential services to Christendom;

for both the institutions were established on similar principles." Conde, *Historia de la Dominacion de los Arabes en España* (Madrid, 1820), tom. i. p. 619, note.

<sup>35</sup> See the details, given by Mariana, of the overgrown possessions of the Templars in Castile at the period of their extinction, in the beginning of the fourteenth century. (*Hist. de España*, lib. 15, cap. 10.) The knights of the Temple and the Hospitallers seem to have acquired still greater power in Aragon, where one of the monarchs was so infatuated as to bequeath them his whole dominions,—a bequest which, it may well be believed, was set aside by his high-spirited subjects. Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 1, cap. 52.

tained the sainted relics,<sup>36</sup> that it became the resort of pilgrims from every part of Christendom during the Middle Ages; and the escalop shell, the device of St. James, was adopted as the universal badge of the palmer. Inns for the refreshment and security of the pious itinerants were scattered along the whole line of the route from France; but, as they were exposed to perpetual annoyance from the predatory incursions of the Arabs, a number of knights and gentlemen associated themselves, for their protection, with the monks of St. Lojo, or Eloy, adopting the rule of St. Augustine, and thus laid the foundation of the chivalric order of St. James, about the middle of the twelfth century. The cavaliers of the fraternity, which received its papal bull of approbation five years later, in 1175, were distinguished by a white mantle embroidered with a red cross, in fashion of a sword, with the escalop shell below the guard, in imitation of the device which glittered on the banner of their tutelar saint when he condescended to take part in their engagements with the Moors. The red colour denoted, according to an ancient commentator, "that it was stained with the blood of the infidel." The rules of the new order imposed on its members the usual obligations of obedience, community of property, and of conjugal chastity, instead of celibacy. They were, moreover, required

<sup>36</sup> The apparition of certain preternatural lights in a forest discovered to a Galician peasant, in the beginning of the ninth century, the spot in which was deposited a marble sepulchre containing the ashes of St. James. The miracle is reported with sufficient circumstantiality by Florez (*Historia Compostellana*, lib. 1, cap. 2, apud *España sagrada*, tom. xx.) and Ambrosio de Morales (*Corónica general de España* (Obras, Madrid, 1791—3), lib. 9, cap. 7), who establishes, to his own satisfaction, the advent of St. James into Spain. Mariana, with more scepticism than his

brethren, doubts the genuineness of the body, as well as the visit of the apostle, but, like a good Jesuit, concludes, "It is not expedient to disturb with such disputes the devotion of the people, so firmly settled as it is." (Lib. 7, cap. 10.) The tutelar saint of Spain continued to support his people by taking part with them in battle against the infidel down to a very late period. Caro de Torres mentions two engagements in which he cheered on the squadrons of Cortes and Pizarro, "with his sword flashing lightning in the eyes of the Indians." *Ordenes militares* fol. 5.

to relieve the poor, defend the traveller, and maintain perpetual war upon the Mussulman.<sup>37</sup>

The institution of the Knights of Calatrava was somewhat more romantic in its origin. That town, from its situation on the frontiers of the Moorish territory of Andalusia, where it commanded the passes into Castile, became of vital importance to the latter kingdom. Its defence had accordingly been intrusted to the valiant order of the Templars, who, unable to keep their ground against the pertinacious assaults of the Moslems, abandoned it, at the expiration of eight years, as untenable. This occurred about the middle of the twelfth century; and the Castilian monarch, Sancho the Beloved, as the last resort, offered it to whatever good knights would undertake its defence.

The emprise was eagerly sought by a monk of a distant convent in Navarre, who had once been a soldier, and whose military ardour seems to have been exalted, instead of being extinguished, in the solitude of the cloister. The monk, supported by his conventual brethren, and a throng of cavaliers and more humble followers, who sought redemption under the banner of the church, was enabled to make good his word. From the confederation of these knights and ecclesiastics sprung the military fraternity of Calatrava, which received the confirmation of the pontiff, Alexander the Third, in 1164. The rules which it adopted were those of St. Benedict, and its discipline was in the highest degree austere.

The cavaliers were sworn to perpetual celibacy, from which they were not released till so late as the sixteenth century. Their diet was of the plainest kind. They were allowed meat only thrice a week, and then only one dish. They were to maintain unbroken silence at the table, in the chapel, and the dormitory; and they were enjoined

<sup>37</sup> Bades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, fol. 3—15.—Caro de Torres, *Ordenes militares*, fol. 2—8.—

Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. pp. 116—118.

both to sleep and to worship with the sword girt on their side, in token of readiness for action. In the earlier days of the institution, the spiritual as well as the military brethren were allowed to make part of the martial array against the infidel, until this was prohibited, as indecorous, by the Holy See. From this order branched off that of Montesa, in Valencia, which was instituted at the commencement of the fourteenth century, and continued dependent on the parent stock.<sup>38</sup>

The third great order of religious chivalry in Castile was that of Alcantara, which also received its confirmation from Pope Alexander the Third, in 1177. It was long held in nominal subordination to the knights of Calatrava, from which it was relieved by Julius the Second, and eventually rose to an importance little inferior to that of its rival.<sup>39</sup>

The internal economy of these three fraternities was regulated by the same general principles. The direction of affairs was intrusted to a council, consisting of the grand master and a number of the commanders (*comendadores*), among whom the extensive territories of the order were distributed. This council, conjointly with the grand master, or the latter exclusively, as in the fraternity of Calatrava, supplied the vacancies. The master himself was elected by a general chapter of these military functionaries alone, or combined with the conventual clergy, as in the order of Calatrava, which seems to have recognized the supremacy of the military over the spiritual division of the community more unreservedly than that of St. James.

These institutions appear to have completely answered the objects of their creation. In the earlier history of the Peninsula, we find the Christian chivalry always ready to

<sup>38</sup> Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, part. 2, fol. 3—9, 49.—Caro de Torres, *Ordenes militares*, fol. 49, 50.—Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. pp. 100—104.

<sup>39</sup> Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, part. 3, fol. 1—6.—The knights of Alcantara wore a white mantle, embroidered with a green cross.

bear the brunt of battle against the Moors. Set apart for this peculiar duty, their services in the sanctuary only tended to prepare them for their sterner duties in the field of battle, where the zeal of the Christian soldier may be supposed to have been somewhat sharpened by the prospect of the rich temporal acquisitions which the success of his arms was sure to secure to his fraternity; for the superstitious princes of those times, in addition to the wealth lavished so liberally on all monastic institutions, granted the military orders almost unlimited rights over the conquests achieved by their own valour. In the sixteenth century, we find the order of St. James, which had shot up to a pre-eminence above the rest, possessed of eighty-four commanderies and two hundred inferior benefices. The same order could bring into the field, according to Garibay, four hundred belted knights, and one thousand lances, which, with the usual complement of a lance in that day, formed a very considerable force. The rents of the mastership of St. James amounted, in the time of Ferdinand and Isabella, to sixty thousand ducats, those of Alcantara to forty-five thousand, and those of Calatrava to forty thousand. There was scarcely a district of the Peninsula which was not covered with their castles, towns, and convents. Their rich commanderies gradually became objects of cupidity to men of the highest rank, and more especially the grand-masterships, which, from their extensive patronage, and the authority they conferred over an organized militia pledged to implicit obedience and knit together by the strong tie of common interest, raised their possessors almost to the level of royalty itself. Hence the elections to these important dignities came to be a fruitful source of intrigue, and frequently of violent collision. The monarchs, who had anciently reserved the right of testifying their approbation of an election, by presenting the standard of the order to the new dignitary, began personally to interfere in the deliberations of the

chapter; while the pope, to whom a contested point was not unfrequently referred, assumed at length the prerogative of granting the masterships in administration on a vacancy, and even that of nomination itself, which, if disputed, he enforced by his spiritual thunders.<sup>40</sup>

Owing to these circumstances, there was probably no one cause, among the many which occurred in Castile during the fifteenth century, more prolific of intestine discord than the election to these posts, far too important to be intrusted to any subject, and the succession to which was sure to be contested by a host of competitors. Isabella seems to have settled in her mind the course of policy to be adopted in this matter, at a very early period of her reign. On occasion of a vacancy in the grand-mastership of St. James, by the death of the incumbent, in 1476, she made a rapid journey on horseback, her usual mode of travelling, from Valladolid to the town of Ucles, where a chapter of the order was deliberating on the election of a new principal. The queen, presenting herself before this body, represented with so much energy the inconvenience of devolving powers of such magnitude on any private individual, and its utter incompatibility with public order, that she prevailed on them, smarting, as they were, under the evils of a disputed succession, to solicit the administration for the king, her husband. That monarch, indeed, consented to waive this privilege in favour of Alonso de Cardenas, one of the competitors for the office, and a loyal servant of the crown; but, at his decease in 1499, the sovereigns retained the possession of the vacant mastership, conformably to a papal decree, which granted them its administration for life, in the same

\* Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, part. 1, fol. 12—15, 43, 54, 61, 64, 66, 67; part. 2, fol. 11, 51; part. 3, fol. 42, 49, 50.—Caro de Torres, *Ordenes militares*, *pasim*.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memor-*

*ables*, fol. 33.—Garibay, *Compendio*, lib. 11, cap. 13. — Zurita, *Anales*, tom. v. lib. 1, cap. 19. — Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 1.



manner as had been done with that of Calatrava, in 1487, and of Alcantara in 1494.<sup>41</sup>

The sovereigns were no sooner vested with the control of the military orders than they began, with their characteristic promptness, to reform the various corruptions which had impaired their ancient discipline. They erected a council for the general superintendence of affairs relating to the orders, and invested it with extensive powers both of civil and criminal jurisdiction. They supplied the vacant benefices with persons of acknowledged worth, exercising an impartiality which could never be maintained by any private individual, necessarily exposed to the influence of personal interests and affections. By this harmonious distribution, the honours which had before been held up to the highest bidder, or made the subject of a furious canvass, became the incentive and sure recompense of desert.<sup>42</sup>

In the following reign, the grand-masterships of these fraternities were annexed in perpetuity to the crown of Castile by a bull of Pope Adrian the Sixth; while their subordinate dignities, having survived the object of their original creation, the subjugation of the Moors, degenerated into the empty decorations, the stars and garters, of an order of nobility.<sup>43</sup>

IV. Vindication of ecclesiastical rights belonging to the crown from papal usurpation. In the earlier stages of the

<sup>41</sup> Caro de Torres, *Ordenes militares*, fol. 46, 74, 83. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 64. — Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, part. 1, fol. 69, 70; part. 2, fol. 82, 83; part. 3, fol. 54. — Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 1. — The sovereigns gave great offence to the jealous grandees who were competitors for the mastership of St. James, by conferring that dignity on Alonso de Cardenas, with their usual policy of making merit rather than birth the standard

of preferment.

<sup>42</sup> Caro de Torres, *Ordenes militares*, fol. 84. — Riol has given a full account of the constitution of this council, *Informe*, apud *Semanario erudito*, tom. iii. pp. 164 et seq.

<sup>43</sup> The reader will find a view of the condition and general resources of the military orders as existing in the present century in Spain, in Laborde, *Itinéraire descriptif de l'Espagne* (2nd edition, Paris, 1827—30), tom. v. pp. 102—117.

Castilian monarchy, the sovereigns appear to have held a supremacy in spiritual, very similar to that exercised by them in temporal matters. It was comparatively late that the nation submitted its neck to the papal yoke, so closely riveted at a subsequent period; and even the Romish ritual was not admitted into its churches till long after it had been adopted in the rest of Europe.<sup>44</sup> But, when the code of the *Partidas* was promulgated in the thirteenth century, the maxims of the canon law came to be permanently established. The ecclesiastical encroached on the lay tribunals. Appeals were perpetually carried up to the Roman court; and the popes, pretending to regulate the minutest details of church economy, not only disposed of inferior benefices, but gradually converted the right of confirming elections to the episcopal and higher ecclesiastical dignities, into that of appointment.<sup>45</sup>

These usurpations of the church had been repeatedly the subject of grave remonstrance in cortes. Several remedial enactments had passed that body during the present reign, especially in relation to the papal provision of foreigners to benefices; an evil of much greater magnitude in Spain than in other countries of Europe, since the episcopal demesnes, frequently covering the Moorish frontier, became an important line of national defence, obviously improper to be intrusted to the keeping of foreigners and absentees. Notwithstanding the efforts of cortes, no effectual remedy was devised for this latter grievance, until

"Most readers are acquainted with the curious story related by Robertson, of the ordeal to which the Romish and Muzarabic rituals were subjected, in the reign of Alfonso VI., and the ascendancy which the combination of kingcraft and priestcraft succeeded in securing to the former in opposition to the will of the nation. Cardinal Ximenes afterwards established a magnificent chapel in the cathedral

church of Toledo for the performance of the Muzarabic services, which have been retained there to the present time. Fléohier, *Histoire du Cardinal Ximenes* (Paris, 1693), p. 142.—Bourgoanne, *Travels in Spain*, Eng. trans., vol. iii. chap. 1.

"Marina, *Ensayo histórico-crítico*, nos. 322, 334, 341.—Riol, *Informe*, apud *Semanario erudito*, pp. 92 et seq.

it became the subject of actual collision between the crown and the pontiff, in reference to the see of Tاراçona, and afterwards of Cuenca.<sup>46</sup>

Sixtus the Fourth had conferred the latter benefice, on its becoming vacant in 1482, on his nephew, Cardinal San Giorgio, a Genoese, in direct opposition to the wishes of the queen, who would have bestowed it on her chaplain, Alfonso de Burgos, in exchange for the bishopric of Cordova. An ambassador was accordingly despatched by the Castilian sovereigns to Rome, to remonstrate on the papal appointment; but without effect, as Sixtus replied, with a degree of presumption which might better have become his predecessors of the twelfth century, that "he was head of the church, and, as such, possessed of unlimited power in the distribution of benefices, and that he was not bound to consult the inclination of any potentate on earth, any further than might subserve the interests of religion."

The sovereigns, highly dissatisfied with this response, ordered their subjects, ecclesiastical as well as lay, to quit the papal dominions; an injunction which the former, fearful of the sequestration of their temporalities in Castile, obeyed with as much promptness as the latter. At the same time, Ferdinand and Isabella proclaimed their intention of inviting the princes of Christendom to unite with them in convoking a general council for the reformation of the manifold abuses which dishonoured the church. No sound could have grated more unpleasantly on the pontifical ear than the menace of a general council, particularly at this period, when ecclesiastical corruptions had reached a height which could but ill endure its scrutiny. The pope became convinced that he had ventured too far,

<sup>46</sup> Marina, *Ensayo histórico-crítico*, nos. 335 — 337. — *Ordenanzas Reales*, lib. 1, tit. 3, leyes 19, 20; lib. 2, tit. 7, ley 2; lib. 3, tit. 1, ley 6. — Riols, *Informe*, apud *Semanario erudito*, loc. cit.—In the

latter part of Henry IV.'s reign, a papal bull had been granted against the provision of foreigners to benefices. Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. vii. p. 196, ed. Valencia.

and that Henry the Fourth was no longer monarch of Castile. He accordingly despatched a legate to Spain, fully empowered to arrange the matter on an amicable basis.

The legate, who was a layman, by name Domingo Centurion, no sooner arrived in Castile than he caused the sovereigns to be informed of his presence there, and the purpose of his mission; but he received orders instantly to quit the kingdom, without attempting so much as to disclose the nature of his instructions, since they could not but be derogatory to the dignity of the crown. A safe-conduct was granted for himself and his suite; but, at the same time, great surprise was expressed that any one should venture to appear, as envoy from his Holiness, at the court of Castile, after it had been treated by him with such umerited indignity.

Far from resenting this ungracious reception, the legate affected the deepest humility, professing himself willing to waive whatever immunities he might claim as papal ambassador, and to submit to the jurisdiction of the sovereigns as one of their own subjects, so that he might obtain an audience. Cardinal Mendoza, whose influence in the cabinet had gained him the title of "third king of Spain," apprehensive of the consequences of a protracted rupture with the church, interposed in behalf of the envoy, whose conciliatory deportment at length so far mitigated the resentment of the sovereigns that they consented to open negotiations with the court of Rome. The result was the publication of a bull by Sixtus the Fourth, in which his Holiness engaged to provide such natives to the higher dignities of the church in Castile as should be nominated by the monarchs of that kingdom;<sup>47</sup> and Alfonso de Burgos was accordingly translated to the see of Cuenca.

<sup>47</sup> Riol, in his account of this celebrated concordat, refers to the original instrument, as existing in

his time in the archives of Simancas, *Semanario erudito*, tom. iii. p. 95.

Isabella, on whom the duties of ecclesiastical preferment devolved by the act of settlement, availed herself of the rights thus wrested from the grasp of Rome, to exalt to the vacant sees persons of exemplary piety and learning, holding light, in comparison with the faithful discharge of this duty, every minor consideration of interest, and even the solicitations of her husband, as we shall see hereafter.<sup>48</sup> And the chronicler of her reign dwells with complacency on those good old times, when churchmen were to be found of such singular modesty as to require to be urged to accept the dignities to which their merits entitled them.<sup>49</sup>

V. The regulation of trade. It will be readily conceived that trade, agriculture, and every branch of industry must have languished under the misrule of preceding reigns. For what purpose, indeed, strive to accumulate wealth, when it would only serve to sharpen the appetite of the spoiler? For what purpose cultivate the earth, when the fruits were sure to be swept away, even before harvest-time, in some ruthless foray? The frequent famines and pestilences, which occurred in the latter part of Henry's reign and the commencement of his successor's, show too plainly the squalid condition of the people, and their utter destitution of all useful arts. We are assured by the Curate of Los Palacios that the plague broke out in the southern districts of the kingdom, carrying off eight, or nine, or even fifteen thousand inhabitants from the various cities; while the prices of the ordinary aliments of

\* "Lo que es público hoy en España é notorio," says Gonzalo de Oviedo, "nunca los Reyes Cathólicos desearon ni procuraron sino que proveer é presentar para las dignidades de la Iglesia hombres capazes é idoneos para la buena administracion del servicio del culto divino, é á la buena enseñanza é utilidad de los Christianos sus vasallos; y entre todos los varones de sus Reynos así por largo conocimiento como por larga é secreta

informacion acordaron encojer é elegir," etc. *Quincuagenas*, MS., dial. de Talavera.

\* Salazar de Mendoza, *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, lib. 1, cap. 52.—*Idem*, *Dignidades de Castilla*, p. 374.—*Pulgar*, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 104.—See also the similar independent conduct pursued by Ferdinand, three years previous, with reference to the see of Tarazona, related by Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 304.

life rose to a height which put them above the reach of the poorer classes of the community. In addition to these physical evils, a fatal shock was given to commercial credit by the adulteration of the coin. Under Henry the Fourth, it is computed that there were no less than one hundred and fifty mints openly licensed by the crown, in addition to many others erected by individuals without any legal authority. The abuse came to such a height that people at length refused to receive in payment of their debts the debased coin, whose value depreciated more and more every day; and the little trade which remained in Castile was carried on by barter, as in the primitive stages of society.<sup>50</sup>

The magnitude of the evil was such as to claim the earliest attention of the cortes under the new monarchs. Acts were passed fixing the standard and legal value of the different denominations of coin. A new coinage was subsequently made. Five royal mints were alone authorized, afterwards augmented to seven, and severe penalties denounced against the fabrication of money elsewhere. The reform of the currency gradually infused new life into commerce, as the return of the circulations, which have been interrupted for a while, quickens the animal body. This was furthered by salutary laws for the encouragement of domestic industry. Internal communication was facilitated by the construction of roads and bridges. Absurd restrictions on change of residence, as well as the onerous duties which had been imposed on commercial intercourse between Castile and Aragon, were repealed. Several judicious laws were enacted for the protection of foreign trade; and the flourishing condition of the mercantile marine may be inferred from that of the military, which enabled the sovereigns to fit out an armament of seventy

<sup>50</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 44.—See a letter from one of Henry's subjects, cited by Saez, *Monedas de Enrique IV.*, p.

3.—Also the coarse satire (composed in Henry's reign) of Mingo Revulgo, especially coplas 24—27.

sail in 1482, from the ports of Biscay and Andalusia, for the defence of Naples against the Turks. Some of their regulations, indeed, as those prohibiting the exportation of the precious metals, savour too strongly of the ignorance of the true principles of commercial legislation which has distinguished the Spaniards to the present day. But others, again, as that for relieving the importation of foreign books from all duties, "because," says the statute, "they bring both honour and profit to the kingdom, by the facilities which they afford for making men learned," are not only in advance of that age, but may sustain an advantageous comparison with provisions on corresponding subjects in Spain at the present time. Public credit was re-established by the punctuality with which the government redeemed the debt contracted during the Portuguese war; and, notwithstanding the repeal of various arbitrary imposts, which enriched the exchequer under Henry the Fourth, such was the advance of the country under the wise economy of the present reign, that the revenue was augmented nearly sixfold between the years 1477 and 1482.<sup>51</sup>

Thus released from the heavy burdens imposed on it,

<sup>51</sup> *Pragmáticas del Reyno*, fol. 64. — *Ordenanças Reales*, lib. 4, tit. 4, ley 22; lib. 5, tit. 8, ley 2; lib. 6, tit. 9, ley 49; lib. 6, tit. 10, ley 13. — *Col. de Cédulas*, tom. v. no. 182. — See also other wholesome laws for the encouragement of commerce and general security of property, as that respecting contracts (*Ordenanças Reales*, lib. 5, tit. 8, ley 5),—fraudulent tradesmen (lib. 5, tit. 8, ley 5),—purveyance (lib. 6, tit. 11, ley 2 et al.).—*Recopilacion de las Leyes*, lib. 5, tit. 20, 21, 22; lib. 6, tit. 18, ley 1. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 99.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 312.—*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 11. — The revenue, it appears, in 1477, amounted to

27,415,228 maravedis; and in the year 1482, we find it increased to 150,695,288 maravedis. (*Ibid.*, *Ilust.* 5.)—A survey of the kingdom was made between the years 1477 and 1479, for the purpose of ascertaining the value of the royal rents, which formed the basis of the economical regulations adopted by the cortes of Toledo. Although this survey was conducted on no uniform plan, yet, according to Señor Clemencin, it exhibits such a variety of important details respecting the resources and population of the country that it must materially contribute towards an exact history of this period. The compilation, which consists of twelve folio volumes in manuscript, is deposited in the archives of Simancas.

the spring of enterprise recovered its former elasticity. The productive capital of the country was made to flow through the various channels of domestic industry. The hills and the valleys again rejoiced in the labour of the husbandman; and the cities were embellished with stately edifices, both public and private, which attracted the gaze and commendation of foreigners.<sup>52</sup> The writers of that day are unbounded in their plaudits of Isabella, to whom they principally ascribe this auspicious revolution in the condition of the country and its inhabitants,<sup>53</sup> which seems almost as magical as one of those transformations in romance wrought by the hands of some benevolent fairy.<sup>54</sup>

VI. The pre-eminence of the royal authority. This, which, as we have seen, appears to have been the natural result of the policy of Ferdinand and Isabella, was derived quite as much from the influence of their private characters as from their public measures. Their acknowledged talents were supported by a dignified demeanour, which formed a striking contrast with the meanness in mind and manners that had distinguished their predecessor. They both exhibited a practical wisdom in their own personal relations, which always commands respect, and which, however it may have savoured of worldly policy in Ferdinand, was, in his consort, founded on the purest and most exalted principle. Under such a sovereign, the court, which had been little better than a brothel under the preceding reign, became the nursery of virtue and generous

<sup>52</sup> One of the statutes passed at Toledo expressly provides for the erection of spacious and handsome edifices (*casas grandes y bien fechas*) for the transaction of municipal affairs, in all the principal towns and cities in the kingdom. *Ordenanças Reales*, lib. 7, tit. 1, ley 1.—See also L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, passim,—et al. auct.

<sup>53</sup> “*Cosa fue por cierto maravillosa*,” exclaims Pulgar, in his *Glosa* on the *Mingo Revulgo*, “*que lo que*

*muchos hombres y grandes señores no se acordaron á hacer en muchos años, sola una muger, con su trabajo y gobernacion, lo hizo en poco tiempo.*” *Copla* 21.

<sup>54</sup> The beautiful lines of Virgil, so often misapplied,—

“*Jam redit et Virgo: redeunt Saturnia regna;*

*Jam nova progenies*,” etc.—

seem to admit here of a pertinent application.



ambition. Isabella watched assiduously over the nurture of the high-born damsels of her court, whom she received into the royal palace, causing them to be educated under her own eye, and endowing them with liberal portions on their marriage.<sup>55</sup> By these and similar acts of affectionate solicitude, she endeared herself to the higher classes of her subjects, while the patriotic tendency of her public conduct established her in the hearts of the people. She possessed, in combination with the feminine qualities which beget love, a masculine energy of character, which struck terror into the guilty. She enforced the execution of her own plans, oftentimes even at great personal hazard, with a resolution surpassing that of her husband. Both were singularly temperate, indeed frugal, in their dress, equipage, and general style of living; seeking to affect others less by external pomp than by the silent though more potent influence of personal qualities. On all such occasions as demanded it, however, they displayed a princely magnificence, which dazzled the multitude, and is blazoned with great solemnity in the garrulous chronicles of the day.<sup>56</sup>

The tendencies of the present administration were undoubtedly to strengthen the power of the crown. This was the point to which most of the feudal governments of Europe at this epoch were tending. But Isabella was far from being actuated by the selfish aim or unscrupulous policy of many contemporary princes, who, like Louis the Eleventh, sought to govern by the arts of dissimulation, and to establish their own authority by fomenting the

<sup>55</sup> Carro de las Doñas, apud Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 21.—As one example of the moral discipline introduced by Isabella in her court, we may cite the enactments against gaming, which had been carried to great excess under the preceding reigns. (See Ordenanças Reales, lib. 2, tit. 14, ley 31; lib. 8, tit. 10, ley 7.) L.

Marineo, according to whom "hell is full of gamblers," highly commends the sovereigns for their efforts to discountenance this vice. Cosas memorables, fol. 165.

<sup>56</sup> See, for example, the splendid ceremony of Prince John's baptism, to which the gossiping Curate of Los Palacios devotes the 32nd and 33rd chapters of his History.

divisions of their powerful vassals. On the contrary, she endeavoured to bind together the disjointed fragments of the state, to assign to each of its great divisions its constitutional limits, and, by depressing the aristocracy to its proper level and elevating the commons, to consolidate the whole under the lawful supremacy of the crown. At least, such was the tendency of her administration up to the present period of our history. These laudable objects were gradually achieved, without fraud or violence, by a course of measures equally laudable; and the various orders of the monarchy, brought into harmonious action with each other, were enabled to turn the forces which had before been wasted in civil conflict to the glorious career of discovery and conquest which it was destined to run during the remainder of the century.

---

The sixth volume of the *Memoirs of the Royal Spanish Academy of History*, published in 1821, is devoted altogether to the reign of Isabella. It is distributed into Illustrations, as they are termed, of the various branches of the administrative policy of the queen, of her personal character, and of the condition of science under her government. These essays exhibit much curious research, being derived from unquestionable contemporary documents, printed and manuscript, and from the public archives. They are compiled with much discernment, and, as they throw light on some of the most recondite transactions of this reign, are of inestimable service to the historian. The author of the volume is the late lamented secretary of the Academy, Don Diego Clemencin; one of the few who survived the wreck of scholarship in Spain, and who, with the erudition which has frequently distinguished his countrymen, combined the liberal and enlarged opinions which would do honour to any country.

## CHAPTER VII.

### ESTABLISHMENT OF THE MODERN INQUISITION.

Origin of the Ancient Inquisition.—Retrospective View of the Jews in Spain.—Their Wealth and Civilization.—Bigotry of the Age.—Its Influence on Isabella.—Her Confessor, Torquemada.—Bull authorizing the Inquisition.—Tribunal at Seville.—Forms of Trial.—Torture.—Autos da Fe.—Number of Convictions.—Perfidious Policy of Rome.

It is painful, after having dwelt so long on the important benefits resulting to Castile from the comprehensive policy of Isabella, to be compelled to turn to the darker side of the picture, and to exhibit her as accommodating herself to the illiberal spirit of the age in which she lived, so far as to sanction one of the grossest abuses that ever disgraced humanity. The present chapter will be devoted to the establishment and early progress of the Modern Inquisition; an institution which has probably contributed more than any other cause to depress the lofty character of the ancient Spaniard, and which has thrown the gloom of fanaticism over those lovely regions which seem to be the natural abode of festivity and pleasure.

In the present liberal state of knowledge, we look with disgust at the pretensions of any human being, however exalted, to invade the sacred rights of conscience, inalienably possessed by every man. We feel that the spiritual concerns of an individual may be safely left to himself, as most interested in them, except so far as they can be affected by argument or friendly monition; that the idea of compelling belief in particular doctrines is a solecism, as absurd as wicked; and, so far from condemning to the stake, or the gibbet, men who pertinaciously adhere to

their conscientious opinions in contempt of personal interests and in the face of danger, we should rather feel disposed to imitate the spirit of antiquity in raising altars and statues to their memory, as having displayed the highest efforts of human virtue. But, although these truths are now so obvious as rather to deserve the name of truisms, the world has been slow, very slow, in arriving at them, after many centuries of unspeakable oppression and misery.

Acts of intolerance are to be discerned from the earliest period in which Christianity became the established religion of the Roman empire. But they do not seem to have flowed from any systematized plan of persecution, until the papal authority had swollen to a considerable height. The popes, who claimed the spiritual allegiance of all Christendom, regarded heresy as treason against themselves, and, as such, deserving all the penalties which sovereigns have uniformly visited on this, in their eyes, unpardonable offence. The crusades which, in the early part of the thirteenth century, swept so fiercely over the southern provinces of France, exterminating their inhabitants, and blasting the fair buds of civilization which had put forth after the long feudal winter, opened the way to the Inquisition; and it was on the ruins of this once happy land that were first erected the bloody altars of that tribunal.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mosheim, *Ecclesiastical History*, translated by MacLaine (Charlottesville, 1810), cent. 13, P. 2, chap. 5.—Sismondi, *Histoire des Français* (Paris, 1821), tom. vi. chap. 24—28; tom. vii. chap. 2, 3.—Idem, *De la Littérature du Midi de l'Europe* (Paris, 1813), tom. i. chap. 6.—In the former of these works M. Sismondi has described the physical ravages of the crusades in southern France, with the same spirit and eloquence with which he has exhibited their desolating moral influence in the latter. Some Catholic writers would fain excuse St. Dominic from the imputation of having founded the Inquisition.

It is true he died some years before the perfect organization of that tribunal; but, as he established the principles on which, and the monkish militia by whom, it was administered, it is doing him no injustice to regard him as its real author.—The Sicilian Paramo, indeed, in his heavy quarto (*De Origine et Progressu Officii Sanctæ Inquisitionis, Matriti, 1598*), traces it up to a much more remote antiquity, which, to a Protestant ear at least, savours not a little of blasphemy. According to him, God was the first inquisitor, and his condemnation of Adam and Eve furnished the model of the

After various modifications, the province of detecting and punishing heresy was exclusively committed to the hands of the Dominican friars; and in 1233, in the reign of St. Louis, and under the pontificate of Gregory the Ninth, a code for the regulation of their proceedings was finally digested. The tribunal, after having been successively adopted in Italy and Germany, was introduced into Aragon, where, in 1242, additional provisions were framed by the council of Tarragona, on the basis of those of 1233, which may properly be considered as the primitive instructions of the Holy Office in Spain.<sup>2</sup>

This Ancient Inquisition, as it is termed, bore the same odious peculiarities in its leading features as the Modern; the same impenetrable secrecy in its proceedings, the same insidious modes of accusation, a similar use of torture, and similar penalties for the offender. A sort of manual, drawn up by Eymerich, an Aragonese inquisitor of the fourteenth century, for the instruction of the judges of the Holy Office, prescribes all those ambiguous forms of interrogation by which the unwary and perhaps innocent victim might be circumvented.<sup>3</sup>

judicial forms observed in the trials of the Holy Office. The sentence of Adam was the type of the inquisitorial *reconciliation*; his subsequent raiment of the skins of animals was the model of the *sanbenito*, and his expulsion from Paradise the precedent for the confiscation of the goods of heretics. This learned personage deduces a succession of inquisitors through the patriarchs, Moses, Nebuchadnezzar, and King David, down to John the Baptist, and even our Saviour, in whose precepts and conduct he finds abundant authority for the tribunal! Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, lib. 1, tit. 1, 2, 3.

<sup>2</sup> Sismondi *Hist. des Français*, tom. vii. chap. 3.—Limborch, *History of the Inquisition*, translated

by Chandler (London, 1731), book 1, chap. 24.—Llorente, *Histoire critique de l'Inquisition d'Espagne* (Paris, 1818), tom. i. p. 110.—Before this time we find a constitution of Peter I. of Aragon against heretics, prescribing in certain cases the burning of heretics and the confiscation of their estates, in 1197. *Marca Hispanica, sive Limes Hispanicus* (Paris, 1688), p. 1384.

<sup>3</sup> Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 186.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. pp. 110—124.—Puigblanch cites some of the instructions from Eymerich's work, whose authority in the courts of the Inquisition he compares to that of Gratian's *Decretals* in other ecclesiastical judicatures. One of these may suffice to show the spirit of the whole. "When the inquisitor

The principles on which the ancient Inquisition was established are no less repugnant to justice than those which regulated the modern ; although the former, it is true, was much less extensive in its operation. The arm of persecution, however, fell with sufficient heaviness, especially during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, on the unfortunate Albigenses, who, from the proximity and political relations of Aragon and Provence, had become numerous in the former kingdom. The persecution appears, however, to have been chiefly confined to this unfortunate sect, and there is no evidence that the Holy Office, notwithstanding papal briefs to that effect, was fully organized in Castile before the reign of Isabella. This is perhaps imputable to the paucity of heretics in that kingdom. It cannot, at any rate, be charged to any lukewarmness in its sovereigns ; since they, from the time of St. Ferdinand, who heaped the fagots on the blazing pile with his own hands, down to that of John the Second, Isabella's father, who hunted the unhappy heretics of Biscay like so many wild beasts among the mountains, had ever evinced a lively zeal for the orthodox faith.<sup>4</sup>

has an opportunity, he shall manage so as to introduce to the conversation of the prisoner some one of his accomplices, or any other converted heretic, who shall feign that he still persists in his heresy, telling him that he had abjured for the sole purpose of escaping punishment, by deceiving the inquisitors. Having thus gained his confidence, he shall go into his cell some day after dinner, and, keeping up the conversation till night, shall remain with him under pretext of its being too late for him to return home. He shall then urge the prisoner to tell him all the particulars of his past life, having first told him the whole of his own ; and in the mean time spies shall be kept in hearing at the door, as well as a notary, in order to certify what may be said

within." Puigblanch, *Inquisition Unmasked*, translated by Walton, (London, 1816), vol. i. pp. 238, 239.

<sup>4</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*, lib. 12, cap. 11 ; lib. 21, cap. 17.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 3.—The nature of the penance imposed on reconciled heretics by the ancient Inquisition was much more severe than that of later times. Llorente cites an act of St. Dominic respecting a person of this description, named Ponce Roger. The penitent was commanded to be "*stripped of his clothes and beaten with rods by a priest, three Sundays in succession, from the gate of the city to the door of the church ; not to eat any kind of animal food during his whole life ; to keep three Lents a year, without even eating fish ; to abstain*

By the middle of the fifteenth century, the Albigensian heresy had been nearly extirpated by the Inquisition of Aragon; so that this infernal engine might have been suffered to sleep undisturbed from want of sufficient fuel to keep it in motion, when new and ample materials were discovered in the unfortunate race of Israel, on whom the sins of their fathers have been so unsparingly visited by every nation in Christendom, among whom they have sojourned, almost to the present century. As this remarkable people, who seem to have preserved their unity of character unbroken amid the thousand fragments into which they have been scattered, attained perhaps to greater consideration in Spain than in any other part of Europe, and as the efforts of the Inquisition were directed principally against them during the present reign, it may be well to take a brief review of their preceding history in the Peninsula.

Under the Visigothic empire the Jews multiplied exceedingly in the country, and were permitted to acquire considerable power and wealth. But no sooner had their Arian masters embraced the orthodox faith than they began to testify their zeal by pouring on the Jews the most pitiless storm of persecution. One of their laws alone condemned the whole race to slavery; and Montesquieu remarks, without much exaggeration, that to the Gothic code may be traced all the maxims of the modern Inquisition, the monks of the fifteenth century only copying, in reference to the Israelites, the bishops of the seventh.<sup>5</sup>

from fish, oil, and wine three days in the week during life, except in case of sickness or excessive labour; to wear a religious dress with a small cross embroidered on each side of the breast; to attend mass every day, if he had the means of doing so, and vespers on Sundays and festivals; to recite the service for the day and the night, and to

repeat the *pater noster* seven times in the day, ten times in the evening, and *twenty times at midnight*." (Ibid., chap. 4.) If the said Roger failed in any of the above requisitions, he was to be burnt as a relapsed heretic! This was the encouragement held out by St. Dominic to penitence.

<sup>5</sup> Montesquieu, *Esprit des Loix*,

After the Saracenic invasion, which the Jews, perhaps with reason, are accused of having facilitated, they resided in the conquered cities, and were permitted to mingle with the Arabs on nearly equal terms. Their common Oriental origin produced a similarity of tastes, to a certain extent, not unfavourable to such a coalition. At any rate, the early Spanish Arabs were characterized by a spirit of toleration towards both Jews and Christians, "the people of the book," as they were called, which had scarcely been found among later Moslems.<sup>6</sup> The Jews accordingly, under these favourable auspices, not only accumulated wealth with their usual diligence, but gradually rose to the highest civil dignities, and made great advances in various departments of letters. The schools of Cordova, Toledo, Barcelona, and Granada were crowded with numerous disciples, who emulated the Arabians in keeping alive the flame of learning during the deep darkness of the Middle Ages.<sup>7</sup> Whatever may be thought of their success in speculative philosophy,<sup>8</sup> they cannot reasonably

liv. 18, chap. 1.—See the canon of the 17th council of Toledo, condemning the Israelitish race to bondage, in Florez, *España sagrada* (Madrid, 1747—75), tom. vi. p. 229.—The *Fuero Juzgo* (ed. de la Acad. (Madrid, 1815), lib. 12, tit. 2 and 3) is composed of the most inhuman ordinances against this unfortunate people.

<sup>6</sup> The Koran grants protection to the Jews on payment of tribute. See the Koran, translated by Sale (London, 1825), chap. 9. Still, there is ground enough (though less among the Spanish Arabs than the other Moslems) for the following caustic remark of the author above quoted: "La religion juive est un vieux tronc qui a produit deux branches qui ont couvert toute la terre; je veux dire, le Mahométisme et le Christianisme: ou plutôt c'est une mère qui a engendré deux filles, qui l'ont accablée de mille

plaies; car, en fait de religion, les plus proches sont les plus grands des ennemis." Montesquieu, *Lettres Persanes*, let. 60.

<sup>7</sup> The first academy founded by the learned Jews in Spain was that of Cordova, A.D. 948. Castro, *Biblioteca Española*, tom. i. p. 2.—Basnage, *History of the Jews*, translated by Taylor (London, 1708), book 7, chap. 5.

<sup>8</sup> In addition to their Talmudic lore and Cabalistic mysteries, the Spanish Jews were well read in the philosophy of Aristotle. They pretended that the Stagirate was a convert to Judaism and had borrowed his science from the writings of Solomon. (Brucker, *Historia critica Philosophiæ* (Lipsiæ, 1766), tom. ii. p. 853.) M. Degerando, adopting similar conclusions with Brucker, in regard to the value of the philosophical speculations of the Jews, passes the following



be denied to have contributed largely to practical and experimental science. They were diligent travellers in all parts of the known world, compiling itineraries which have proved of extensive use in later times, and bringing home hoards of foreign specimens and Oriental drugs, that furnished important contributions to the domestic pharmacopœias.<sup>9</sup> In the practice of medicine, indeed, they became so expert as in a manner to monopolize that profession. They made great proficiency in mathematics, and particularly in astronomy; while in the cultivation of elegant letters they revived the ancient glories of the Hebrew muse.<sup>10</sup> This was indeed the golden age of modern Jewish literature, which, under the Spanish caliphs, experienced a protection so benign, although occasionally checkered by the caprices of despotism, that it was enabled to attain higher beauty and a more perfect development in the tenth, eleventh, twelfth, and thirteenth centuries, than it has reached in any other part of Christendom.<sup>11</sup>

severe sentence upon the intellectual, and indeed moral, character of the nation: "Ce peuple, par son caractère, ses mœurs, ses institutions, semblait être destiné à rester stationnaire. Un attachement excessif à leurs propres traditions dominait chez les Juifs tous les penchans de l'esprit: ils restaient presque étrangers aux progrès de la civilisation, au mouvement général de la société; ils étaient en quelque sorte moralement isolés, alors même qu'ils communiquaient avec tous les peuples, et parcouraient toutes les contrées. Aussi nous cherchons en vain, dans ceux de leurs écrits qui nous sont connus, non-seulement de vraies découvertes, mais même des idées réellement originales." *Histoire comparée des Systèmes de Philosophie* (Paris, 1822), tom. iv. p. 299.

<sup>9</sup> Castro, *Biblioteca Española*, tom. i. pp. 21, 33, et alibi.—Benjamin of Tudela's celebrated Itine-

rary, having been translated into the various languages of Europe, passed into sixteen editions before the middle of the last century. *Ibid.*, tom. i. pp. 79, 80.

<sup>10</sup> The beautiful lament which the royal psalmist has put into the mouths of his countrymen, when commanded to sing the songs of Sion in a strange land, cannot be applied to the Spanish Jews, who, far from hanging their harps upon the willows, poured forth their lays with a freedom and vivacity which may be thought to savour more of the modern troubadour than of the ancient Hebrew minstrel. Castro has collected, under Siglo XV., a few gleanings of such as, by their incorporation into a Christian Cancionero, escaped the fury of the Inquisition. *Biblioteca Española*, tom. i. pp. 265—364.

<sup>11</sup> Castro has done for the Hebrew what Casiri a few years before did for the Arabic literature of Spain,

The ancient Castilians of the same period, very different from their Gothic ancestors, seem to have conceded to the Israelites somewhat of the feelings of respect which were extorted from them by the superior civilization of the Spanish Arabs. We find eminent Jews residing in the courts of the Christian princes, directing their studies, attending them as physicians, or more frequently administering their finances. For this last vocation they seem to have had a natural aptitude; and, indeed, the correspondence which they maintained with the different countries of Europe by means of their own countrymen, who acted as the brokers of almost every people among whom they were scattered during the Middle Ages, afforded them peculiar facilities both in politics and commerce. We meet with Jewish scholars and statesmen attached to the courts of Alfonso the Tenth, Alfonso the Eleventh, Peter the Cruel, Henry the Second, and other princes. Their astronomical science recommended them in a special manner to Alfonso the Wise, who employed them in the construction of his celebrated Tables. James the First of Aragon condescended to receive instruction from them in ethics; and, in the fifteenth century, we notice John the Second of Castile employing a Jewish secretary in the compilation of a national Cancionero.<sup>12</sup>

But all this royal patronage proved incompetent to protect the Jews when their flourishing fortunes had risen to a sufficient height to excite popular envy, augmented as it was by that profuse ostentation of equipage and apparel

by giving notices of such works as have survived the ravages of time and superstition. The first volume of his *Biblioteca Española* contains an analysis accompanied with extracts from more than seven hundred different works, with biographical sketches of their authors; the whole bearing most honourable testimony to the talent and various erudition of the Spanish Jews.

<sup>12</sup> Basnage, *History of the Jews*,

book 7, chap. 5, 15, 16.—Castro, *Biblioteca Española*, tom. i. pp. 116, 265, 267.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. i. p. 906;—tom. ii. pp. 63, 147, 469.—Samuel Levi, treasurer of Peter the Cruel, who was sacrificed to the cupidity of his master, is reported by Mariana to have left behind him the incredible sum of 400,000 ducats to swell the royal coffers. See tom. ii. p. 82.

for which this singular people, notwithstanding their avarice, have usually shown a predilection.<sup>13</sup> Stories were circulated of their contempt for the Catholic worship, their desecration of its most holy symbols, and of their crucifixion, or rather sacrifice, of Christian children at the celebration of their own passover.<sup>14</sup> With these foolish calumnies, the more probable charge of usury and extortion was industriously preferred against them; till at length, towards the close of the fourteenth century, the fanatical populace, stimulated in many instances by the no less fanatical clergy, and perhaps encouraged by the numerous class of debtors to the Jews, who found this a convenient mode of settling their accounts, made a fierce assault on this unfortunate people in Castile and Aragon, breaking into their houses, violating their most private sanctuaries, scattering their costly collections and furniture, and consigning the wretched proprietors to indiscriminate massacre, without regard to sex or age.<sup>15</sup>

In this crisis, the only remedy left to the Jews was a real or feigned conversion to Christianity. St. Vincent Ferrier, a Dominican of Valencia, performed such a

\* Sir Walter Scott, with his usual discernment, has availed himself of these opposite traits in his portraits of Rebecca and Isaac in *Ivanhoe*, in which he seems to have contrasted the lights and shadows of the Jewish character. The humiliating state of the Jews, however, exhibited in this romance, affords no analogy to their social condition in Spain; as is evinced not merely by their wealth, which was also conspicuous in the English Jews, but by the high degree of civilization, and even political consequence, which, notwithstanding the occasional ebullitions of popular prejudice, they were permitted to reach there.

<sup>14</sup> Calumnies of this kind were current all over Europe. The English reader will call to mind

the monkish fiction of the little Christian,

"Slain with cursed Jewes, as it is notable,"

singing most devoutly after his throat was cut from ear to ear, in Chaucer's *Prioress's Tale*. See another instance in the old Scottish ballad of "The Jew's Daughter" in Percy's "*Reliques of Ancient Poetry*."

<sup>15</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 43.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 186, 187.—In 1391, 5000 Jews were sacrificed to the popular fury, and, according to Mariana, no less than 10,000 had perished from the same cause in Navarre about sixty years before. See tom. i. p. 912.

quantity of miracles, in furtherance of this purpose, as might have excited the envy of any saint in the Calendar; and these, aided by his eloquence, are said to have changed the hearts of no less than thirty-five thousand of the race of Israel, which doubtless must be reckoned the greatest miracle of all.<sup>16</sup>

The legislative enactments of this period, and still more under John the Second, during the first half of the fifteenth century, were uncommonly severe upon the Jews. While they were prohibited from mingling freely with the Christians, and from exercising the professions for which they were best qualified,<sup>17</sup> their residence was restricted within certain prescribed limits of the cities which they inhabited; and they were not only debarred from their usual luxury of ornament in dress, but were held up to public scorn, as it were, by some peculiar badge or emblem embroidered on their garments.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>16</sup> According to Mariana, the restoration of sight to the blind, feet to the lame, even life to the dead, were miracles of ordinary occurrence with St. Vincent. (*Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 229, 230.) The age of miracles had probably ceased by Isabella's time, or the Inquisition might have been spared. Nic. Antonio, in his notice of the life and labours of this Dominican (*Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. pp. 205, 207), states that he preached his inspired sermons in his vernacular Valencian dialect to audiences of French, English, and Italians indiscriminately, who all understood him perfectly well; "a circumstance," says Dr. McCrie, in his valuable "History of the Progress and Suppression of the Reformation in Spain" (Edinburgh, 1829), "which, if it prove anything, proves that the hearers of St. Vincent possessed more miraculous powers than himself, and that they should have been canonized, rather than the preacher." p. 87, note.

<sup>17</sup> They were interdicted from the callings of vintners, grocers, taverners, especially of apothecaries, and of physicians and nurses. *Ordenanças Reales*, lib. 8, tit. 3, leyes 11, 15, 18.

<sup>18</sup> No law was more frequently reiterated than that prohibiting the Jews from acting as stewards of the nobility, or farmers and collectors of the public rents. The repetition of the law shows to what extent this people had engrossed what little was known of financial science in that day. For the multiplied enactments in Castile against them, see *Ordenanças Reales* (lib. 8, tit. 3). For the regulations respecting the Jews in Aragon, many of them oppressive, particularly at the commencement of the fifteenth century, see *Fueros y Observancias del Reyno de Aragon* (Zaragoza, 1667), tom. i. fol. 6.—*Marca Hispanica*, pp. 1416, 1433.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iii. lib. 12, cap. 45.

Such was the condition of the Spanish Jews at the accession of Ferdinand and Isabella. The *new Christians*, or *converts*, as those who had renounced the faith of their fathers were denominated, were occasionally preferred to high ecclesiastical dignities, which they illustrated by their integrity and learning. They were intrusted with municipal offices in the various cities of Castile; and, as their wealth furnished an obvious resource for repairing, by way of marriage, the decayed fortunes of the nobility, there was scarcely a family of rank in the land whose blood had not been contaminated, at some period or other, by mixture with the *mala sangre*, as it came afterwards to be termed, of the house of Judah; an ignominious stain, which no time has been deemed sufficient wholly to purge away.<sup>19</sup>

Notwithstanding the show of prosperity enjoyed by the converted Jews, their situation was far from secure. Their proselytism had been too sudden to be generally sincere; and, as the task of dissimulation was too irksome to be permanently endured, they gradually became less circumspect, and exhibited the scandalous spectacle of apostates returning to wallow in the ancient mire of Judaism. The clergy, especially the Dominicans, who seem to have inherited the quick scent for heresy which distinguished their frantic founder, were not slow in sounding the alarm; and the superstitious populace, easily roused to acts of violence in the name of religion, began to exhibit the most tumultuous movements, and actually massacred the constable of Castile in an attempt to suppress them at Jaen, the year preceding the accession of Isabella. After this

<sup>19</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 43.—Llorente, Hist. de l'Inquisition, préf. p. 26.—A manuscript entitled *Tizon de España* (Brand of Spain), tracing up many a noble pedigree to a Jewish or Mahometan root, obtained a circulation, to the great scandal of the country, which the efforts of the government, combined with those

of the Inquisition, have not been wholly able to suppress. Copies of it, however, are now rarely to be met with. (Doblado, Letters from Spain (London, 1822), let. 2.) Clemencin notices two works with this title, one as ancient as Ferdinand and Isabella's time, and both written by bishops. Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. p. 125.

period, the complaints against the Jewish heresy became still more clamorous, and the throne was repeatedly beset with petitions to devise some effectual means for its extirpation.<sup>20</sup> (1478.)

A chapter of the Chronicle of the Curate of Los Palacios, who lived at this time in Andalusia, where the Jews seem to have most abounded, throws considerable light on the real as well as pretended motives of the subsequent persecution. "This accursed race," he says, speaking of the Israelites, "were either unwilling to bring their children to be baptized, or, if they did, they washed away the stain on returning home. They dressed their stews and other dishes with oil, instead of lard; abstained from pork; kept the passover; ate meat in Lent; and sent oil to replenish the lamps of their synagogues; with many other abominable ceremonies of their religion. They entertained no respect for monastic life, and frequently profaned the sanctity of religious houses by the violation or seduction of their inmates. They were an exceedingly politic and ambitious people, engrossing the most lucrative municipal offices, and preferred to gain their livelihood by traffic, in which they made exorbitant gains, rather than by manual labour or mechanical arts. They considered themselves in the hands of the Egyptians, whom it was a merit to deceive and plunder. By their wicked contrivances they amassed great wealth, and thus were often able to ally themselves by marriage with noble Christian families."<sup>21</sup>

It is easy to discern, in this medley of credulity and superstition, the secret envy entertained by the Castilians of the superior skill and industry of their Hebrew brethren, and of the superior riches which these qualities secured to them; and it is impossible not to suspect that the zeal of the most orthodox was considerably sharpened by worldly motives.

<sup>20</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 479.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*,

cos, part. ii. cap. 77.

<sup>21</sup> *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 43.

Be that as it may, the cry against the Jewish abominations now became general. Among those most active in raising it were Alfonso de Ojeda, a Dominican, prior of the monastery of St. Paul in Seville, and Diego de Merlo, assistant of that city, who should not be defrauded of the meed of glory to which they are justly entitled by their exertions for the establishment of the modern Inquisition. These persons, after urging on the sovereigns the alarming extent to which the Jewish leprosy prevailed in Andalusia, loudly called for the introduction of the Holy Office, as the only effectual means of healing it. In this they were vigorously supported by Niccolò Franco, the papal nuncio then residing at the court of Castile. Ferdinand listened with complacency to a scheme which promised an ample source of revenue in the confiscations it involved. But it was not so easy to vanquish Isabella's aversion to measures so repugnant to the natural benevolence and magnanimity of her character. Her scruples, indeed, were founded rather on sentiment than reason, the exercise of which was little countenanced in matters of faith in that day, when the dangerous maxim, that the end justifies the means, was universally received, and learned theologians seriously disputed whether it were permitted to make peace with the infidel, and even whether promises made to them were obligatory on Christians.<sup>23</sup>

The policy of the Roman church, at that time, was not

<sup>23</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 77.—Zúñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 386.—*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. p. 44.—Llorente, tom. i. pp. 143, 145.—Some writers are inclined to view the Spanish Inquisition, in its origin, as little else than a political engine. Guizot remarks of the tribunal, in one of his lectures, "Elle contenait en germe ce qu'elle est devenue; mais elle ne l'était pas en commençant: elle fut d'abord plus politique que religieuse, et

destinée à maintenir l'ordre plutôt qu'à défendre la foi." (*Cours d'Histoire moderne* (Paris 1828—30), tom. v. lec. 11.) This statement is inaccurate in reference to Castile, where the facts do not warrant us in imputing any other motive for its adoption than religious zeal. The general character of Ferdinand, as well as the circumstances under which it was introduced into Aragon, may justify the inference of a more worldly policy in its establishment there.

only shown in its perversion of some of the most obvious principles of morality, but in the discouragement of all free inquiry in its disciples, whom it instructed to rely implicitly in matters of conscience on their spiritual advisers. The artful institution of the tribunal of confession, established with this view, brought, as it were, the whole Christian world at the feet of the clergy, who, far from being always animated by the meek spirit of the gospel, almost justified the reproach of Voltaire, that confessors have been the source of most of the violent measures pursued by princes of the Catholic faith.<sup>23</sup>

Isabella's serious temper, as well as early education, naturally disposed her to religious influences. Notwithstanding the independence exhibited by her in all secular affairs, in her own spiritual concerns she uniformly testified the deepest humility, and deferred too implicitly to what she deemed the superior sagacity, or sanctity, of her ghostly counsellors. An instance of this humility may be worth recording. When Fray Fernando de Talavera, afterwards archbishop of Granada, who had been appointed confessor to the queen, attended her for the first time in that capacity, he continued seated, after she had knelt down to make her confession, which drew from her the remark, "that it was usual for both parties to kneel." "No," replied the priest, "this is God's tribunal; I act here as his minister, and it is fitting that I should keep my seat, while your highness kneels before me." Isabella, far from taking umbrage at the ecclesiastic's arrogant demeanour, complied with all humility, and was afterwards heard to say, "This is the confessor that I wanted."<sup>24</sup>

<sup>23</sup> *Essai sur les Mœurs et l'Esprit des Nations*, chap. 176.

<sup>24</sup> Siguença, *Historia de la Orden de San Gerónimo*, apud *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Ilust. 13.—This anecdote is more characteristic of the order than the individual. Oviedo has given a brief

notice of this prelate, whose virtues raised him from the humblest condition to the highest posts in the church, and gained him, to quote that writer's words, the appellation of "el sancto, ó el buen arzobispo en toda España." *Quincuagenas*, MS., dial. de Talavera.



Well had it been for the land, if the queen's conscience had always been intrusted to the keeping of persons of such exemplary piety as Talavera. Unfortunately, in her early days, during the lifetime of her brother Henry, that charge was committed to a Dominican monk, Thomas de Torquemada, a native of Old Castile, subsequently raised to the rank of prior of Santa Cruz in Segovia, and condemned to infamous immortality by the signal part which he performed in the tragedy of the Inquisition. This man, who concealed more pride under his monastic weeds than might have furnished forth a convent of his order, was one of that class with whom zeal passes for religion, and who testify their zeal by a fiery persecution of those whose creed differs from their own; who compensate for their abstinence from sensual indulgence by giving scope to those deadlier vices of the heart, pride, bigotry, and intolerance, which are no less opposed to virtue, and are far more extensively mischievous to society. This personage had earnestly laboured to infuse into Isabella's young mind, to which his situation as her confessor gave him such ready access, the same spirit of fanaticism that glowed in his own. Fortunately this was greatly counteracted by her sound understanding and natural kindness of heart. Torquemada urged her, or indeed, as is stated by some, extorted a promise, that, "should she ever come to the throne, she would devote herself to the extirpation of heresy, for the glory of God, and the exaltation of the Catholic faith."<sup>25</sup> The time was now arrived when this fatal promise was to be discharged.

It is due to Isabella's fame to state thus much in palliation of the unfortunate error into which she was led by her misguided zeal; an error so grave, that, like a vein in some noble piece of statuary, it gives a sinister expression to her otherwise unblemished character.<sup>26</sup> It was not

Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 323.

<sup>26</sup> The uniform tenderness with which the most liberal Spanish

until the queen had endured the repeated importunities of the clergy, particularly of those reverend persons in whom she most confided, seconded by the arguments of Ferdinand, that she consented to solicit from the pope a bull for the introduction of the Holy Office into Castile. Sixtus the Fourth, who at that time filled the pontifical chair, easily discerning the sources of wealth and influence which this measure opened to the court of Rome, readily complied with the petition of the sovereigns, and expedited a bull bearing date November 1st, 1478, authorizing them to appoint two or three ecclesiastics, inquisitors for the detection and suppression of heresy throughout their dominions.<sup>27</sup>

The queen, however, still averse to violent measures, suspended the operation of the ordinance until a more lenient policy had been first tried. By her command, accordingly, the archbishop of Seville, Cardinal Mendoza, drew up a catechism exhibiting the different points of the Catholic faith, and instructed the clergy throughout his diocese to spare no pains in illuminating the benighted Israelites, by means of friendly exhortation and a candid exposition of the true principles of Christianity.<sup>28</sup> How

writers of the present comparatively enlightened age, as Marina, Llorente, Clemencin, etc., regard the memory of Isabella, affords an honourable testimony to the unsuspected integrity of her motives. Even in relation to the Inquisition, her countrymen would seem willing to draw a veil over her errors, or to excuse her by charging them on the age in which she lived.

<sup>27</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 77. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 43. — Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. pp. 143—146. — Much discrepancy exists in the narratives of Pulgar, Bernaldez, and other contemporary writers, in reference to the era of the establishment of the modern

Inquisition. I have followed Llorente, whose chronological accuracy, here and elsewhere, rests on the most authentic documents.

<sup>28</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., ubi supra. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 77. — I find no contemporary authority for imputing to Cardinal Mendoza an active agency in the establishment of the Inquisition, as is claimed for him by later writers, and especially his kinsman and biographer, the canon Salazar de Mendoza. (*Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, lib. 1, cap. 49. — *Monarquía*, tom. i. p. 336.) The conduct of this eminent minister in this affair seems, on the contrary, to have been equally politic and humane. The imputation of bigotry

far the spirit of these injunctions was complied with, amid the excitement then prevailing, may be reasonably doubted. There could be little doubt, however, that a report, made two years later by a commission of ecclesiastics with Alfonso de Ojeda at its head, respecting the progress of the reformation, would be necessarily unfavourable to the Jews.<sup>29</sup> In consequence of this report the papal provisions were enforced by the nomination, on the 17th of September, 1480, of two Dominican monks as inquisitors, with two other ecclesiastics, the one as assessor, and the other as procurator fiscal, with instructions to proceed at once to Seville and enter on the duties of their office. Orders were also issued to the authorities of the city to support the inquisitors by all the aid in their power. But the new institution, which has since become the miserable boast of the Castilians, proved so distasteful to them in its origin that they refused any co-operation with its ministers, and indeed opposed such delays and embarrassments that, during the first years, it can scarcely be said to have obtained a footing in any other places in Andalusia than those belonging to the crown.<sup>30</sup>

On the 2nd of January, 1481, the court commenced operations by the publication of an edict, followed by several others, requiring all persons to aid in apprehending and accusing all such as they might know or suspect to be guilty of heresy,<sup>31</sup> and holding out the illusory promise

was not cast upon it until the age when bigotry was esteemed a virtue.

<sup>29</sup> In the interim, a caustic publication by a Jew appeared, containing strictures on the conduct of the administration, and even on the Christian religion, which was controverted at length by Talavera, afterwards archbishop of Granada. The scandal occasioned by this ill-timed production undoubtedly contributed to exacerbate the popular odium against the Israelites.

<sup>30</sup> It is worthy of remark that the famous cortes of Toledo, assembled but a short time previous to the above-mentioned ordinances, and which enacted several oppressive laws in relation to the Jews, made no allusion whatever to the proposed establishment of a tribunal which was to be armed with such terrific powers.

<sup>31</sup> This ordinance, in which Llorente discerns the first regular encroachment of the new tribunal on the civil jurisdiction, was aimed partly at the Andalusian nobility,

of absolution to such as should confess their errors within a limited period. As every mode of accusation, even anonymous, was invited, the number of victims multiplied so fast that the tribunal found it convenient to remove its sittings from the convent of St. Paul, within the city, to the spacious fortress of Triana, in the suburbs.<sup>32</sup>

The presumptive proofs by which the charge of Judaism was established against the accused are so curious that a few of them may deserve notice. It was considered good evidence of the fact, if the prisoner wore better clothes or cleaner linen on the Jewish sabbath than on other days of the week; if he had no fire in his house the preceding evening; if he sat at table with Jews, or ate the meat of animals slaughtered by their hands, or drank a certain beverage held in much estimation by them; if he washed a corpse in warm water, or when dying turned his face to the wall; or, finally, if he gave Hebrew names to his children,—a provision most whimsically cruel, since, by a law of Henry the Second, he was prohibited under severe penalties from giving them Christian names. He must have found it difficult to extricate himself from the horns of this dilemma.<sup>33</sup> Such are a few of the circumstances, some of them purely accidental in their nature, others the result of early habit, which might well have continued after a sincere conversion to Christianity, and all of them

who afforded a shelter to the Jewish fugitives. Llorente has fallen into the error, more than once, of speaking of the count of Arcos, and marquis of Cadiz, as separate persons. The possessor of both titles was Rodrigo Ponce de Leon, who inherited the former of them from his father. The latter (which he afterwards made so illustrious in the Moorish wars) was conferred on him by Henry IV., being derived from the city of that name, which had been usurped from the crown.

<sup>32</sup> The historian of Seville quotes the Latin inscription on the portal of the edifice in which the sittings of the dread tribunal were held. Its concluding apostrophe to the Deity is one that the persecuted might join in, as heartily as their oppressors: "Exurge, Domine; judica causam tuam; capite nobis vulpes." Zúñiga, *Annales de Seville*, p. 389.

<sup>33</sup> *Ordenanças Reales*, lib. 8, tit. 3, ley 26.

trivial, on which capital accusations were to be alleged, and even satisfactorily established.<sup>34</sup>

The inquisitors, adopting the wily and tortuous policy of the ancient tribunal, proceeded with a despatch which shows that they could have paid little deference even to this affectation of legal form. On the sixth day of January six convicts suffered at the stake. Seventeen more were executed in March, and a still greater number in the month following; and by the 4th of November in the same year no less than two hundred and ninety-eight individuals had been sacrificed in the *autos da fe* of Seville. Besides these, the mouldering remains of many, who had been tried and convicted after their death, were torn up from their graves, with a hyena-like ferocity which has disgraced no other court, Christian or Pagan, and condemned to the common funeral pile. This was prepared on a spacious stone scaffold, erected in the suburbs of the city, with the statues of four prophets attached to the corners, to which the unhappy sufferers were bound for the sacrifice, and which the worthy Curate of Los Palacios celebrates with much complacency as the spot "where heretics were burnt, and ought to burn as long as any can be found."<sup>35</sup>

Many of the convicts were persons estimable for learning and probity; and among these three clergymen are named, together with other individuals filling judicial or high municipal stations. The sword of justice was ob-

<sup>34</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*. tom. i. pp. 153—159.

<sup>35</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 44.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. p. 160.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 164.—The language of Bernaldez as applied to the four statutes of the *quemadero*, "*en que los quemavan*," is so equivocal that it has led to some doubts whether he meant to assert that the persons to

be burnt were inclosed in the statues or fastened to them. Llorente's subsequent examination has led him to discard the first horrible supposition, which realized the fabled cruelty of Phalaris.—This monument of fanaticism continued to disgrace Seville till 1810, when it was removed in order to make room for the construction of a battery against the French.

served, in particular, to strike at the wealthy, the least pardonable offenders in times of proscription.

The plague which desolated Seville this year, sweeping off fifteen thousand inhabitants, as if in token of the wrath of Heaven at these enormities, did not palsy for a moment the arm of the Inquisition, which, adjourning to Aracena, continued as indefatigable as before. A similar persecution went forward in other parts of the province of Andalusia; so that within the same year, 1481, the number of the sufferers was computed at two thousand burnt alive, a still greater number in effigy, and seventeen thousand *reconciled*; a term which must not be understood by the reader to signify anything like a pardon or amnesty, but only the commutation of a capital sentence for inferior penalties, as fines, civil incapacity, very generally total confiscation of property, and not unfrequently imprisonment for life.<sup>36</sup>

The Jews were astounded by the bolt which had fallen so unexpectedly upon them. Some succeeded in making their escape to Granada, others to France, Germany, or Italy, where they appealed from the decisions of the Holy Office to the sovereign pontiff.<sup>37</sup> Sixtus the Fourth appears for a moment to have been touched with something

<sup>36</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 164.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 44.—Mariana, lib. 24, cap. 17.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, ubi supra.—L. Marineo diffuses the two thousand capital executions over several years. He sums up the various severities of the Holy Office in the following gentle terms: "The church, who is the mother of mercy and the fountain of charity, content with the imposition of penances, generously accords life to many who do not deserve it; while those who persist obstinately in their errors, after being imprisoned on the testimony of trustworthy witnesses, she causes to be put to the torture, and condemned

to the flames. Some miserably perish, bewailing their errors, and invoking the name of Christ, while others call upon that of Moses. Many, again, who sincerely repent, she, notwithstanding the heinousness of their transgressions, *mercely sentences to perpetual imprisonment.*" (1) Such were the tender mercies of the Spanish Inquisition.

<sup>37</sup> Bernaldez states that guards were posted at the gates of the city of Seville in order to prevent the emigration of the Jewish inhabitants, which indeed was forbidden under pain of death. The tribunal, however, had greater terrors for them, and many succeeded in effecting their escape. *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 44.

like compunction ; for he rebuked the intemperate zeal of the inquisitors, and even menaced them with deprivation. But these feelings, it would seem, were but transient ; for in 1483 we find the same pontiff quieting the scruples of Isabella respecting the appropriation of the confiscated property, and encouraging both sovereigns to proceed in the great work of purification, by an audacious reference to the example of Jesus Christ, who, says he, consolidated his kingdom on earth by the destruction of idolatry ; and he concludes with imputing their successes in the Moorish war, upon which they had then entered, to their zeal for the faith, and promising them the like in future. In the course of the same year he expedited two briefs, appointing Thomas de Torquemada inquisitor-general of Castile and Aragon, and clothing him with full powers to frame a new constitution for the Holy Office. (Aug. 2 and Oct. 17, 1483.) This was the origin of that terrible tribunal, the Spanish or Modern Inquisition, familiar to most readers whether of history or romance, which for three centuries has extended its iron sway over the dominions of Spain and Portugal.<sup>38</sup> Without going into details respecting the organization of its various courts, which gradually swelled to thirteen during the present reign, I shall endeavour to exhibit the principles which regulated their proceedings, as deduced in part from the code digested under Torquemada, and partly from the practice which obtained during his supremacy.<sup>39</sup>

<sup>38</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 164. — Zuñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 396. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 77. — Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. lib. 18, cap. 17. — Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, lib. 2, tit. 2, cap. 2. — Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. pp. 163—173.

<sup>39</sup> Over these subordinate tribunals Ferdinand erected a court of supervision, with appellate jurisdiction, under the name of Council

of the Supreme, consisting of the grand inquisitor as president, and three other ecclesiastics, two of them doctors of law. The principal purpose of this new creation was to secure the interest of the crown in the confiscated property, and to guard against the encroachment of the Inquisition on secular jurisdiction. The expedient, however, wholly failed, because most of the questions brought before this court were determined by the

Edicts were ordered to be published annually, on the first two Sundays in Lent, throughout the churches, enjoining it as a sacred duty on all who knew or suspected another to be guilty of heresy to lodge information against him before the Holy Office; and the ministers of religion were instructed to refuse absolution to such as hesitated to comply with this, although the suspected person might stand in the relation of parent, child, husband, or wife. All accusations, anonymous as well as signed, were admitted; it being only necessary to specify the names of the witnesses, whose testimony was taken down in writing by a secretary, and afterwards read to them, which, unless the inaccuracies were so gross as to force themselves upon their attention, they seldom failed to confirm.<sup>40</sup>

The accused, in the mean time, whose mysterious disappearance was perhaps the only public evidence of his arrest, was conveyed to the secret chambers of the Inquisition, where he was jealously excluded from intercourse with all, save a priest of the Romish church and his jailer, both of whom might be regarded as the spies of the tribunal. In this desolate condition, the unfortunate man, cut off from external communication and all cheering sympathy or support, was kept for some time in ignorance even of the nature of the charges preferred against him, and at length, instead of the original process, was favoured

principles of the canon law, of which the grand inquisitor was to be sole interpreter, the others having only, as it was termed, a "consultative voice." Llorente, tom. i. pp. 173, 174.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 324.—Riol, *Informe*, apud *Semanario erudito*, tom. iii. pp. 156 et seq.

<sup>40</sup> Puigblanch, *Inquisition Unmasked*, vol. i. chap. 4.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 6, art. 1; chap. 9, art. 1, 2.—The witnesses were questioned in such general terms that they were even kept in ignorance of the particular

matter respecting which they were expected to testify. Thus, they were asked "if they knew anything which had been said or done contrary to the Catholic faith and the interests of the tribunal." Their answers often opened a new scent to the judges, and thus, in the language of Montanus, "brought more fishes into the inquisitors' holy angle." See Montanus, *Discovery and Playne Declaration of sundry subtill Practises of the Holy Inquisition of Spayne*, Eng. trans. (London, 1569), fol. 14.



only with extracts from the depositions of the witnesses, so garbled as to conceal every possible clue to their name and quality. With still greater unfairness, no mention whatever was made of such testimony as had arisen, in the course of the examination, in his own favour. Counsel was indeed allowed from a list presented by his judges. But this privilege availed little, since the parties were not permitted to confer together, and the advocate was furnished with no other sources of information than what had been granted to his client. To add to the injustice of these proceedings, every discrepancy in the statements of the witnesses was converted into a separate charge against the prisoner, who thus, instead of one crime, stood accused of several. This, taken in connection with the concealment of time, place, and circumstance in the accusations, created such embarrassment that, unless the accused was possessed of unusual acuteness and presence of mind, it was sure to involve him, in his attempts to explain, in inextricable contradiction.<sup>41</sup>

If the prisoner refused to confess his guilt, or, as was usual, was suspected of evasion or an attempt to conceal the truth, he was subjected to the torture. This, which was administered in the deepest vaults of the Inquisition, where the cries of the victim could fall on no ear save that of his tormentors, is admitted by the secretary of the Holy Office, who has furnished the most authentic report of its transactions, not to have been exaggerated in any of the numerous narratives which have dragged these subterranean horrors into light. If the intensity of pain extorted a confession from the sufferer, he was expected, if he survived, which did not always happen, to confirm it on the next day. Should he refuse to do this, his mutilated

<sup>41</sup> Limborch, *Inquisition*, book 4, chap. 20.—Montanus, *Inquisition of Spayne*, fol. 6—15.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom.

i. chap. 6, art. 1; chap. 9, art. 4—9.—Puigblanch, *Inquisition Unmasked*, vol. i. chap. 4.

members were condemned to a repetition of the same sufferings, until his obstinacy (it should rather have been termed his heroism) might be vanquished.<sup>42</sup> Should the rack, however, prove ineffectual to force a confession of his guilt, he was so far from being considered as having established his innocence, that, with a barbarity unknown to any tribunal where the torture has been admitted, and which of itself proves its utter incompetency to the ends it proposes, he was not unfrequently convicted on the depositions of the witnesses. At the conclusion of his mock trial, the prisoner was again returned to his dungeon, where, without the blaze of a single fagot to dispel the cold or illuminate the darkness of the long winter night, he was left in unbroken silence to await the doom which was to consign him to an ignominious death, or a life scarcely less ignominious.<sup>43</sup>

The proceedings of the tribunal, as I have stated them, were plainly characterized throughout by the most flagrant injustice and inhumanity to the accused. Instead of presuming his innocence until his guilt had been established, it acted on exactly the opposite principle. Instead of affording him the protection accorded by every other judicature, and especially demanded in his forlorn situation, it used the most insidious arts to circumvent and to

<sup>42</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 9, art. 7.—By a subsequent regulation of Philip II., the repetition of torture in the same process was strictly prohibited to the inquisitors. But they, making use of a sophism worthy of the arch-fiend himself, contrived to evade this law, by pretending, after each new infliction, that they had only suspended, and not terminated, the torture!

<sup>43</sup> Montanus, *Inquisition of Spayne*, fol. 24 et seq.—Limborch, *Inquisition*, vol. ii. chap. 29.—Puigblanch, *Inquisition Unmasked*, vol. i. chap. 4.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, ubi supra.—I shall

spare the reader the description of the various modes of torture, the rack, fire, and pulley, practised by the inquisitors, which have been so often detailed in the doleful narratives of such as have had the fortune to escape with life from the fangs of the tribunal. If we are to believe Llorente, these barbarities have not been decreed for a long time. Yet some recent statements are at variance with this assertion. See, among others, the celebrated adventurer Van Halen's "Narrative of his Imprisonment in the Dungeons of the Inquisition at Madrid, and his Escape, in 1817—18."

crush him. He had no remedy against malice or misapprehension on the part of his accusers, or the witnesses against him, who might be his bitterest enemies; since they were never revealed to, nor confronted with, the prisoner, nor subjected to a cross-examination, which can best expose error or wilful collusion in the evidence.<sup>44</sup> Even the poor forms of justice recognized in this court might be readily dispensed with, as its proceedings were impenetrably shrouded from the public eye by the appalling oath of secrecy imposed on all, whether functionaries, witnesses, or prisoners, who entered within its precincts. The last and not the least odious feature of the whole was the connection established between the condemnation of the accused and the interests of his judges; since the confiscations, which were the uniform penalties of heresy,<sup>45</sup> were not permitted to flow into the royal exchequer until they had first discharged the expenses, whether in the shape of salaries or otherwise, incident to the Holy Office.<sup>46</sup>

<sup>44</sup> The prisoner had indeed the right of challenging any witness on the ground of personal enmity. (Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 9, art. 10.) But as he was kept in ignorance of the names of the witnesses employed against him, and as, even if he conjectured right, the degree of enmity competent to set aside testimony was to be determined by his judges, it is evident that his privilege of challenge was wholly nugatory.

<sup>45</sup> Confiscation had long been decreed as the punishment of convicted heretics by the statutes of Castile. (*Ordenanças Reales*, lib. 8, tit. 4.) The avarice of the present system, however, is exemplified by the fact that those who confessed and sought absolution within the brief term of grace allowed by the inquisitors from the publication of their edict were liable to arbitrary fines; and those who confessed after that period escaped with nothing short of confiscation.

Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. pp. 176, 177.

<sup>46</sup> *Ibid.*, tom. i. p. 216.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 324.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. i. fol. 337.—It is easy to discern, in every part of the odious scheme of the Inquisition, the contrivance of the monks, a class of men cut off by their profession from the usual sympathies of social life, and who, accustomed to the tyranny of the confessional, aimed at establishing the same jurisdiction over thoughts which secular tribunals have wisely confined to actions. Time, instead of softening, gave increased harshness to the features of the new system. The most humane provisions were constantly evaded in practice; and the toils for ensnaring the victim were so ingeniously multiplied that few, very few, were permitted to escape without some censure. Not more than one person, says Llorente, in one or perhaps two thousand processes, previous to

The last scene in this dismal tragedy was the *act of faith* (auto da fe), the most imposing spectacle, probably, which has been witnessed since the ancient Roman triumph, and which, as intimated by a Spanish writer, was intended, somewhat profanely, to represent the terrors of the Day of Judgment.<sup>47</sup> The proudest grandees of the land, on this occasion, putting on the sable livery of familiars of the Holy Office and bearing aloft its banners, condescended to act as the escort of its ministers; while the ceremony was not unfrequently countenanced by the royal presence. It should be stated, however, that neither of these acts of condescension, or, more properly, humiliation, was witnessed until a period posterior to the present reign. The effect was further heightened by the concourse of ecclesiastics in their sacerdotal robes, and the pompous ceremonial which the church of Rome knows so well how to display on fitting occasions, and which was intended to consecrate, as it were, this bloody sacrifice by the authority of a religion which has expressly declared that it desires mercy and not sacrifice.<sup>48</sup>

the time of Philip III., received entire absolution. So that it came to be proverbial that all who were not roasted were at least singed.

“Devant l’Inquisition, quand on vient à jubé,  
Si l’on ne sort rôti, l’on sort au moins flambé.”

<sup>47</sup> Montanus, *Inquisition of Spayne*, fol. 46.—Puigblanch, *Inquisition Unmasked*, vol. i. chap. 4.—Every reader of Tacitus and Juvenal will remember how early the Christians were condemned to endure the penalty of fire. Perhaps the earliest instance of burning to death for heresy in modern times occurred under the reign of Robert of France, in the early part of the eleventh century. (Sismondi, *Hist. des Français*, tom. iv. chap. 4.) Paramo, as usual, finds au-

thority for inquisitorial autos da fe, where one would least expect it, in the New Testament. Among other examples, he quotes the remark of James and John, who, when the village of Samaria refused to admit Christ within its walls, would have called down fire from heaven to consume its inhabitants. “Lo!” says Paramo, “fire, the punishment of heretics; for the Samaritans were the heretics of those times.” (De Origine Inquisitionis, lib. 1, tit. 3, cap. 5.) The worthy father omits to add the impressive rebuke of our Saviour to his over-zealous disciples: “Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. The Son of man is not come to destroy men’s lives, but to save them.”

<sup>48</sup> Puigblanch, vol. i. chap. 4.—The inquisitors, after the celebration of an auto da fe at Guadaloupe,

The most important actors in the scene were the unfortunate convicts, who were now disgorged for the first time from the dungeons of the tribunal. They were clad in coarse woollen garments, styled *san benitos*, brought close round the neck and descending like a frock down to the knees.<sup>49</sup> These were of a yellow colour, embroidered with a scarlet cross, and well garnished with figures of devils and flames of fire, which, typical of the heretic's destiny hereafter, served to make him more odious in the eyes of the superstitious multitude.<sup>50</sup> The greater part of the sufferers were condemned to be *reconciled*, the manifold meanings of which soft phrase have been already explained. Those who were to be *relaxed*, as it was called, were delivered over, as impenitent heretics, to the secular arm, in order to expiate their offence by the most painful of deaths, with the consciousness, still more painful, that they were to leave behind them names branded with infamy, and families involved in irretrievable ruin.<sup>51</sup>

in 1485, wishing probably to justify these bloody executions in the eyes of the people, who had not yet become familiar with them, solicited a sign from the Virgin (whose shrine in that place is noted all over Spain) in testimony of her approbation of the Holy Office. Their petition was answered by such a profusion of miracles that Dr. Francis Sanctius de la Fuente, who acted as scribe on the occasion, became out of breath, and, after recording sixty, gave up in despair, unable to keep pace with their marvellous rapidity. Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, lib. 2, tit. 2, cap. 3.

<sup>49</sup> *San benito*, according to Llorente (tom. i. p. 127), is a corruption of *saco bendito*, being the name given to the dresses worn by penitents previously to the thirteenth century.

<sup>50</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 9, art. 16.—Puigblanch, *Inquisition Unmasked*,

vol. i. chap. 4.—Voltaire remarks (*Essai sur les Mœurs*, chap. 140) that "An Asiatic, arriving at Madrid on the day of an *auto da fe*, would doubt whether it were a festival, religious celebration, sacrifice, or massacre: it is all of them. They reproach Montezuma with sacrificing human captives to the gods. What would he have said had he witnessed an *auto da fe*?"

<sup>51</sup> The government, at least, cannot be charged with remissness in promoting this. I find two ordinances in the royal collection of *pragmáticas*, dated in September, 1501 (there must be some error in the date of one of them), inhibiting, under pain of confiscation of property, such as had been *reconciled*, and their children by the mother's side, and grandchildren by the father's, from holding any office in the privy council, courts of justice, or in the municipalities, or any other place of trust

It is remarkable that a system so monstrous as that of the Inquisition, presenting the most effectual barrier, probably, that was ever opposed to the progress of knowledge, should have been revived at the close of the fifteenth century, when the light of civilization was rapidly advancing over every part of Europe. It is more remarkable that it should have occurred in Spain, at this time under a government which had displayed great religious independence on more than one occasion, and which had paid uniform regard to the rights of its subjects and pursued a generous policy in reference to their intellectual culture. Where, we are tempted to ask, when we behold the persecution of an innocent, industrious people for the crime of adhesion to the faith of their ancestors,—where was the charity which led the old Castilian to reverence valour and virtue in an infidel, though an enemy,—where the chivalrous self-devotion which led an Aragonese monarch, three centuries before, to give away his life in defence of the persecuted sectaries of Provence,—where the independent spirit which prompted the Castilian nobles, during the very last reign, to reject with scorn the purposed interference of the pope himself in their concerns, that they were now reduced to bow their necks to a few frantic priests, the members of an order which, in Spain at least, was quite as conspicuous for ignorance as intolerance? True, indeed, the Castilians, and the Aragonese subsequently still more, gave such evidence of their aversion to the institution, that it can hardly be believed the clergy would have succeeded in fastening it upon them, had they

or honour. They were also excluded from the vocations of notaries, surgeons, and apothecaries. (*Pragmáticas del Reyno*, fol. 5, 6.) This was visiting the sins of the fathers, to an extent unparalleled in modern legislation. The sovereigns might find a precedent in a law of Sylla, excluding the children

of the proscribed Romans from political honours; thus indignantly noticed by Sallust: "*Quin solus omnium, post memoriam hominum, supplicia in post futuros composuit; quis prius injuria, quam vta cuncta esset.*" *Hist. Fragmenta*, lib. 1.

not availed themselves of the popular prejudices against the Jews.<sup>52</sup> Providence, however, permitted that the sufferings thus heaped on the heads of this unfortunate people should be requited in full measure to the nation that inflicted them. The fires of the Inquisition, which were lighted exclusively for the Jews, were destined eventually to consume their oppressors. They were still more deeply avenged in the moral influence of this tribunal, which, eating like a pestilent canker into the heart of the monarchy, at the very time when it was exhibiting a most goodly promise, left it at length a bare and sapless trunk.

Notwithstanding the persecutions under Torquemada were confined almost wholly to the Jews, his activity was such as to furnish abundant precedent, in regard to forms of proceeding, for his successors; if, indeed, the word forms may be applied to the conduct of trials so summary that the tribunal of Toledo alone, under the superintendence of two inquisitors, disposed of three thousand three hundred and twenty-seven processes in little more than a year.<sup>53</sup> The number of convicts was greatly swelled by the blunders of the Dominican monks, who acted as qualificators, or interpreters of what constituted heresy, and whose ignorance led them frequently to condemn, as heterodox, propositions actually derived from the fathers of the church. The prisoners for life, alone, became so numerous that it was necessary to assign them their own houses as the places of their incarceration.

The data for an accurate calculation of the number of

<sup>52</sup> The Aragonese, as we shall see hereafter, made a manly though ineffectual resistance, from the first, to the introduction of the Inquisition among them by Ferdinand. In Castile, its enormous abuses provoked the spirited interposition of the legislature at the commencement of the following reign. But it was then too late.

<sup>53</sup> 1485—6. (Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. p. 239.)—In Seville, with probably no greater apparatus, in 1482, 21,000 processes were disposed of. These were the first-fruits of the Jewish heresy, when Torquemada, although an inquisitor, had not the supreme control of the tribunal.

victims sacrificed by the Inquisition during this reign are not very satisfactory. From such as exist, however, Llorente has been led to the most frightful results. He computes that during the eighteen years of Torquemada's ministry there were no less than 10,220 burnt, 6860 condemned and burnt in effigy as absent or dead, and 97,321 reconciled by various other penances; affording an average of more than 6000 convicted persons annually.<sup>54</sup> In this enormous sum of human misery is not included the multitude of orphans who, from the confiscation of their paternal inheritance, were turned over to indigence and vice.<sup>55</sup> Many of the reconciled were afterwards sentenced as relapsed; and the Curate of Los Palacios expresses the charitable wish that "the whole accursed race of Jews, male and female, of twenty years of age and upwards, might be purified with fire and fagot!"<sup>56</sup>

The vast apparatus of the Inquisition involved so heavy an expenditure that a very small sum, comparatively, found its way into the exchequer, to counterbalance the great

<sup>54</sup> Llorente afterwards reduces this estimate to 8800 burnt, 96,504 otherwise punished; the diocese of Cuenca being comprehended in that of Murcia. (Tom. iv. p. 252.) Zurita says that, by 1520, the Inquisition of Seville had sentenced more than 4000 persons to be burnt, and 30,000 to other punishments. Another author, whom he quotes, carries up the estimate of the total condemned by this single tribunal, within the same term of time, to 100,000. *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 324.

<sup>55</sup> By an article of the primitive instructions, the inquisitors were required to set apart a small portion of the confiscated estates for the education and Christian nurture of minors, children of the condemned. Llorente says that, in the immense number of processes which he had occasion to consult, he met with no instance of their attention to the fate of these unfortunate orphans! *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i.

chap. 8.

<sup>56</sup> *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 44. —Torquemada waged war upon freedom of thought in every form. In 1490, he caused several Hebrew Bibles to be publicly burnt, and some time after, more than 6000 volumes of Oriental learning, on the imputation of Judaism, sorcery, or heresy, at the autos da fe of Salamanca, the very nursery of science. (Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 8, art. 5.) This may remind one of the similar sentence passed by Lope de Barrientos, another Dominican, about fifty years before, upon the books of the marquis of Villena. Fortunately for the dawning literature of Spain, Isabella did not, as was done by her successors, commit the censorship of the press to the judges of the Holy Office, notwithstanding such occasional assumption of power by the grand inquisitor.



detriment resulting to the state from the sacrifice of the most active and skilful part of its population. All temporal interests, however, were held light in comparison with the purgation of the land from heresy; and such augmentations as the revenue did receive, we are assured, were conscientiously devoted to pious purposes, and the Moorish war! <sup>57</sup>

The Roman see, during all this time, conducting itself with its usual duplicity, contrived to make a gainful traffic by the sale of dispensations from the penalties incurred by such as fell under the ban of the Inquisition, provided they were rich enough to pay for them, and afterwards revoking them, at the instance of the Castilian court. Meanwhile, the odium excited by the unsparing rigour of Torquemada raised up so many accusations against him that he was thrice compelled to send an agent to Rome to defend his cause before the pontiff; until, at length, Alexander the Sixth, in 1494, moved by these reiterated complaints, appointed four coadjutors, out of a pretended regard to the infirmities of his age, to share with him the burdens of his office. <sup>58</sup>

This personage, who is entitled to so high a rank among those who have been the authors of unmixed evil to their species, was permitted to reach a very old age, and to die quietly in his bed. Yet he lived in such constant apprehension of assassination, that he is said to have kept a reputed unicorn's horn always on his table, which was imagined to have the power of detecting and neutralizing poisons; while, for the more complete protection of his person, he was allowed an escort of fifty horse and two

<sup>57</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 77. — L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 164. — The prodigious desolation of the land may be inferred from the estimates, although somewhat discordant, of deserted houses in Andalusia. Garibay (*Compendio*, lib. 18, cap.

17) puts these at three thousand, Pulgar (*Reyes Católicos*, part. 2, cap. 77) at four L. Marineo, (*Cosas memorables*, fol. 164) as high as five.

<sup>58</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 7, art. 8; chap. 8, art. 6.

hundred foot in his progresses through the kingdom.<sup>59</sup>

This man's zeal was of such an extravagant character that it may almost shelter itself under the name of insanity. His history may be thought to prove that of all human infirmities, or rather vices, there is none productive of more extensive mischief to society than fanaticism. The opposite principle of atheism, which refuses to recognize the most important sanctions to virtue, does not necessarily imply any destitution of just moral perceptions, that is, of a power of discriminating between right and wrong, in its disciples. But fanaticism is so far subversive of the most established principles of morality, that, under the dangerous maxim, "For the advancement of the faith, all means are lawful," which Tasso has rightly, though perhaps undesignedly, derived from the spirits of hell,<sup>60</sup> it not only excuses but enjoins the commission of the most revolting crimes, as a sacred duty. The more repugnant, indeed, such crimes may be to natural feeling or public sentiment, the greater their merit, from the sacrifice which the commission of them involves. Many a bloody page of history attests the fact that fanaticism armed with power is the sorest evil which can befall a nation.

<sup>59</sup> Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 340.—Llorente, *Hist. del'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 8, art. 6.

<sup>60</sup> "Per la fè—il tutto lice." *Gerusalemme Liberata*, cant. 4, stanza 26.

---

Don Juan Antonio Llorente is the only writer who has succeeded in completely lifting the veil from the dread mysteries of the Inquisition. It is obvious how very few could be competent to this task, since the proceedings of the Holy Office were shrouded in such impenetrable secrecy that even the prisoners who were arraigned before it, as has been already stated, were kept in ignorance of their own processes. Even such of its functionaries as have at different times pretended to give its transactions to the world have confined themselves to an historical outline, with meagre notices of such parts of its internal discipline as might be safely disclosed to the public. Llorente was secretary to the tribunal of Madrid from 1790 to 1792. His official station consequently afforded him every facility for an acquaintance with the most recondite affairs of the Inquisition; and on its suppression at the close of 1808 he devoted several years to a careful investigation of the registers of the tribunals, both of the capital and the provinces, as well as of such other original

documents contained within their archives as had not hitherto been opened to the light of day. In the progress of his work he has anatomized the most odious features of the institution with unsparing severity; and his reflections are warmed with a generous and enlightened spirit, certainly not to have been expected in an ex-inquisitor. The arrangement of his immense mass of materials is indeed somewhat faulty, and the work might be recast in a more popular form, especially by means of a copious retrenchment. With all its subordinate defects, however, it is entitled to the credit of being the most, indeed the only, authentic history of the Modern Inquisition; exhibiting its minutest forms of practice, and the insidious policy by which they were directed, from the origin of the institution down to its temporary abolition. It well deserves to be studied, as the record of the most humiliating triumph which fanaticism has ever been able to obtain over human reason, and that, too, during the most civilized periods and in the most civilized portion of the world. The persecutions endured by the unfortunate author of the work prove that the embers of this fanaticism may be rekindled too easily, even in the present century.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### REVIEW OF THE POLITICAL AND INTELLECTUAL CONDITION OF THE SPANISH ARABS PREVIOUS TO THE WAR OF GRANADA.

Conquest of Spain by the Arabs.—Cordovan Empire.—High Civilization and Prosperity.—Its Dismemberment.—Kingdom of Granada.—Luxurious and Chivalrous Character.—Literature of the Spanish Arabs.—Progress in Science.—Historical Merits.—Useful Discoveries.—Poetry and Romance.—Influence on the Spaniards.

WE have now arrived at the commencement of the famous war of Granada, which terminated in the subversion of the Arabian empire in Spain, after it had subsisted for nearly eight centuries, and with the consequent restoration to the Castilian crown of the fairest portion of its ancient domain. In order to a better understanding of the character of the Spanish Arabs, or Moors, who exercised an important influence on that of their Christian neighbours, the present chapter will be devoted to a consideration of their previous history in the Peninsula, where they probably reached a higher degree of civilization than in any other part of the world.<sup>1</sup>

It is not necessary to dwell upon the causes of the brilliant successes of Mahometanism at its outset,—the dexterity with which, unlike all other religions, it was raised upon, not against, the principles and prejudices of preceding sects; the military spirit and discipline which it established among all classes, so that the multifarious nations who embraced it assumed the appearance of one vast, well-ordered camp;<sup>2</sup> the union of ecclesiastical with civil authority intrusted to the caliphs, which enabled them

<sup>1</sup> See Introduction, Section 1, Note 2, of this History.

<sup>2</sup> The Koran, in addition to the repeated assurances of Paradise to

to control opinions as absolutely as the Roman pontiffs in their most despotic hour;<sup>3</sup> or, lastly, the peculiar adaptation of the doctrines of Mahomet to the character of the wild tribes among whom they were preached.<sup>4</sup> It is sufficient to say that these latter, within a century after the coming of their apostle, having succeeded in establishing their religion over vast regions in Asia, and on the northern shores of Africa, arrived before the Straits of Gibraltar, which, though a temporary, were destined to prove an ineffectual bulwark for Christendom.

The causes which have been currently assigned for the invasion and conquest of Spain, even by the most credible

the martyr who falls in battle, contains the regulations of a precise military code. Military service in some shape or other is exacted from all. The terms to be prescribed to the enemy and the vanquished, the division of the spoil, the seasons of lawful truce, the conditions on which the comparatively small number of exemptions are permitted to remain at home, are accurately defined. (Sale's Koran, chap. 2, 8, 9, et alibi.) When the *alghed*, or Mahometan crusade, which, in its general design and immunities, bore a close resemblance to the Christian, was preached in the mosque, every true believer was bound to repair to the standard of his chief. "The holy war," says one of the early Saracen generals, "is the ladder of Paradise. The Apostle of God styled himself the son of the sword. He loved to repose in the shadow of banners and on the field of battle."

<sup>3</sup> The successors, caliphs or vicars, as they were styled, of Mahomet, represented both his spiritual and temporal authority. Their office involved almost equally ecclesiastical and military functions. It was their duty to lead the army in battle, and on the pilgrimage to Mecca. They were to preach a sermon and offer up public prayers in the mosques every Friday. Many of their prerogatives resemble those assumed anciently

by the popes. They conferred investitures on the Moslem princes by the symbol of a ring, a sword, or a standard. They complimented them with the titles of "defender of the faith," "column of religion," and the like. The proudest potentate held the bridle of their mules, and paid his homage by touching their threshold with his forehead. The authority of the caliphs was in this manner founded on opinion no less than on power; and their ordinances, however frivolous or iniquitous in themselves, being enforced, as it were, by a divine sanction, became laws which it was sacrilege to disobey. See D'Herbelot, *Bibliothèque Orientale* (La Haye, 1777—9), voce *Khalifah*.

<sup>4</sup> The character of the Arabs, before the introduction of Islam, like that of most rude nations, is to be gathered from their national songs and romances. The poems suspended at Mecca, familiar to us in the elegant version of Sir William Jones, and, still more, the recent translation of "Antar,"—a composition indeed of the age of Al Raschid, but wholly devoted to the primitive Bedouins,—present us with a lively picture of their peculiar habits, which, notwithstanding the influence of a temporary civilization, may be thought to bear great resemblance to those of their descendants at the present day.

modern historians, have scarcely any foundation in contemporary records. The true causes are to be found in the rich spoils offered by the Gothic monarchy, and in the thirst of enterprise in the Saracens, which their long-uninterrupted career of victory seems to have sharpened, rather than satisfied.<sup>5</sup> The fatal battle which terminated with the slaughter of King Roderic and the flower of his nobility was fought in the summer of 711, on a plain washed by the Guadalete near Xerez, about two leagues distant from Cadiz.<sup>6</sup> The Goths appear never to have

<sup>5</sup> Startling as it may be, there is scarcely a vestige of any of the particulars circumstantially narrated by the national historians (Mariana, Zurita, Abarca, Moret, etc.) as the immediate causes of the subversion of Spain, to be found in the chronicles of the period. No intimation of the persecution, or of the treason, of the two sons of Witiza is to be met with in any Spanish writer, as far as I know, until nearly two centuries after the conquest; none earlier than this, of the defection of archbishop Oppas during the fatal conflict near Xerez; and none, of the tragical amours of Roderic and the revenge of Count Julian, before the writers of the thirteenth century. Nothing, indeed, can be more jejune than the original narratives of the invasion. The continuation of the *Chronicon del Biclarense*, and the *Chronicon de Isidoro Pacense* or *de Beja*, which are contained in the voluminous collection of Florez (*España sagrada*, tom. vi. and viii.), afford the only histories contemporary with the event. Conde is mistaken in his assertion (*Dominacion de los Arabes*, Pról. p. vii.) that the work of Isidore de Beja was the only narrative written during that period. Spain had not the pen of a Bede or an Eginhart to describe the memorable catastrophe. But the few and meagre touches of the contemporary chroniclers have left ample scope for conjectural history, which has been most industriously improved. The reports, according

to Conde (*Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. i. p. 38), greedily circulated among the Saracens, of the magnificence and general prosperity of the Gothic monarchy, may sufficiently account for its invasion by an enemy flushed with uninterrupted conquests, and whose fanatical ambition was well illustrated by one of their own generals, who, on reaching the western extremity of Africa, plunged his horse into the Atlantic, and sighed for other shores on which to plant the banners of Islam. See Cardonne, *Histoire de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne sous la Domination des Arabes* (Paris, 1765), tom. i. p. 37.

<sup>6</sup> The laborious diligence of Masdeu may be thought to have settled the epoch, about which so much learned dust has been raised. The fourteenth volume of his "*Historia crítica de España y de la Cultura Española*" (Madrid, 1783—1805) contains an accurate table, by which the minutest dates of the Mahometan lunar year are adjusted by those of the Christian era. The fall of Roderic on the field of battle is attested by both the domestic chroniclers of that period, as well as by the Saracens. (*Incerti Auctoris Additio ad Joannem Biclarensem*, apud Florez, *España sagrada*, tom. vi. p. 430.—*Isidori Pacensis Episcopi Chronicon*, apud Florez, *España sagrada*, tom. viii. p. 200.) The tales of the ivory and marble chariot, of the gallant steed Orelia and magnificent vestments of Roderic, dis-

afterwards rallied under one head, but their broken detachments made many a gallant stand in such strong positions as were afforded throughout the kingdom; so that nearly three years elapsed before the final achievement of the conquest. The policy of the conquerors, after making the requisite allowance for the evils necessarily attending such an invasion,<sup>7</sup> may be considered liberal. Such of the Christians as chose were permitted to remain in the conquered territory in undisturbed possession of their property. They were allowed to worship in their own way; to be governed, within prescribed limits, by their own laws; to fill certain civil offices, and serve in the army; their women were invited to intermarry with the conquerors;<sup>8</sup> and, in short, they were condemned to no other legal badge of servitude than the payment of somewhat heavier imposts than those exacted from their Mahometan brethren. It is true the Christians were occasionally exposed to suffering from the caprices of despotism, and, it may be added, of popular fanaticism.<sup>9</sup> But, on the whole, their condition may sustain an advantageous comparison with that of any

covered after the fight on the banks of the Guadalete, of his probable escape and subsequent seclusion among the mountains of Portugal, which have been thought worthy of Spanish history, have found a much more appropriate place in the romantic national ballads, as well as in the more elaborate productions of Scott and Southey.

<sup>7</sup> "Whatever curses," says an eye-witness, whose meagre diction is quickened on this occasion into something like sublimity,—“whatever curses were denounced by the prophets of old against Jerusalem, whatever fell upon ancient Babylon, whatever miseries Rome inflicted upon the glorious company of the martyrs, all these were visited upon the once happy and prosperous, but now desolated, Spain.” *Pacensis Chronicon*, apud Florez, *España sagrada*, tom. viii. p. 292.

<sup>8</sup> The frequency of this alliance may be inferred from an extra-

ordinary, though doubtless extravagant, statement cited by Zurita. The ambassadors of James II. of Aragon, in 1311, represented to the sovereign pontiff, Clement V., that of the 200,000 souls which then composed the population of Granada there were not more than 500 of pure Moorish descent. *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 314.

<sup>9</sup> The famous persecutions of Cordova under the reigns of Abderrahman II. and his son, which, to judge from the tone of Castilian writers, might vie with those of Nero and Diocletian, are admitted by Morales (*Obras*, tom. x. p. 74) to have occasioned the destruction of only forty individuals. Most of these unhappy fanatics solicited the crown of martyrdom by an open violation of the Mahometan laws and usages. The details are given by Florez in the tenth volume of his collection.

Christian people under the Mussulman dominion of later times, and affords a striking contrast with that of our Saxon ancestors after the Norman conquest, which suggests an obvious parallel in many of its circumstances to the Saracen.<sup>10</sup>

After the further progress of the Arabs in Europe had been checked by the memorable defeat at Tours, their energies, no longer allowed to expand in the career of conquest, recoiled on themselves, and speedily produced the dismemberment of their overgrown empire. Spain was the first of the provinces which fell off. The family of Omeya, under whom this revolution was effected, continued to occupy her throne as independent princes from the middle of the eighth to the close of the eleventh century, a period which forms the most honourable portion of her Arabian annals.

The new government was modelled on the Eastern caliphate. Freedom shows itself under a variety of forms; while despotism, at least in the institutions founded on the Koran, seems to wear but one. The sovereign was the depositary of all power, the fountain of honour, the sole arbiter of life and fortune. He styled himself "Commander of the Faithful," and, like the caliphs of the East, assumed an entire spiritual as well as temporal supremacy. The country was distributed into six *capitanías*, or provinces, each under the administration of a *wali*, or governor, with subordinate officers, to whom was intrusted a more immediate jurisdiction over the principal cities. The immense authority and pretensions of these petty satraps became a fruitful source of rebellion in later times. The caliph administered the government with the advice of his *mexuar*, or council of state, composed of his

<sup>10</sup> Bleda, *Corónica de los Moros de España* (Valencia, 1618), lib. 2, cap. 16, 17.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. i. pp. 83 et seq., 179.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, Pról. p.

vii. and tom. i. pp. 29—54, 75, 87. —Morales, *Obras*, tom. vi. pp. 407—417; tom. vii. pp. 262—264. Florez, *España sagrada*, tom. x. pp. 237—270.—Fuero Juzgo, Int. p. 40.



principal *cadis* and *hagibs*, or secretaries. The office of prime minister, or chief hagib, corresponded, in the nature and variety of its functions, with that of a Turkish grand vizier. The caliph reserved to himself the right of selecting his successor from among his numerous progeny; and this adoption was immediately ratified by an oath of allegiance to the heir apparent from the principal officers of state.<sup>11</sup>

The princes of the blood, instead of being condemned, as in Turkey, to waste their youth in the seclusion of the harem, were intrusted to the care of learned men, to be instructed in the duties befitting their station. They were encouraged to visit the academies, which were particularly celebrated in Cordova, where they mingled in disputation, and frequently carried away the prizes of poetry and eloquence. Their riper years exhibited such fruits as were to be expected from their early education. The race of the Omeiyades need not shrink from a comparison with any other dynasty of equal length in modern Europe. Many of them amused their leisure with poetical composition, of which numerous examples are preserved in Conde's History; and some left elaborate works of learning, which have maintained a permanent reputation with Arabian scholars. Their long reigns, the first ten of which embrace a period of two centuries and a half, their peaceful deaths, and unbroken line of succession in the same family for so many years, show that their authority must have been founded in the affections of their subjects. Indeed, they seem, with one or two exceptions, to have ruled over them with a truly patriarchal sway; and, on the event of their deaths, the people, bathed in tears, are described as accompanying their relics to the tomb, where the ceremony was concluded with a public eulogy on the virtues of the deceased, by his son and successor.<sup>12</sup> This

<sup>11</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, part. 2, cap. 1—46.

<sup>12</sup> Diodorus Siculus, noticing a

similar usage at the funerals of the Egyptian kings, remarks on the disinterested and honest nature of

pleasing moral picture affords a strong contrast to the sanguinary scenes which so often attend the transmission of the sceptre from one generation to another among the nations of the East.<sup>13</sup>

The Spanish caliphs supported a large military force, frequently keeping two or three armies in the field at the same time. The flower of these forces was a body-guard, gradually raised to twelve thousand men, one-third of them Christians, superbly equipped, and officered by members of the royal family. Their feuds with the Eastern caliphs and the Barbary pirates required them also to maintain a respectable navy, which was fitted out from the numerous dock-yards that lined the coast from Cadiz to Tarragona.

The munificence of the Omeiyades was most ostentatiously displayed in their public edifices, palaces, mosques, hospitals, and in the construction of commodious quays, fountains, bridges, and aqueducts, which, penetrating the sides of the mountains, or sweeping on lofty arches across the valleys, rivalled in their proportions the monuments of ancient Rome. These works, which were scattered more or less over all the provinces, contributed especially to the embellishment of Cordova, the capital of the empire. The delightful situation of this city, in the midst of a cultivated plain washed by the waters of the Guadalquivir, made it very early the favourite residence of the Arabs, who loved to surround their houses, even in the cities, with groves and refreshing fountains, so delightful to the imagination of a wanderer of the desert.<sup>14</sup>

the homage, when the object of it is beyond the reach of flattery.—Diod. i. 70 et seq.

<sup>13</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, ubi supra.—Masdeu, *Historia crítica*, tom. xiii, pp. 178, 187.

<sup>14</sup> The same taste is noticed at the present day, by a traveller whose pictures glow with the warm colours of the East: "Aussi dès que vous approchez, en Europe ou

en Asie, d'une terre possédée par les Musulmans, vous la reconnaissez de loin au riche et sombre voile de verdure qui flotte gracieusement sur elle:—des arbres pour s'asseoir à leur ombre, des fontaines jaillissantes pour rêver à leur bruit, du silence et des mosquées aux légers minarets, s'élevant à chaque pas du sein d'une terre pieuse." Lamar-tine, *Voyage en Orient*, tom. i. p. 172.

The public squares and private court-yards sparkled with *jets d'eau*, fed by copious streams from the Sierra Morena, which, besides supplying nine hundred public baths, were conducted into the interior of the edifices, where they diffused a grateful coolness over the sleeping-apartments of their luxurious inhabitants.<sup>15</sup>

Without adverting to that magnificent freak of the caliphs, the construction of the palace of Azahra, of which not a vestige now exists, we may form a sufficient notion of the taste and magnificence of this era from the remains of the far-famed mosque, now the cathedral of Cordova. This building, which still covers more ground than any other church in Christendom, was esteemed the third in sanctity by the Mahometan world, being inferior only to the Alaksa of Jerusalem and the temple of Mecca. Most of its ancient glories have indeed long since departed. The rich bronze which embossed its gates, the myriads of lamps which illuminated its aisles, have disappeared; and its interior roof of odoriferous and curiously carved wood has been cut up into guitars and snuff-boxes. But its thousand columns of variegated marble still remain; and its general dimensions, notwithstanding some loose assertions to the contrary, seem to be much the same as they were in the time of the Saracens. European critics, however, condemn its most elaborate beauties as "heavy and barbarous." Its celebrated portals are pronounced "diminutive, and in very bad taste." Its throng of pillars gives it the air of "a park rather than a temple," and the whole is made still more incongruous by the unequal length of their shafts, being grotesquely compensated by a proportionate variation of size in their bases and capitals, rudely fashioned after the Corinthian order.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>15</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. i. pp. 199, 265, 284, 285, 417, 446, 447, et alibi.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. i. pp. 227—230 et seq.

<sup>16</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. i. pp. 211, 212, 226.—Swinburne, *Travels through Spain* (London, 1787), let. 35.—Xerif Aledris, conocido por El Nubiense, *Descripcion de España*, con Tra-

But if all this gives a contemptible idea of the taste of the Saracens at this period, which indeed, in architecture, seems to have been far inferior to that of the later princes of Granada, we cannot but be astonished at the adequacy of their resources to carry such magnificent designs into execution. Their revenue, we are told in explanation, amounted to eight millions of *mitcales* of gold, or nearly six millions sterling; a sum fifteen-fold greater than that which William the Conqueror, in the subsequent century, was able to extort from his subjects, with all the ingenuity of feudal exaction. The tone of exaggeration which distinguishes the Asiatic writers entitles them perhaps to little confidence in their numerical estimates. This immense wealth, however, is predicated of other Mahometan princes of that age; and their vast superiority over the Christian states of the north, in arts and effective industry, may well account for a corresponding superiority in their resources.

The revenue of the Cordovan sovereigns was derived from the fifth of the spoil taken in battle, an important item in an age of unintermitting war and rapine; from the enormous exaction of one-tenth of the produce of commerce, husbandry, flocks, and mines; from a capitation tax on Jews and Christians; and from certain tolls on the transportation of goods. They engaged in commerce on their own account, and drew from mines, which belonged to the crown, a conspicuous part of their income.<sup>17</sup>

duccion y Notas de Conde (Madrid, 1799), pp. 161, 162. — Morales, Obras, tom. x. p. 61. — Chenier, Recherches historiques sur les Maures, et Histoire de l'Empire de Maroc (Paris, 1787), tom. ii. p. 312. — Laborde, Itinéraire, tom. iii. p. 226.

<sup>17</sup> Conde, Dominacion de los Arabes, tom. i. pp. 214, 228, 270, 611. — Masdeu, Historia crítica, tom. xiii. p. 118. — Cardonne, Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne, tom.

i. pp. 338—343. — Casiri quotes from an Arabic historian the conditions on which Abderrahman I. proffered his alliance to the Christian princes of Spain, viz. the annual tribute of 10,000 ounces of gold, 10,000 pounds of silver, 10,000 horses, etc. etc. The absurdity of this story, inconsiderately repeated by historians, if any argument were necessary to prove it, becomes sufficiently manifest from the fact that the instrument is dated in the

Before the discovery of America, Spain was to the rest of Europe what her colonies have since become, the great source of mineral wealth. The Carthaginians, and the Romans afterwards, regularly drew from her large masses of the precious metals. Pliny, who resided some time in the country, relates that three of her provinces were said to have annually yielded the incredible quantity of sixty thousand pounds of gold.<sup>18</sup> The Arabs, with their usual activity, penetrated into these arcana of wealth. Abundant traces of their labours are still to be met with along the barren ridge of mountains that covers the north of Andalusia; and the diligent Bowles has enumerated no less than five thousand of their excavations in the kingdom or district of Jaen.<sup>19</sup>

But the best mine of the caliphs was in the industry and sobriety of their subjects. The Arabian colonies have been properly classed among the agricultural. Their acquaintance with the science of husbandry is shown in their voluminous treatises on the subject, and in the monuments which they have everywhere left of their peculiar culture. The system of irrigation, which has so long fertilized the south of Spain, was derived from them. They introduced into the Peninsula various tropical plants and vegetables, whose cultivation has departed with them. Sugar, which the modern Spaniards have been obliged to import from foreign nations in large quantities annually for their domestic consumption, until within the last half-century, when they have been supplied by their island of Cuba, constituted one of the principal exports of the Spanish Arabs. The silk manufacture was carried on by them extensively. The Nubian geographer, in the beginning of the twelfth century, enumerates six hundred villages in Jaen as engaged in it, at a time when it was

142nd year of the Hegira, being a little more than fifty years after the conquest. See *Bibliotheca Arabico - Hispana* Escorialensis (Matriti, 1760), tom. ii. p. 104.

<sup>18</sup> *Hist. Naturalis*, lib. 33, cap. 4.

<sup>19</sup> *Introduction à l'Histoire naturelle de l'Espagne*, traduite par Flavigny (Paris, 1776), p. 411.

known to the Europeans only from their circuitous traffic with the Greek empire. This, together with fine fabrics of cotton and woollen, formed the staple of an active commerce with the Levant, and especially with Constantinople, whence they were again diffused, by means of the caravans of the North, over the comparatively barbarous countries of Christendom.

The population kept pace with this general prosperity of the country. It would appear, from a census instituted at Cordova at the close of the tenth century, that there were at that time in it six hundred temples and two hundred thousand dwelling-houses; many of these latter being, probably, mere huts or cabins, and occupied by separate families. Without placing too much reliance on any numerical statements, however, we may give due weight to the inference of an intelligent writer, who remarks that their minute cultivation of the soil, the cheapness of their labour, their particular attention to the most nutritious esculents, many of them such as would be rejected by Europeans at this day, are indicative of a crowded population, like that, perhaps, which swarms over Japan or China, where the same economy is necessarily resorted to for the mere sustenance of life.<sup>20</sup>

Whatever consequence a nation may derive, in its own age, from physical resources, its intellectual development

<sup>20</sup> See a sensible essay by the Abbé Correa da Serra on the husbandry of the Spanish Arabs, contained in tom. i. of *Archives littéraires de l'Europe* (Paris, 1804).—Masdeu, *Historia crítica*, tom. xiii. pp. 115, 117, 127, 131.—Conde, *Dominación de los Arabes*, tom. i. cap. 44.—Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. i. p. 338.—An absurd story has been transcribed from Cardonne, with little hesitation, by almost every succeeding writer upon this subject. According to him (*Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. i. p. 338), "the banks

of the Guadalquivir were lined with no less than twelve thousand villages and hamlets." The length of the river, not exceeding three hundred miles, would scarcely afford room for the same number of farm-houses. Conde's version of the Arabic passage represents twelve thousand hamlets, farms, and castles to have "been scattered over the regions watered by the Guadalquivir;" indicating by this indefinite statement nothing more than the extreme populousness of the province of Andalusia.

will form the subject of deepest interest to posterity. The most flourishing periods of both not unfrequently coincide. Thus the reigns of Abderrahman the Third, Alhakem the Second, and the regency of Almanzor, embracing the latter half of the tenth century, during which the Spanish Arabs reached their highest political importance, may be regarded as the period of their highest civilization under the Omeiyades, although the impulse then given carried them forward to still further advances in the turbulent times which followed. This beneficent impulse is, above all, imputable to Alhakem. He was one of those rare beings who have employed the awful engine of despotism in promoting the happiness and intelligence of his species. In his elegant tastes, appetite for knowledge, and munificent patronage, he may be compared with the best of the Medici. He assembled the eminent scholars of his time, both natives and foreigners, at his court, where he employed them in the most confidential offices. He converted his palace into an academy, making it the familiar resort of men of letters, at whose conferences he personally assisted in his intervals of leisure from public duty. He selected the most suitable persons for the composition of works on civil and natural history, requiring the prefects of his provinces and cities to furnish, as far as possible, the necessary intelligence. He was a diligent student, and left many of the volumes which he read enriched with his commentaries. Above all, he was intent upon the acquisition of an extensive library. He invited illustrious foreigners to send him their works, and munificently recompensed them. No donative was so grateful to him as a book. He employed agents in Egypt, Syria, Irak, and Persia, for collecting and transcribing the rarest manuscripts; and his vessels returned freighted with cargoes more precious than the spices of the East. In this way he amassed a magnificent collection, which was distributed, according to the subjects, in various apartments of his

palace, and which, if we may credit the Arabian historians, amounted to six hundred thousand volumes.<sup>21</sup>

If all this be thought to savour too much of Eastern hyperbole, still it cannot be doubted that an amazing number of writers swarmed over the Peninsula at this period. Casiri's multifarious catalogue bears ample testimony to the emulation with which not only men, but even women of the highest rank, devoted themselves to letters; the latter contending publicly for the prizes, not merely in eloquence and poetry, but in those recondite studies which have usually been reserved for the other sex. The prefects of the provinces, emulating their master, converted their courts into academies, and dispensed premiums to poets and philosophers. The stream of royal bounty awakened life in the remotest districts. But its effects were especially visible in the capital. Eighty free schools were opened in Cordova. The circle of letters and science was publicly expounded by professors, whose reputation for wisdom attracted not only the scholars of Christian Spain, but of France, Italy, Germany, and the British Isles. For this period of brilliant illumination with the Saracens corresponds precisely with that of the deepest barbarism of Europe; when a library of three or four hundred volumes was a magnificent endowment for the richest monastery; when scarcely a "priest south of the Thames," in the words of Alfred, "could translate Latin into his mother tongue;" when not a single philosopher, according to Tiraboschi, was to be met with in Italy, save only the French pope Sylvester the Second, who drew his knowledge

<sup>21</sup> Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. pp. 38, 202.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, part. 2, cap. 88.—This number will appear less startling if we consider that it was the ancient usage to make a separate volume of each book into which a work was divided; that only one side of the leaf was usually written on, and that writing always

covers much greater space than printing. The correct grounds on which the estimates of these ancient libraries are to be formed are exhibited by the learned and ingenious Balbi, in his recent work, "*Essai statistique sur les Bibliothèques de Vienne*." (Vienne, 1835.)



from the schools of the Spanish Arabs, and was esteemed a necromancer for his pains.<sup>22</sup>

Such is the glowing picture presented to us of Arabian scholarship, in the tenth and succeeding centuries, under a despotic government and a sensual religion ; and, whatever judgment may be passed on the real value of all their boasted literature, it cannot be denied that the nation exhibited a wonderful activity of intellect, and an apparatus for learning (if we are to admit their own statements) unrivalled in the best ages of antiquity.

The Mahometan governments of that period rested on so unsound a basis that the season of their greatest prosperity was often followed by precipitate decay. This had been the case with the Eastern caliphate, and was now so with the Western. During the life of Alhakem's successor, the empire of the Omeyades was broken up into a hundred petty principalities ; and their magnificent capital of Cordova, dwindling into a second-rate city, retained no other distinction than that of being the Mecca of Spain. These little states soon became a prey to all the evils arising out of a vicious constitution of government and religion. Almost every accession to the throne was contested by numerous competitors of the same family ; and a succession of sovereigns, wearing on their brows but the semblance of a crown, came and departed, like the shadows of Macbeth. The motley tribes of Asiatics, of whom the Spanish Arabian population was composed, regarded each other with ill-disguised jealousy. The lawless, predatory

<sup>22</sup> Tiraboschi, *Storia della Letteratura Italiana* (Roma, 1782—97), tom. iii. p. 231.—Turner, *History of the Anglo-Saxons* (London, 1820), vol. iii. p. 137. — Andres, *Dell' Origine, de' Progressi e dello Stato attuale d'ogni Letteratura* (Venezia, 1783), part. 1, cap. 8, 9. — Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escurialensis*, tom. ii. p. 149. — Masden, *Historia crítica*, tom. xiii. pp. 165, 171. — Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, part. 2, cap. 93.—Among the ac-

complished women of this period, Valadata, the daughter of the caliph Mahomet, is celebrated as having frequently carried away the palm of eloquence in her discussions with the most learned academicians. Others again, with an intrepidity that might shame the degeneracy of a modern *blus*, plunged boldly into the studies of philosophy, history, and jurisprudence.

habits, which no discipline could effectually control in an Arab, made them ever ready for revolt. The Moslem states, thus reduced in size and crippled by faction, were unable to resist the Christian forces, which were pressing on them from the north. By the middle of the ninth century the Spaniards had reached the Douro and the Ebro. By the close of the eleventh they had advanced their line of conquest, under the victorious banner of the Cid, to the Tagus. The swarms of Africans who invaded the Peninsula, during the two following centuries, gave substantial support to their Mahometan brethren ; and the cause of Christian Spain trembled in the balance for a moment on the memorable day of Navas de Tolosa. (1212.) But the fortunate issue of that battle, in which, according to the lying letter of Alfonso the Ninth, "one hundred and eighty-five thousand infidels perished, and only five-and-twenty Spaniards," gave a permanent ascendancy to the Christian arms. The vigorous campaigns of James the First of Aragon, and of St. Ferdinand of Castile, gradually stripped away the remaining territories of Valencia, Murcia, and Andalusia ; so that by the middle of the thirteenth century the constantly contracting circle of the Moorish dominion had shrunk into the narrow limits of the province of Granada. Yet on this comparatively small point of their ancient domain the Saracens erected a new kingdom, of sufficient strength to resist, for more than two centuries, the united forces of the Spanish monarchies.

The Moorish territory of Granada contained, within a circuit of about one hundred and eighty leagues, all the physical resources of a great empire. Its broad valleys were intersected by mountains rich in mineral wealth, whose hardy population supplied the state with husbandmen and soldiers. Its pastures were fed by abundant fountains, and its coasts studded with commodious ports, the principal marts in the Mediterranean. In the midst, and crowning the whole as with a diadem, rose the beautiful city of Granada. In the days of the Moors it was

encompassed by a wall, flanked by a thousand and thirty towers, with seven portals.<sup>23</sup> Its population, according to a contemporary, at the beginning of the fourteenth century, amounted to two hundred thousand souls; <sup>24</sup> and various authors agree in attesting that at a later period it could send forth fifty thousand warriors from its gates. This statement will not appear exaggerated, if we consider that the native population of the city was greatly swelled by the influx of the ancient inhabitants of the districts lately conquered by the Spaniards. On the summit of one of the hills of the city was erected the royal fortress or palace of the Alhambra, which was capable of containing within its circuit forty thousand men.<sup>25</sup> The light and elegant architecture of this edifice, whose magnificent ruins still form the most interesting monument in Spain for the contemplation of the traveller, shows the great advancement of the art since the construction of the celebrated mosque of Cordova. Its graceful porticos and colonnades, its domes and ceilings, glowing with tints which, in that transparent atmosphere, have lost nothing of their original brilliancy, its airy halls, so constructed as to admit the perfume of surrounding gardens and agreeable ventilations of the air, and its fountains, which still shed their coolness over its deserted courts, manifest at once the taste, opulence, and Sybarite luxury of its proprietors. The streets are represented to have been narrow, many of the houses lofty, with turrets of curiously wrought larch or marble, and with cornices of shining metal, "that glittered like stars through the dark foliage of the orange groves;" and the whole is compared to "an enamelled vase, sparkling with hyacinths and emeralds."<sup>26</sup> Such are the florid strains in which the

<sup>23</sup> Garibay, *Compendio*, lib. 39, cap. 3.

<sup>24</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 20, cap. 42.

<sup>25</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 169.

<sup>26</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. ii. p. 147.—Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escurialensis*, tom. ii.

pp. 248 et seq.—Pedraza, *Antigüedad y Excelencias de Granada* (Madrid, 1608), lib. 1.—Pedraza has collected the various etymologies of the term *Granada*, which some writers have traced to the fact of the city having been the spot where the *pomegranate* was

Arabic writers fondly descant on the glories of Granada. At the foot of this fabric of the genii lay the cultivated *vega*, or plain, so celebrated as the arena, for more than two centuries, of Moorish and Christian chivalry, every inch of whose soil may be said to have been fertilized with human blood. The Arabs exhausted on it all their powers of elaborate cultivation. They distributed the waters of the Xenil, which flowed through it, into a thousand channels for its more perfect irrigation. A constant succession of fruits and crops was obtained throughout the year. The products of the most opposite latitudes were transplanted there with success; and the hemp of the north grew luxuriant under the shadow of the vine and the olive. Silk furnished the principal staple of a traffic that was carried on through the ports of Almeria and Malaga. The Italian cities, then rising into opulence, derived their principal skill in this elegant manufacture from the Spanish Arabs. Florence, in particular, imported large quantities of the raw material from them as late as the fifteenth century. The Genoese are mentioned as having mercantile establishments in Granada; and treaties of commerce were entered into with this nation, as well as with the crown of Aragon. Their ports swarmed with a motley contribution from "Europe, Africa, and the Levant," so that "Granada," in the words of the historian, "became the common city of all nations." "The reputation of the citizens for trustworthiness," says a Spanish writer, "was such that their bare word was more relied on than a written contract is now among us;" and he quotes the saying of a Catholic bishop, that "Moorish works and Spanish faith were all that were necessary to make a good Christian."<sup>27</sup>

first introduced from Africa; others to the large quantity of *grain* in which its *vega* abounded; others again to the resemblance which the city, divided into two hills thickly sprinkled with houses, bore to a half-opened pomegranate.

(Lib. 2, cap. 17.) The arms of the city, which were in part composed of a pomegranate, would seem to favour the derivation of its name from that of the fruit.

<sup>27</sup> Pedraza, Antigüedad de Granada, fol. 101.—Demina, Delle Rivo-

The revenue, which was computed at twelve hundred thousand ducats, was derived from similar but in some respects heavier impositions than those of the caliphs of Cordova. The crown, besides being possessed of valuable plantations in the vega, imposed the onerous tax of one-seventh on all the agricultural produce of the kingdom. The precious metals were also obtained in considerable quantities, and the royal mint was noted for the purity and elegance of its coin.<sup>28</sup>

The sovereigns of Granada were for the most part distinguished by liberal tastes. They freely dispensed their revenues in the protection of letters, in the construction of sumptuous public works, and, above all, in the display of a courtly pomp unrivalled by any of the princes of that period. Each day presented a succession of *fêtes* and tourneys, in which the knight seemed less ambitious of the hardy prowess of Christian chivalry than of displaying his inimitable horsemanship, and his dexterity in the elegant pastimes peculiar to his nation. The people of Granada, like those of ancient Rome, seem to have demanded a perpetual spectacle. Life was with them one long carnival, and the season of revelry was prolonged until the enemy was at the gate.

During the interval which had elapsed since the decay of the Omeiyades, the Spaniards had been gradually rising in civilization to the level of their Saracen enemies; and, while their increased consequence secured them from the

luzioni d'Italia (Venezia, 1816).—Capmany y Montpalau, *Memorias históricas sobre la Marina, Comercio y Artes de Barcelona* (Madrid, 1779—92), tom. iii. p. 218; tom. iv. pp. 67 et seq.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 26.—The ambassador of the emperor Frederic III., on his passage to the court of Lisbon in the middle of the fifteenth century, contrasts the superior cultivation, as well as general civilization, of Granada at this period with that of

the other countries of Europe through which he had travelled. Sismondi, *Histoire des Républiques Italiennes du Moyen-Age* (Paris, 1818), tom. ix. p. 405.

<sup>28</sup> Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. pp. 250—258.—The fifth volume of the *Memoirs of the Spanish Academy of History* contains an erudite essay by Conde on Arabic money, principally with reference to that coined in Spain; pp. 225—315.

contempt with which they had formerly been regarded by the Mussulmans, the latter, in their turn, had not so far sunk in the scale as to become the objects of the bigoted aversion which was, in after-days, so heartily visited on them by the Spaniards. At this period, therefore, the two nations viewed each other with more liberality, probably, than at any previous or succeeding time. Their respective monarchs conducted their mutual negotiations on a footing of perfect equality. We find several examples of Arabic sovereigns visiting in person the court of Castile. These civilities were reciprocated by the Christian princes. As late as 1463, Henry the Fourth had a personal interview with the king of Granada, in the dominions of the latter. The two monarchs held their conference under a splendid pavilion erected in the vega, before the gates of the city; and, after an exchange of presents, the Spanish sovereign was escorted to the frontiers by a body of Moorish cavaliers. These acts of courtesy relieve in some measure the ruder features of an almost uninterrupted warfare, that was necessarily kept up between the rival nations.<sup>29</sup>

The Moorish and Christian knights were also in the habit of exchanging visits at the courts of their respective masters. The latter were wont to repair to Granada to settle their affairs of honour, by personal rencounter, in the presence of its sovereign. The disaffected nobles of

<sup>29</sup> A specification of a royal donative in that day may serve to show the martial spirit of the age. In one, made by the king of Granada to the Castilian sovereign, we find twenty noble steeds of the royal stud, reared on the banks of the Xenil, with superb caparisons, and the same number of scimitars richly garnished with gold and jewels; and, in another, mixed up with perfumes and cloth of gold, we meet with a litter of tame lions. (Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. pp. 163, 183.) This latter

symbol of royalty appears to have been deemed peculiarly appropriate to the kings of Leon. Ferreras informs us that the ambassadors from France at the Castilian court, in 1434, were received by John II. with a full-grown domesticated lion crouching at his feet. (*Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vi. p. 401.) The same taste appears still to exist in Turkey. Dr. Clarke, in his visit to Constantinople, met with one of these terrific pets, who used to follow his master, Hassan Pacha, about like a dog.

Castile, among whom Mariana especially notices the Velas and the Castros, often sought an asylum there, and served under the Moslem banner. With this interchange of social courtesy between the two nations, it could not but happen that each should contract some of the peculiarities natural to the other. The Spaniard acquired something of the gravity and magnificence of demeanour proper to the Arabian; and the latter relaxed his habitual reserve, and, above all, the jealousy and gross sensuality which characterize the nations of the East.<sup>30</sup>

Indeed, if we were to rely on the pictures presented to us in the Spanish ballads or *romances*, we should admit as unreserved an intercourse between the sexes to have existed among the Spanish Arabs as with any other people of Europe. The Moorish lady is represented there as an undisguised spectator of the public festivals; while her knight, bearing an embroidered mantle or scarf, or some other token of her favour, contends openly in her presence for the prize of valour, mingles with her in the graceful dance of the Zambra, or sighs away his soul in moonlight serenades under her balcony.<sup>31</sup>

<sup>30</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 28.—Henriquez del Castillo (*Crónica*, cap. 138) gives an account of an intended duel between two Castilian nobles, in the presence of the king of Granada, as late as 1470. One of the parties, Don Alfonso de Aguilar, failing to keep his engagement, the other rode round the lists in triumph, with his adversary's portrait contemptuously fastened to the tail of his horse.

<sup>31</sup> It must be admitted that these ballads, so far as facts are concerned, are too inexact to furnish other than a very slippery foundation for history. The most beautiful portion perhaps of the Moorish ballads, for example, is taken up with the feuds of the Abencerrages in the latter days of Granada. Yet this family, whose romantic story is still repeated to the traveller

amid the ruins of the Alhambra, is scarcely noticed, as far as I am aware, by contemporary writers, foreign or domestic, and would seem to owe its chief celebrity to the apocryphal version of Ginés Perez de Hita, whose "*Milesian tales*," according to the severe sentence of Nic. Antonio, "are fit only to amuse the lazy and the listless." (*Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. i. p. 536.)

But, although the Spanish ballads are not entitled to the credit of strict historical documents, they may yet perhaps be received in evidence of the prevailing character of the social relations of the age; a remark indeed predicable of most works of fiction written by authors contemporary with the events they describe, and more especially so of that popular minstrelsy which, emanating from a simple, uncor-

Other circumstances, especially the frescos still extant on the walls of the Alhambra, may be cited as corroborative of the conclusions afforded by the *romances*, implying a latitude in the privileges accorded to the sex, similar to that in Christian countries, and altogether alien from the genius of Mahometanism.<sup>32</sup> The chivalrous character ascribed to the Spanish Moslems appears, moreover, in perfect conformity to this. Thus some of their sovereigns, we are told, after the fatigues of the tournament, were wont to recreate their spirits with "elegant poetry, and florid discourses of amorous and knightly history." The ten qualities enumerated as essential to a true knight were "piety, valour, courtesy, prowess, the gifts of poetry and eloquence, and dexterity in the management of the horse, the sword, lance, and bow."<sup>33</sup> The history of the Spanish

rupted class, is less likely to swerve from truth than more ostentatious works of art. The long cohabitation of the Saracens with the Christians (full evidence of which is afforded by Capmany (Mem. de Barcelona, tom. iv. Apend. no. 11,) who quotes a document from the public archives of Catalonia, showing the great number of Saracens residing in Aragon even in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, the most flourishing period of the Granadian empire) had enabled many of them confessedly to speak and write the Spanish language with purity and elegance. Some of the graceful little songs which are still chanted by the peasantry of Spain in their dances, to the accompaniment of the castanet, are referred by a competent critic (Conde, De la Poesia Oriental, MS.) to an Arabian origin. There can be little hazard, therefore, in imputing much of this peculiar minstrelsy to the Arabians themselves, the contemporaries, and perhaps the eye-witnesses, of the events they celebrate.

<sup>32</sup> Casiri (Bibliotheca Escorialensis, tom. ii. p. 259) has transcribed a passage from an Arabian author of the fourteenth century,

inveighing bitterly against the luxury of the Moorish ladies, their gorgeous apparel and habits of expense, "amounting almost to insanity," in a tone which may remind one of the similar philippic by his contemporary Dante against his fair countrywomen of Florence. Two ordinances of a king of Granada, cited by Conde in his History, prescribe the separation of the women from the men in the mosques, and prohibit their attendance at certain festivals without the protection of their husbands or some near relative. Their *femmes savantes*, as we have seen, were in the habit of conferring freely with men of letters, and of assisting in person at the academical *séances*. And lastly, the frescos alluded to in the text represent the presence of females at the tournaments, and the fortunate knight receiving the palm of victory from their hands.

<sup>33</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. i. p. 340; tom. iii. p. 119.—The reader may compare these essentials of a good Moslem cavalier with those enumerated by old Froissart of a good and true Christian knight of his own day: "Le gentil chevalier a toutes ces nobles vertus que un chevalier doit



Arabs, especially in the latter wars of Granada, furnishes repeated examples, not merely of the heroism which distinguished the European chivalry of the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, but occasionally of a polished courtesy that might have graced a Bayard or a Sidney. This combination of Oriental magnificence and knightly prowess shed a ray of glory over the closing days of the Arabic empire in Spain, and served to conceal, though it could not correct, the vices which it possessed in common with all Mahometan institutions.

The government of Granada was not administered with the same tranquillity as that of Cordova. Revolutions were perpetually occurring, which may be traced sometimes to the tyranny of the prince, but more frequently to the factions of the seraglio, the soldiery, or the licentious populace of the capital. The latter, indeed, more volatile than the sands of the deserts from which they originally sprung, were driven by every gust of passion into the most frightful excesses, deposing and even assassinating their monarchs, violating their palaces, and scattering abroad their beautiful collections and libraries; while the kingdom, unlike that of Cordova, was so contracted in its extent that every convulsion of the capital was felt to its farthest extremities. Still, however, it held out, almost miraculously, against the Christian arms; and the storms that beat upon it incessantly, for more than two centuries, scarcely wore away anything from its original limits.

Several circumstances may be pointed out as enabling Granada to maintain this protracted resistance. Its concentrated population furnished such abundant supplies of soldiers that its sovereigns could bring into the field an army of a hundred thousand men.<sup>34</sup> Many of these were drawn from the regions of the Alpujarras, whose rugged

avoir: il fut lie, loyal, amoureux, sage, secret, large, pieux, hardi, entreprenant, et chevaleureux."—Chroniques, liv. ii. chap. 118.

<sup>34</sup> Casiri, on Arabic authority, computes it at 200,000 men. Bibliotheca Escorialensis, tom. i. p. 338.

inhabitants had not been corrupted by the soft effeminacy of the plains. The ranks were occasionally recruited, moreover, from the warlike tribes of Africa. The Moors of Granada are praised by their enemies for their skill with the cross-bow, to the use of which they were trained from childhood.<sup>35</sup> But their strength lay chiefly in their cavalry. Their spacious vegas afforded an ample field for the display of their matchless horsemanship; while the face of the country, intersected by mountains and intricate defiles, gave a manifest advantage to the Arabic light-horse over the steel-clad cavalry of the Christians, and was particularly suited to the wild *guerrilla* warfare in which the Moors so much excelled. During the long hostilities of the country, almost every city had been converted into a fortress. The number of these fortified places in the territory of Granada was ten times as great as is now to be found throughout the whole Peninsula.<sup>36</sup> Lastly, in addition to these means of defence, may be mentioned their early acquaintance with gunpowder, which, like the Greek fire of Constantinople, contributed perhaps in some degree to prolong a precarious existence beyond its natural term.

But, after all, the strength of Granada, like that of Constantinople, lay less in its own resources than in the weakness of its enemies, who, distracted by the feuds of a turbulent aristocracy, especially during the long minorities with which Castile was afflicted perhaps more than any other nation in Europe, seemed to be more remote from the conquest of Granada at the death of Henry the Fourth than at that of St. Ferdinand in the thirteenth century. Before entering on the achievement of this conquest by Ferdinand and Isabella, it may not be amiss to notice the

<sup>35</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 250.

<sup>36</sup> Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. p. 169.—These ruined fortifications still thickly stud the border territories of Granada; and

many an Andalusian mill, along the banks of the Guadaya and Guadalquivir, retains its battlemented tower, which served for the defence of its inmates against the forays of the enemy.

probable influence exerted by the Spanish Arabs on European civilization.

Notwithstanding the high advances made by the Arabians in almost every branch of learning, and the liberal import of certain sayings ascribed to Mahomet, the spirit of his religion was eminently unfavourable to letters. The Koran, whatever be the merit of its literary execution, does not, we believe, contain a single precept in favour of general science.<sup>87</sup> Indeed, during the first century after its promulgation, almost as little attention was bestowed upon this by the Saracens as in their "days of ignorance," as the period is stigmatized which preceded the advent of their apostle.<sup>88</sup> But, after the nation had reposed from its tumultuous military career, the taste for elegant pleasures, which naturally results from opulence and leisure, began to flow in upon it. It entered upon this new field with all its characteristic enthusiasm, and seemed ambitious of attaining the same pre-eminence in science that it had already reached in arms.

It was at the commencement of this period of intellectual fermentation that the last of the Omeiyades, escaping into Spain, established there the kingdom of Cordova, and imported along with him the fondness for luxury and letters that had begun to display itself in the capitals of the East. His munificent spirit descended upon his successors; and, on the breaking up of the empire, the various capitals, Seville, Murcia, Malaga, Granada, and others, which rose upon its ruins, became the centres of so

<sup>87</sup> D'Herbelot (Bib. Orientale, tom. i. p. 830), among other authentic traditions of Mahomet, quotes one as indicating his encouragement of letters, viz: "That the ink of the doctors and the blood of the martyrs are of equal price." M. Celsner (*Des Effets de la Religion de Mohammed*, Paris, 1810) has cited several others of the same liberal import. But such traditions cannot be received in evidence of the original doctrine of the prophet.

VOL. I.

They are rejected as apocryphal by the Persians and the whole sect of the Shiites, and are entitled to little weight with a European.

<sup>88</sup> When the caliph Al Mamon encouraged, by his example as well as patronage, a more enlightened policy, he was accused by the more orthodox Mussulmans of attempting to subvert the principles of their religion. See Pococke, *Spec. Hist. Arabum* (Oxon. 1650), p. 166.

many intellectual systems, that continued to emit a steady lustre through the clouds and darkness of succeeding centuries. The period of this literary civilization reached far into the fourteenth century, and thus, embracing an interval of six hundred years, may be said to have exceeded in duration that of any other literature, ancient or modern.

There were several auspicious circumstances in the condition of the Spanish Arabs, which distinguished them from their Mahometan brethren. The temperate climate of Spain was far more propitious to robustness and elasticity of intellect than the sultry regions of Arabia and Africa. Its long line of coast and convenient havens opened to it an enlarged commerce. Its number of rival states encouraged a generous emulation, like that which glowed in ancient Greece and modern Italy, and was infinitely more favourable to the development of the mental powers than the far-extended and sluggish empires of Asia. Lastly, a familiar intercourse with the Europeans served to mitigate in the Spanish Arabs some of the more degrading superstitions incident to their religion, and to impart to them nobler ideas of the independence and moral dignity of man than are to be found in the slaves of Eastern despotism.

Under these favourable circumstances, provisions for education were liberally multiplied, colleges, academies, and gymnasiums springing up spontaneously, as it were, not merely in the principal cities, but in the most obscure villages of the country. No less than fifty of these colleges or schools could be discerned scattered over the suburbs and populous plain of Granada. Every place of note seems to have furnished materials for a literary history. The copious catalogues of writers, still extant in the Escorial, show how extensively the cultivation of science was pursued, even through its minutest subdivisions; while a biographical notice of blind men eminent for their scholarship in Spain proves how far the general avidity

for knowledge triumphed over the most discouraging obstacles of nature.<sup>39</sup>

The Spanish Arabs emulated their countrymen of the East in their devotion to natural and mathematical science. They penetrated into the remotest regions of Africa and Asia, transmitting an exact account of their proceedings to the national academies. They contributed to astronomical knowledge by the number and accuracy of their observations, and by the improvement of instruments and the erection of observatories, of which the noble tower of Seville is one of the earliest examples. They furnished their full proportion in the department of history, which, according to an Arabian author cited by D'Herbelot, could boast of thirteen hundred writers. The treatises on logic and metaphysics amount to one-ninth of the surviving treasures of the Escorial; and, to conclude this summary of naked details, some of their scholars appear to have entered upon as various a field of philosophical inquiry as would be crowded into a modern encyclopædia.<sup>40</sup>

The results, it must be confessed, do not appear to have corresponded with this magnificent apparatus and unrivalled activity of research. The mind of the Arabians was distinguished by the most opposite characteristics, which sometimes, indeed, served to neutralize each other. An acute and subtile perception was often clouded by mysticism and abstraction. They combined a habit of classification

<sup>39</sup> Andres, *Letteratura*, part. 1, cap. 8, 10. — Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. pp. 71, 251 et passim.—I had stated in the early editions, on the authority of Casiri, that seventy public libraries existed in Spain at the beginning of the fourteenth century. A sagacious critic in the *Edinburgh Review* for January, 1839, in a well-deserved stricture on this passage, remarks that, after a careful examination of the manuscript in the Escorial to which Casiri refers for his account, he could find no warrant for the assertion. It must

be confessed to savour rather strongly of the *gigantesque*.

<sup>40</sup> Casiri mentions one of these universal geniuses, who published no less than a thousand and fifty treatises on the various topics of Ethics, History, Law, Medicine, etc. *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. p. 107.—See also tom. i. p. 370; tom. ii. p. 71 et alibi.—Zúñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 22.—D'Herbelot, *Bib. Orientale*, voce *Tarikh*. —Masden, *Historia crítica*, tom. xiii. pp. 203, 205.—Andres, *Letteratura*, part. 1, cap. 8.

and generalization with a marvellous fondness for detail; a vivacious fancy with a patience of application that a German of our day might envy; and, while in fiction they launched boldly into originality, indeed extravagance, they were content in philosophy to tread servilely in the track of their ancient masters. They derived their science from versions of the Greek philosophers; but, as their previous discipline had not prepared them for its reception, they were oppressed rather than stimulated by the weight of the inheritance. They possessed an indefinite power of accumulation, but they rarely ascended to general principles, or struck out new and important truths; at least, this is certain in regard to their metaphysical labours.

Hence Aristotle, who taught them to arrange what they had already acquired, rather than to advance to new discoveries, became the god of their idolatry. They piled commentary on commentary, and, in their blind admiration of his system, may be almost said to have been more of Peripatetics than the Stagirite himself. The Cordovan Averroes was the most eminent of his Arabic commentators, and undoubtedly contributed more than any other individual to establish the authority of Aristotle over the reason of mankind for so many ages. Yet his various illustrations have served, in the opinion of European critics, to darken rather than dissipate the ambiguities of his original, and have even led to the confident assertion that he was wholly unacquainted with the Greek language.<sup>41</sup>

<sup>41</sup> Consult the sensible, though perhaps severe, remarks of Degeando on Arabian science. (*Hist. de la Philosophie*, tom. iv. cap. 24.)—The reader may also peruse with advantage a disquisition on Arabian metaphysics in Turner's *History of England*, vol. iv. pp. 405–449.—Brucker, *Hist. Philosophiæ*, tom. iii. p. 105.—Ludovicus Vives seems to have been the author of the imputation in the text. (Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p.

394.) Averroes translated some of the philosophical works of Aristotle from the Greek into Arabic; a Latin version of which translation was afterwards made. D'Herbelot, however, is mistaken (*Bib. Orientale*, art. *Roschd*) in saying that Averroes was the first who translated Aristotle into Arabic; as this had been done two centuries before, at least, by Honain and others in the ninth century (see Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. i. p.

The Saracens gave an entirely new face to pharmacy and chemistry. They introduced a great variety of salutary medicaments into Europe. The Spanish Arabs, in particular, are commended by Sprengel above their brethren for their observations on the practice of medicine.<sup>42</sup> But whatever real knowledge they possessed was corrupted by their inveterate propensity for mystical and occult science. They too often exhausted both health and fortune in fruitless researches after the elixir of life and the philosopher's stone. Their medical prescriptions were regulated by the aspect of the stars. Their physics were debased by magic, their chemistry degenerated into alchemy, their astronomy into astrology.

In the fruitful field of history their success was even more equivocal. They seem to have been wholly destitute of the philosophical spirit which gives life to this kind of composition. They were the disciples of fatalism and the subjects of a despotic government. Man appeared to them only in the contrasted aspects of slave and master. What could they know of the finer moral relations, or of the higher energies of the soul, which are developed only under free and beneficent institutions? Even could they have formed conceptions of these, how would they have dared to express them? Hence their histories are too often mere barren chronological details, or fulsome panegyrics on their princes, unenlivened by a single spark of philosophy or criticism.

Although the Spanish Arabs are not entitled to the credit of having wrought any important revolution in intellectual or moral science, they are commended by a severe critic as exhibiting in their writings "the germs of many theories which have been reproduced as discoveries in later ages,"<sup>43</sup> and they silently perfected several of those useful

304), and Bayle has shown that a Latin version of the Stagirite was used by the Europeans before the alleged period. See art. *Averroes*.

<sup>42</sup> Sprengel, *Histoire de la Mé-*

*decine*, traduite par Jourdan (Paris, 1815), tom. ii. pp. 263 et seq.

<sup>43</sup> Degerando, *Hist. de la Philosophie*, tom. iv. ubi supra.

arts which have had a sensible influence on the happiness and improvement of mankind. Algebra and the higher mathematics were taught in their schools, and thence diffused over Europe. The manufacture of paper, which, since the invention of printing, has contributed so essentially to the rapid circulation of knowledge, was derived through them. Casiri has discovered several manuscripts of cotton paper in the Escorial as early as 1009, and of linen paper of the date of 1106;<sup>44</sup> the origin of which latter fabric Tiraboschi has ascribed to an Italian of Trevigi, in the middle of the fourteenth century.<sup>45</sup> Lastly, the application of gunpowder to military science, which has wrought an equally important revolution, though of a more doubtful complexion, in the condition of society, was derived through the same channel.<sup>46</sup>

The influence of the Spanish Arabs, however, is discernible not so much in the amount of knowledge as in the impulse which they communicated to the long dormant energies of Europe. Their invasion was coeval with the commencement of that night of darkness which divides the modern from the ancient world. The soil had been impoverished by long, assiduous cultivation. The Arabians came like a torrent, sweeping down and obliterating even the landmarks of former civilization, but bringing never-

<sup>44</sup> *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. p. 9.—Andres, *Letteratura*, part. 1, cap. 10.

<sup>45</sup> *Letteratura Italiana*, tom. v. p. 87.

<sup>46</sup> The battle of Crecy furnishes the earliest instance on record of the use of artillery by the European Christians; although Du Cange, among several examples which he enumerates, has traced a distinct notice of its existence as far back as 1338. (*Glossarium ad Scriptores Mediæ et Infimæ Latinitatis* (Paris, 1793), and *Supplément* (Paris, 1766), voce *Bombarda*.) The history of the Spanish Arabs carries it to a much earlier period. It was employed by the Moorish king of

Granada at the siege of Baza, in 1312 and 1325. (Conde, *Domination de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 18.—Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. p. 7.) It is distinctly noticed in an Arabic treatise as ancient as 1249; and, finally, Casiri quotes a passage from a Spanish author at the close of the eleventh century (whose MS., according to Nic. Antonio, though familiar to scholars, lies still entombed in the dust of libraries), which describes the use of artillery in a naval engagement of that period between the Moors of Tunis and of Seville. Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. p. 8.—Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. p. 12.



theless a fertilizing principle, which, as the waters receded, gave new life and loveliness to the landscape. The writings of the Saracens were translated and diffused throughout Europe. Their schools were visited by disciples who, roused from their lethargy, caught somewhat of the generous enthusiasm of their masters; and a healthful action was given to the European intellect, which, however ill directed at first, was thus prepared for the more judicious and successful efforts of later times.

It is comparatively easy to determine the value of the scientific labours of a people, for truth is the same in all languages; but the laws of taste differ so widely in different nations that it requires a nicer discrimination to pronounce fairly upon such works as are regulated by them. Nothing is more common than to see the poetry of the East condemned as tumid, over-refined, infected with meretricious ornament and conceits, and, in short, as every way contravening the principles of good taste. Few of the critics who thus peremptorily condemn are capable of reading a line of the original. The merit of poetry, however, consists so much in its literary execution, that a person, to pronounce upon it, should be intimately acquainted with the whole import of the idiom in which it is written. The style of poetry, indeed of all ornamental writing, whether prose or verse, in order to produce a proper effect, must be raised or relieved, as it were, upon the prevailing style of social intercourse. Even where this is highly figurative and impassioned, as with the Arabians, whose ordinary language is made up of metaphor, that of the poet must be still more so. Hence the tone of elegant literature varies so widely in different countries, even in those of Europe, which approach the nearest to each other in their principles of taste, that it would be found difficult, if not impossible, to effect a close translation of the most admired specimens of eloquence from the language of one nation into that of any other. A page of Boccaccio or Bembo, for instance, done into literal English, would have

an air of intolerable artifice and verbiage. The choicest morsels of Massillon, Bossuet, or the rhetorical Thomas, would savour marvellously of bombast; and how could we in any degree keep pace with the magnificent march of the Castilian? Yet surely we are not to impugn the taste of all those nations, who attach much more importance and have paid (at least this is true of the French and Italian) much greater attention to the mere beauties of literary finish than English writers.

Whatever may be the sins of the Arabians on this head, they are certainly not those of negligence. The Spanish Arabs, in particular, were noted for the purity and elegance of their idiom; insomuch that Casiri affects to determine the locality of an author by the superior refinement of his style. Their copious philological and rhetorical treatises, their arts of poetry, grammars, and rhyming dictionaries, show to what an excessive refinement they elaborated the art of composition. Academies, far more numerous than those of Italy, to which they subsequently served for a model, invited by their premiums frequent competitions in poetry and eloquence. To poetry, indeed, especially of the tender kind, the Spanish Arabs seem to have been as indiscriminately addicted as the Italians in the time of Petrarch; and there was scarcely a doctor in church or state but at some time or other offered up his amorous incense on the altar of the muse.<sup>47</sup>

With all this poetic feeling, however, the Arabs never availed themselves of the treasures of Grecian eloquence which lay open before them. Not a poet or orator of any eminence in that language seems to have been translated by them.<sup>48</sup> The temperate tone of Attic composition

<sup>47</sup> Petrarch complains, in one of his letters from the country, that "jurisconsults and divines, nay his own valet, had taken to rhyming; and he was afraid the very cattle might begin to low in verse;" apud De Sade, *Mémoires pour la Vie de Pétrarque*, tom. iii. p. 243.

<sup>48</sup> Andres, *Letteratura*, part. 1, cap. 11.—Yet this popular assertion is contradicted by Reinesius, who states that both Homer and Pindar were translated into Arabic by the middle of the eighth century. See Fabricius, *Bibliotheca Græca* (Hamb. 1712—38), tom. xii. p. 753.

appeared tame to the fervid conceptions of the East. Neither did they venture upon what in Europe are considered the higher walks of the art, the drama and the epic.<sup>49</sup> None of their writers in prose or verse show much attention to the development or dissection of character. Their inspiration exhaled in lyrical effusions, in elegies, epigrams, and idyls. They sometimes, moreover, like the Italians, employed verse as the vehicle of instruction in the grave and recondite sciences. The general character of their poetry is bold, florid, impassioned, richly coloured with imagery, sparkling with conceits and metaphors, and occasionally breathing a deep tone of moral sensibility, as in some of the plaintive effusions ascribed by Conde to the royal poets of Cordova. The compositions of the golden age of the Abassides, and of the preceding period, do not seem to have been infected with the taint of exaggeration, so offensive to a European, which distinguished the later productions in the decay of the empire.

Whatever be thought of the influence of the Arabic on European literature in general, there can be no reasonable doubt that it has been considerable on the Provençal and the Castilian. In the latter especially, so far from being confined to the vocabulary or to external forms of composition, it seems to have penetrated deep into its spirit, and is plainly discernible in that affectation of stateliness and Oriental hyperbole which characterizes Spanish writers even at the present day; in the subtilties and conceits with which the ancient Castilian verse is so liberally bespangled; and in the relish for proverbs and prudential maxims, which is so general that it may be considered national.<sup>50</sup>

\* Sir William Jones, *Traité sur la Poésie orientale*, sec. 2.—Sismondi says that Sir W. Jones is mistaken in citing the history of Timour by Ebn Arabschah as an Arabic epic. (*Littérature du Midi*, tom. i. p. 57.) It is Sismondi who is mistaken, since the English

critic states that the Arabs have no heroic poem, and that this poetical prose history is not accounted such even by the Arabs themselves.

"It would require much more learning than I am fortified with, to enter into the merits of the

A decided effect has been produced on the romantic literature of Europe by those tales of fairy enchantment, so characteristic of Oriental genius, and in which it seems to have revelled with uncontrolled delight. These tales, which furnished the principal diversion of the East, were imported by the Saracens into Spain; and we find the monarchs of Cordova solacing their leisure hours with listening to their *rawis*, or novelists, who sang to them

"Of ladye-love and war, romance, and knightly worth."<sup>51</sup>

The same spirit, penetrating into France, stimulated the more sluggish inventions of the *trouvère*, and, at a later and more polished period, called forth the imperishable creations of the Italian muse.<sup>52</sup>

question which has been raised respecting the probable influence of the Arabic on the literature of Europe. A. W. Schlegel, in a work of little bulk, but much value, in refuting with his usual vivacity the extravagant theory of Andres, has been led to conclusions of an opposite nature, which may be thought perhaps scarcely less extravagant. (Observations sur la Langue et la Littérature Provençales, p. 64.) It must indeed seem highly improbable that the Saracens, who, during the Middle Ages, were so far superior in science and literary culture to the Europeans, could have resided so long in immediate contact with them, and in those very countries indeed which gave birth to the most cultivated poetry of that period, without exerting some perceptible influence upon it. Be this as it may, its influence on the Castilian cannot reasonably be disputed. This has been briefly traced by Conde in an "Essay on Oriental Poetry," *Poesía oriental*, whose publication he anticipates in the Preface to his "History of the Spanish Arabs," but which still remains in manuscript. (The copy I have used is in the library of Mr. George Ticknor.) He professes in this work to discern in the earlier Castilian

poetry, in the *Cid*, the *Alexander*, in Berceo's, the arch-priest of Hita's, and others of similar antiquity, most of the peculiarities and varieties of Arabian verse; the same cadences and number of syllables, the same intermixture of assonances and consonances, the double hemistich and prolonged repetition of the final rhyme. From the same source he derives much of the earlier rural minstrelsy of Spain, as well as the measures of its romances and *seguidillas*; and in the Preface to his *History* he has ventured on the bold assertion that the Castilian owes so much of its vocabulary to the Arabic that it may be almost accounted a dialect of the latter. Conde's criticisms, however, must be quoted with reserve. His habitual studies had given him such a keen relish for Oriental literature that he was in a manner *denaturalized* from his own.

"Byron's beautiful line may seem almost a version of Conde's Spanish text, "sucesos de armas y de amores con muy estraños lances y en elegante estilo."—*Domination de los Arabes*, tom. i. p. 457.

"Siamondi, in his *Littérature du Midi* (tom. i. pp. 267 et seq.), and more fully in his *Républiques Italiennes* (tom. xvi. pp. 448 et

It is unfortunate for the Arabians that their literature should be locked up in a character and idiom so difficult of access to European scholars. Their wild, imaginative poetry, scarcely capable of transfusion into a foreign tongue, is made known to us only through the medium of bald prose translation; while their scientific treatises have been done into Latin with an inaccuracy which, to make use of a pun of Casiri's, merits the name of perversions rather than versions of the originals.<sup>68</sup> How obviously inadequate, then, are our means of forming any just estimate of their literary merits! It is unfortunate for them, moreover, that the Turks, the only nation which, from an identity of religion and government with the Arabs, as well as from its political consequence, would seem to represent them on the theatre of modern Europe, should be a race so degraded; one which, during the five centuries that it has been in possession of the finest climate and monuments of antiquity, has so seldom been quickened into a display of genius, and added so little of positive value to the literary treasures descended from its ancient masters. Yet this people, so sensual and sluggish, we are apt to confound in imagination with the sprightly, intellectual Arab. Both indeed have been subjected to the influence of the same degrading political and religious institutions, which on the Turks have produced the results naturally to have been expected; while the Arabians, on the other hand, exhibit the extraordinary phenomenon of a nation, under all these embarrassments, rising to a high degree of elegance and intellectual culture.

The empire, which once embraced more than half of the

seq.), derives the jealousy of the sex, the ideas of honour, and the deadly spirit of revenge, which distinguished the southern nations of Europe in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, from the Arabians. Whatever be thought of the jealousy of the sex, it might have been supposed that the principles of honour

and the spirit of revenge might, without seeking further, find abundant precedent in the feudal habits and institutions of our European ancestors.

"Quas perversiones potius, quam versiones meritò dixeris." Bibliotheca Escorialensis, tom. i. p. 266.

ancient world, has now shrunk within its original limits; and the Bedouin wanders over his native desert as free, and almost as uncivilized, as before the coming of his apostle. The language which was once spoken along the southern shores of the Mediterranean and the whole extent of the Indian Ocean is broken up into a variety of discordant dialects. Darkness has again settled over those regions of Africa which were illumined by the light of learning. The elegant dialect of the Koran is studied as a dead language even in the birthplace of the prophet. Not a printing-press at this day is to be found throughout the whole Arabian Peninsula. Even in Spain, in Christian Spain, alas! the contrast is scarcely less degrading. A deathlike torpor has succeeded to her former intellectual activity. Her cities are emptied of the population with which they teemed in the days of the Saracens. Her climate is as fair, but her fields no longer bloom with the same rich and variegated husbandry. Her most interesting monuments are those constructed by the Arabs; and the traveller, as he wanders amid their desolate but beautiful ruins, ponders on the destinies of a people whose very existence seems now to have been almost as fanciful as the magical creations in one of their own fairy-tales.

---

Notwithstanding the history of the Arabs is so intimately connected with that of the Spaniards that it may be justly said to form the reverse side of it, and notwithstanding the amplitude of authentic documents in the Arabic tongue to be found in the public libraries, the Castilian writers, even the most eminent, until the latter half of the last century, with an insensibility which can be imputed to nothing but a spirit of religious bigotry, have been content to derive their narratives exclusively from national authorities. A fire which occurred in the Escorial in 1671 having consumed more than three-quarters of the magnificent collection of Eastern manuscripts which it contained, the Spanish government, taking some shame to itself, as it would appear, for its past supineness, caused a copious catalogue of the surviving volumes, to the number of 1850, to be compiled by the learned Casiri; and the result was his celebrated work, "*Bibliotheca Arabico-Hispana Escorialensis*," which appeared in the years 1760—70, and which would reflect credit from the splendour of its typographical execution on any press of the present day. This work, although censured by some later Orientalists as hasty and superficial, must ever be highly valued as affording the only

complete index to the rich repertory of Arabic manuscripts in the Escorial, and for the ample evidence which it exhibits of the science and mental culture of the Spanish Arabs. Several other native scholars, among whom Andres and Masden may be particularly noticed, have made extensive researches into the literary history of this people. Still their political history, so essential to a correct knowledge of the Spanish, was comparatively neglected, until Señor Conde, the late learned librarian of the Academy, who had given ample evidence of his Oriental learning in his version and illustrations of the Nubian Geographer, and a Dissertation on Arabic Coins published in the fifth volume of the *Memoirs of the Royal Academy of History*, compiled his work entitled "*Historia de la Dominacion de los Arabes en España*." The first volume appeared in 1820. But unhappily the death of its author, occurring in the autumn of the same year, prevented the completion of his design. The two remaining volumes, however, were printed in the course of that and the following year from his own manuscripts; and, although their comparative meagreness and confused chronology betray the want of the same paternal hand, they contain much interesting information. The relation of the conquest of Granada, especially, with which the work concludes, exhibits some important particulars in a totally different point of view from that in which they had been presented by the principal Spanish historians.

The first volume, which may be considered as having received the last touches of its author, embraces a circumstantial narrative of the great Saracen invasion, of the subsequent condition of Spain under the viceroys, and of the empire of the Omeiyades; undoubtedly the most splendid portion of the Arabian annals, but the one, unluckily, which has been most copiously illustrated in the popular work compiled by Cardonne from the Oriental manuscripts in the Royal Library at Paris. But, as this author has followed the Spanish and the Oriental authorities indiscriminately, no part of his book can be cited as a genuine Arabic version, except indeed the last sixty pages, comprising the conquest of Granada, which Cardonne professes in his Preface to have drawn exclusively from an Arabic manuscript. Conde, on the other hand, professes to have adhered to his originals with such scrupulous fidelity that the "European reader may feel that he is perusing an Arabian author;" and certainly very strong internal evidence is afforded of the truth of this assertion, in the peculiar national and religious spirit which pervades the work, and in a certain florid gasconade of style, common with the Oriental writers. It is this fidelity that constitutes the peculiar value of Conde's narrative. It is the first time that the Arabians, at least those of Spain,—the part of the nation which reached the highest degree of refinement,—have been allowed to speak for themselves. The history, or rather tissue of histories, embodied in the translation, is certainly conceived in no very philosophical spirit, and contains, as might be expected from an Asiatic pen, little for the edification of a European reader on subjects of policy and government. The narrative is, moreover, encumbered with frivolous details and a barren muster-roll of names and titles, which would better become a genealogical table than a history. But, with every deduction, it must be allowed to exhibit a sufficiently clear view of the intricate conflicting relations of the petty principalities which swarmed over the Peninsula, and to furnish abundant evidence of a wide-spread intellectual improvement amid all the horrors of anarchy and a ferocious despotism. The work has already been translated, or rather paraphrased, into French. The necessity of an English version will doubtless be in a great degree superseded by the *History of the Spanish Arabs*, preparing for the *Cabinet Cyclopædia*, by Mr. Southey,—a writer with whom few Castilian scholars will be willing to compete, even on their own ground, and who

is, happily, not exposed to the national or religious prejudices which can interfere with his rendering perfect justice to his subject.

---

[Conde's reputation has been vehemently assailed by a learned Dutch scholar, R. P. A. Dozy, who describes him as a mere pretender in Arabic lore, "knowing little of the language beyond the characters in which it is written, supplying the lack of the most elementary knowledge by an extremely fertile imagination and an unequalled impudence, forging dates by the hundred, and inventing facts by the thousand, while pretending to give a faithful translation of Arabic texts." The work in which these charges appear (*Recherches sur l'Histoire politique et littéraire de l'Espagne pendant le moyen Age*) is chiefly confined to the eleventh century, and was left unfinished at the author's death. The sufficiency of his proofs, so far as they extend, must be left to the judgment of competent Arabic scholars.—Ed.]







## CHAPTER IX.

### WAR OF GRANADA.—SURPRISE OF ZAHARA.—CAPTURE OF ALHAMA.

1481—1482.

*Zahara surprised by the Moors.—Marquis of Cadiz.—His Expedition against Alhama.—Valour of the Citizens.—Desperate Struggle.—Fall of Alhama.—Consternation of the Moors.—Vigorous Measures of the Queen.*

No sooner had Ferdinand and Isabella restored internal tranquillity to their dominions, and made the strength effective which had been acquired by their union under one government, than they turned their eyes to those fair regions of the Peninsula over which the Moslem crescent had reigned triumphant for nearly eight centuries. Fortunately, an act of aggression on the part of the Moors furnished a pretext for entering on their plan of conquest, at the moment when it was ripe for execution. Aben Ismail, who had ruled in Granada during the latter part of John the Second's reign and the commencement of Henry the Fourth's, had been partly indebted for his throne to the former monarch; and sentiments of gratitude, combined with a naturally amiable disposition, had led him to foster as amicable relations with the Christian princes as the jealousy of two nations, that might be considered the natural enemies of each other, would permit; so that, notwithstanding an occasional border foray, or the capture of a frontier fortress, such a correspondence was maintained between the two kingdoms that the nobles of Castile frequently resorted to the court of Granada, where, forgetting their ancient feuds, they

mingled with the Moorish cavaliers in the generous pastimes of chivalry.

Muley Abul Hacen, who succeeded his father in 1466, was of a very different temperament. His fiery character prompted him, when very young, to violate the truce by an unprovoked inroad into Andalusia; and, although after his accession domestic troubles occupied him too closely to allow leisure for foreign war, he still cherished in secret the same feelings of animosity against the Christians. When, in 1476, the Spanish sovereigns required, as the condition of a renewal of the truce which he solicited, the payment of the annual tribute imposed on his predecessors, he proudly replied that "the mints of Granada coined no longer gold, but steel." His subsequent conduct did not belie the spirit of this Spartan answer.<sup>1</sup>

At length, towards the close of the year 1481, the storm which had been so long gathering burst upon Zahara, a small fortified town on the frontier of Andalusia, crowning a lofty eminence, washed at its base by the river Guadalete, which from its position seemed almost inaccessible. The garrison, trusting to these natural defences, suffered itself to be surprised, on the night of the 26th of December, by the Moorish monarch, who, scaling the walls under favour of a furious tempest, which prevented his approach from being readily heard, put to the sword such of the guard as offered resistance, and swept away the whole population of the place, men, women, and children, into slavery in Granada.

The intelligence of this disaster caused deep mortification to the Spanish sovereigns, especially to Ferdinand, by whose grandfather Zahara had been recovered from the Moors. Measures were accordingly taken for strengthening the whole line of frontier, and the utmost vigilance was exerted to detect some vulnerable point of the enemy, on which retaliation might be successfully inflicted.

<sup>1</sup> Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 467— 469.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 32, 34.

Neither were the tidings of their own successes welcomed by the people of Granada with the joy that might have been expected. The prognostics, it was said, afforded by the appearance of the heavens, boded no good. More sure prognostics were afforded in the judgments of thinking men, who deprecated the temerity of awakening the wrath of a vindictive and powerful enemy. "Woe is me!" exclaimed an ancient Alfaki, on quitting the hall of audience. "The ruins of Zahara will fall on our own heads; the days of the Moslem empire in Spain are now numbered!"<sup>2</sup>

It was not long before the desired opportunity for retaliation presented itself to the Spaniards. One Juan de Ortega, a captain of *escaladores*, or scalers, so denominated from the peculiar service in which they were employed in besieging cities, who had acquired some reputation under John the Second in the wars of Roussillon, reported to Diego de Merlo, assistant of Seville, that the fortress of Alhama, situated in the heart of the Moorish territories, was so negligently guarded that it might be easily carried by an enemy who had skill enough to approach it. The fortress, as well as the city of the same name, which it commanded, was built, like many others in that turbulent period, along the crest of a rocky eminence, encompassed by a river at its base, and, from its natural advantages, might be deemed impregnable. This strength of position, by rendering all other precautions apparently superfluous, lulled its defenders into a security like that which had proved so fatal to Zahara. Alhama, as this Arabic name implies, was famous for its baths,

<sup>2</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 51.—Conde, Dominacion de los Arabes, tom. iii. cap. 34.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 180.—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 171.—Marmol, Historia del Rebelion y Castigo de los Moriscos (Madrid, 1797), lib. 1, cap. 12.—Lebrija states that the revenues of Granada, at the commencement of

this war, amounted to a million of gold ducats, and that it kept in pay 7000 horsemen on its peace establishment, and could send forth 21,000 warriors from its gates. The last of these estimates would not seem to be exaggerated. Rerum Gestarum Decades, ii. lib. 1, cap. 1.

whose annual rents are said to have amounted to five hundred thousand ducats. The monarchs of Granada, indulging the taste common to the people of the East, used to frequent this place, with their court, to refresh themselves with its delicious waters, so that Alhama became embellished with all the magnificence of a royal residence. The place was still further enriched by its being the *dépôt* of the public taxes on land, which constituted a principal branch of the revenue, and by its various manufactures of cloth, for which its inhabitants were celebrated throughout the kingdom of Granada.<sup>3</sup>

Diego de Merlo, although struck with the advantages of this conquest, was not insensible to the difficulties with which it would be attended; since Alhama was sheltered under the very wings of Granada, from which it lay scarcely eight leagues distant, and could be reached only by traversing the most populous portion of the Moorish territory, or by surmounting a precipitous *sierra*, or chain of mountains, which screened it on the north. Without delay, however, he communicated the information which he had received to Don Rodrigo Ponce de Leon, marquis of Cadiz, as the person best fitted by his capacity and courage for such an enterprise. This nobleman, who had succeeded his father, the count of Arcos, in 1469, as head of the great house of Ponce de Leon, was at this period about thirty-nine years of age. Although a younger and illegitimate son, he had been preferred to the succession in consequence of the extraordinary promise which his early youth exhibited. When scarcely seventeen years old, he achieved a victory over the Moors, accompanied with a signal display of personal prowess.<sup>4</sup> Later in life, he formed a connection with the daughter of the marquis of Villena, the factious

<sup>3</sup> Estrada, Poblacion de España, tom. ii. pp. 247, 248.—El Nubiense, Descripcion de España, p. 222, nota.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 181.—Marmol, Rebelion de los Moriscos, lib. 1, cap. 12.

<sup>4</sup> Zúñiga, Annales de Sevilla, pp.

349, 362.—This occurred in the fight of Madroño, when Don Rodrigo, stooping to adjust his buckler, which had been unlaced, was suddenly surrounded by a party of Moors. He snatched a sling from one of them, and made such brisk

minister of Henry the Fourth, through whose influence he was raised to the dignity of marquis of Cadiz. This alliance attached him to the fortunes of Henry, in his disputes with his brother Alfonso, and subsequently with Isabella, on whose accession, of course, Don Rodrigo looked with no friendly eye. He did not, however, engage in any overt act of resistance, but occupied himself with prosecuting an hereditary feud which he had revived with the duke of Medina Sidonia, the head of the Guzmans, a family which from ancient times had divided with his own the great interests of Andalusia. The pertinacity with which this feud was conducted, and the desolation which it carried not only into Seville, but into every quarter of the province, have been noticed in the preceding pages. The vigorous administration of Isabella repressed these disorders, and, after abridging the overgrown power of the two nobles, effected an apparent (it was only apparent) reconciliation between them. The fiery spirit of the marquis of Cadiz, no longer allowed to escape in domestic broil, urged him to seek distinction in more honourable warfare; and at this moment he lay in his castle at Arcos, looking with a watchful eye over the borders, and waiting, like a lion in ambush, the moment when he could spring upon his victim.

Without hesitation, therefore, he assumed the enterprise proposed by Diego de Merlo, imparting his purpose to Don Pedro Henriquez, *adelantado* of Andalusia, a relative of Ferdinand, and to the alcaydes of two or three neighbouring fortresses. With the assistance of these friends

use of it that, after disabling several, he succeeded in putting them to flight; for which feat, says Zúfiga, the king complimented him with the title of "the youthful David."

Don Juan, count of Arcos, had no children born in wedlock, but a numerous progeny by his concubines. Among these latter was Doña Leonora Núñez de Prado, the

mother of Don Rodrigo. The brilliant and attractive qualities of this youth so far won the affections of his father that the latter obtained the royal sanction (a circumstance not infrequent in an age when the laws of descent were very unsettled) to bequeath him his titles and estates, to the prejudice of more legitimate heirs.

he assembled a force, which, including those who marched under the banner of Seville, amounted to two thousand five hundred horse and three thousand foot. His own town of Marchena was appointed as the place of rendezvous. The proposed route lay by the way of Antequera, across the wild sierras of Alzerifa. The mountain-passes, sufficiently difficult at a season when their numerous ravines were choked up by the winter torrents, were rendered still more formidable by being traversed in the darkness of night; for the party, in order to conceal their movements, lay by during the day. Leaving their baggage on the banks of the Yeguas, that they might move forward with greater celerity, the whole body at length arrived, after a rapid and most painful march, on the third night from their departure, in a deep valley about half a league from Alhama. Here the marquis first revealed the real object of the expedition to his soldiers, who, little dreaming of anything beyond a mere border inroad, were transported with joy at the prospect of the rich booty so nearly within their grasp.<sup>5</sup>

The next morning, being the 28th of February, a small party was detached, about two hours before dawn, under the command of John de Ortega, for the purpose of scaling the citadel, while the main body moved forward more leisurely under the marquis of Cadiz, in order to support them. The night was dark and tempestuous, a circumstance which favoured their approach in the same manner as with the Moors at Zahara. After ascending the rocky heights which were crowned by the citadel, the ladders were silently placed against the walls, and Ortega, followed by about thirty others, succeeded in gaining the battlements unobserved. A sentinel, who was found sleeping on his post, they at once despatched, and, proceeding cautiously forward to the guard-room, put the whole of the little garrison to the sword, after the short and ineffectual

<sup>5</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 52.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 171.—Pulgar computes the marquis's army at 3000

horse and 4000 foot. *Reyes Católicos*, p. 181.—Conde, *Dominación de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 34.



resistance that could be opposed by men suddenly roused from slumber. The city in the mean time was alarmed, but it was too late; the citadel was taken; and the outer gates, which opened into the country, being thrown open, the marquis of Cadiz entered, with trumpet sounding and banner flying, at the head of his army, and took possession of the fortress.<sup>6</sup>

After allowing the refreshment necessary to the exhausted spirits of his soldiers, the marquis resolved to sally forth at once upon the town, before its inhabitants could muster in sufficient force to oppose him. But the citizens of Alhama, showing a resolution rather to have been expected from men trained in a camp than from peaceful burghers of a manufacturing town, had sprung to arms at the first alarm, and, gathering in the narrow street on which the portal of the castle opened, so completely commanded it with their arquebuses and crossbows, that the Spaniards, after an ineffectual attempt to force a passage, were compelled to recoil upon their defences, amid showers of bolts and balls, which occasioned the loss, among others, of two of their principal alcaides.

A council of war was then called, in which it was even advised by some that the fortress, after having been dismantled, should be abandoned as incapable of defence against the citizens on the one hand, and the succours which might be expected speedily to arrive from Granada on the other. But this counsel was rejected with indignation by the marquis of Cadiz, whose fiery spirit rose with the occasion; indeed, it was not very palatable to most of his followers, whose cupidity was more than ever inflamed by the sight of the rich spoil which, after so many fatigues, now lay at their feet. It was accordingly resolved to demolish part of the fortifications which looked towards

<sup>6</sup> Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 1, cap. 2.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1482.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 52.—

Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 315.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 252, 253.

the town, and at all hazards to force a passage into it. This resolution was at once put into execution; and the marquis, throwing himself into the breach thus made, at the head of his men-at-arms, and shouting his war-cry of "St. James and the Virgin," precipitated himself into the thickest of the enemy. Others of the Spaniards, running along the outworks contiguous to the buildings of the city, leaped into the street, and joined their companions there, while others again sallied from the gates, now opened for the second time.<sup>7</sup>

The Moors, unshaken by the fury of this assault, received the assailants with brisk and well-directed volleys of shot and arrows; while the women and children, thronging the roofs and balconies of the houses, discharged on their heads boiling oil, pitch, and missiles of every description. But the weapons of the Moors glanced comparatively harmless from the mailed armour of the Spaniards, while their own bodies, loosely arrayed in such habiliments as they could throw over them in the confusion of the night, presented a fatal mark to their enemies. Still they continued to maintain a stout resistance, checking the progress of the Spaniards by barricades of timber hastily thrown across the streets; and, as their intrenchments were forced one after another, they disputed every inch of ground with the desperation of men who fought for life, fortune, liberty,—all that was most dear to them. The contest hardly slackened till the close of day, while the kennels literally ran with blood, and every avenue was choked up with the bodies of the slain. At length, however, Spanish valour proved triumphant in every quarter, except where a small and desperate remnant of the Moors, having gathered their wives and children around them, retreated as a last resort into a large mosque near the walls of the city, from which they kept up a galling fire on the close ranks of the Christians. The latter, after enduring some loss, succeeded in

<sup>7</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., ubi supra.—Conde, Domina-

cion de los Arabes, cap. 34. — L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 172.

sheltering themselves so effectually under a roof or canopy constructed of their own shields, in the manner practised in war previous to the exclusive use of fire-arms, that they were enabled to approach so near the mosque as to set fire to its doors; when its tenants, menaced with suffocation, made a desperate sally, in which many perished, and the remainder surrendered at discretion. The prisoners thus made were all massacred on the spot, without distinction of sex or age, according to the Saracen accounts. But the Castilian writers make no mention of this; and, as the appetites of the Spaniards were not yet stimulated by that love of carnage which they afterwards displayed in their American wars, and which was repugnant to the chivalrous spirit with which their contests with the Moslems were usually conducted, we may be justified in regarding it as an invention of the enemy.<sup>8</sup>

Alhama was now delivered up to the sack of the soldiery, and rich indeed was the booty which fell into their hands, —gold and silver plate, pearls, jewels, fine silks and cloths, curious and costly furniture, and all the various appurtenances of a thriving, luxurious city. In addition to this, the magazines were found well stored with the more substantial, and at the present juncture more serviceable, supplies of grain, oil, and other provisions. Nearly a quarter of the population is said to have perished in the various conflicts of the day, and the remainder, according to the usage of the time, became the prize of the victors. A considerable number of Christian captives, who were found immured in the public prisons, were restored to freedom, and swelled the general jubilee with their grateful acclamations. The contemporary Castilian chroniclers record also, with no less satisfaction, the detection of a Christian renegade, notorious for his depredations on his countrymen, whose misdeeds the marquis of Cadiz requited by causing him to be hung up over the battlements of the

<sup>8</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Católicos*, pp. 182, 183.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii, pp. 545, 546. Arabes, ubi supra.—Pulgar, *Reyes*

castle, in the face of the whole city. Thus fell the ancient city of Alhama, the first conquest, and achieved with a gallantry and daring unsurpassed by any other during this memorable war.<sup>9</sup>

The report of this disaster fell like the knell of their own doom on the ears of the inhabitants of Granada. It seemed as if the hand of Providence itself must have been stretched forth to smite the stately city, which, reposing as it were under the shadow of their own walls, and in the bosom of a peaceful and populous country, was thus suddenly laid low in blood and ashes. Men now read the fulfilment of the disastrous omens and predictions which ushered in the capture of Zahara. The melancholy *romance* or ballad, with the burden of *Ay de mi Alhama!* "Woe is me, Alhama!" composed probably by some one of the nation, not long after this event, shows how deep was the dejection which settled on the spirits of the people. The old king, Abul Hacen, however, far from resigning himself to useless lamentation, sought to retrieve his loss by the most vigorous measures. A body of a thousand horse was sent forward to reconnoitre the city, while he prepared to follow with as powerful levies as he could enforce of the militia of Granada.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>9</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 52.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, ubi supra.—Cardonne, Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne, tom. iii. p. 254.

<sup>10</sup> "Passeayase el Rey Moro  
Por la ciudad de Granada,  
Desde las puertas de Elvira  
Hasta las de Bivarambla.  
Ay de mi Alhama!

"Cartas le fueron venidas  
Que Alhama era ganada.  
Las cartas echó en el fuego  
Y al mensagero matava.  
Ay de mi Alhama!

"Hombres, niños y mugeres,  
Lloran tan grande perdida.  
Lloravan todas las damas

Quantas en Granada avia.  
Ay de mi Alhama!

"Por las calles y ventanas  
Mucho luto parecia:  
Llora el Rey como fembra,  
Qu'es mucho lo que perdia.  
Ay de mi Alhama!"

The *romance*, according to Hita (not the best voucher for a fact), caused such general lamentation that it was not allowed to be sung by the Moors after the conquest. (Guerras civiles de Granada, tom. i. p. 350.) Lord Byron, as the reader recollects, has done this ballad into English. The version has the merit of fidelity. It is not his fault if his Muse appears to little advantage in the plebeian dress of the Moorish minstrel.

The intelligence of the conquest of Alhama diffused general satisfaction throughout Castile, and was especially grateful to the sovereigns, who welcomed it as an auspicious omen of the ultimate success of their designs upon the Moors. They were attending mass in their royal palace of Medina del Campo, when they received despatches from the marquis of Cadiz, informing them of the issue of his enterprise. "During all the while he sat at dinner," says a precise chronicler of the period, "the prudent Ferdinand was revolving in his mind the course best to be adopted." He reflected that the Castilians would soon be beleaguered by an overwhelming force from Granada, and he determined at all hazards to support them. He accordingly gave orders to make instant preparation for departure, but first accompanied the queen, attended by a solemn procession of the court and clergy, to the cathedral church of St. James, where *Te Deum* was chanted, and a humble thanksgiving offered up to the Lord of hosts for the success with which he had crowned their arms. Towards evening, the king set forward on his journey to the south, escorted by such nobles and cavaliers as were in attendance on his person, leaving the queen to follow more leisurely, after having provided reinforcements and supplies requisite for the prosecution of the war.<sup>11</sup>

On the 5th of March, the king of Granada appeared before the walls of Alhama, with an army which amounted to three thousand horse and fifty thousand foot. The first object which encountered his eyes was the mangled remains of his unfortunate subjects, which the Christians, who would have been scandalized by an attempt to give them the rites of sepulture, had from dread of infection thrown over the walls, where they now lay half devoured by birds of prey and the ravenous dogs of the city. The Moslem troops, transported with horror and indignation at this

<sup>11</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 172.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 34.—

Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1482.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 545, 546.

hideous spectacle, called loudly to be led to the attack. They had marched from Granada with so much precipitation that they were wholly unprovided with artillery, in the use of which they were expert for that period, and which was now the more necessary, as the Spaniards had diligently employed the few days which intervened since their occupation of the place in repairing the breaches in the fortifications and in putting them in a posture of defence. But the Moorish ranks were filled with the flower of their chivalry; and their immense superiority of numbers enabled them to make their attacks simultaneously on the most distant quarters of the town, with such unintermitted vivacity that the little garrison, scarcely allowed a moment for repose, was wellnigh exhausted with fatigue.<sup>12</sup>

At length, however, Abul Hacen, after the loss of more than two thousand of his bravest troops in these precipitate assaults, became convinced of the impracticability of forcing a position whose natural strength was so ably seconded by the valour of its defenders, and he determined to reduce the place by the more tardy but certain method of blockade. In this he was favoured by one or two circumstances. The town, having but a single well within its walls, was almost wholly indebted for its supplies of water to the river which flowed at its base. The Moors, by dint of great labour, succeeded in diverting the stream so effectually that the only communication with it which remained open to the besieged was by a subterraneous gallery or mine, that had probably been contrived with reference to some such emergency by the original inhabitants. The mouth of this passage was commanded in such a manner by the Moorish archers that no egress could be obtained without a regular skirmish, so that every drop of water might be said to be purchased with the blood of Christians, who,

<sup>12</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 52.—Bernaldez swells the Moslem army to 5500 horse and 80,000 foot, but I have preferred the more moderate and pro-

bable estimate of the Arabic authors. Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 34.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, loc. cit.

“if they had not possessed the courage of Spaniards,” says a Castilian writer, “would have been reduced to the last extremity.” In addition to this calamity, the garrison began to be menaced with scarcity of provisions, owing to the improvident waste of the soldiers, who supposed that the city, after being plundered, was to be razed to the ground and abandoned.<sup>13</sup>

At this crisis they received the unwelcome tidings of the failure of an expedition destined for their relief by Alonso de Aguilar. This cavalier, the chief of an illustrious house since rendered immortal by the renown of his younger brother, Gonsalvo de Cordova, had assembled a considerable body of troops, on learning the capture of Alhama, for the purpose of supporting his friend and companion-in-arms the marquis of Cadiz. On reaching the shores of the Yeguas, he received, for the first time, advices of the formidable host which lay between him and the city, rendering hopeless any attempt to penetrate into the latter with his inadequate force. Contenting himself, therefore, with recovering the baggage which the marquis’s army in its rapid march, as has been already noticed, had left on the banks of the river, he returned to Antequera.<sup>14</sup>

Under these depressing circumstances, the indomitable spirit of the marquis of Cadiz seemed to infuse itself into the hearts of his soldiers. He was ever in the front of danger, and shared the privations of the meanest of his followers; encouraging them to rely with undoubting confidence on the sympathies which their cause must awaken in the breasts of their countrymen. The event proved that he did not miscalculate. Soon after the occupation of Alhama, the marquis, foreseeing the difficulties of his situation, had despatched missives requesting the support of the principal lords and cities of Andalusia. In this summons he had omitted the duke of Medina

<sup>13</sup> Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. lib. 18, cap. 23.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 183, 184.

<sup>14</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 52.

Sidonia, as one who had good reason to take umbrage at being excluded from a share in the original enterprise. Henrique de Guzman, duke of Medina Sidonia, possessed a degree of power more considerable than any other chieftain in the south. His yearly rents amounted to nearly sixty thousand ducats, and he could bring into the field, it was said, from his own resources an army little inferior to what might be raised by a sovereign prince. He had succeeded to his inheritance in 1468, and had very early given his support to the pretensions of Isabella. Notwithstanding his deadly feud with the marquis of Cadiz, he had the generosity, on the breaking out of the present war, to march to the relief of the marchioness when beleaguered, during her husband's absence, by a party of Moors from Ronda, in her own castle of Arcos. He now showed a similar alacrity in sacrificing all personal jealousy at the call of patriotism.<sup>15</sup>

No sooner did he learn the perilous condition of his countrymen in Alhama than he mustered the whole array of his household troops and retainers, which when combined with those of the marquis de Villena, of the count de Cabra, and those from Seville, in which city the family of the Guzmans had long exercised a sort of hereditary influence, swelled to the number of five thousand horse and forty thousand foot. The duke of Medina Sidonia, putting himself at the head of this powerful body, set forward without delay on his expedition.

When King Ferdinand in his progress to the south had reached the little town of Adamuz, about five leagues from Cordova, he was informed of the advance of the Andalusian chivalry, and instantly sent instructions to the duke to delay his march, as he intended to come in person and assume the command. But the latter, returning a respectful apology for his disobedience, represented to his master the extremities to which the besieged were already

<sup>15</sup> Zuñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 360.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memoria-*

*bles*, fol. 24, 172.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*, lib. 1, cap. 3.



reduced, and, without waiting for a reply, pushed on with the utmost vigour for Alhama. The Moorish monarch, alarmed at the approach of so powerful a reinforcement, saw himself in danger of being hemmed in between the garrison on the one side and these new enemies on the other. Without awaiting their appearance on the crest of the eminence which separated him from them, he hastily broke up his encampment, on the 29th of March, after a siege of more than three weeks, and retreated on his capital.<sup>16</sup>

The garrison of Alhama viewed with astonishment the sudden departure of their enemies; but their wonder was converted into joy when they beheld the bright arms and banners of their countrymen gleaming along the declivities of the mountains. They rushed out with tumultuous transport to receive them and pour forth their grateful acknowledgments, while the two commanders, embracing each other in the presence of their united armies, pledged themselves to a mutual oblivion of all past grievances; thus affording to the nation the best possible earnest of future successes, in the voluntary extinction of a feud which had desolated it for so many generations.

Notwithstanding the kindly feelings excited between the two armies, a dispute had wellnigh arisen respecting the division of the spoil, in which the duke's army claimed a share, as having contributed to secure the conquest which their more fortunate countrymen had effected. But these discontents were appeased, though with some difficulty, by their noble leader, who besought his men not to tarnish the laurels already won, by mingling a sordid avarice with the generous motives which had prompted them to the expedition. After the necessary time devoted to repose and refreshment, the combined armies proceeded to evacuate Alhama, and, having left in garrison Don Diego Merlo,

<sup>16</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 183, 184.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 53.—Ferrerías, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. p. 572.—

Zúñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, pp. 392, 393.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 257.

with a corps of troops of the hermandad, returned into their own territories.<sup>17</sup>

King Ferdinand, after receiving the reply of the duke of Medina Sidonia, had pressed forward his march by the way of Cordova, as far as Lucena, with the intention of throwing himself at all hazards into Alhama. He was, not without much difficulty, dissuaded from this by his nobles, who represented the temerity of the enterprise, and its incompetency to any good result, even should he succeed, with the small force of which he was master. On receiving intelligence that the siege was raised, he returned to Cordova, where he was joined by the queen towards the latter part of April. Isabella had been employed in making vigorous preparation for carrying on the war, by enforcing the requisite supplies, and summoning the crown vassals, and the principal nobility of the north, to hold themselves in readiness to join the royal standard in Andalusia. After this, she proceeded by rapid stages to Cordova, notwithstanding the state of pregnancy in which she was then far advanced.

Here the sovereigns received the unwelcome information that the king of Granada, on the retreat of the Spaniards, had again sat down before Alhama; having brought with him artillery, from the want of which he had suffered so much in the preceding siege. This news struck a damp into the hearts of the Castilians, many of whom recommended the total evacuation of a place "which," they said, "was so near the capital that it must be perpetually exposed to sudden and dangerous assaults; while, from the difficulty of reaching it, it would cost the Castilians an incalculable waste of blood and treasure in its defence. It was experience of these evils which had led to its abandonment in former days, when it had been recovered by the Spanish arms from the Saracens."

Isabella was far from being shaken by these arguments. "Glory," she said, "was not to be won without danger.

<sup>17</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, pp. MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 28.  
183—186.—Oviedo, Quincuagenas,

The present war was one of peculiar difficulties and danger, and these had been well calculated before entering upon it. The strong and central position of Alhama made it of the last importance, since it might be regarded as the key of the enemy's country. This was the first blow struck during the war, and honour and policy alike forbade them to adopt a measure which could not fail to damp the ardour of the nation." This opinion of the queen, thus decisively expressed, determined the question, and kindled a spark of her own enthusiasm in the breasts of the most desponding.<sup>18</sup>

It was settled that the king should march to the relief of the besieged, taking with him the most ample supplies of forage and provisions, at the head of a force strong enough to compel the retreat of the Moorish monarch. This was effected without delay; and, Abul Hacen once more breaking up his camp on the rumour of Ferdinand's approach, the latter took possession of the city, without opposition, on the 14th of May. The king was attended by a splendid train of his prelates and principal nobility; and he prepared with their aid to dedicate his new conquest to the service of the cross, with all the formalities of the Romish church. After the ceremony of purification, the three principal mosques of the city were consecrated by the cardinal of Spain, as temples of Christian worship. Bells, crosses, a sumptuous service of plate, and other sacred utensils, were liberally furnished by the queen; and the principal church of Santa Maria de la Encarnacion long exhibited a covering of the altar, richly embroidered by her own hands. Isabella lost no opportunity of manifesting that she had entered into the war less from motives of ambition than of zeal for the exaltation of the true faith. After the completion of these ceremonies,

\* Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 53, 54.—Pulgar states that Ferdinand took the more southern route of Antequera, where he received the tidings of the Moorish king's retreat. The discrepancy is of no great conse-

quence; but as Bernaldez, whom I have followed, lived in Andalusia, the theatre of action, he may be supposed to have had more accurate means of information.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, pp. 187, 188.

Ferdinand, having strengthened the garrison with new recruits under the command of Portocarrero, lord of Palma, and victualled it with three months' provisions, prepared for a foray into the vega of Granada. This he executed in the true spirit of that merciless warfare so repugnant to the more civilized usage of later times, not only by sweeping away the green, unripened crops, but by cutting down the trees and eradicating the vines, and then, without so much as having broken a lance in the expedition, returned in triumph to Cordova.<sup>19</sup>

Isabella in the mean while was engaged in active measures for prosecuting the war. She issued orders to the various cities of Castile and Leon, as far as the borders of Biscay and Guipuscoa, prescribing the *repartimiento*, or subsidy of provisions, and the quota of troops, to be furnished by each district respectively, together with an adequate supply of ammunition and artillery. The whole were to be in readiness before Loja by the 1st of July; when Ferdinand was to take the field in person at the head of his chivalry, and besiege that strong post. As advices were received that the Moors of Granada were making efforts to obtain the co-operation of their African brethren in support of the Mahometan empire in Spain, the queen caused a fleet to be manned under the command of her two best admirals, with instructions to sweep the Mediterranean as far as the Straits of Gibraltar, and thus effectually cut off all communication with the Barbary coast.<sup>20</sup>

<sup>19</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 28.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 64, 55.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum* Decades, lib. 1, cap. 6.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, cap. 34.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, pp. 180, 181.—Marnol, *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.—During this second siege, a body of Moorish knights, to the number of forty, succeeded in scaling the walls of the city in the night, and had nearly reached

the gates with the intention of throwing them open to their countrymen, when they were overpowered, after a desperate resistance, by the Christians, who acquired a rich booty, as many of the captives were persons of rank. There is considerable variation in the authorities in regard to the date of Ferdinand's occupation of Alhama. I have been guided, as before, by Bernaldez.

<sup>20</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 188, 189.

## CHAPTER X.

### WAR OF GRANADA.—UNSUCCESSFUL ATTEMPT ON LOJA.

#### —DEFEAT IN THE AXARQUIA.

1482—1483.

Unsuccessful Attempt on Loja.—Revolution in Granada.—Expedition to the Axarquia.—Military Array.—Moorish Preparations.—Bloody Conflict among the Mountains.—The Spaniards force a Passage.—The Marquis of Cadiz escapes.

LOJA stands not many leagues from Alhama, on the banks of the Xenil, which rolls its clear current through a valley luxuriant with vineyards and olive-gardens; but the city is deeply intrenched among hills of so rugged an aspect that it has been led not inappropriately to assume as the motto on its arms, "A flower among thorns." Under the Moors, it was defended by a strong fortress, while the Xenil, circumscribing it like a deep moat upon the south, formed an excellent protection against the approaches of a besieging army; since the river was fordable only in one place, and traversed by a single bridge, which might be easily commanded from the city. In addition to these advantages, the king of Granada, taking warning from the fate of Alhama, had strengthened its garrison with three thousand of his choicest troops, under the command of a skilful and experienced warrior, named Ali Atar.<sup>1</sup>

In the mean while, the efforts of the Spanish sovereigns to procure supplies adequate to the undertaking against Loja had not been crowned with success. The cities and

<sup>1</sup> Estrada, *Poblacion de España*, tom. ii. pp. 242, 243.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 317.—Cardonne, VOL. I.

*Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 261.

districts, on which the requisitions had been made, had discovered the tardiness usual in such unwieldy bodies; and their interest, moreover, was considerably impaired by their distance from the theatre of action. Ferdinand on mustering his army, towards the latter part of June, found that it did not exceed four thousand horse and twelve thousand, or indeed, according to some accounts, eight thousand foot; most of them raw militia, who, poorly provided with military stores and artillery, formed a force obviously inadequate to the magnitude of his enterprise. Some of his counsellors would have persuaded him, from these considerations, to turn his arms against some weaker and more assailable point than Loja. But Ferdinand burned with a desire for distinction in the new war, and suffered his ardour for once to get the better of his prudence. The distrust felt by the leaders seems to have infected the lower ranks, who drew the most unfavourable prognostics from the dejected mien of those who bore the royal standard to the cathedral of Cordova in order to receive the benediction of the church before entering on the expedition.<sup>2</sup>

Ferdinand, crossing the Xenil at Ecija, arrived again on its banks before Loja on the 1st of July. The army encamped among the hills, whose deep ravines obstructed communication between its different quarters; while the level plains below were intersected by numerous canals, equally unfavourable to the manœuvres of the men-at-arms. The duke of Villa Hermosa, the king's brother, and captain-general of the hermandad, an officer of large experience, would have persuaded Ferdinand to attempt, by throwing bridges across the river lower down the stream, to approach the city on the other side. But his counsel was overruled by the Castilian officers, to whom the location of the camp had been intrusted, and who

<sup>2</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 58.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 249, 250.—

Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 259, 260.

neglected, according to Zurita, to advise with the Andalusian chiefs, although far better instructed than themselves in Moorish warfare.<sup>3</sup>

A large detachment of the army was ordered to occupy a lofty eminence, at some distance, called the Heights of Albohacen, and to fortify it with such few pieces of ordnance as they had, with the view of annoying the city. This commission was intrusted to the marquises of Cadiz and Villena, and the grand master of Calatrava; which last nobleman had brought to the field about four hundred horse and a large body of infantry from the places belonging to his order in Andalusia. Before the intrenchment could be fully completed, Ali Atar, discerning the importance of this commanding station, made a sortie from the town, for the purpose of dislodging his enemies. The latter poured out from their works to encounter him; but the Moslem general, scarcely waiting to receive the shock, wheeled his squadrons round, and began a precipitate retreat. The Spaniards eagerly pursued; but, when they had been drawn to a sufficient distance from the redoubt, a party of Moorish *ginetes*, or light cavalry, who had crossed the river unobserved during the night and lain in ambush, after the wily fashion of Arabian tactics, darted from their place of concealment, and, galloping into the deserted camp, plundered it of its contents, including the lombards, or small pieces of artillery, with which it was garnished. The Castilians, too late perceiving their error, halted from the pursuit, and returned with as much speed as possible to the defence of their camp. Ali Atar, turning also, hung close on their rear, so that when the Christians arrived at the summit of the hill they found themselves hemmed in between the two divisions of the Moorish army. A brisk action now ensued, and lasted nearly an hour; when the advance of reinforcements from the main body of the Spanish army, which had been delayed by

<sup>3</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, p. 187.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 173.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, fol. 316, 317.

distance and impediments on the road, compelled the Moors to a prompt but orderly retreat into their own city. The Christians sustained a heavy loss, particularly in the death of Rodrigo Tellez Giron, grand master of Calatrava. He was hit by two arrows, one of which, penetrating the joints of his harness beneath his sword-arm as he was in the act of raising it, inflicted on him a mortal wound, of which he expired in a few hours, says an old chronicler, after having confessed, and performed the last duties of a good and faithful Christian. Although scarcely twenty-four years of age, this cavalier had given proofs of such signal prowess that he was esteemed one of the best knights of Castile; and his death threw a general gloom over the army.<sup>4</sup>

Ferdinand now became convinced of the unsuitableness of a position which neither admitted of easy communication between the different quarters of his own camp nor enabled him to intercept the supplies daily passing into that of his enemy. Other inconveniences also pressed upon him. His men were so badly provided with the necessary utensils for dressing their food that they were obliged to devour it raw, or only half cooked. Most of them being new recruits, unaccustomed to the privations of war, and many exhausted by a wearisome length of march before joining the army, they began openly to murmur, and even to desert in great numbers. Ferdinand therefore resolved to fall back as far as Rio Frio, and await there patiently the arrival of such fresh reinforcements as might put him in condition to enforce a more rigorous blockade.

Orders were accordingly issued to the cavaliers occupying the Heights of Albohacen to break up their camp and fall back on the main body of the army. This was executed on the following morning before dawn, being the 4th of

<sup>4</sup> Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, fol. 80, 81.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 173.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*,

ii. lib. 1, cap. 7.—Conde, *Domination de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 214.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1482.



July. No sooner did the Moors of Loja perceive their enemy abandoning his strong position, than they sallied forth in considerable force to take possession of it. Ferdinand's men, who had not been advised of the proposed manœuvre, no sooner beheld the Moorish array brightening the crest of the mountain, and their own countrymen rapidly descending, than they imagined that these latter had been surprised in their intrenchments during the night, and were now flying before the enemy. An alarm instantly spread through the whole camp. Instead of standing to their defence, each one thought only of saving himself by as speedy a flight as possible. In vain did Ferdinand, riding along their broken files, endeavour to reanimate their spirits and restore order. He might as easily have calmed the winds, as the disorder of a panic-struck mob, unschooled by discipline or experience. Ali Atar's practised eye speedily discerned the confusion which prevailed through the Christian camp. Without delay, he rushed forth impetuously at the head of his whole array from the gates of Loja, and converted into a real danger what had before been only an imaginary one.<sup>5</sup>

At this perilous moment, nothing but Ferdinand's coolness could have saved the army from total destruction. Putting himself at the head of the royal guard, and accompanied by a gallant band of cavaliers, who held honour dearer than life, he made such a determined stand against the Moorish advance that Ali Atar was compelled to pause in his career. A furious struggle ensued betwixt this devoted little band and the whole strength of the Moslem army. Ferdinand was repeatedly exposed to imminent peril. On one occasion he was indebted for his safety to the marquis of Cadiz, who, charging at the head of about sixty lances, broke the deep ranks of the Moorish column,

<sup>5</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 189—191.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 58.—Conde, *Dominación de los Arabes*, tom. iii. pp.

214 — 217. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 260, 261.

and, compelling it to recoil, succeeded in rescuing his sovereign. In this adventure he narrowly escaped with his own life, his horse being shot under him at the very moment when he had lost his lance in the body of a Moor. Never did the Spanish chivalry shed its blood more freely. The constable, count de Haro, received three wounds in the face. The duke of Medina Celi was unhorsed and brought to the ground, and saved with difficulty by his own men; and the count of Tendilla, whose encampment lay nearest the city, received several severe blows, and would have fallen into the hands of the enemy, had it not been for the timely aid of his friend the young count of Zuñiga.

The Moors, finding it so difficult to make an impression on this iron band of warriors, began at length to slacken their efforts, and finally allowed Ferdinand to draw off the remnant of his forces without further opposition. The king continued his retreat, without halting, as far as the romantic site of the Peña de los Enamorados, about seven leagues distant from Loja, and, abandoning all thoughts of offensive operations for the present, soon after returned to Cordova. Muley Abul Hacen arrived the following day with a powerful reinforcement from Granada, and swept the country as far as Rio Frio. Had he come but a few hours sooner, there would have been few Spaniards left to tell the tale of the rout of Loja.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 68.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. pp. 214—217.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.—Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 1, cap. 7.—The *Peña de los Enamorados* received its name from a tragical incident in Moorish history. A Christian slave succeeded in inspiring the daughter of his master, a wealthy Mussulman of Granada, with a passion for himself. The two lovers, after some time, fearful of the detection of their intrigue, resolved to make their escape into the Spanish terri-

tory. Before they could effect their purpose, however, they were hotly pursued by the damsel's father at the head of a party of Moorish horsemen, and overtaken near a precipice which rises between Archidona and Antequera. The unfortunate fugitives, who had scrambled to the summit of the rocks, finding all further escape impracticable, after tenderly embracing each other, threw themselves headlong from the dizzy heights, preferring this dreadful death to falling into the hands of their vindictive pursuers. The

The loss of the Christians must have been very considerable, including the greater part of the baggage and the artillery. It occasioned deep mortification to the queen; but, though a severe, it proved a salutary lesson. It showed the importance of more extensive preparations for a war which must of necessity be a war of posts; and it taught the nation to entertain greater respect for an enemy who, whatever might be his natural strength, must become formidable when armed with the energy of despair.

At this juncture, a division among the Moors themselves did more for the Christians than any successes of their own. This division grew out of the vicious system of polygamy, which sows the seeds of discord among those whom nature and our own happier institutions unite most closely. The old king of Granada had become so deeply enamoured of a Greek slave that the Sultana Zoraya, jealous lest the offspring of her rival should supplant her own in the succession, secretly contrived to stir up a spirit of discontent with her husband's government. The king, becoming acquainted with her intrigues, caused her to be imprisoned in the fortress of the Alhambra. But the sultana, binding together the scarfs and veils belonging to herself and attendants, succeeded, by means of this perilous conveyance, in making her escape, together with her children, from the upper apartments of the tower in which she was lodged. She was received with joy by her own faction. The insurrection soon spread among the populace, who, yielding to the impulses of nature, are readily roused by a tale of oppression; and the number was still further swelled by many of higher rank, who had various causes of disgust with the oppressive government of Abul Hacen.<sup>7</sup> The strong fortress of the Alhambra, however,

spot consecrated as the scene of this tragic incident has received the name of *Rock of the Lovers*. The legend is prettily told by Mariana (*Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 253, 254), who concludes with the pithy reflection that "such constancy

would have been truly admirable had it been shown in defence of the true faith, rather than in the gratification of lawless appetite."

<sup>7</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. pp. 214—217.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de*

remained faithful to him. A war now burst forth in the capital which deluged its streets with the blood of its citizens. At length the sultana triumphed; Abul Hacen was expelled from Granada, and sought a refuge in Malaga, which, with Baza, Guadix, and some other places of importance, still adhered to him; while Granada, and by far the larger portion of the kingdom, proclaimed the authority of his elder son, Abu Abdallah, or Boabdil, as he is usually called by the Castilian writers. The Spanish sovereigns viewed with no small interest these proceedings of the Moors, who were thus wantonly fighting the battles of their enemies. All proffers of assistance on their part, however, being warily rejected by both factions, notwithstanding the mutual hatred between them, they could only await with patience the termination of a struggle which, whatever might be its results in other respects, could not fail to open the way for the success of their own arms.<sup>8</sup>

No military operations worthy of notice occurred during the remainder of the campaign, except occasional *cavalgadas*,

l'Espagne, tom. iii. pp. 262, 263.—Marmol, *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.—Bernaldez states that great umbrage was taken at the influence which the king of Granada allowed a person of Christian lineage, named Benegas, to exercise over him. Pulgar hints at the bloody massacre of the Abencerrages, which, without any better authority that I know of, forms the burden of many an ancient ballad, and has lost nothing of its romantic colouring under the hand of Ginés Perez de Hita.

<sup>8</sup> Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, ubi supra.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, ubi supra.—Boabdil was surnamed "el Chico," *the Little*, by the Spanish writers to distinguish him from an uncle of the same name; and "el Zogoybi," *the Unfortunate*, by the Moors, indicating that he was the last of his race destined to wear the diadem of Granada. The Arabs, with great felicity, frequently select names significant of

some quality in the objects they represent. Examples of this may be readily found in the southern regions of the Peninsula, where the Moors lingered the longest. The etymology of Gibraltar, *Gebal Tarik*, *Mount of Tarik*, is well known. Thus, Algeziras comes from an Arabic word which signifies *an island*; Alpujarras comes from a term signifying *herbage* or *pasturage*; Arrecife from another, signifying *causeway* or *highroad*, etc. The Arabic word *wad* stands for *river*. This without much violence has been changed into *guad*, and enters into the names of many of the southern streams; for example, Guadalquivir, *great river*, Guadiana, *narrow* or *little river*, Guadalete, etc. In the same manner the term *Medina*, signifying "city," has been retained as a prefix to the names of many of the Spanish towns, as *Medina Celi*, *Medina del Campo*, etc. See Conde's notes to *El Nubiense*, *Descripcion de España*, *passim*.

or inroads, on both sides, which, after the usual unsparing devastation, swept away whole herds of cattle, and human beings, the wretched cultivators of the soil. The quantity of booty frequently carried off on such occasions, amounting, according to the testimony of both Christian and Moorish writers, to twenty, thirty, and even fifty thousand head of cattle, shows the fruitfulness and abundant pasturage in the southern regions of the Peninsula. The loss inflicted by these terrible forays fell, eventually, most heavily on Granada, in consequence of her scanty territory and insulated position, which cut her off from all foreign resources.

Towards the end of October, the court passed from Cordova to Madrid, with the intention of remaining there the ensuing winter. Madrid, it may be observed, however, was so far from being recognized as the capital of the monarchy at this time, that it was inferior to several other cities in wealth and population, and was even less frequented than some others, Valladolid for example, as a royal residence.

On the 1st of July, while the court was at Cordova, died Alfonso de Carillo, the factious archbishop of Toledo, who contributed more than any other to raise Isabella to the throne, and who, with the same arm, had wellnigh hurled her from it. He passed the close of his life in retirement and disgrace at his town of Alcalá de Henares, where he devoted himself to science, especially to alchemy; in which illusory pursuit he is said to have squandered his princely revenues with such prodigality as to leave them encumbered with a heavy debt. He was succeeded in the primacy by his ancient rival, Don Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza, cardinal of Spain; a prelate whose enlarged and sagacious views gained him deserved ascendancy in the councils of his sovereigns.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>9</sup> Salazar de Mendoza, Crón. del Gran Cardenal, p. 181.—Pulgar, Claros Varones, tit. 20.—Carbajal, Anales, MS., año 1483.—Aleson,

Anales de Navarra, tom. v. p. 11, ed. 1766.—Peter Martyr, Opus Epist., epist. 158.

The importance of their domestic concerns did not prevent Ferdinand and Isabella from giving a vigilant attention to what was passing abroad. The conflicting relations growing out of the feudal system occupied most princes, till the close of the fifteenth century, too closely at home to allow them often to turn their eyes beyond the borders of their own territories. This system was, indeed, now rapidly melting away. But Louis the Eleventh may perhaps be regarded as the first monarch who showed anything like an extended interest in European politics. He informed himself of the interior proceedings of most of the neighbouring courts, by means of secret agents whom he pensioned there. Ferdinand obtained a similar result by the more honourable expedient of resident embassies, a practice which he is said to have introduced,<sup>10</sup> and which, while it has greatly facilitated commercial intercourse, has served to perpetuate friendly relations between different countries, by accustoming them to settle their differences by negotiation rather than the sword.

The position of the Italian states at this period, whose petty feuds seemed to blind them to the invasion which menaced them from the Ottoman empire, was such as to excite a lively interest throughout Christendom, and especially in Ferdinand, as sovereign of Sicily. He succeeded,

\* Fred. Marslaar, De Leg. 2, 11.  
—M. de Wicquefort derives the word *ambassadeur* (anciently in English *embassador*) from the

Spanish word *embiar*, "to send."  
See Rights of Embassadors, translated by Digby (London, 1740), book 1, chap. 1.\*

\* [*Embassador*, the older English form, may have come directly from the Spanish *embajador*; but *ambassiator*, *ambasciator*, and *ambuziator* are mediæval Latin forms, derived usually from *ambactus* (see Ducange), while *ambassador*, as an Italian form, occurs at least as early as 1470, under which date the Venetian diarist Malipieri mentions an instance of a permanent embassy several years prior to Ferdinand's accession. ("La signoria se intende ben co'l duca Carlo de Borgogna, al qual se tien un *ambassador que fu residenza*, et è adesso Bernardo Bembo, dottore." Archivio storico italiano, tom. vii.) But Venice and Milan had long maintained the same usage in their intercourse with each other, as well as with the court of Rome, where, indeed, resident ministers from foreign states were the rule, not, as elsewhere down to the latter part of the fifteenth century, the exception. (See Reumont, Della Diplomazia italiana dal Secolo XIII. al XVI.)—Ed.]

by means of his ambassadors at the papal court, in opening a negotiation between the belligerents, and in finally adjusting the terms of a general pacification, signed December 12th, 1482. The Spanish court, in consequence of its friendly mediation on this occasion, received three several embassies, with suitable acknowledgments, on the part of Pope Sixtus the Fourth, the college of cardinals, and the city of Rome; and certain marks of distinction were conferred by his Holiness on the Castilian envoys, not enjoyed by those of any other potentate. This event is worthy of notice as the first instance of Ferdinand's interference in the politics of Italy, in which at a later period he was destined to act so prominent a part.<sup>11</sup>

The affairs of Navarre at this time were such as to engage still more deeply the attention of the Spanish sovereigns. The crown of that kingdom had devolved, on the death of Leonora, the guilty sister of Ferdinand, on her grandchild, Francis Phœbus, whose mother, Magdeleine of France, held the reins of government during her son's minority.<sup>12</sup> The near relationship of this princess to Louis the Eleventh gave that monarch an absolute influence in the councils of Navarre. He made use of this to bring about a marriage between the young king, Francis Phœbus, and Joanna Beltraneja, Isabella's former competitor for the crown of Castile, notwithstanding this princess had long since taken the veil in the convent of Santa Clara at Coimbra. It is not easy to unravel the tortuous politics of King Louis. The Spanish writers impute to him the

<sup>11</sup> Sismondi, *Républiques Italiennes*, tom. xi. cap. 88. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, pp. 195 — 198. — Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 218.

<sup>12</sup> Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, lib. 34, cap. 1. — *Histoire du Royaume de Navarre*, p. 558. Leonora's son, Gaston de Foix, prince of Viana, was slain by an accidental wound from a lance, at a tourney at Lisbon, in 1469. By the princess Magdeleine, his wife, sister of Louis XL, he left two children, a

son and daughter, each of whom in turn succeeded to the crown of Navarre. Francis Phœbus ascended the throne on the demise of his grandmother Leonora, in 1479. He was distinguished by his personal graces and beauty, and especially by the golden lustre of his hair, from which, according to Aleson, he derived his cognomen of Phœbus. As it was an ancestral name, however, such an etymology may be thought somewhat fanciful.

design of enabling Joanna by this alliance to establish her pretensions to the Castilian throne, or at least to give such employment to its present proprietors as should effectually prevent them from disturbing him in the possession of Roussillon. However this may be, his intrigues with Portugal were disclosed to Ferdinand by certain nobles of that court, with whom he was in secret correspondence. The Spanish sovereigns, in order to counteract this scheme, offered the hand of their own daughter Joanna, afterwards mother of Charles the Fifth, to the king of Navarre. But all negotiations relative to this matter were eventually defeated by the sudden death of this young prince, not without strong suspicions of poison. He was succeeded on the throne by his sister Catharine. Propositions were then made by Ferdinand and Isabella for the marriage of this princess, then thirteen years of age, with their infant son John, heir apparent of their united monarchies.<sup>13</sup> Such an alliance, which would bring under one government nations corresponding in origin, language, general habits, and local interests, presented great and obvious advantages. It was, however, evaded by the queen dowager, who still acted as regent, on the pretext of disparity of age in the parties. Information being soon after received that Louis the Eleventh was taking measures to make himself master of the strong places in Navarre, Isabella transferred her residence to the frontier town of Logroño, prepared to resist by arms, if necessary, the occupation of that country by her insidious and powerful neighbour. The death of the king of France, which occurred not long after, fortunately relieved the sovereigns from apprehensions of any immediate annoyance in that quarter.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>13</sup> Ferdinand and Isabella had at this time four children; the infant Don John, four years and a half old, but who did not live to come to the succession, and the infantas Isabella, Joanna, and Maria; the last, born at Cordova during the summer of 1482.

<sup>14</sup> Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, lib. 34, cap. 2; lib. 35, cap. 1.—*Histoire du Royaume de Navarre*, pp. 578, 579.—*La Clède, Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iii. pp. 438—441.—*Pulgar, Reyes Católicos*, p. 199.—*Mariana, Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 551.



Amid their manifold concerns, Ferdinand and Isabella kept their thoughts anxiously bent on their great enterprise, the conquest of Granada. At a congress general of the deputies of the hermandad, held at Pinto at the commencement of the present year, 1483, with the view of reforming certain abuses in that institution, a liberal grant was made of eight thousand men, and sixteen thousand beasts of burden, for the purpose of conveying supplies to the garrison in Alhama. But the sovereigns experienced great embarrassment from the want of funds. There is probably no period in which the princes of Europe felt so sensibly their own penury as at the close of the fifteenth century; when, the demesnes of the crown having been very generally wasted by the lavishness or imbecility of its proprietors, no substitute had as yet been found in that searching and well-arranged system of taxation which prevails at the present day. The Spanish sovereigns, notwithstanding the economy which they had introduced into the finances, felt the pressure of these embarrassments peculiarly at the present juncture. The maintenance of the royal guard and of the vast national police of the hermandad, the incessant military operations of the late campaign, together with the equipment of a navy, not merely for war, but for maritime discovery, were so many copious drains on the exchequer.<sup>15</sup> Under these circumstances, they obtained from the pope a grant of one hundred thousand ducats, to be raised out of the ecclesiastical revenues in Castile and Aragon. A bull of crusade was also published by his Holiness, containing numerous indulgences for such as should bear arms against the infidel, as well as those who should prefer to commute their military service for the payment of a sum of money. In addition to these resources, the government was enabled on its own credit, justified by the punctuality

<sup>15</sup> Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 2, cap. 1.—Besides the armada in the Mediterranean, a fleet under Pedro de Vera was

prosecuting a voyage of discovery and conquest to the Canaries, which will be the subject of more particular notice hereafter.

with which it had redeemed its past engagements, to negotiate considerable loans with several wealthy individuals.<sup>16</sup>

With these funds the sovereigns entered into extensive arrangements for the ensuing campaign; causing cannon, after the rude construction of that age, to be fabricated at Huesca, and a large quantity of stone balls, then principally used, to be manufactured in the Sierra de Constantina; while the magazines were carefully provided with ammunition and military stores.

An event not unworthy of notice is recorded by Pulgar as happening about this time. A common soldier, named John de Corral, contrived, under false pretences, to obtain from the king of Granada a number of Christian captives, together with a large sum of money, with which he escaped into Andalusia. The man was apprehended by the warden of the frontier of Jaen; and, the transaction being reported to the sovereigns, they compelled an entire restitution of the money, and consented to such a ransom for the liberated Christians as the king of Granada should demand. This act of justice, it should be remembered, occurred in an age when the church itself stood ready to sanction any breach of faith, however glaring, towards heretics and infidels.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>16</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, p. 199. — Mariana, tom. ii. p. 551. — *Coleccion de Cédulas y otros Documentos* (Madrid, 1829), tom. iii. no. 25. — For this important collection, of which only a few copies were printed for distribution, at the expense of the Spanish government, I am indebted to the politeness of Don A. Calderon de la Barca.

<sup>17</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 58. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, p. 202. — Juan de Corral imposed on the king of Granada by means of certain credentials, which he had obtained from the Spanish sovereigns without any privity on their part to his fraudulent intentions. The story is told

in a very blind manner by Pulgar. It may not be amiss to mention here a doughty feat performed by another Castilian envoy, of much higher rank, Don Juan de Vera. This knight, while conversing with certain Moorish cavaliers in the Alhambra, was so much scandalized by the freedom with which one of them treated the immaculate conception, that he gave the circumcised dog the lie, and smote him a sharp blow on the head with his sword. Ferdinand, says Bernaldez, who tells the story, was much gratified with the exploit, and recompensed the good knight with many honours.

While the court was detained in the north, tidings were received of a reverse sustained by the Spanish arms, which plunged the nation in sorrow far deeper than that occasioned by the rout at Loja. Don Alonso de Cardenas, grand master of St. James, an old and confidential servant of the crown, had been intrusted with the defence of the frontier of Ecija. While on this station, he was strongly urged to make a descent on the environs of Malaga, by his *adalides* or scouts, men who, being for the most part Moorish deserters or renegadoes, were employed by the border chiefs to reconnoitre the enemy's country or to guide them in their marauding expeditions.<sup>18</sup> The district around Malaga was famous under the Saracens for its silk manufactures, of which it annually made large exports to other parts of Europe. It was to be approached by traversing a savage sierra, or chain of mountains, called the Axarquia, whose margin occasionally afforded good pasturage, and was sprinkled over with Moorish villages. After threading its defiles, it was proposed to return by an open road that turned the southern extremity of the sierra along the sea-shore. There was little to be apprehended, it was stated, from pursuit, since Malaga was almost wholly unprovided with cavalry.<sup>19</sup>

The grand master, falling in with the proposition, com-

<sup>18</sup> The *adalid* was a guide, or scout, whose business it was to make himself acquainted with the enemy's country, and to guide the invaders into it. Much dispute has arisen respecting the authority and functions of this officer. Some writers regard him as an independent leader, or commander; and the Dictionary of the Academy defines the term *adalid* by these very words. The *Siete Partidas*, however, explains at length the peculiar duties of this officer, conformably to the account I have given. (Ed. de la Real Acad. (Madrid, 1807), part. 2, tit. 2, leyes 1—4.) Bernaldez, Pulgar, and the other chroniclers of the Granadine war

repeatedly notice him in this connection. When he is spoken of as a captain, or leader, as he sometimes is in these and other ancient records, his authority, I suspect, is intended to be limited to the persons who aided him in the execution of his peculiar office. It was common for the great chiefs who lived on the borders to maintain in their pay a number of these *adalides*, to inform them of the fitting time and place for making a foray. The post, as may well be believed, was one of great trust and personal hazard.

<sup>19</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 203.—L. Marineo, Cosas memorables, fol. 173.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 320.

municated it to the principal chiefs on the borders ; among others, to Don Pedro Henriquez, adelantado of Andalusia, Don Juan de Silva, count of Cifuentes, Don Alonso de Aguilar, and the marquis of Cadiz. These noblemen, collecting their retainers, repaired to Antequera, where the ranks were quickly swelled by recruits from Cordova, Seville, Xerez, and other cities of Andalusia, whose chivalry always readily answered the summons to an expedition over the border.<sup>20</sup>

In the mean while, however, the marquis of Cadiz had received such intelligence from his own *adalides* as led him to doubt the expediency of a march through intricate defiles, inhabited by a poor and hardy peasantry ; and he strongly advised to direct the expedition against the neighbouring town of Almojia. But in this he was overruled by the grand master and the other partners of his enterprise ; many of whom, with the rash confidence of youth, were excited rather than intimidated by the prospect of danger.

On Wednesday, the 19th of March, this gallant little army marched forth from the gates of Antequera. The van was intrusted to the adelantado Henriquez and Don Alonso de Aguilar. The centre divisions were led by the marquis of Cadiz and the count of Cifuentes, and the rear-guard by the grand master of St. James. The number of foot, which is uncertain, appears to have been considerably less than that of the horse, which amounted to about three thousand, containing the flower of Anda-

<sup>20</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 36.—Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 2, cap. 2.—The title of *adelantado* implies in its etymology one preferred or placed before others. The office is of great antiquity ; some have derived it from the reign of St. Ferdinand in the thirteenth century, but Mendoza proves its existence at a far earlier period. The adelantado was possessed of very extensive judicial authority in

the province or district in which he presided, and in war was invested with supreme military command. His functions, however, as well as the territories over which he ruled, have varied at different periods. An adelantado seems to have been generally established over a border province, as Andalusia for example. Marina discusses the civil authority of this officer, in his *Teoría*, tom. ii. cap. 23. See also Salazar de Mendoza, *Dignidades*, lib. 2, cap. 15.

lusian knighthood, together with the array of St. James, the most opulent and powerful of the Spanish military orders. Never, says an Aragonese historian, had there been seen in these times a more splendid body of chivalry; and such was their confidence, he adds, that they deemed themselves invincible by any force which the Moslems could bring against them. The leaders took care not to encumber the movements of the army with artillery, camp-equipage, or even much forage and provisions, for which they trusted to the invaded territory. A number of persons, however, followed in the train, who, influenced by desire rather of gain than of glory, had come provided with money, as well as commissions from their friends, for the purchase of rich spoil, whether of slaves, stuffs, or jewels, which they expected would be won by the good swords of their comrades, as in Alhama.<sup>21</sup>

After travelling with little intermission through the night, the army entered the winding defiles of the Axarquia; where their progress was necessarily so much impeded by the character of the ground that most of the inhabitants of the villages through which they passed had opportunity to escape with the greater part of their effects to the inaccessible fastnesses of the mountains. The Spaniards, after plundering the deserted hamlets of whatever remained, as well as of the few stragglers, whether men or cattle, found still lingering about them, set them on fire. In this way they advanced, marking their line of march with the usual devastation that accompanied these ferocious forays, until the columns of smoke and fire which rose above the hill-tops announced to the people of Malaga the near approach of an enemy.

The old king Muley Abul Hacen, who lay at this time in the city, with a numerous and well-appointed body of

<sup>21</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 60.—Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, fol. 71.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 320.—Zuñiga,

*Annales de Sevilla*, fol. 395.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 2, cap. 2.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 36.

horse, contrary to the reports of the adalides, would have rushed forth at once at their head, had he not been dissuaded from it by his younger brother Abdallah, who is better known in history by the name of El Zagal, or "the Valiant;" an Arabic epithet, given him by his countrymen to distinguish him from his nephew, the ruling king of Granada. To this prince Abul Hacen intrusted the command of the corps of picked cavalry, with instructions to penetrate at once into the lower level of the sierra and encounter the Christians entangled in its passes; while another division, consisting chiefly of arquebusiers and archers, should turn the enemy's flank by gaining the heights under which he was defiling. This last corps was placed under the direction of Reduan Benegas, a chief of Christian lineage, according to Bernaldez, and who may perhaps be identified with the Reduan that, in the later Moorish ballads, seems to be shadowed forth as the personification of love and heroism.<sup>22</sup>

The Castilian army in the mean time went forward with a buoyant and reckless confidence, and with very little subordination. The divisions occupying the advance and centre, disappointed in their expectations of booty, had quitted the line of march, and dispersed in small parties in search of plunder over the adjacent country; and some of the high-mettled young cavaliers had the audacity to ride up in defiance to the very walls of Malaga. The grand master of St. James was the only leader who kept his columns unbroken and marched forward in order of battle. Things were in this state, when the Moorish cavalry under El Zagal, suddenly emerging from one of the mountain-passes, appeared before the astonished rear-guard of the Christians. The Moors spurred on to the assault, but the well-disciplined chivalry of St. James remained unshaken. In the fierce struggle which ensued,

<sup>22</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 217.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*.

tom. iii. pp. 264—267.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 60.

the Andalusians became embarrassed by the narrowness of the ground on which they were engaged, which afforded no scope for the manœuvres of cavalry; while the Moors, trained to the wild tactics of mountain warfare, went through their usual evolutions, retreating and returning to the charge with a celerity that sorely distressed their opponents, and at length threw them into some disorder. The grand master in consequence despatched a message to the marquis of Cadiz, requesting his support. The latter, putting himself at the head of such of his scattered forces as he could hastily muster, readily obeyed the summons. Discerning on his approach the real source of the grand master's embarrassment, he succeeded in changing the field of action by drawing off the Moors to an open reach of the valley, which allowed free play to the movements of the Andalusian horse, when the combined squadrons pressed so hard on the Moslems that they were soon compelled to take refuge within the depths of their own mountains.<sup>23</sup>

In the mean while, the scattered troops of the advance, alarmed by the report of the action, gradually assembled under their respective banners, and fell back upon the rear. A council of war was then called. All further progress seemed to be effectually intercepted. The country was everywhere in arms. The most that could now be hoped was that they might be suffered to retire unmolested with such plunder as they had already acquired. Two routes lay open for this purpose,—the one winding along the seashore, wide and level, but circuitous, and swept through the whole range of its narrow entrance by the fortress of Malaga. This determined them, unhappily, to prefer the other route, being that by which they had penetrated the Axarquia, or rather a shorter cut, by which the adalides undertook to conduct them through its mazes.<sup>24</sup>

<sup>23</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 217.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, p. 204.—Rades y

Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, fol. 71, 72.

<sup>24</sup> Mariana, *Hist. de España*,

The little army commenced its retrograde movement with undiminished spirit. But it was now embarrassed with the transportation of its plunder, and by the increasing difficulties of the sierra, which, as they ascended its sides, was matted over with impenetrable thickets, and broken up by formidable ravines or channels, cut deep into the soil by the mountain torrents. The Moors were now seen mustering in considerable numbers along the heights, and, as they were expert marksmen, being trained by early and assiduous practice, the shots from their arquebuses and cross-bows frequently found some assailable point in the harness of the Spanish men-at-arms. At length, the army, through the treachery or ignorance of the guides, was suddenly brought to a halt by arriving in a deep glen or inclosure, whose rocky sides rose with such boldness as to be scarcely practicable for infantry, much less for horse. To add to their distresses, daylight, without which they could scarcely hope to extricate themselves, was fast fading away.<sup>25</sup>

In this extremity no other alternative seemed to remain than to attempt to regain the route from which they had departed. As all other considerations were now subordinate to those of personal safety, it was agreed to abandon the spoil acquired at so much hazard, which greatly retarded their movements. As they painfully retraced their steps, the darkness of the night was partially dispelled by numerous fires, which blazed along the hill-tops, and which showed the figures of their enemies flitting to and fro like so many spectres. It seemed, says Bernaldez, as if ten thousand torches were glancing along the mountains. At length, the whole body, faint with fatigue and hunger, reached the borders of a little stream, which flowed through a valley whose avenues, as well as the rugged heights by which it was commanded, were already occupied by the

tom. ii. pp. 552, 553. — Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 205. — Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 321.

\* Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 205. — Garibay, Compendio, tom. ii. p. 636.



enemy, who poured down mingled volleys of shot, stones, and arrows on the heads of the Christians. The compact mass presented by the latter afforded a sure mark to the artillery of the Moors; while they, from their scattered position, as well as from the defences afforded by the nature of the ground, were exposed to little annoyance in return. In addition to lighter missiles, the Moors occasionally dislodged large fragments of rock, which, rolling with tremendous violence down the declivities of the hills, spread frightful desolation through the Christian ranks.<sup>26</sup>

The dismay occasioned by these scenes, occurring amidst the darkness of night, and heightened by the shrill war-cries of the Moors, which rose around them on every quarter, seems to have completely bewildered the Spaniards, even their leaders. It was the misfortune of the expedition that there was but little concert between the several commanders, or, at least, that there was no one so pre-eminent above the rest as to assume authority at this awful moment. So far, it would seem, from attempting escape, they continued in their perilous position, uncertain what course to take, until midnight; when at length, after having seen their best and bravest followers fall thick around them, they determined at all hazards to force a passage across the sierra in the face of the enemy. "Better lose our lives," said the grand master of St. James, addressing his men, "in cutting a way through the foe, than be butchered without resistance, like cattle in the shambles."<sup>27</sup>

The marquis of Cadiz, guided by a trusty adalid, and accompanied by sixty or seventy lances, was fortunate enough to gain a circuitous route less vigilantly guarded by the enemy, whose attention was drawn to the movements of the main body of the Castilian army. By means of this path, the marquis with his little band succeeded, after a

<sup>26</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 60. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*,

tom. iii. pp. 264—267.

<sup>27</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, p. 206. — Rades y Andrada, *Las tres Ordenes*, fol. 71 72.

painful march, in which his good steed sunk under him oppressed with wounds and fatigue, in reaching a valley at some distance from the scene of action, where he determined to await the coming up of his friends, who he confidently expected would follow on his track.<sup>28</sup>

But the grand master and his associates, missing this track in the darkness of the night, or perhaps preferring another, breasted the sierra in a part where it proved extremely difficult of ascent. At every step the loosened earth gave way under the pressure of the foot; and, the infantry endeavouring to support themselves by clinging to the tails and manes of the horses, the jaded animals, borne down with the weight, rolled headlong with their riders on the ranks below, or were precipitated down the sides of the numerous ravines. The Moors, all the while, avoiding a close encounter, contented themselves with discharging on the heads of their opponents an unintermitted shower of missiles of every description.<sup>29</sup>

It was not until the following morning that the Castilians, having surmounted the crest of the eminence, began the descent into the opposite valley, which they had the mortification to observe was commanded on every point by their vigilant adversary, who seemed now in their eyes to possess the powers of ubiquity. As the light broke upon the troops, it revealed the whole extent of their melancholy condition. How different from the magnificent array which, but two days previous, had marched forth with such high and confident hopes from the gates of Antequera! their ranks thinned, their bright arms defaced and broken, their banners rent in pieces, or lost,—as had been that of St. James, together with its gallant *alferes*, Diego Becerra, in the terrible passage of the preceding night,—their

<sup>28</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, loc. cit.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos MS., cap. 60.

<sup>29</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, p. 206.—Mr. Irving, in his "Conquest of Granada," states that the scene

of the greatest slaughter in this rout is still known to the inhabitants of the Axarquía by the name of *La Cuesta de la Matanza*, or "The Hill of the Massacre."

countenances aghast with terror, fatigue, and famine! Despair was now in every eye; all subordination was at an end. No one, says Pulgar, heeded any longer the call of the trumpet or the wave of the banner. Each sought only his own safety, without regard to his comrade. Some threw away their arms, hoping by this means to facilitate their escape, while in fact it only left them more defenceless against the shafts of their enemies. Some, oppressed with fatigue and terror, fell down and died without so much as receiving a wound. The panic was such that, in more than one instance, two or three Moorish soldiers were known to capture thrice their own number of Spaniards. Some, losing their way, strayed back to Malaga and were made prisoners by females of the city, who overtook them in the fields. Others escaped to Alhama or other distant places, after wandering seven or eight days among the mountains, sustaining life on such wild herbs and berries as they could find, and lying close during the day. A greater number succeeded in reaching Antequera, and, among these, most of the leaders of the expedition. The grand master of St. James, the adelantado Henriquez, and Don Alonso de Aguilar effected their escape by scaling so perilous a part of the sierra that their pursuers cared not to follow. The count de Cifuentes was less fortunate.<sup>30</sup> That nobleman's division was said to have suffered more severely than any other. On the morning after the bloody passage of the mountain, he found himself suddenly cut off from his followers, and surrounded by six Moorish cavaliers, against whom he was defending himself with desperate courage, when their leader, Reduan Benegas, struck with the inequality of the combat, broke in, exclaiming, "Hold! this is unworthy of good knights." The assailants fell back, abashed by the rebuke, and left the count to their

<sup>30</sup> Oviedo, who devotes one of his dialogues to this nobleman, says of him, "Fue una de las buenas lanzas de nuestra España en su tiempo;

y muy sabio y prudente caballero. Hallose en grandes cargos y negocios de paz y de guerra." Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 38.

commander. A close encounter then took place between the two chiefs; but the strength of the Spaniard was no longer equal to his spirit, and, after a brief resistance, he was forced to surrender to his generous enemy.<sup>31</sup>

The marquis of Cadiz had better fortune. After waiting till dawn for the coming up of his friends, he concluded that they had extricated themselves by a different route. He resolved to provide for his own safety and that of his followers, and, being supplied with a fresh horse, accomplished his escape, after traversing the wildest passages of the Axarquía for the distance of four leagues, and got into Antequera with but little interruption from the enemy. But, although he secured his personal safety, the misfortunes of the day fell heavily on his house; for two of his brothers were cut down by his side, and a third brother, with a nephew, fell into the hands of the enemy.<sup>32</sup>

The number of the slain in the two days' action is admitted by the Spanish writers to have exceeded eight hundred, with double that number of prisoners. The Moorish force is said to have been small, and its loss comparatively trifling. The numerical estimates of the Spanish historians, as usual, appear extremely loose; and the narrative of their enemies is too meagre in this portion of their annals to allow any opportunity of verification. There is no reason, however, to believe them in any degree exaggerated.

The best blood of Andalusia was shed on this occasion. Among the slain, Bernaldez reckons two hundred and fifty, and Pulgar four hundred, persons of quality, with thirty commanders of the military fraternity of St. James. There was scarcely a family in the south but had to mourn the

<sup>31</sup> Conde, *Domination de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 218.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 321.—Carrabjal, *Anales*, MS., año 1483.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 60.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 266, 267.—The count, according to Oviedo, remained a long while a prisoner in Granada, until he was

ransomed by the payment of several thousand doblas of gold. Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 36.

<sup>32</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 60.—Marmol says that three brothers and two nephews of the marquis, whose names he gives, were all slain. *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.

loss of some one of its members by death or captivity; and the distress was not a little aggravated by the uncertainty which hung over the fate of the absent, as to whether they had fallen in the field, or were still wandering in the wilderness, or were pining away existence in the dungeons of Malaga and Granada.<sup>33</sup>

Some imputed the failure of the expedition to treachery in the adalides, some to want of concert among the commanders. The worthy Curate of Los Palacios concludes his narrative of the disaster in the following manner: "The number of the Moors was small who inflicted this grievous defeat on the Christians. It was, indeed, clearly miraculous, and we may discern in it the special interposition of Providence, justly offended with the greater part of those that engaged in the expedition; who, instead of confessing, partaking of the sacrament, and making their testaments, as becomes good Christians, and men that are to bear arms in defence of the Holy Catholic Faith, acknowledged that they did not bring with them suitable dispositions, but, with little regard to God's service, were influenced by covetousness and love of ungodly gain."<sup>34</sup>

<sup>33</sup> Zufiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, fol. 395.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., ubi supra.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, p. 206.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 36.—Marmol, *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.

<sup>34</sup> *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 60.—Pulgar has devoted a large space to the unfortunate expedition to the Axarquia. His intimacy with the principal persons of the court enabled him, no doubt, to verify most of the particulars which he records. The Curate of Los Palacios, from the proximity of his residence to the theatre of action, may be supposed also to have had ample means for obtaining the requisite information. Yet their several accounts, although not strictly contradictory, it is not always easy to reconcile with one another. The narratives of complex military operations are not

likely to be simplified under the hands of monkish bookmen. I have endeavoured to make out a connected tissue from a comparison of the Moslem with the Castilian authorities. But here the meagreness of the Moslem annals compels us to lament the premature death of Conde. It can hardly be expected, indeed, that the Moors should have dwelt with much amplification on this humiliating period. But there can be little doubt that far more copious memorials of theirs than any now published exist in the Spanish libraries; and it were much to be wished that some Oriental scholar would supply Conde's deficiency, by exploring these authentic records of what may be deemed, so far as Christian Spain is concerned, the most glorious portion of her history.

## CHAPTER XI.

### WAR OF GRANADA.—GENERAL VIEW OF THE POLICY PURSUED IN THE CONDUCT OF THIS WAR.

1483—1487.

Defeat and Capture of Abdallah.—Policy of the Sovereigns.—Large Trains of Artillery.—Description of the Pieces.—Stupendous Roads.—Isabella's Care of the Troops.—Her Perseverance.—Discipline of the Army.—Swiss Mercenaries.—English Lord Scales.—Magnificence of the Nobles.—Isabella visits the Camp.—Ceremonies on the Occupation of a City.

THE young monarch, Abu Abdallah, was probably the only person in Granada who did not receive with unmingled satisfaction the tidings of the rout in the Axarquía. He beheld with secret uneasiness the laurels thus acquired by the old king his father, or rather by his ambitious uncle El Zagal, whose name now resounded from every quarter as the successful champion of the Moslems. He saw the necessity of some dazzling enterprise, if he would maintain an ascendancy even over the faction which had seated him on the throne. He accordingly projected an excursion which, instead of terminating in a mere border foray, should lead to the achievement of some permanent conquest.

He found no difficulty, while the spirits of his people were roused, in raising a force of nine thousand foot, and seven hundred horse, the flower of Granada's chivalry. He strengthened his army still further by the presence of Ali Atar, the defender of Loja, the veteran of a hundred battles, whose military prowess had raised him from the common file up to the highest post in the army, and whose plebeian blood had been permitted to mingle with that of

royalty, by the marriage of his daughter with the young King Abdallah.

With this gallant array, the Moorish monarch sallied forth from Granada. As he led the way through the avenue which still bears the name of the gate of Elvira,<sup>1</sup> the point of his lance came in contact with the arch, and was broken. This sinister omen was followed by another more alarming. A fox, which crossed the path of the army, was seen to run through the ranks, and, notwithstanding the showers of missiles discharged at him, to make his escape unhurt. Abdallah's counsellors would have persuaded him to abandon, or at least postpone, an enterprise of such ill augury. But the king, less superstitious, or from the obstinacy with which feeble minds, when once resolved, frequently persist in their projects, rejected their advice, and pressed forward on his march.<sup>2</sup>

The advance of the party was not conducted so cautiously but that it reached the ear of Don Diego Fernandez de Cordova, *alcayde de los donzeles*, or captain of the royal pages, who commanded in the town of Lucena, which he rightly judged was to be the principal object of attack. He transmitted the intelligence to his uncle the count of Cabra, a nobleman of the same name with himself, who was posted at his own town of Baena, requesting his support. He used all diligence in repairing the fortifications

<sup>1</sup> "Por esa puerta de Elvira  
sale muy gran cabalgada;  
cuánto del *hidalgo moro*,  
cuánto de la yegua baya.

\* \* \* \*

"Cuánta pluma y gentileza,  
cuánto capellar de grana,  
cuánto bayo borceguí,  
cuánto raso que se esmalta,

"Cuánto de espuela de oro,  
cuánta estribera de plata!  
Toda es gente valerosa,  
y esperta para batalla.

"En medio de todos ellos  
va el rey Chico de Granada,

mirando las damas moras  
de las torres del Alhambra.

"La reina mora su madre  
de esta manera le habla:  
'Alá te guarde, mi hijo,  
Mahoma vaya en tu guarda.'"

Hita, Guerras de Granada, tom. i.  
p. 232.

<sup>2</sup> Conde, Dominacion de los  
Arabes, tom. iii. cap. 36.—Cardonne,  
Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne,  
tom. iii. pp. 267—271.—Bernaldez,  
Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 60.—  
Pedraza, Antigüedad de Granada,  
fol. 10.—Marmol, Rebelion de los  
Moriscos, lib. 1, cap. 12.

of the city, which, although extensive and originally strong, had fallen somewhat into decay; and, having caused such of the population as were rendered helpless by age or infirmity to withdraw into the interior defences of the place, he coolly awaited the approach of the enemy.<sup>3</sup>

The Moorish army, after crossing the borders, began to mark its career through the Christian territory with the usual traces of devastation, and, sweeping across the environs of Lucena, poured a marauding foray into the rich *campiña* of Cordova, as far as the walls of Aguilar; whence it returned, glutted with spoil, to lay siege to Lucena about the 21st of April.

The count of Cabra, in the mean while, who had lost no time in mustering his levies, set forward at the head of a small but well-appointed force, consisting of both horse and foot, to the relief of his nephew. He advanced with such celerity that he had wellnigh surprised the beleaguering army. As he traversed the sierra, which covered the Moorish flank, his numbers were partially concealed by the inequalities of the ground, while the clash of arms and the shrill music, reverberating among the hills, exaggerated their real magnitude in the apprehension of the enemy. At the same time the alcaide de los donzeles supported his uncle's advance by a vigorous sally from the city. The Granadine infantry, anxious only for the preservation of their valuable booty, scarcely waited for the encounter, before they began a dastardly retreat and left the battle to the cavalry. The latter, composed, as has been said, of the strength of the Moorish chivalry, men accustomed in many a border foray to cross lances with the best knights of Andalusia, kept their ground with their wonted gallantry. The conflict, so well disputed, remained doubtful for some time, until it was determined by the death of the

<sup>3</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, part. 3, cap. 20.—The *donzeles*, of whom Diego de Cordova was alcaide, or captain, were a body of young cavaliers, originally brought up

as pages in the royal household, and organized as a separate corps of the militia. Salazar de Mendoza, Dignidades, p. 259.—See also Morales, Obras, tom. xiv. p. 80.



veteran chieftain Ali Atar, "the best lance," as a Castilian writer has styled him, "of all Morisma," who was brought to the ground after receiving two wounds, and thus escaped by an honourable death the melancholy spectacle of his country's humiliation.<sup>4</sup>

The enemy, disheartened by this loss, soon began to give ground. But, though hard pressed by the Spaniards, they retreated in some order, until they reached the borders of the Xenil, which were thronged with the infantry, vainly attempting a passage across the stream, swollen by excessive rains to a height much above its ordinary level. The confusion now became universal, horse and foot mingling together: each one, heedful only of life, no longer thought of his booty. Many, attempting to swim the stream, were borne down, steed and rider, promiscuously in its waters. Many more, making scarcely a show of resistance, were cut down on the banks by the pitiless Spaniards. The young king Abdallah, who had been conspicuous during that day in the hottest of the fight, mounted on a milk-white charger richly caparisoned, saw fifty of his loyal guard fall around him. Finding his steed too much jaded to stem the current of the river, he quietly dismounted and sought a shelter among the reedy thickets that fringed its margin, until the storm of battle should have passed over. In this lurking-place, however, he was discovered by a common soldier named Martin Hurtado, who, without recognizing his person, instantly attacked him. The prince defended himself with his scimitar, until Hurtado, being joined by two of his countrymen, succeeded in making him prisoner. The men, overjoyed at their prize (for Abdallah had revealed his rank, in order to secure his person from violence), conducted him to their general, the count of Cabra. The latter received the royal captive with

<sup>4</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 36.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 302.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1483.

—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 61.—Pulgar, *Crónica*, cap. 20.—Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.

a generous courtesy, the best sign of noble breeding, and a feature of chivalry which affords a pleasing contrast to the ferocious spirit of ancient warfare. The good count administered to the unfortunate prince all the consolations which his state would admit, and subsequently lodged him in his castle of Baena, where he was entertained with the most delicate and courtly hospitality.<sup>5</sup>

Nearly the whole of the Moslem cavalry were cut up, or captured, in this fatal action. Many of them were persons of rank, commanding high ransoms. The loss inflicted on the infantry was also severe, including the whole of their dear-bought plunder. Nine—or indeed, according to some accounts, two-and-twenty—banners fell into the hands of the Christians in this action; in commemoration of which the Spanish sovereigns granted to the count of Cabra, and his nephew, the alcaide de los donzeles, the privilege of bearing the same number of banners on their escutcheon, together with the head of a Moorish king, encircled by a golden coronet, with a chain of the same metal around the neck.<sup>6</sup>

Great was the consternation occasioned by the return of the Moorish fugitives to Granada, and loud was the lament through its populous streets; for the pride of many a noble house was laid low on that day, and their king (a thing unprecedented in the annals of the monarchy) was a prisoner in the land of the Christians. “The hostile star of Islam,” exclaims an Arabic writer, “now scattered its malignant influences over Spain, and the downfall of the Mussulman empire was decreed.”

The sultana Zoraya, however, was not of a temper to

<sup>5</sup> Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. p. 637. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 61. — Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 36. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 271—274. — The various details, even to the site of the battle, are

told in the usual confused and contradictory manner by the garrulous chroniclers of the period. All authorities, however, both Christian and Moorish, agree as to its general results.

<sup>6</sup> Mendoza, *Dignidades*, p. 382. — Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 4, dial. 9.

waste time in useless lamentation. She was aware that a captive king, who held his title by so precarious a tenure as did her son Abdallah, must soon cease to be a king even in name. She accordingly despatched a numerous embassy to Cordova, with proffers of such a ransom for the prince's liberation as a despot only could offer and few despots could have the authority to enforce.<sup>7</sup>

King Ferdinand, who was at Vitoria with the queen, when he received tidings of the victory of Lucena, hastened to the south to determine on the destination of his royal captive. With some show of magnanimity, he declined an interview with Abdallah until he should have consented to his liberation. A debate of some warmth occurred in the royal council at Cordova respecting the policy to be pursued; some contending that the Moorish monarch was too valuable a prize to be so readily relinquished, and that the enemy, broken by the loss of their natural leader, would find it difficult to rally under one common head or to concert any effective movement. Others, and especially the marquis of Cadiz, urged his release, and even the support of his pretensions against his competitor, the old king of Granada; insisting that the Moorish empire would be more effectually shaken by internal divisions than by any pressure of its enemies from without. The various arguments were submitted to the queen, who still held her court in the north, and who decided for the release of Abdallah, as a measure best reconciling sound policy with generosity to the vanquished.<sup>8</sup>

The terms of the treaty, although sufficiently humiliating to the Moslem prince, were not materially different from those proposed by the sultana Zoraya. It was agreed that a truce of two years should be extended to Abdallah,

<sup>7</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 36. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, pp. 271—274.

<sup>8</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 23. — Marmol, *Rebelion de los*

*Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.—Charles V. does not seem to have partaken of his grandfather's delicacy in regard to an interview with his royal captive, or indeed in any part of his deportment towards him.

and to such places in Granada as acknowledged his authority; in consideration of which, he stipulated to surrender four hundred Christian captives without ransom, to pay twelve thousand doblas of gold annually to the Spanish sovereigns, and to permit a free passage, as well as furnish supplies, to their troops passing through his territories for the purpose of carrying on the war against that portion of the kingdom which still adhered to his father. Abdallah moreover bound himself to appear when summoned by Ferdinand, and to surrender his own son, with the children of his principal nobility, as sureties for his fulfilment of the treaty. Thus did the unhappy prince barter away his honour and his country's freedom for the possession of immediate but most precarious sovereignty; a sovereignty which could scarcely be expected to survive the period when he could be useful to the master whose breath had made him.<sup>9</sup>

The terms of the treaty being thus definitively settled, an interview was arranged to take place between the two monarchs at Cordova. The Castilian courtiers would have persuaded their master to offer his hand for Abdallah to salute, in token of his feudal supremacy; but Ferdinand replied, "Were the king of Granada in his own dominions, I might do this; but not while he is a prisoner in mine." The Moorish prince entered Cordova with an escort of his own knights, and a splendid throng of Spanish chivalry, who had marched out of the city to receive him. When Abdallah entered the royal presence, he would have prostrated himself on his knees; but Ferdinand, hastening to prevent him, embraced him with every demonstration of respect. An Arabic interpreter, who acted as orator, then expatiated, in florid hyperbole, on the magnanimity and princely qualities of the Spanish king, and the loyalty and good faith of his own master. But Ferdinand interrupted his eloquence with the assurance that "his panegyric was

<sup>9</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, ubi Arabes, cap. 30.  
supra.—Conde, Dominacion de los

superfluous, and that he had perfect confidence that the sovereign of Granada would keep his faith as became a true knight and a king." After ceremonies so humiliating to the Moorish prince, notwithstanding the veil of decorum studiously thrown over them, he set out with his attendants for his capital, escorted by a body of Andalusian horse to the frontier, and loaded with costly presents by the Spanish king, and the general contempt of his court.<sup>10</sup>

Notwithstanding the importance of the results in the war of Granada, a detail of the successive steps by which they were achieved would be most tedious and trifling. No siege or single military achievement of great moment occurred until nearly four years from this period, in 1487; although in the intervening time a large number of fortresses and petty towns, together with a very extensive tract of territory, were recovered from the enemy. Without pursuing the chronological order of events, it is probable that the end of history will be best attained by presenting a concise view of the general policy pursued by the sovereigns in the conduct of the war.

The Moorish wars under preceding monarchs had consisted of little else than *cavalgadas*, or inroads into the enemy's territory,<sup>11</sup> which, pouring like a torrent over the land, swept away whatever was upon the surface, but left it in its essential resources wholly unimpaired. The bounty of nature soon repaired the ravages of man, and the ensuing harvest seemed to shoot up more abundantly from the soil enriched by the blood of the husbandman. A more vigorous system of spoliation was now introduced. Instead of one campaign, the army took the field in spring and autumn, intermitting its efforts only during the intolerable heats of summer, so that the green crop had no time to ripen, ere it was trodden down under the iron heel of war.

<sup>10</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, loc. cit. — Conde, Dominación de los Arabes, cap. 36.

<sup>11</sup> The term *cavalgada* seems to

be used indifferently by the ancient Spanish writers to represent a marauding party, the foray itself, or the booty taken in it.

The apparatus for devastation was also on a much greater scale than had ever before been witnessed. From the second year of the war, thirty thousand foragers were reserved for this service, which they effected by demolishing farm-houses, granaries, and mills (which last were exceedingly numerous in a land watered by many small streams), by eradicating the vines and laying waste the olive-gardens and plantations of oranges, almonds, mulberries, and all the rich varieties that grew luxuriant in this highly-favoured region. This merciless devastation extended for more than two leagues on either side of the line of march. At the same time, the Mediterranean fleet cut off all supplies from the Barbary coast, so that the whole kingdom might be said to be in a state of perpetual blockade. Such and so general was the scarcity occasioned by this system, that the Moors were glad to exchange their Christian captives for provisions, until such ransom was interdicted by the sovereigns, as tending to defeat their own measures.<sup>13</sup>

Still there was many a green and sheltered valley in Granada which yielded its returns unmolested to the Moorish husbandman; while his granaries were occasionally enriched with the produce of a border foray. The Moors, too, although naturally a luxurious people, were patient of suffering, and capable of enduring great privation. Other measures, therefore, of a still more formidable character, became necessary in conjunction with this rigorous system of blockade.

The Moorish towns were for the most part strongly defended, presenting within the limits of Granada, as has been said, more than ten times the number of fortified places that are now scattered over the whole extent of the Peninsula. They stood along the crest of some precipice or bold sierra, whose natural strength was augmented by the solid masonry with which they were surrounded, and

<sup>13</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 22. — *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 6.

which, however insufficient to hold out against modern artillery, bade defiance to all the enginery of battering warfare known previously to the fifteenth century. It was this strength of fortification, combined with that of their local position, which frequently enabled a slender garrison in these places to laugh to scorn all the efforts of the proudest Castilian armies.

The Spanish sovereigns were convinced that they must look to their artillery as the only effectual means for the reduction of these strongholds. In this, they as well as the Moors were extremely deficient, although Spain appears to have furnished earlier examples of its use than any other country in Europe. Isabella, who seems to have had the particular control of this department, caused the most skilful engineers and artisans to be invited into the kingdom from France, Germany, and Italy. Forges were constructed in the camp, and all the requisite materials prepared for the manufacture of cannon, balls, and powder. Large quantities of the last were also imported from Sicily, Flanders, and Portugal. Commissaries were established over the various departments, with instructions to provide whatever might be necessary for the operatives; and the whole was intrusted to the supervision of Don Francisco Ramirez, an hidalgo of Madrid, a person of much experience, and extensive military science, for that day. By these efforts, unremittingly pursued during the whole of the war, Isabella assembled a train of artillery such as was probably not possessed at that time by any other European potentate.<sup>18</sup>

Still the clumsy construction of the ordnance betrayed the infancy of the art. More than twenty pieces of artillery used at the siege of Baza during this war are still to be seen in that city, where they long served as columns in the public market-place. The largest of the lombards, as the heavy ordnance was called, are about twelve feet in

<sup>18</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. lib. 20, cap. 59. — Lebrija, *Rerum* 32, 41. — Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. *Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 3, cap. 5.

length, consisting of iron bars two inches in breadth, held together by bolts and rings of the same metal. These were firmly attached to their carriages, incapable either of horizontal or vertical movement. It was this clumsiness of construction which led Machiavelli, some thirty years after, to doubt the expediency of bringing cannon into field engagements; and he particularly recommends, in his treatise on the Art of War, that the enemy's fire should be evaded, by intervals in the ranks being left open opposite to his cannon.<sup>14</sup>

The balls thrown from these engines were sometimes of iron, but more usually of marble. Several hundred of the latter have been picked up in the fields around Baza, many of which are fourteen inches in diameter and weigh a hundred and seventy-five pounds. Yet this bulk, enormous as it appears, shows a considerable advance in the art since the beginning of the century, when the stone balls discharged, according to Zurita, at the siege of Balaguer, weighed not less than five hundred and fifty pounds. It was very long before the exact proportions requisite for obtaining the greatest effective force could be ascertained.<sup>15</sup>

The awkwardness with which their artillery was served corresponded with the rudeness of its manufacture. It is noticed as a remarkable circumstance by the chronicler, that two batteries, at the siege of Albahar, discharged one hundred and forty balls in the course of a day.<sup>16</sup> Besides this more usual kind of ammunition, the Spaniards threw

<sup>14</sup> Machiavelli, *Arte della Guerra*, lib. 3.

<sup>15</sup> *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Ilust. 6.—According to Gibbon, the cannon used by Mahomet in the siege of Constantinople, about thirty years before this time, threw stone balls which weighed above six hundred pounds. The measure of the bore was twelve palms. *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, chap. 68.

<sup>16</sup> *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Ilust. 6.—We get a more

precise notion of the awkwardness with which the artillery was served in the infancy of the science, from a fact recorded in the Chronicle of John II., that at the siege of Setenil, in 1407, five lombards were able to discharge only forty shot in the course of a day. We have witnessed an invention in our time, that of our ingenious countryman Jacob Perkins, by which a gun, with the aid of that miracle-worker, steam, is enabled to throw a thousand bullets in a single minute.



from their engines large globular masses composed of certain inflammable ingredients mixed with gunpowder, "which, scattering long trains of light," says an eyewitness, "in their passage through the air, filled the beholders with dismay, and, descending on the roofs of the edifices, frequently occasioned extensive conflagration."<sup>17</sup>

The transportation of their bulky engines was not the least of the difficulties which the Spaniards had to encounter in this war. The Moorish fortresses were frequently intrenched in the depths of some mountain labyrinth, whose rugged passes were scarcely accessible to cavalry. An immense body of pioneers, therefore, was constantly employed in constructing roads for the artillery across these sierras, by levelling the mountains, filling up the intervening valleys with rocks, or with cork-trees and other timber that grew prolific in the wilderness, and throwing bridges across the torrents and precipitous *barrancos*. Pulgar had the curiosity to examine one of the causeways thus constructed, preparatory to the siege of Cambil, which, although six thousand pioneers were constantly employed in the work, was attended with such difficulty that it advanced only three leagues in twelve days. It required, says the historian, the entire demolition of one of the most rugged parts of the sierra, which no one could have believed practicable by human industry.<sup>18</sup>

The Moorish garrisons, perched on their mountain fastnesses, which, like the eyry of some bird of prey, seemed almost inaccessible to man, beheld with astonishment the heavy trains of artillery emerging from the passes where the foot of the hunter had scarcely been known to venture.

<sup>17</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 174.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 44.—Some writers, as the Abbé Mignot (*Histoire des Rois Catholiques Ferdinand et Isabelle* (Paris, 1766), tom. i. p. 273), have referred the invention of bombs to the siege of Ronda. I find no authority for this. Pulgar's words are, "They

made many iron balls, large and small, some of which they cast in a mould, having reduced the iron to a state of fusion, so that it would run like any other metal."

<sup>18</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 51.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 82.

The walls which encompassed their cities, although lofty, were not of sufficient thickness to withstand long the assaults of these formidable engines. The Moors were deficient in heavy ordnance. The weapons on which they chiefly relied for annoying the enemy at a distance were the arquebuse and cross-bow, with the last of which they were unerring marksmen, being trained to it from infancy. They adopted a custom, rarely met with in civilized nations of any age, of poisoning their arrows; distilling for this purpose the juice of aconite, or wolfsbane, which grew rife in the *Sierra Nevada*, or Snowy Mountains, near Granada. A piece of linen or cotton cloth steeped in this decoction was wrapped round the point of the weapon, and the wound inflicted by it, however trivial in appearance, was sure to be mortal. Indeed, a Spanish writer, not content with this, imputes such malignity to the virus, that a drop of it, as he asserts, mingling with the blood oozing from a wound, would ascend the stream into the vein, and diffuse its fatal influence over the whole system!<sup>19</sup>

Ferdinand, who appeared at the head of his armies throughout the whole of this war, pursued a sagacious policy in reference to the beleaguered cities. He was ever ready to meet the first overtures to surrender, in the most liberal spirit; granting protection of person, and such property as the besieged could transport with them, and assigning them a residence, if they preferred it, in his own dominions. Many, in consequence of this, migrated to Seville and other cities of Andalusia, where they were settled on estates which had been confiscated by the inquisitors; who looked forward, no doubt, with satisfaction to the time when they should be permitted to thrust their sickle into the new crop of heresy whose seeds were thus sown amid the ashes of the old one. Those who preferred to remain in the conquered Moorish ter-

<sup>19</sup> Mendoza, *Guerra de Granada* (Valencia, 1776), pp. 73, 74.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. lib. 20, cap. 59.—*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*,

tom. vi. p. 168.—According to Mendoza, a decoction of the quince furnished the most effectual antidote known against this poison

ritory, as Castilian subjects, were permitted the free enjoyment of personal rights and property, as well as of their religion; and such was the fidelity with which Ferdinand redeemed his engagements during the war, by the punishment of the least infraction of them by his own people, that many, particularly of the Moorish peasantry, preferred abiding in their early homes to removing to Granada or other places of the Moslem dominion. It was perhaps a counterpart of the same policy which led Ferdinand to chastise any attempt at revolt on the part of his new Moorish subjects, the Mudejares, as they were called, with an unsparing rigour which merits the reproach of cruelty. Such was the military execution inflicted on the rebellious town of Benemaquez, where he commanded one hundred and ten of the principal inhabitants to be hung above the walls, and, after consigning the rest of the population, men, women, and children, to slavery, caused the place to be razed to the ground. The humane policy usually pursued by Ferdinand seems to have had a more favourable effect on his enemies, who were exasperated, rather than intimidated, by this ferocious act of vengeance.<sup>20</sup>

The magnitude of the other preparations corresponded with those for the ordnance department. The amount of forces assembled at Cordova we find variously stated at ten and twelve thousand horse, and twenty and even forty thousand foot, exclusive of foragers. On one occasion, the whole number, including men for the artillery service and the followers of the camp, is reckoned at eighty thousand. The same number of beasts of burden were employed in transporting the supplies required for this immense host, as well as for provisioning the conquered cities standing

<sup>20</sup> Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 304.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 4, cap. 2.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 76.—Marmol, *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.—Pulgar,

who is by no means bigoted for the age, seems to think the liberal terms granted by Ferdinand to the enemies of the faith stand in need of perpetual apology. See *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 44 et passim.

in the midst of a desolated country. The queen, who took this department under her special cognizance, moved along the frontier, stationing herself at points most contiguous to the scene of operations. There, by means of posts regularly established, she received hourly intelligence of the war. At the same time she transmitted the requisite munitions for the troops, by means of convoys sufficiently strong to secure them against the irruptions of the wily enemy.<sup>21</sup>

Isabella, solicitous for everything that concerned the welfare of her people, sometimes visited the camp in person, encouraging the soldiers to endure the hardships of war, and relieving their necessities by liberal donations of clothes and money. She caused also a number of large tents, known as "the queen's hospitals," to be always reserved for the sick and wounded, and furnished them with the requisite attendants and medicines, at her own charge. This is considered the earliest attempt at the formation of a regular camp hospital, on record.<sup>22</sup>

Isabella may be regarded as the soul of this war. She engaged in it with the most exalted views, less to acquire territory than to re-establish the empire of the Cross over the ancient domain of Christendom. On this point she concentrated all the energies of her powerful mind, never suffering herself to be diverted by any subordinate interest from this one great and glorious object. When the king, in 1484, would have paused a while from the Granadine war, in order to prosecute his claims to Roussillon against the French, after the death of Louis the Eleventh, Isabella strongly objected to it; but, finding her remonstrance ineffectual, she left her husband in Aragon, and repaired to Cordova, where she placed the cardinal of Spain at the head of the army, and prepared to open the campaign in the usual vigorous manner. Here, however, she was

<sup>21</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 75.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 21, 33, 42.—Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib.

8, cap. 6.—Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 13.

<sup>22</sup> *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 6.

soon joined by Ferdinand, who, on a cooler revision of the subject, deemed it prudent to postpone his projected enterprise.

On another occasion, in the same year, when the nobles, fatigued with the service, had persuaded the king to retire earlier than usual, the queen, dissatisfied with the proceeding, addressed a letter to her husband, in which, after representing the disproportion of the results to the preparations, she besought him to keep the field as long as the season should serve. "The grandees," says Lebrija, "mortified at being surpassed in zeal for the holy war by a woman, eagerly collected their forces, which had been partly disbanded, and returned across the borders to renew hostilities."<sup>22</sup>

A circumstance which had frequently frustrated the most magnificent military enterprises under former reigns was the factions of these potent vassals, who, independent of each other, and almost of the crown, could rarely be brought to act in efficient concert for a length of time, and broke up the camp on the slightest personal jealousy. Ferdinand experienced something of this temper in the duke of Medina Celi, who, when he had received orders to detach a corps of his troops to the support of the count of Benavente, refused, replying to the messenger, "Tell your master that I came here to serve him at the head of my household troops, and they go nowhere without me as their leader." The sovereigns managed this fiery spirit with the greatest address, and, instead of curbing it, endeavoured to direct it in the path of honourable emulation. The queen, who as their hereditary sovereign received a more deferential homage from her Castilian subjects than Ferdinand, frequently wrote to her nobles in the camp, complimenting some on their achievements, and others less fortunate on their intentions, thus cheering the hearts of all, says the chronicler, and stimulating them to deeds of

<sup>22</sup> Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 3, cap. 6. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 31.

heroism. On the most deserving she freely lavished those honours which cost little to the sovereign but are most grateful to the subject. The marquis of Cadiz, who was pre-eminent above every other captain in this war for sagacity and conduct, was rewarded after his brilliant surprise of Zahara with the gift of that city, and the titles of marquis of Zahara and duke of Cadiz. The warrior, however, was unwilling to resign the ancient title under which he had won his laurels, and ever after subscribed himself marquis duke of Cadiz.<sup>24</sup> Still more emphatic honours were conferred on the count de Cabra, after the capture of the king of Granada. When he presented himself before the sovereigns, who were at Vitoria, the clergy and cavaliers of the city marched out to receive him, and he entered in solemn procession on the right hand of the grand cardinal of Spain. As he advanced up the hall of audience in the royal palace, the king and queen came forward to welcome him, and then seated him by themselves at table, declaring that "the conqueror of kings should sit with kings." These honours were followed by the more substantial gratuity of a hundred thousand maravedis annual rent; "a fat donative," says an old chronicler, "for so lean a treasury." The young alcaide de los donzeles experienced a similar reception on the ensuing day. Such acts of royal condescension were especially grateful to the nobility of a court circumscribed beyond every other in Europe by stately and ceremonious etiquette.<sup>25</sup>

The duration of the war of Granada was such as to raise the militia throughout the kingdom nearly to a level with regular troops. Many of these levies, indeed, at the breaking out of the war, might pretend to this character. Such were those furnished by the Andalusian cities, which

<sup>24</sup> After another daring achievement, the sovereigns granted him and his heirs the royal suit worn by the monarchs of Castile on Lady-day; a present, says Abarca, not to be estimated by its cost.—Reyes de

Aragon, tom. ii. fol. 303.

<sup>25</sup> Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, ubi supra.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 1, epist. 41.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 68.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. cap. 58.

had been long accustomed to skirmishes with their Moslem neighbours. Such, too, was the well-appointed chivalry of the military orders, and the organized militia of the *hermandad*, which we find sometimes supplying a body of ten thousand men for the service. To these may be added the splendid throng of cavaliers and *hidalgos*, who swelled the retinues of the sovereigns and the great nobility. The king was attended in battle by a body-guard of a thousand knights, one half light and the other half heavy armed, all superbly equipped and mounted, and trained to arms from childhood under the royal eye.

Although the burden of the war bore most heavily on Andalusia, from its contiguity to the scene of action, yet recruits were drawn in abundance from the most remote provinces, as Galicia, Biscay, and the Asturias, from Aragon, and even the transmarine dominions of Sicily. The sovereigns did not disdain to swell their ranks with levies of a humbler description, by promising an entire amnesty to those malefactors who had left the country in great numbers of late years to escape justice, on condition of their serving in the Moorish war. Throughout this motley host the strictest discipline and decorum were maintained. The Spaniards have never been disposed to intemperance; but the passion for gaming, especially with dice, to which they seem to have been immoderately addicted at that day, was restrained by the severest penalties.<sup>26</sup>

The brilliant successes of the Spanish sovereigns diffused general satisfaction throughout Christendom, and volunteers flocked to the camp from France, England, and other parts of Europe, eager to participate in the glorious triumphs of the Cross. Among these was a corps of Swiss mercenaries, who are thus simply described by Pulgar: "There joined the royal standard a body of men from Switzerland, a country in upper Germany. These men

<sup>26</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 31, 67, 69.—Lebrija, *Rerum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 2, cap. 10.

were bold of heart, and fought on foot. As they were resolved never to turn their backs upon the enemy, they wore no defensive armour, except in front; by which means they were less encumbered in fight. They made a trade of war, letting themselves out as mercenaries; but they espoused only a just quarrel, for they were devout and loyal Christians, and above all abhorred rapine as a great sin."<sup>27</sup> The Swiss had recently established their military renown by the discomfiture of Charles the Bold, when they first proved the superiority of infantry over the best-appointed chivalry of Europe. Their example no doubt contributed to the formation of that invincible Spanish infantry, which, under the Great Captain and his successors, may be said to have decided the fate of Christendom for more than half a century.

Among the foreigners was one from the distant isle of Britain, the earl of Rivers, or conde de Escalas, as he is called from his patronymic, Scales,\* by the Spanish writers. "There came from Britain," says Peter Martyr, "a cavalier, young, wealthy, and high-born. He was allied to the blood royal of England. He was attended by a beautiful train of household troops, three hundred in number, armed after the fashion of their land with long-bow and battle-axe." This nobleman particularly distinguished himself by his gallantry in the second siege of Loja, in 1486. Having asked leave to fight after the manner of his country, says the Andalusian chronicler, he dismounted from his good steed, and, putting himself at the head of his followers, armed like himself *en blanco*, with their swords at their thighs, and battle-axes in their hands, he dealt

\* Reyes Católicos, cap. 21.

---

\* [The family name, as few readers of English history will need to be reminded, was not Scales, but Widvile, or Wydevile, often modernized as Woodville; and the person mentioned in the text, Sir Edward Widvile, had no claim to the designation either of Earl Rivers or Lord Scales, the former title having passed to his brother Richard, and the latter having fallen into abeyance, on the death, without issue, in 1483, of the most famous member of the family, Anthony Widvile, the second earl.—ED.]



such terrible blows around him as filled even the hardy mountaineers of the north with astonishment. Unfortunately, just as the suburbs were carried, the good knight, as he was mounting a scaling-ladder, received a blow from a stone, which dashed out two of his teeth and stretched him senseless on the ground. He was removed to his tent, where he lay some time under medical treatment; and, when he had sufficiently recovered, he received a visit from the king and queen, who complimented him on his prowess and testified their sympathy for his misfortune. "It is little," replied he, "to lose a few teeth in the service of Him who has given me all. Our Lord," he added, "who reared this fabric, has only opened a window, in order to discern the more readily what passes within." A facetious response, says Peter Martyr, which gave uncommon satisfaction to the sovereigns.<sup>28</sup>

The queen, not long after, testified her sense of the earl's services by a magnificent largess, consisting, among other things, of twelve Andalusian horses, two couches with richly-wrought hangings and coverings of cloth of gold, with a quantity of fine linen, and sumptuous pavilions for himself and suite. The brave knight seems to have been satisfied with this taste of the Moorish wars; for he soon after returned to England, and in 1488 passed over to France, where his hot spirit prompted him to take part in the feudal factions of that country, in which he lost his life, fighting for the duke of Brittany.<sup>29</sup>

The pomp with which the military movements were conducted in these campaigns gave the scene rather the air of a court pageant than that of the stern array of war. The war was one which, appealing both to principles of religion and patriotism, was well calculated to inflame the imaginations of the young Spanish cavaliers; and they poured into the field, eager to display themselves under

<sup>28</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 1, epist. 62.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 78.

<sup>29</sup> Guillaume de Ialigny, *Histoire de Charles VIII.* (Paris, 1617), pp. 90—94.

the eye of their illustrious queen, who, as she rode through the ranks mounted on her war-horse and clad in complete mail, afforded no bad personification of the genius of chivalry. The potent and wealthy barons exhibited in the camp all the magnificence of princes. The pavilions, decorated with various-coloured pennons, and emblazoned with the armorial bearings of their ancient houses, shone with a splendour which a Castilian writer likens to that of the city of Seville.<sup>30</sup> They always appeared surrounded by a throng of pages in gorgeous liveries, and at night were preceded by a multitude of torches, which shed a radiance like that of day. They vied with each other in the costliness of their apparel, equipage, and plate, and in the variety and delicacy of the dainties with which their tables were covered.<sup>31</sup>

Ferdinand and Isabella saw with regret this lavish ostentation, and privately remonstrated with some of the principal grandees on its evil tendency, especially in seducing the inferior and poorer nobility into expenditures beyond their means. This Sybarite indulgence, however, does not seem to have impaired the martial spirit of the nobles. On all occasions they contended with each other for the post of danger. The duke del Infantado, the head of the powerful house of Mendoza, was conspicuous above all for the magnificence of his train. At the siege of Illora, 1486, he obtained permission to lead the storming party. As his followers pressed onwards to the breach, they were received with such a shower of missiles as made them falter for a moment. "What, my men," cried he, "do you fail me at this hour? Shall we be taunted with bearing more finery on our backs than courage in our hearts? Let us not, in God's name, be laughed at as mere holiday soldiers!" His vassals, stung by this

\* Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 75.—This city, even before the New World had poured its treasures into its lap, was conspicuous for its magnificence, as the

ancient proverb testifies. Zuñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 183.

<sup>31</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 41.

rebuke, rallied, and, penetrating the breach, carried the place by the fury of their assault.<sup>59</sup>

Notwithstanding the remonstrances of the sovereigns against this ostentation of luxury, they were not wanting in the display of royal state and magnificence on all suitable occasions. The Curate of Los Palacios has expatiated with elaborate minuteness on the circumstances of an interview between Ferdinand and Isabella in the camp before Moclin, in 1486, where the queen's presence was solicited for the purpose of devising a plan of future operations. A few of the particulars may be transcribed, though at the hazard of appearing trivial to readers who take little interest in such details.

On the borders of the Yeguas, the queen was met by an advanced corps, under the command of the marquis duke of Cadiz, and, at the distance of a league and a half from Moclin, by the duke del Infantado, with the principal nobility and their vassals, splendidly accoutred. On the left of the road was drawn up in battle-array the militia of Seville, and the queen, making her obeisance to the banner of that illustrious city, ordered it to pass to her right. The successive battalions saluted the queen as she

<sup>59</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap. 59.—This nobleman, whose name was Íñigo Lopez de Mendoza, was son of the first duke, Diego Hurtado, who supported Isabella's claims to the crown. Oviedo was present at the siege of Illora, and gives a minute description of his appearance there. "He came," says that writer, "attended by a numerous body of cavaliers and gentlemen, as befitted so great a lord. He displayed all the luxuries which belong to a time of peace; and his tables, which were carefully served, were loaded with rich and curiously wrought plate, of which he had a greater profusion than any other grandee in the kingdom." In another place he says, "The duke Íñigo was a perfect Alexander for his liberality, in

all his actions princely, maintaining unbounded hospitality among his numerous vassals and dependents, and beloved throughout Spain. His palaces were garnished with the most costly tapestries, jewels, and rich stuffs of gold and silver. His chapel was filled with accomplished singers and musicians; his falcons, hounds, and his whole hunting establishment, including a magnificent stud of horses, were not to be matched by those of any other nobleman in the kingdom. Of the truth of all which," concludes Oviedo, "I myself have been an eye-witness, and enough others can testify." See Oviedo (Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 8), who has given the genealogy of the Mendozas and Mendozinos, in all its endless ramifications.

advanced, by lowering their standards, and the joyous multitude announced with tumultuous acclamations her approach to the conquered city.

The queen was accompanied by her daughter, the infanta Isabella, and a courtly train of damsels, mounted on mules richly caparisoned. The queen herself rode a chestnut mule, seated on a saddle-chair embossed with gold and silver. The housings were of a crimson colour, and the bridle was of satin, curiously wrought with letters of gold. The infanta wore a skirt of fine velvet, over others of brocade, a scarlet mantilla of the Moorish fashion, and a black hat trimmed with gold embroidery. The king rode forward at the head of his nobles to receive them. He was dressed in a crimson doublet, with *chausses*, or breeches, of yellow satin. Over his shoulders was thrown a cassock or mantle of rich brocade, and a sopravest of the same material concealed his cuirass. By his side, close girt, he wore a Moorish scimitar, and beneath his bonnet his hair was confined by a cap or head-dress of the finest stuff.

Ferdinand was mounted on a noble war-horse of a bright chestnut colour. In the splendid train of chivalry which attended him, Bernaldez dwells with much satisfaction on the English lord Scales. He was followed by a retinue of five pages arrayed in costly liveries. He was sheathed in complete mail, over which was thrown a French surcoat of dark silk brocade. A buckler was attached by golden clasps to his arm, and on his head he wore a white French hat with plumes. The caparisons of his steed were azure silk, lined with violet and sprinkled over with stars of gold, and swept the ground, as he managed his fiery courser with an easy horsemanship that excited general admiration.

The king and queen, as they drew near, bowed thrice with formal reverence to each other. The queen at the same time, raising her hat, remained in her coif or head-dress, with her face uncovered; Ferdinand, riding up,

kissed her affectionately on the cheek, and then, according to the precise chronicler, bestowed a similar mark of tenderness on his daughter Isabella, after giving her his paternal benediction. The royal party were then escorted to the camp, where suitable accommodations had been provided for the queen and her fair retinue.<sup>33</sup>

It may readily be believed that the sovereigns did not neglect, in a war like the present, an appeal to the religious principle so deeply seated in the Spanish character. All their public acts ostentatiously proclaimed the pious nature of the work in which they were engaged. They were attended in their expeditions by churchmen of the highest rank, who not only mingled in the councils of the camp, but, like the bold bishop of Jaen, or the grand cardinal Mendoza, buckled on harness over rochet and hood, and led their squadrons to the field.<sup>34</sup> The queen at Cordova celebrated the tidings of every new success over the infidel, by solemn procession and thanksgiving, with her whole household, as well as the nobility, foreign ambassadors, and municipal functionaries. In like manner, Ferdinand, on the return from his campaigns, was received at the gates of the city, and escorted in solemn pomp beneath a rich canopy of state to the cathedral church, where he prostrated himself in grateful adoration of the Lord of hosts. Intelligence of their triumphant progress in the war was constantly transmitted to the pope, who returned his bene-

<sup>33</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 80.—The lively author of "A Year in Spain" describes, among other suits of armour still to be seen in the museum of the armoury at Madrid, those worn by Ferdinand and his illustrious consort: "In one of the most conspicuous stations is the suit of armour usually worn by Ferdinand the Catholic. He seems snugly seated upon his war-horse, with a pair of red velvet breeches, after the manner of the Moors, with lifted lance and closed visor. There are several suits of Ferdinand and of his queen Isabella, who was no stranger to

VOL. I.

the dangers of a battle. By the comparative heights of the armour, Isabella would seem to be the bigger of the two, as she certainly was the better." *A Year in Spain*, by a Young American (Boston, 1829), p. 116.

<sup>34</sup> Cardinal Mendoza, in the campaign of 1485, offered the queen to raise a body of 3000 horse and march at its head to the relief of Alhama, and at the same time to supply her with such sums of money as might be necessary in the present exigency. *Pulgar Reyes Católicos*, cap. 50.

diction, accompanied by more substantial marks of favour, in bulls of crusade, and taxes on ecclesiastical rents.<sup>85</sup>

The ceremonials observed on the occupation of a new conquest were such as to affect the heart no less than the imagination. "The royal *alferez*," says Marineo, "raised the standard of the Cross, the sign of our salvation, on the summit of the principal fortress; and all who beheld it prostrated themselves on their knees in silent worship of the Almighty, while the priests chanted the glorious anthem, *Te Deum laudamus*. The ensign or pennon of St. James, the chivalric patron of Spain, was then unfolded, and all invoked his blessed name. Lastly, was displayed the banner of the sovereigns, emblazoned with the royal arms; at which the whole army shouted forth, as if with one voice, 'Castile, Castile!' After these solemnities, a bishop led the way to the principal mosque, which, after the rites of purification, he consecrated to the service of the true faith."

The standard of the Cross above referred to was of massive silver, and was a present from Pope Sixtus the Fourth to Ferdinand, in whose tent it was always carried throughout these campaigns. An ample supply of bells, vases, missals, plate, and other sacred furniture, was also borne along with the camp, being provided by the queen for the purified mosques.<sup>86</sup>

The most touching part of the incidents usually occurring at the surrender of a Moorish city was the liberation of the Christian captives immured in its dungeons. On the capture of Ronda, in 1485, more than four hundred of these unfortunate persons, several of them cavaliers of rank, some of whom had been taken in the fatal expedition of the Axarquía, were restored to the light of heaven. On being brought before Ferdinand, they prostrated themselves on the ground, bathing his feet with tears, while their wan

<sup>85</sup> In 1486 we find Ferdinand and Isabella performing a pilgrimage to the shrine of St. James of Compostella. Carbajal. *Anales*, MS.,

año 86.

<sup>86</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 173. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 82, 87.

and wasted figures, their dishevelled locks, their beards reaching down to their girdles, and their limbs loaded with heavy manacles, brought tears into the eye of every spectator. They were then commanded to present themselves before the queen at Cordova, who liberally relieved their necessities, and, after the celebration of public thanksgiving, caused them to be conveyed to their own homes. The fetters of the liberated captives were suspended in the churches, where they continued to be revered by succeeding generations as the trophies of Christian warfare.<sup>37</sup>

Ever since the victory of Lucena, the sovereigns had made it a capital point of their policy to foment the dissensions of their enemies. The young king Abdallah, after his humiliating treaty with Ferdinand, lost whatever consideration he had previously possessed. Although the sultana Zoraya, by her personal address, and the lavish distribution of the royal treasures, contrived to maintain a faction for her son, the better classes of his countrymen despised him as a renegade and a vassal of the Christian king. As their old monarch had become incompetent, from increasing age and blindness, to the duties of his station in these perilous times, they turned their eyes on his brother Abdallah, surnamed El Zagal, or "the Valiant," who had borne so conspicuous a part in the rout of the Axarquia. The Castilians depict this chief in the darkest colours of ambition and cruelty; but the Moslem writers afford no such intimation, and his advancement to the throne at that crisis seems to be in some measure justified by his eminent talents as a military leader.

On his way to Granada, he encountered and cut to pieces a body of Calatrava knights from Alhama, and signalized his entrance into his new capital by bearing along the bloody trophies of heads dangling from his saddle-bow, after the barbarous fashion long practised in these wars.<sup>38</sup> It was observed that the old king Abul

<sup>37</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap.

MS., cap. 75.

47.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos

<sup>38</sup> Conde, Dominacion de los

Hacen did not long survive his brother's accession.\* The young king Abdallah sought the protection of the Castilian sovereigns in Seville, who, true to their policy, sent him back into his own dominions with the means of making headway against his rival. The *alfakis* and other considerable persons of Granada, scandalized at these fatal feuds, effected a reconciliation on the basis of a division of the kingdom between the parties. But wounds so deep could not be permanently healed. The site of the Moorish capital was most propitious to the purposes of faction. It covered two swelling eminences, divided from each other by the deep waters of the Darro. The two factions possessed themselves respectively of these opposite quarters. Abdallah was not ashamed to strengthen himself by the aid of Christian mercenaries; and a dreadful conflict was carried on for fifty days and nights within the city, which swam with the blood that should have been shed only in its defence.<sup>40</sup>

Arabes, tom. iii. cap. 37. — Cardonne, Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne, tom. iii. pp. 276, 281, 282. — Abarca, Reyes de Aragon, tom. ii. fol. 304.

"El enjaema el caballo  
De las cabezas de fama,"

says one of the old Moorish ballads. A garland of Christian heads seems to have been deemed no unsuitable present from a Moslem knight to his lady-love. Thus one of the Zegris triumphantly asks,

"¿Que Christianos habeis muerto,  
O escalado que murallas?  
¿O que cabezas famosas  
Aveis presentado a damas?"

This sort of trophy was also borne by the Christian cavaliers. Examples of this may be found even as late as the siege of Granada. See, among others, the ballad beginning

"A vista de los dos Reyes."

\* The Arabic historian alludes to the vulgar report of the old king's

assassination by his brother, but leaves us in the dark in regard to his own opinion of its credibility: "Algunos dicen que le procuro la muerte su hermano el Rey Zagal; pero Dios lo sabe, que es el unico eterno e inmutable." — Conde, Dominacion de los Arabes, tom. iii. cap. 38.

Conde, Dominacion de los Arabes, tom. iii. cap. 38. — Cardonne, Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne, pp. 291, 292. — Mariana, Hist. de España, lib. 25, cap. 9. — Marmol, Rebelion de los Moriscos, lib. 1, cap. 12.

"Muy revuelta anda Granada  
en armas y fuego ardiendo,  
y los ciudadanos de ella  
duras muertes padeciendo;

Por tres reyes que hay esquivos,  
cada uno pretendiendo  
el mando, cetro y corona  
de Granada y su gobierno," etc.

See this old *romance*, mixing up fact and fiction, with more of the former than usual, in Hita, Guerras de Granada, tom. i. p. 292.



Notwithstanding these auxiliary circumstances, the progress of the Christians was comparatively slow. Every cliff seemed to be crowned with a fortress; and every fortress was defended with the desperation of men willing to bury themselves under its ruins. The old men, women, and children, on occasion of a siege, were frequently despatched to Granada. Such was the resolution, or rather ferocity, of the Moors, that Malaga closed its gates against the fugitives from Alora, after its surrender, and even massacred some of them in cold blood. The eagle eye of El Zagal seemed to take in at a glance the whole extent of his little territory, and to detect every vulnerable point in his antagonist, whom he encountered where he least expected it, cutting off his convoys, surprising his foraging parties, and retaliating by a devastating inroad on the borders.<sup>41</sup>

No effectual and permanent resistance, however, could be opposed to the tremendous enginery of the Christians. Tower and town fell before it. Besides the principal towns of Cartama, Coin, Setenil, Ronda, Marbella, Illora, termed by the Moors "the right eye," Moclin, "the shield" of Granada, and Loja, after a second and desperate siege in the spring of 1486, Bernaldez enumerates more than seventy subordinate places in the Val de Cartama, and thirteen others after the fall of Marbella. Thus the Spaniards advanced their line of conquest more than twenty leagues beyond the western frontier of Granada. This extensive tract they strongly fortified, and peopled partly with Christian subjects and partly with Moorish, the original occupants of the soil, who were secured in the possession of their ancient lands, under their own law.<sup>42</sup>

Thus the strong posts which might be regarded as the

<sup>41</sup> Among other achievements, Zagal surprised and beat the count of Cabra in a night attack upon Moclin, and well nigh retaliated on that nobleman his capture of the Moorish king Abdallah. Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 48.

<sup>42</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 75.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 48.—Lebrija, *Reum Gestarum Decades*, ii. lib. 3, cap. 5, 7; lib. 4, cap. 2, 3.—Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 12.

exterior defences of the city of Granada were successively carried. A few positions alone remained of sufficient strength to keep the enemy at bay. The most considerable of these was Malaga, which from its maritime situation afforded facilities for a communication with the Barbary Moors, that the vigilance of the Castilian cruisers could not entirely intercept. On this point, therefore, it was determined to concentrate all the strength of the monarchy, by sea and land, in the ensuing campaign of 1487.

---

Two of the most important authorities for the war of Granada are Fernando del Pulgar, and Antonio de Lebrija, or *Nebriensis*, as he is called from the Latin *Nebriasa*.

Few particulars have been preserved respecting the biography of the former. He was probably a native of Pulgar, near Toledo. The Castilian writers recognize certain provincialisms in his style belonging to that district. He was secretary to Henry IV., and was charged with various confidential functions by him. He seems to have retained his place on the accession of Isabella, by whom he was appointed national historiographer in 1482, when, from certain remarks in his letters, it would appear he was already advanced in years. This office, in the fifteenth century, comprehended, in addition to the more obvious duties of an historian, the intimate and confidential relations of a private secretary. "It was the business of the chronicler," says Bernaldez, "to carry on foreign correspondence in the service of his master, acquainting himself with whatever was passing in other courts and countries, and, by the discreet and conciliatory tenor of his epistles, to allay such feuds as might arise between the king and his nobility, and establish harmony between them." From this period Pulgar remained near the royal person, accompanying the queen in her various progresses through the kingdom, as well as in her military expeditions into the Moorish territory. He was consequently an eye-witness of many of the warlike scenes which he describes, and, from his situation at the court, had access to the most ample and accredited sources of information. It is probable he did not survive the capture of Granada, as his history stops somewhat short of that event. Pulgar's Chronicle, in the portion containing a retrospective survey of events previous to 1482, may be charged with gross inaccuracy; but in all the subsequent period it may be received as perfectly authentic, and has all the air of impartiality. Every circumstance relating to the conduct of the war is developed with equal fulness and precision. His manner of narration, though prolix, is perspicuous, and may compare favourably with that of contemporary writers. His sentiments may compare still more advantageously, in point of liberality, with those of the Castilian historians of a later age.

Pulgar left some other works, of which his commentary on the ancient satire of "Mingo Revulgo," his "Letters," and his "Claros Varones," or sketches of illustrious men, have alone been published. The last contains notices of the most distinguished individuals of the court of Henry IV., which, although too indiscriminately encomiastic, are valuable subsidaries to an accurate acquaintance with the prominent actors of the period. The last and most elegant edition of Pulgar's Chronicle was published at Valencia in 1780, from the press of Benito Montfort, in large folio.

Antonio de Lebrija was one of the most active and erudite scholars of

this period. He was born in the province of Andalusia, in 1444. After the usual discipline at Salamanca, he went at the age of nineteen to Italy, where he completed his education in the university of Bologna. He returned to Spain ten years after, richly stored with classical learning and the liberal arts that were then taught in the flourishing schools of Italy. He lost no time in dispensing to his countrymen his various acquisitions. He was appointed to the two chairs of grammar and poetry (a thing unprecedented) in the university of Salamanca, and lectured at the same time in these distinct departments. He was subsequently preferred by Cardinal Ximenes to a professorship in his university of Alcalá de Henares, where his services were liberally requited, and where he enjoyed the entire confidence of his distinguished patron, who consulted him on all matters affecting the interests of the institution. Here he continued, delivering his lectures and expounding the ancient classes to crowded audiences, to the advanced age of seventy-eight, when he was carried off by an attack of apoplexy.

Lebrija, besides his oral tuition, composed works on a great variety of subjects, philological, historical, theological, etc. His emendation of the sacred text was visited with the censure of the Inquisition, a circumstance which will not operate to his prejudice with posterity. Lebrija was far from being circumscribed by the narrow sentiments of his age. He was warmed with a generous enthusiasm for letters, which kindled a corresponding flame in the bosoms of his disciples, among whom may be reckoned some of the brightest names in the literary annals of the period. His instruction effected for classical literature in Spain what the labours of the great Italian scholars of the fifteenth century did for it in their country; and he was rewarded with the substantial gratitude of his own age, and such empty honours as could be rendered by posterity. For very many years, the anniversary of his death was commemorated by public services, and a funeral panegyric, in the university of Alcalá.

The circumstances attending the composition of his Latin Chronicle, so often quoted in this history, are very curious. Carbajal says that he delivered Pulgar's Chronicle, after that writer's death, into Lebrija's hands for the purpose of being translated into Latin. The latter proceeded in his task as far as the year 1486. His history, however, can scarcely be termed a translation, since, although it takes up the same thread of incident, it is diversified by many new ideas and particular facts. This unfinished performance was found among Lebrija's papers after his decease, with a preface containing not a word of acknowledgment to Pulgar. It was accordingly published for the first time, in 1545 (the edition referred to in this history), by his son Sancho, as an original production of his father. Twenty years after, the first edition of Pulgar's original Chronicle was published at Valladolid, from the copy which belonged to Lebrija, by his grandson Antonio. This work appeared also as Lebrija's. Copies, however, of Pulgar's Chronicle were preserved in several private libraries; and two years later, 1567, his just claims were vindicated by an edition at Saragossa, inscribed with his name as its author.

Lebrija's reputation has sustained some injury from this transaction, though most undeservedly. It seems probable that he adopted Pulgar's text as the basis of his own, intending to continue the narrative to a later period. His unfinished manuscript being found among his papers after his death, without reference to any authority, was naturally enough given to the world as entirely his production. It is more strange that Pulgar's own Chronicle, subsequently printed as Lebrija's, should have contained no allusion to its real author. The history, although composed, so far as it goes, with sufficient elaboration and pomp of style, is one that adds, on the whole, but little to the fame of Lebrija. It was at best but adding a leaf to the laurel on his brow, and was certainly not worth a plagiarism.

## CHAPTER XII.

### INTERNAL AFFAIRS OF THE KINGDOM.—INQUISITION IN ARAGON.

1483—1487.

**Isabella enforces the Laws.—Punishment of Ecclesiastics.—Inquisition in Aragon.—Remonstrances of the Cortes.—Conspiracy.—Assassination of the Inquisitor Arbues.—Cruel Persecutions.—Inquisition throughout Ferdinand's Dominions.**

IN such intervals of leisure as occurred amid their military operations, Ferdinand and Isabella were diligently occupied with the interior government of the kingdom, and especially with the rigid administration of justice, the most difficult of all duties in an imperfectly civilized state of society. The queen found especial demand for this in the northern provinces, whose rude inhabitants were little used to subordination. She compelled the great nobles to lay aside their arms and refer their disputes to legal arbitration. She caused a number of the fortresses, which were still garrisoned by the baronial banditti, to be razed to the ground; and she enforced the utmost severity of the law against such inferior criminals as violated the public peace.<sup>1</sup>

Even ecclesiastical immunities, which proved so effectual a protection in most countries at this period, were not permitted to screen the offender. A remarkable instance of this occurred at the city of Truxillo, in 1486. An inhabitant of that place had been committed to prison for some offence by order of the civil magistrate. Certain

<sup>1</sup> Lebrija, *Berum Gestarum Decades*, iii. lib. 1, cap. 10.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 3, cap. 27,

39, 67, et alibi.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 175. — Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 348.

priests, relations of the offender, alleged that his religious profession exempted him from all but ecclesiastical jurisdiction; and, as the authorities refused to deliver him up, they inflamed the population to such a degree, by their representations of the insult offered to the church, that they rose in a body, and, forcing the prison, set at liberty not only the malefactor in question, but all those confined there. The queen no sooner heard of this outrage on the royal authority than she sent a detachment of her guard to Truxillo, which secured the persons of the principal rioters, some of whom were capitally punished, while the ecclesiastics who had stirred up the sedition were banished the realm. Isabella, while by her example she inculcated the deepest reverence for the sacred profession, uniformly resisted every attempt from that quarter to encroach on the royal prerogative. The tendency of her administration was decidedly, as there will be occasion more particularly to notice, to abridge the authority which the clergy had exercised in civil matters under preceding reigns.<sup>2</sup>

Nothing of interest occurred in the foreign relations of the kingdom during the period embraced by the preceding chapter, except perhaps the marriage of Catharine, the young queen of Navarre, with Jean d'Albret, a French nobleman, whose extensive hereditary domains, in the south-west corner of France, lay adjacent to her kingdom. (1484.) This connection was extremely distasteful to the Spanish sovereigns, and indeed to many of the Navarrese,

<sup>2</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 68.—A pertinent example of this occurred, December, 1485, at Alcalá de Henares, where the court was detained during the illness of the queen, who there gave birth to her youngest child, Doña Catalina, afterwards so celebrated in English history as Catharine of Aragon. A collision took place in this city between the royal judges and those of the archbishop of Toledo, to whose diocese it belonged. The latter stoutly maintained the pre-

tensions of the church. The queen with equal pertinacity asserted the supremacy of the royal jurisdiction over every other in the kingdom, secular or ecclesiastical. The affair was ultimately referred to the arbitration of certain learned men, named conjointly by the adverse parties. It was not then determined, however, and Pulgar has neglected to acquaint us with the award. *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 53.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1485.

who were desirous of the alliance with Castile. This was ultimately defeated by the queen-mother, an artful woman, who, being of the blood royal of France, was naturally disposed to a union with that kingdom. Ferdinand did not neglect to maintain such an understanding with the malcontents of Navarre as should enable him to counteract any undue advantage which the French monarch might derive from the possession of this key, as it were, to the Castilian territory.<sup>3</sup>

In Aragon, two circumstances took place in the period under review, deserving historical notice. The first relates to an order of the Catalan peasantry, denominated vassals *de remenza*. These persons were subjected to a feudal bondage, which had its origin in very remote ages, but which had become in no degree mitigated, while the peasantry of every other part of Europe had been gradually rising to the rank of freemen. The grievous nature of the impositions had led to repeated rebellions in preceding reigns. At length, Ferdinand, after many fruitless attempts at a mediation between these unfortunate people and their arrogant masters, prevailed on the latter, rather by force of authority than argument, to relinquish the extraordinary seigniorial rights which they had hitherto enjoyed, in consideration of a stipulated annual payment from their vassals.<sup>4</sup> (1486.)

The other circumstance worthy of record, but not in like manner creditable to the character of the sovereign, is the introduction of the modern Inquisition into Aragon. The ancient tribunal had existed there, as has been stated in a previous chapter, since the middle of the thirteenth century, but seems to have lost all its venom in the atmosphere of that free country; scarcely assuming a jurisdiction beyond that of an ordinary ecclesiastical court. No sooner, however, was the institution organized on its new basis in

<sup>3</sup> Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, 52, 67.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. v. lib. 35, cap. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. cap.

Castile, than Ferdinand resolved on its introduction, in a similar form, in his own dominions.

Measures were accordingly taken to that effect at a meeting of his privy council convened by the king at Tاراгона, during the session of the cortes in that place, in April, 1484; and a royal order was issued requiring all the constituted authorities throughout the kingdom to support the new tribunal in the exercise of its functions. A Dominican monk, Fray Gaspard Juglar, and Pedro Arbues de Epila, a canon of the metropolitan church, were appointed by the general, Torquemada, inquisitors over the diocese of Saragossa; and in the month of September following the chief justiciary and the other great officers of the realm took the prescribed oaths.<sup>6</sup>

The new institution, opposed to the ideas of independence common to all the Aragonese, was particularly offensive to the higher orders, many of whose members, including persons filling the most considerable official stations, were of Jewish descent, and of course precisely the class exposed to the scrutiny of the Inquisition. Without difficulty, therefore, the cortes was persuaded in the following year to send a deputation to the court of Rome, and another to Ferdinand, representing the repugnance of the new tribunal to the liberties of the nation, as well as to their settled opinions and habits, and praying that its operation might be suspended for the present, so far at least as concerned the confiscation of property, which it

<sup>6</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 6, art. 2. — Zurita, *Anales*, lib. 20, cap. 66.—At this cortes, convened at Tاراгона, Ferdinand and Isabella experienced an instance of the haughty spirit of their Catalan subjects, who refused to attend, alleging it to be a violation of their liberties to be summoned to a place without the limits of their principality. The Valencians also protested, that their attendance should not operate as a precedent to their prejudice. It

was usual to convene a central or general cortes at Fraga, or Monzon, or some town which the Catalans, who were peculiarly jealous of their privileges, claimed to be within their territory. It was still more usual to hold separate cortes of the three kingdoms simultaneously in such contiguous places in each as would permit the royal presence in all during their session. See Blancas, *Modo de proceder en Cortes de Aragon* (Zaragoza, 1641), cap. 4.

rightly regarded as the moving power of the whole terrible machinery.<sup>6</sup>

Both the pope and the king, as may be imagined, turned a deaf ear to these remonstrances. In the mean while the Inquisition commenced operations, and autos da fe were celebrated at Saragossa, with all their usual horrors, in the months of May and June, in 1485. The discontented Aragonese, despairing of redress in any regular way, resolved to intimidate their oppressors by some appalling act of violence. They formed a conspiracy for the assassination of Arbues, the most odious of the inquisitors established over the diocese of Saragossa. The conspiracy, set on foot by some of the principal nobility, was entered into by most of the new Christians, or persons of Jewish extraction, in the district. The sum of ten thousand reals was subscribed to defray the necessary expenses for the execution of their project. This was not easy, however, since Arbues, conscious of the popular odium that he had incurred, protected his person by wearing under his monastic robes a suit of mail, complete even to the helmet beneath his hood. With similar vigilance he defended, also, every avenue to his sleeping-apartment.<sup>7</sup>

At length, however, the conspirators found an opportunity of surprising him while at his devotions. Arbues was on his knees before the great altar of the cathedral, near midnight, when his enemies, who had entered the church in two separate bodies, suddenly surrounded him, and one of them wounded him in the arm with a dagger, while another dealt him a fatal blow in the back of his

<sup>6</sup> By one of the articles in the Privilegium Generale, the Magna Charta of Aragon, it is declared, "Que turment: ni inquisicion; no sian en Aragon como sian contra Fuero el qual dize que alguna pesquisa no hauemos: et contra el privilegio general, el qual vieda que inquisicion so sia feyta." (Fueros y Observancias, fol. 11.)

The tenor of this clause (although the term *inquisicion* must not be confounded with the name of the modern institution) was sufficiently precise, one might have thought, to secure the Aragonese from the fangs of this terrible tribunal.

<sup>7</sup> Llorente, Hist. de l'Inquisition, chap. 6, art. 2, 3.



neck. The priests, who were preparing to celebrate matins in the choir of the church, hastened to the spot, but not before the assassins had effected their escape. They transported the bleeding body of the inquisitor to his apartment, where he survived only two days, blessing the Lord that he had been permitted to seal so good a cause with his blood. The whole scene will readily remind the English reader of the assassination of Thomas A Becket.<sup>8</sup>

The event did not correspond with the expectations of the conspirators. Sectarian jealousy proved stronger than hatred of the Inquisition. The populace, ignorant of the extent or ultimate object of the conspiracy, were filled with vague apprehensions of an insurrection of the new Christians, who had so often been the objects of outrage; and they could only be appeased by the archbishop of Saragossa riding through the streets and proclaiming that no time should be lost in detecting and punishing the assassins.

This promise was abundantly fulfilled; and wide was the ruin occasioned by the indefatigable zeal with which the bloodhounds of the tribunal followed up the scent. In the course of this persecution, two hundred individuals perished at the stake, and a still greater number in the dungeons of the Inquisition; and there was scarcely a noble family in Aragon but witnessed one or more of its members condemned to humiliating penance in the autos da fe. The immediate perpetrators of the murder were all hanged, after suffering the amputation of their right hands. One, who had appeared as evidence against the rest, under assurance of pardon, had his sentence so far commuted that his hand was not cut off till after he had been hanged. It was thus that the Holy Office interpreted its promises of grace.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>8</sup> Llorente, ubi supra.—Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, pp. 182, 183.—Férreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. pp. 37, 38.

<sup>9</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 6, art. 5.—Blancas, *Aragonensium Rerum Commentarii* (Cæsaraugustæ, 1588), p. 206. —

Arbues received all the honours of a martyr. His ashes were interred on the spot where he had been assassinated.<sup>10</sup> A superb mausoleum was erected over them, and beneath his effigy a bas-relief was sculptured representing his tragical death, with an inscription containing a suitable denunciation of the race of Israel. And at length, when the lapse of nearly two centuries had supplied the requisite amount of miracles, the Spanish Inquisition had the glory of adding a new saint to the calendar, by the canonization of the martyr under Pope Alexander the Seventh, in 1664.<sup>11</sup>

The failure of the attempt to shake off the tribunal served only, as usual in such cases, to establish it more firmly than before. Efforts at resistance were subsequently, but ineffectually, made in other parts of Aragon, and in Valencia and Catalonia. It was not established in the latter province till 1487, and some years later in Sicily, Sardinia, and the Balearic Isles. Thus Ferdinand had the melancholy satisfaction of riveting the most galling yoke ever devised by fanaticism round the necks of a people who till that period had enjoyed probably the greatest degree of constitutional freedom which the world had witnessed.

Among those who, after a tedious imprisonment, were condemned to do penance in an *auto da fe*, was a nephew of king Ferdinand, Don James of Navarre. Mariana, willing to point the tale with a suitable moral, informs us that, although none of the conspirators were ever brought to trial, they all perished miserably within a year, in different ways, by the judgment of God. (*Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 368.) Unfortunately for the effect of this moral, Llorente, who consulted the original processes, must be received as the better authority of the two.

"According to Paramo, when

the corpse of the inquisitor was brought to the place where he had been assassinated, the blood, which had been coagulated on the pavement, smoked up and boiled with most miraculous fervour! *De Origine Inquisitionis*, p. 382.

"Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, p. 183.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, chap. 6, art. 4.—France and Italy also, according to Llorente, could each boast a saint inquisitor. Their renown, however, has been eclipsed by the superior splendours of their great master, St. Dominic;

—"Fils inconnus d'un si glorieux père."

## CHAPTER XIII

### WAR OF GRANADA.—SURRENDER OF VELEZ MALAGA.— SIEGE AND CONQUEST OF MALAGA.

1487.

**Narrow Escape of Ferdinand before Velez.—Malaga invested by Sea and Land.—Brilliant Spectacle.—The Queen visits the Camp.—Attempt to assassinate the Sovereigns.—Distress and Resolution of the Besieged.—Enthusiasm of the Christians.—Outworks carried by them.—Proposals for Surrender.—Haughty Demeanour of Ferdinand.—Malaga surrenders at Discretion.—Cruel Policy of the Victors.**

BEFORE commencing operations against Malaga, it was thought expedient by the Spanish council of war to obtain possession of Velez Malaga, situated about five leagues distant from the former. This strong town stood along the southern extremity of a range of mountains that extend to Granada. Its position afforded an easy communication with that capital, and obvious means of annoyance to an enemy interposed between itself and the adjacent city of Malaga. The reduction of this place, therefore, became the first object of the campaign.

The forces assembled at Cordova, consisting of the levies of the Andalusian cities principally, of the retainers of the great nobility, and of the well-appointed chivalry which thronged from all quarters of the kingdom, amounted on this occasion to twelve thousand horse and forty thousand foot; a number which sufficiently attests the unslackened ardour of the nation in the prosecution of the war. On the 7th of April, 1487, King Ferdinand, putting himself at the head of this formidable host, quitted the fair city of Cordova amid the cheering acclamations of its inhabitants, although these were somewhat damped by the ominous

occurrence of an earthquake, which demolished a part of the royal residence, among other edifices, during the preceding night. The route, after traversing the Yeguas and the old town of Antequera, struck into a wild, hilly country that stretches towards Velez. The rivers were so much swollen by excessive rains, and the passes so rough and difficult, that the army in part of its march advanced only a league a day; and on one occasion, when no suitable place occurred for encampment for the space of five leagues, the men fainted with exhaustion, and the beasts dropped down dead in the harness. At length, on the 17th of April, the Spanish army sat down before Velez Malaga, where in a few days they were joined by the lighter pieces of their battering ordnance, the roads, notwithstanding the immense labour expended on them, being found impracticable for the heavier guns.<sup>1</sup>

The Moors were aware of the importance of Velez to the security of Malaga. The sensation excited in Granada by the tidings of its danger was so strong, that the old chief, El Zagal, found it necessary to make an effort to relieve the beleaguered city, notwithstanding the critical posture in which his absence would leave his affairs in the capital. Dark clouds of the enemy were seen throughout the day mustering along the heights, which by night were illumined with a hundred fires. Ferdinand's utmost vigilance was required for the protection of his camp against the ambuscades and nocturnal sallies of his wily foe. At length, however, El Zagal, having been foiled in a well-concerted attempt to surprise the Christian quarters by night, was driven across the mountains by the marquises of Cadiz, and compelled to retreat on his capital, com-

<sup>1</sup> Vedmar, *Antigüedad y Grandezas de la Ciudad de Velez* (Granada, 1652), fol. 148. — Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. lib. 25, cap. 10. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. iii. cap. 70. — Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1487. — Bleda, *Corónica*, lib. 5, cap. 14. — In the general summons to Alava

for the campaign of this year, we find a particular call on the *cavalleros* and *hidalgos*, with the assurance of pay during the time of service, and the menace of forfeiting their privileges as exempts from taxation, in case of non-compliance. *Col. de Cédulas*, tom. iv. no. 20.

pletely baffled in his enterprise. There the tidings of his disaster had preceded him. The fickle populace, with whom misfortune passes for misconduct, unmindful of his former successes, now hastened to transfer their allegiance to his rival, Abdallah, and closed the gates against him; and the unfortunate chief withdrew to Guadix, which, with Almeria, Baza, and some less considerable places, still remained faithful.<sup>3</sup>

Ferdinand conducted the siege all the while with his usual vigour, and spared no exposure of his person to peril or fatigue. On one occasion, seeing a party of Christians retreating in disorder before a squadron of the enemy, who had surprised them while fortifying an eminence near the city, the king, who was at dinner in his tent, rushed out with no other defensive armour than his cuirass, and, leaping on his horse, charged briskly into the midst of the enemy, and succeeded in rallying his own men. In the midst of the rencontre, however, when he had discharged his lance, he found himself unable to extricate his sword from the scabbard which hung from the saddle-bow. At this moment he was assaulted by several Moors, and must have been either slain or taken, but for the timely rescue of the marquis of Cadiz, and a brave cavalier, Garcilasso de la Vega, who, galloping up to the spot with their attendants, succeeded, after a sharp skirmish, in beating off the enemy. Ferdinand's nobles remonstrated with him on this wanton exposure of his person, representing that he could serve them more effectually with his head than his hand. But he answered that "he could not stop to calculate chances when his subjects were perilling their lives for his sake;" a reply, says Pulgar, which endeared him to the whole army.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>3</sup> Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 292—294.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.—Vedmar, *Antigüedad de Velez*, fol. 151.

<sup>4</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 175.—Vedmar, *Antigüedad de Velez*, fol. 150, 151.—Marmol, *Revol.* L

*belion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 14.—In commemoration of this event, the city incorporated into its escutcheon the figure of a king on horseback, in the act of piercing a Moor with his javelin. Vedmar, *Antigüedad de Velez*, fol. 12.

At length, the inhabitants of Velez, seeing the ruin impending from the bombardment of the Christians, whose rigorous blockade both by sea and land excluded all hopes of relief from without, consented to capitulate on the usual conditions of security to their persons, property, and religion. The capitulation of this place (April 27th, 1487) was followed by that of more than twenty places of inferior note lying between it and Malaga, so that the approaches to this latter city were now left open to the victorious Spaniards.<sup>4</sup>

This ancient city, which, under the Spanish Arabs in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, formed the capital of an independent principality, was second only to the metropolis itself, in the kingdom of Granada. Its fruitful environs furnished abundant articles of export, while its commodious port on the Mediterranean opened a traffic with the various countries washed by that inland sea, and with the remoter regions of India. Owing to these advantages, the inhabitants acquired unbounded opulence, which showed itself in the embellishments of their city, whose light forms of architecture, mingling after the Eastern fashion with odoriferous gardens and fountains of sparkling water, presented an appearance most refreshing to the senses in this sultry climate.<sup>5</sup>

The city was encompassed by fortifications of great strength and in perfect repair. It was commanded by a citadel, connected by a covered way with a second fortress, impregnable from its position, denominated Gebalfaro, which stood along the declivities of the bold sierra of the Axarquia, whose defiles had proved so disastrous to the Christians. The city lay between two spacious suburbs, the one on the land side being also encircled by a formid-

<sup>4</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 52.—Marmol, Rebelion de los Moriscos, lib. 1, cap. 14.

<sup>5</sup> Conde doubts whether the name of Malaga is derived from the Greek *μαλακή*, signifying "agreeable," or the Arabic *malika* meaning "royal."

Either etymology is sufficiently pertinent. (See *El Nubiense, Descripcion de España*, p. 186, nota.) For notices of sovereigns who swayed the sceptre of Malaga, see Casiri, *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. pp. 41, 66, 99, et alibi.

able wall, and the other declining towards the sea, showing an expanse of olive, orange, and pomegranate gardens, intermingled with the rich vineyards that furnished the celebrated staple for its export.

Malaga was well prepared for a siege by supplies of artillery and ammunition. Its ordinary garrison was reinforced by volunteers from the neighbouring towns, and by a corps of African mercenaries, Gomeres, as they were called, men of ferocious temper, but of tried valour and military discipline. The command of this important post had been intrusted by El Zagal to a noble Moor, named Hamet Zeli, whose renown in the present war had been established by his resolute defence of Ronda.<sup>6</sup>

Ferdinand, while lying before Velez, received intelligence that many of the wealthy burghers of Malaga were inclined to capitulate at once, rather than hazard the demolition of their city by an obstinate resistance. He instructed the marquis of Cadiz, therefore, to open a negotiation with Hamet Zeli, authorizing him to make the most liberal offers to the alcaide himself, as well as his garrison, and the principal citizens of the place, on condition of immediate surrender. The sturdy chief, however, rejected the proposal with disdain, replying that he had been commissioned by his master to defend the place to the last extremity, and that the Christian king could not offer a bribe large enough to make him betray his trust. Ferdinand, finding little prospect of operating on this Spartan temper, broke up his camp before Velez on the 7th of May, and advanced with his whole army as far as Bezmillana, a place on the sea-board about two leagues distant from Malaga.<sup>7</sup>

The line of march now lay through a valley commanded at the extremity nearest the city by two eminences; the

<sup>6</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 237.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 74.—El Nubiense, *Descripcion de España*, p. 144, nota.

<sup>7</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 82.—Vedmar, *Antigüedad de Velez*, fol. 154.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 74.

one on the sea-coast, the other facing the fortress of the Gebalfaro and forming part of the wild sierra which overshadowed Malaga on the north. The enemy occupied both these important positions. A corps of Galicians was sent forward to dislodge them from the eminence towards the sea. But it failed in the assault, and, notwithstanding it was led up a second time by the commander of Leon and the brave Garcilasso de la Vega,<sup>a</sup> was again repulsed by the intrepid foe.

A similar fate attended the assault on the sierra, which was conducted by the troops of the royal household. They were driven back on the vanguard, which had halted in the valley under command of the grand master of St. James, prepared to support the attack on either side. Being reinforced, the Spaniards returned to the charge with the most determined resolution. They were encountered by the enemy with equal spirit. The latter, throwing away their lances, precipitated themselves on the ranks of the assailants, making use only of their daggers, grappling closely man to man, till both rolled promiscuously together down the steep sides of the ravine. No mercy was asked or shown. None thought of sparing or of spoiling, for hatred, says the chronicler, was stronger than avarice. The main body of the army, in the mean while, pent up in the valley, were compelled to witness the mortal conflict, and listen to the exulting cries of the enemy, which, after the Moorish custom, rose high and shrill above the din of battle, without being able to advance a step in support of their companions, who were again forced to give way before their

<sup>a</sup> This cavalier, who took a conspicuous part in both the military and civil transactions of this reign, was descended from one of the most ancient and honourable houses in Castile. Hita (*Guerras civiles de Granada*, tom. i. p. 399), with more effrontery than usual, has imputed to him a chivalrous rencontre with a Saracen, which is recorded of an ancestor, in the ancient Chronicle of Alonso XI :

“Garcilaso de la Vega desde alli se ha intitulado, porque en la Vega hiciera campo con aquel pagano.”

Oviedo, however, with good reason, distrusts the etymology and the story, as he traces both the cognomen and the peculiar device of the family to a much older date than the period assigned in the Chronicle. *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 3, dial. 43.



impetuous adversaries and fall back on the vanguard under the grand master of St. James. Here, however, they speedily rallied, and, being reinforced, advanced to the charge a third time, with such inflexible courage as bore down all opposition, and compelled the enemy, exhausted, or rather overpowered by superior numbers, to abandon his position. At the same time the rising ground on the sea-side was carried by the Spaniards under the commander of Leon and Garcilasso de la Vega, who, dividing their forces, charged the Moors so briskly in front and rear that they were compelled to retreat on the neighbouring fortress of Gebalfaro.<sup>9</sup>

As it was evening before these advantages were obtained, the army did not defile into the plains around Malaga before the following morning, when dispositions were made for its encampment. The eminence on the sierra, so bravely contested, was assigned, as the post of greatest danger, to the marquis duke of Cadiz. It was protected by strong works lined with artillery, and a corps of two thousand five hundred horse and fourteen thousand foot was placed under the immediate command of that nobleman. A line of defence was constructed along the declivity from this redoubt to the sea-shore. Similar works, consisting of a deep trench and palisades, or, where the soil was too rocky to admit of them, of an embankment or mound of earth, were formed in front of the encampment, which embraced the whole circuit of the city; and the blockade was completed by a fleet of armed vessels, galleys and caravels, which rode in the harbour under the command of the Catalan admiral, Requesens, and effectually cut off all communication by water.<sup>10</sup>

The old chronicler Bernaldez warms at the aspect of the fair city of Malaga, thus encompassed by Christian legions, whose deep lines, stretching far over hill and valley, reached

<sup>9</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 75.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, lib. 1, cap. 64.

<sup>10</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*,

*MS.*, cap. 83.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 76.—Carbajal, *Anales*, *MS.*, año 1487.

quite round from one arm of the sea to the other. In the midst of this brilliant encampment was seen the royal pavilion, proudly displaying the united banners of Castile and Aragon, and forming so conspicuous a mark for the enemy's artillery that Ferdinand, after imminent hazard, was at length compelled to shift his quarters. The Christians were not slow in erecting counter-batteries; but the work was obliged to be carried on at night, in order to screen them from the fire of the besieged.<sup>11</sup>

The first operations of the Spaniards were directed against the suburb, on the land side of the city. The attack was intrusted to the count of Cifuentes, the nobleman who had been made prisoner in the affair of the Axarquia and subsequently ransomed. The Spanish ordnance was served with such effect that a practicable breach was soon made in the wall. The combatants now poured their murderous volleys on each other through the opening, and at length met on the ruins of the breach. After a desperate struggle, the Moors gave way. The Christians rushed into the inclosure, at the same time effecting a lodgment on the rampart, and, although a part of it, undermined by the enemy, gave way with a terrible crash, they still kept possession of the remainder, and at length drove their antagonists, who sullenly retreated step by step, within the fortifications of the city. The lines were then drawn close around the place. Every avenue of communication was strictly guarded, and every preparation was made for reducing the town by regular blockade.<sup>12</sup>

In addition to the cannon brought round by water from Velez, the heavier lombards, which from the difficulty of transportation had been left during the late siege at Antequera, were now conducted, across roads levelled for the purpose, to the camp. Supplies of marble bullets were

<sup>11</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, ubi supra.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., ubi supra.

<sup>12</sup> Peter Martyr, Opus Epist., lib. 1, epist. 63.—Pulgar, Reyes Cató-

licos, cap. 76.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, cap. 83.—Oviedo, Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 36.

also brought from the ancient and depopulated city of Algezira, where they had lain ever since its capture in the preceding century by Alfonso the Eleventh. The camp was filled with operatives, employed in the manufacture of balls and powder, which were stored in subterranean magazines, and in the fabrication of those various kinds of battering enginery which continued in use long after the introduction of gunpowder.<sup>18</sup>

During the early part of the siege, the camp experienced some temporary inconvenience from the occasional interruption of the supplies transported by water. Rumours of the appearance of the plague in some of the adjacent villages caused additional uneasiness; and deserters who passed into Malaga reported these particulars with the usual exaggeration, and encouraged the besieged to persevere, by the assurance that Ferdinand could not much longer keep the field, and that the queen had actually written to advise his breaking up the camp. Under these circumstances, Ferdinand saw at once the importance of the queen's presence in order to dispel the delusion of the enemy and to give new heart to his soldiers. He accordingly sent a message to Cordova, where she was holding her court, requesting her appearance in the camp.

Isabella had proposed to join her husband before Velez, on receiving tidings of El Zagal's march from Granada, and had actually enforced levies of all persons capable of bearing arms, between twenty and seventy years of age, throughout Andalusia, but subsequently disbanded them, on learning the discomfiture of the Moorish army. Without hesitation, she now set forward, accompanied by the cardinal of Spain and other dignitaries of the church, together with the infanta Isabella, and a courtly train of ladies and cavaliers in attendance on her person. She was received at a short distance from the camp by the marquis of Cadiz and the grand master of St. James, and escorted to her quarters amidst the enthusiastic greetings of the

<sup>18</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 76.

soldiery. Hope now brightened every countenance. A grace seemed to be shed over the rugged features of war ; and the young gallants thronged from all quarters to the camp, eager to win the guerdon of valour from the hands of those from whom it is most grateful to receive it.<sup>14</sup>

Ferdinand, who had hitherto brought into action only the lighter pieces of ordnance, from a willingness to spare the noble edifices of the city, now pointed his heaviest guns against its walls. Before opening his fire, however, he again summoned the place, offering the usual liberal terms in case of immediate compliance, and engaging otherwise, "with the blessing of God, to make them all slaves!" But the heart of the alcaide was hardened like that of Pharaoh, says the Andalusian chronicler, and the people were swelled with vain hopes, so that their ears were closed against the proposal; orders were even issued to punish with death any attempt at a parley. On the contrary, they made answer by a more lively cannonade than before, along the whole line of ramparts and fortresses which overhung the city. Sallies were also made at almost every hour of the day and night on every assailable point of the Christian lines, so that the camp was kept in perpetual alarm. In one of the nocturnal sallies, a body of two thousand men from the castle of Gebalfaro succeeded in surprising the quarters of the marquis of Cadiz, who, with his followers, was exhausted by fatigue and watching during the two preceding nights. The Christians, bewildered with the sudden tumult which broke their slumber, were thrown into the greatest confusion ; and the marquis, who rushed half armed from his tent, found no little difficulty in bringing them to order, and beating off the assailants, after receiving a wound in the arm from an arrow ; while he had a still narrower escape from the ball of an arquebuse, that penetrated his buckler and hit him below

<sup>14</sup> Salazar de Mendoza, Crón. del Gran Cardenal, lib. 1, cap. 64.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. cap. 70.—

Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 83.

the cuirass, but fortunately so much spent as to do him no injury.<sup>15</sup>

The Moors were not unmindful of the importance of Malaga, or the gallantry with which it was defended. They made several attempts to relieve it, the failure of which was owing less to the Christians than to treachery and their own miserable feuds. A body of cavalry, which El Zagal despatched from Guadix to throw succours into the beleaguered city, was encountered and cut to pieces by a superior force of the young king Abdallah, who consummated his baseness by sending an embassy to the Christian camp, charged with a present of Arabian horses sumptuously caparisoned to Ferdinand, and of costly silks and Oriental perfumes to the queen; at the same time complimenting them on their successes, and soliciting the continuance of their friendly dispositions towards himself. Ferdinand and Isabella requited this act of humiliation by securing to Abdallah's subjects the right of cultivating their fields in quiet, and of trafficking with the Spaniards in every commodity save military stores. At this paltry price did the dastard prince consent to stay his arm at the only moment when it could be used effectually for his country.<sup>16</sup>

More serious consequences were like to have resulted from an attempt made by another party of Moors from Guadix to penetrate the Christian lines. Part of them succeeded, and threw themselves into the besieged city. The remainder were cut in pieces. There was one, however, who, making no show of resistance, was taken prisoner

<sup>15</sup> Bleda, *Corónica*, lib. 5, cap. 15.—Conde, *Dominación de los Arabes*, tom. iv. pp. 237, 238.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 83.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 79.

<sup>16</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.—During the siege, ambassadors arrived from an African potentate, the king of Tremecen, bearing a magnificent present to the Cas-

tilian sovereigns, interceding for the Malagans, and at the same time asking protection for his subjects from the Spanish cruisers in the Mediterranean. The sovereigns graciously complied with the latter request, and complimented the African monarch with a plate of gold, on which the royal arms were curiously embossed, says Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 84.

without harm to his person. Being brought before the Marquis of Cadiz, he informed that nobleman that he could make some important disclosures to the sovereigns. He was accordingly conducted to the royal tent; but, as Ferdinand was taking his siesta, in the sultry hour of the day, the queen, moved by divine inspiration, according to the Castilian historian, deferred the audience till her husband should awake, and commanded the prisoner to be detained in the adjoining tent. This was occupied by Doña Beatriz de Bobadilla, marchioness of Moya, Isabella's early friend, who happened to be at that time engaged in discourse with a Portuguese nobleman, Don Alvaro, son of the duke of Braganza.<sup>17</sup>

The Moor did not understand the Castilian language, and, deceived by the rich attire and courtly bearing of these personages, he mistook them for the king and queen. While in the act of refreshing himself with a glass of water, he suddenly drew a dagger from beneath the broad folds of his *albornoz*, or Moorish mantle, which he had been incautiously suffered to retain, and, darting on the Portuguese prince, gave him a deep wound on the head, and then, turning like lightning on the marchioness, aimed a stroke at her, which fortunately glanced without injury, the point of the weapon being turned by the heavy embroidery of her robes. Before he could repeat his blow, the Moorish Scævola, with a fate very different from that of his Roman prototype, was pierced with a hundred wounds by the attendants, who rushed to the spot, alarmed by the cries of the marchioness, and his mangled remains were soon after discharged from a catapult into the city; a foolish bravado, which the besieged requited by slaying a Galician gentleman and sending his corpse

<sup>17</sup> This nobleman, Don Alvaro de Portugal, had fled his native country, and sought an asylum in Castile from the vindictive enmity of John II., who had put to death the duke of Braganza, his elder brother. He was kindly received by Isabella,

to whom he was nearly related, and subsequently preferred to several important offices of state. His son, the count of Gelves, married a granddaughter of Christopher Columbus. Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS.

astride upon a mule through the gates of the town into the Christian camp.<sup>18</sup>

This daring attempt on the lives of the king and queen spread general consternation throughout the army. Precautions were taken for the future, by ordinances prohibiting the introduction of any unknown person armed, or any Moor whatever, into the royal quarters; and the body-guard was augmented by the addition of two hundred hidalgos of Castile and Aragon, who, with their retainers, were to keep constant watch over the persons of the sovereigns.

Meanwhile, the city of Malaga, whose natural population was greatly swelled by the influx of its foreign auxiliaries, began to be straitened for supplies, while its distress was aggravated by the spectacle of abundance which reigned throughout the Spanish camp. Still, however, the people, overawed by the soldiery, did not break out into murmurs, nor did they relax in any degree the pertinacity of their resistance. Their drooping spirits were cheered by the predictions of a fanatic, who promised that they should eat the grain which they saw in the Christian camp; a prediction which came to be verified, like most others that are verified at all, in a very different sense from that intended or understood.

The incessant cannonade kept up by the besieging army, in the mean time, so far exhausted their ammunition that they were constrained to seek supplies from the most distant parts of the kingdom, and from foreign countries. The arrival of two Flemish transports at this juncture, from the emperor of Germany, whose interest had been roused in the crusade, afforded a seasonable reinforcement of military stores and munitions.

The obstinate defence of Malaga had given the siege such celebrity that volunteers, eager to share in it, flocked

<sup>18</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 23. — Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 1, epist. 63. — Bernaldez, *Royos Católicos*,

MS., cap. 84. — Bleda, *Corónica*, lib. 5, cap. 15. — L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 175, 176.

from all parts of the Peninsula to the royal standard. Among others, the duke of Medina Sidonia, who had furnished his quota of troops at the opening of the campaign, now arrived in person with a reinforcement, together with a hundred galleys freighted with supplies, and a loan of twenty thousand doblas of gold to the sovereigns for the expenses of the war. Such was the deep interest in it excited throughout the nation, and the alacrity which every order of men exhibited in supporting its enormous burdens.<sup>19</sup>

The Castilian army, swelled by these daily augmentations, varied in its amount, according to different estimates, from sixty to ninety thousand men. Throughout this immense host, the most perfect discipline was maintained. Gaming was restrained by ordinances interdicting the use of dice and cards, of which the lower orders were passionately fond. Blasphemy was severely punished. Prostitutes, the common pest of a camp, were excluded; and so entire was the subordination, that not a knife was drawn, and scarcely a brawl occurred, says the historian, among the motley multitude. Besides the higher ecclesiastics who attended the court, the camp was well supplied with holy men, priests, friars, and the chaplains of the great nobility, who performed the exercises of religion in their respective quarters with all the pomp and splendour of the Roman Catholic worship; exalting the imaginations of the soldiers into the high devotional feeling which became those who were fighting the battles of the Cross.<sup>20</sup>

Hitherto, Ferdinand, relying on the blockade, and yielding to the queen's desire to spare the lives of her soldiers, had formed no regular plan of assault upon the town. But, as the season rolled on without the least demonstration of submission on the part of the besieged, he resolved to storm the works, which, if attended by no other conse-

<sup>19</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 87—89.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 84.

<sup>20</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 87.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 71.



quences, might at least serve to distress the enemy and hasten the hour of surrender. Large wooden towers on rollers were accordingly constructed, and provided with an apparatus of drawbridges and ladders, which, when brought near to the ramparts, would open a descent into the city. Galleries were also wrought, some for the purpose of penetrating into the place, and others to sap the foundations of the walls. The whole of these operations was placed under the direction of Francisco Ramirez, the celebrated engineer of Madrid.

But the Moors anticipated the completion of these formidable preparations by a brisk, well-concerted attack on all points of the Spanish lines. They countermined the assailants, and, encountering them in the subterraneous passages, drove them back, and demolished the frame-work of the galleries. At the same time, a little squadron of armed vessels, which had been riding in safety under the guns of the city, pushed out and engaged the Spanish fleet. Thus the battle raged with fire and sword, above and under ground, along the ramparts, the ocean, and the land, at the same time. Even Pulgar cannot withhold his tribute of admiration to this unconquerable spirit in an enemy wasted by all the extremities of famine and fatigue. "Who does not marvel," he says, "at the bold heart of these infidels in battle, their prompt obedience to their chiefs, their dexterity in the wiles of war, their patience under privation, and undaunted perseverance in their purposes?"<sup>21</sup>

A circumstance occurred in a sortie from the city, indicating a trait of character worth recording. A noble Moor, named Abrahen Zenete, fell in with a number of Spanish children who had wandered from their quarters. Without injuring them, he touched them gently with the handle of his lance, saying, "Get ye gone, varlets, to your

<sup>21</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. pp. 237, 238.—Caro de Torres, *Ordenes militares*, fol. 82, 83.  
Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 80.—

mothers." On being rebuked by his comrades, who inquired why he had let them escape so easily, he replied, "Because I saw no beard upon their chins." "An example of magnanimity," says the Curate of Los Palacios, "truly wonderful in a heathen, and which might have reflected credit on a Christian hidalgo."<sup>22</sup>

But no virtue or valour could avail the unfortunate Malagans against the overwhelming force of their enemies, who, driving them back from every point, compelled them, after a desperate struggle of six hours, to shelter themselves within the defences of the town. The Christians followed up their success. A mine was sprung near a tower connected by a bridge of four arches with the main works of the place. The Moors, scattered and intimidated by the explosion, retreated across the bridge; and the Spaniards, carrying the tower, whose guns completely enfiladed it, obtained possession of this important pass into the beleaguered city. For these and other signal services during the siege, Francisco Ramirez, the master of the ordnance, received the honours of knighthood from the hand of King Ferdinand.<sup>23</sup>

<sup>22</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap. 91.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 84.—The honest exclamation of the Curate brings to mind the similar encomium of the old Moorish ballad:

"Caballeros Granadinos,  
Aunque Moros, hijoedalgo."

Hita, Guerras de Granada, tom. i. p. 257.

<sup>23</sup> There is no well-authenticated instance of the employment of gunpowder in mining in European warfare, so far as I am aware, of an earlier date than this. Tiraboschi, indeed, refers, on the authority of another writer, to a work in the library of the Academy of Siena, composed by one Francesco Giorgio, architect of the duke of Urbino, about 1480, in which that person claims the merit of the invention. (*Letteratura Italiana*, tom. vi. p. 370.) The whole statement is obvi-

ously too loose to warrant any such conclusion.\* The Italian historians notice the use of gunpowder mines at the siege of the little town of Serezanello in Tuscany, by the Genoese, in 1487, precisely contemporaneous with the siege of Malaga. (Machiavelli, *Istorie Fiorentine*, lib. 8.—Guicciardini, *Istoria d'Italia* (Milano, 1803), tom. iii. lib. 6.) This singular coincidence, in nations having then but little intercourse, would seem to infer some common origin of greater antiquity. However this may be, the writers of both nations are agreed in ascribing the first successful use of such mines on any extended scale to the celebrated Spanish engineer, Pedro Navarro, when serving under Gonsalvo de Cordova, in his Italian campaigns at the beginning of the sixteenth century. Guicciardini, ubi supra.—Paolo Giovio, *De Vita Magni Gonsalvi (Vitis Illustrum*

The citizens of Malaga, dismayed at beholding the enemy established in their defences, and fainting under exhaustion from a siege which had already lasted more than three months, now began to murmur at the obstinacy of the garrison, and to demand a capitulation. Their magazines of grain were emptied, and for some weeks they had been compelled to devour the flesh of horses, dogs, cats, and even the boiled hides of these animals, or, in default of other nutriment, vine-leaves dressed with oil, and leaves of the palm-tree, pounded fine, and baked into a sort of cake. In consequence of this loathsome and unwholesome diet, diseases were engendered. Multitudes were seen dying about the streets. Many deserted to the Spanish camp, eager to barter their liberty for bread; and the city exhibited all the extremes of squalid and disgusting wretchedness, bred by pestilence and famine among an overcrowded population. The sufferings of the citizens softened the stern heart of the alcaide, Hamet Zeli, who at length yielded to their importunities, and, withdrawing his forces into the Gebalfaro, consented that the Malagans should make the best terms they could with their conqueror.

A deputation of the principal inhabitants, with an eminent merchant named Ali Dordux at their head, was then despatched to the Christian quarters, with the offer of the city to capitulate, on the same liberal conditions which had been uniformly granted by the Spaniards. The king refused to admit the embassy into his presence, and haughtily answered, through the commander of Leon, that "these terms had been twice offered to the people of Malaga, and rejected; that it was too late for them to stipulate conditions, and nothing now remained but to abide by those which he, as their conqueror, should vouchsafe to them."<sup>24</sup>

Virorum, Basilæ, 1578), lib. 2.—  
Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. v.  
lib. 35, cap. 12.

<sup>24</sup> Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique  
et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 296.—

L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol.  
175.—Rades y Andrada, *Las tres  
Ordenes*, fol. 54.—Pulgar, *Reyes  
Católicos*, cap. 92.—Bernaldez,  
*Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 85.

Ferdinand's answer spread general consternation throughout Malaga. The inhabitants saw too plainly that nothing was to be hoped from an appeal to sentiments of humanity. After a tumultuous debate, the deputies were despatched a second time to the Christian camp, charged with propositions in which concession was mingled with menace. They represented that the severe response of King Ferdinand to the citizens had rendered them desperate: that they were willing to resign to him their fortifications, their city,—in short, their property of every description,—on his assurance of their personal security and freedom; if he refused this, they would take their Christian captives, amounting to five or six hundred, from the dungeons in which they lay, and hang them like dogs over the battlements; and then, placing their old men, women, and children in the fortress, they would set fire to the town, and cut a way for themselves through their enemies, or fall in the attempt. "So," they continued, "if you gain a victory, it will be such a one as shall make the name of Malaga ring throughout the world, and to ages yet unborn!" Ferdinand, unmoved by these menaces, coolly replied that he saw no occasion to change his former determination, but they might rest assured, if they harmed a single hair of a Christian, he would put every soul in the place, man, woman, and child, to the sword.

The anxious people, who thronged forth to meet the embassy on its return to the city, were overwhelmed with the deepest gloom at its ominous tidings. Their fate was now sealed. Every avenue to hope seemed closed by the stern response of the victor. Yet hope will still linger; and, although there were some frantic enough to urge the execution of their desperate menaces, the greater number of the inhabitants, and among them those most considerable for wealth and influence, preferred the chance of Ferdinand's clemency to certain, irretrievable ruin.

For the last time, therefore, the deputies issued from the gates of the city, charged with an epistle to the sovereigns from their unfortunate countrymen, in which, after depre-

cating their anger, and lamenting their own blind obstinacy, they reminded their highnesses of the liberal terms which their ancestors had granted to Cordova, Antequera, and other cities, after a defence as pertinacious as their own. They expatiated on the fame which the sovereigns had established by the generous policy of their past conquests, and, appealing to their magnanimity, concluded with submitting themselves, their families, and their fortunes to their disposal. Twenty of the principal citizens were then delivered up as hostages for the peaceable demeanour of the city until its occupation by the Spaniards. "Thus," says the Curate of Los Palacios, "did the Almighty harden the hearts of these heathen, like to those of the Egyptians, in order that they might receive the full wages of the manifold oppressions which they had wrought on his people, from the days of King Roderic to the present time!"<sup>25</sup>

On the appointed day, the commander of Leon rode through the gates of Malaga, at the head of his well-appointed chivalry, and took possession of the *alcazaba*, or lower citadel. The troops were then posted at their respective stations along the fortifications, and the banners of Christian Spain triumphantly unfurled from the towers of the city, where the crescent had been displayed for an uninterrupted period of nearly eight centuries.

The first act was to purify the town from the numerous dead bodies, and other offensive matter, which had accumulated during this long siege, and lay festering in the streets, poisoning the atmosphere. The principal mosque was next consecrated with due solemnity to the service of

<sup>25</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 93.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 296.—The Arabic historians state that Malaga was betrayed by Ali Dordux, who admitted the Spaniards into the castle while the citizens were debating on Ferdinand's terms. (See Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 39.) The letter  
VOL. I.

of the inhabitants, quoted at length by Pulgar, would seem to be a refutation of this. And yet there are good grounds for suspecting false play on the part of the ambassador Dordux, since the Castilian writers admit that he was exempted, with forty of his friends, from the doom of slavery and forfeiture of property passed upon his fellow-citizens.

**Santa Maria de la Encarnacion.** Crosses and bells, the symbols of Christian worship, were distributed in profusion among the sacred edifices; where, says the Catholic chronicler last quoted, "the celestial music of their chimes, sounding at every hour of the day and night, caused perpetual torment to the ears of the infidel."<sup>26</sup>

On the eighteenth day of August, being somewhat more than three months from the date of opening trenches, Ferdinand and Isabella made their entrance into the conquered city, attended by the court, the clergy, and the whole of their military array. The procession moved in solemn state up the principal streets, now deserted and hushed in ominous silence, to the new cathedral of St. Mary, where mass was performed; and, as the glorious anthem of the *Te Deum* rose for the first time within its ancient walls, the sovereigns, together with the whole army, prostrated themselves in grateful adoration of the Lord of hosts, who had thus reinstated them in the domains of their ancestors.

The most affecting incident was afforded by the multitude of Christian captives who were rescued from the Moorish dungeons. They were brought before the sovereigns, with their limbs heavily manacled, their beards descending to their waists, and their sallow visages emaciated by captivity and famine. Every eye was suffused with tears at the spectacle. Many recognized their ancient friends, of whose fate they had long been ignorant. Some had lingered in captivity ten or fifteen years; and among them were several belonging to the best families in Spain. On entering the presence, they would have testified their gratitude by throwing themselves at the feet of the sovereigns; but the latter, raising them up and mingling their tears with those of the liberated captives, caused their

<sup>26</sup> Bernaldez, *Reynos Católicos*, MS., cap. 85.—The reader may remember Don Quixote's rebuke of Master Peter, the unlucky puppet-

man, for violating historical accuracy by introducing bells into his Moorish pantomime. Part. 2, cap. 26.

fetters to be removed, and, after administering to their necessities, dismissed them with liberal presents.<sup>27</sup>

The fortress of Gebalfaro surrendered on the day after the occupation of Malaga by the Spaniards. The gallant Zegri chieftain, Hamet Zeli, was loaded with chains; and, being asked why he had persisted so obstinately in his *rebellion*, boldly answered, "Because I was commissioned to defend the place to the last extremity; and, if I had been properly supported, I would have died sooner than surrender now!"

The doom of the vanquished was now to be pronounced. On entering the city, orders had been issued to the Spanish soldiery, prohibiting them under the severest penalties from molesting either the persons or property of the inhabitants. These latter were directed to remain in their respective mansions with a guard set over them, while the cravings of appetite were supplied by a liberal distribution of food. At length, the whole population of the city, comprehending every age and sex, was commanded to repair to the great court-yard of the *alcazaba*, which was overlooked on all sides by lofty ramparts garrisoned by the Spanish soldiery. To this place, the scene of many a Moorish triumph, where the spoil of the border foray had been often displayed, and which might still be emblazoned with the trophy of many a Christian banner, the people of Malaga now directed their steps. As the multitude swarmed through the streets, filled with boding apprehensions of their fate, they wrung their hands, and, raising their eyes to heaven, uttered the most piteous lamentations. "Oh Malaga," they cried, "renowned and beautiful city, how are thy sons about to forsake thee! Could not thy soil, on which they first drew breath, be suffered to cover them in death? Where is now the strength of thy towers,

<sup>27</sup> Carbajal, whose meagre annals have scarcely any merit beyond that of a mere chronological table, postpones the surrender till Sep-

tember. *Anales, año 1487.*—Marmol, *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 14.

where the beauty of thy edifices? The strength of thy walls, alas, could not avail thy children, for they had sorely displeased their Creator. What shall become of thy old men and thy matrons, or of thy young maidens delicately nurtured within thy halls, when they shall feel the iron yoke of bondage? Can thy barbarous conquerors without remorse thus tear asunder the dearest ties of life?" Such are the melancholy strains in which the Castilian chronicler has given utterance to the sorrows of the captive city.<sup>28</sup>

The dreadful doom of slavery was denounced on the assembled multitude. One-third was to be transported into Africa in exchange for an equal number of Christian captives detained there; and all who had relatives or friends in this predicament were required to furnish a specification of them. Another third was appropriated to reimburse the state for the expenses of the war. The remainder were to be distributed as presents at home and abroad. Thus, one hundred of the flower of the African warriors were sent to the pope, who incorporated them into his guard, and converted them all in the course of the year, says the Curate of Los Palacios, into very good Christians. Fifty of the most beautiful Moorish girls were presented by Isabella to the queen of Naples, thirty to the queen of Portugal, others to the ladies of her court; and the residue of both sexes were apportioned among the nobles, cavaliers, and inferior members of the army, according to their respective rank and services.<sup>29</sup>

As it was apprehended that the Malagans, rendered desperate by the prospect of a hopeless, interminable

<sup>28</sup> Bleda, Corónica, lib. 5, cap. 15.—As a counterpart to the above scene, twelve Christian renegades, found in the city, were transfixed with canes, *acanavereados*, a barbarous punishment derived from the Moors, which was inflicted by horsemen at full gallop, who discharged pointed reeds at the criminal until he expired under repeated wounds. A number of relapsed

Jews were at the same time condemned to the flames. "These," says father Abarca, "were the *fêtes* and illuminations most grateful to the Catholic piety of our sovereigns." Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. rey 30, cap. 3.

<sup>29</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., ubi supra.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 62.



captivity, might destroy or secrete their jewels, plate, and other precious effects, in which this wealthy city abounded, rather than suffer them to fall into the hands of their enemies, Ferdinand devised a politic expedient for preventing it. He proclaimed that he would receive a certain sum, if paid within nine months, as the ransom of the whole population, and that their personal effects should be admitted in part payment. This sum averaged about thirty *doblas* a head, including in the estimate all those who might die before the determination of the period assigned. The ransom thus stipulated proved more than the unhappy people could raise, either by themselves, or agents employed to solicit contributions among their brethren of Granada and Africa; at the same time, it so far deluded their hopes that they gave in a full inventory of their effects to the treasury. By this shrewd device, Ferdinand obtained complete possession both of the persons and property of his victims.<sup>30</sup>

Malaga was computed to contain from eleven to fifteen thousand inhabitants, exclusive of several thousand foreign auxiliaries, within its gates at the time of surrender. One cannot, at this day, read the melancholy details of its story without feelings of horror and indignation. It is impossible to vindicate the dreadful sentence passed on this unfortunate people for a display of heroism which should have excited admiration in every generous bosom. It was obviously most repugnant to Isabella's natural disposition, and must be admitted to leave a stain on her memory which no colouring of history can conceal. It may find some palliation, however, in the bigotry of the age, the more excusable in a woman, whom education, general example, and natural distrust of herself, accustomed to

<sup>30</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 87.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 176. — Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 238. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 296. — Carbajal, *Anales*, MS.,

año 1487.—Not a word of comment escapes the Castilian historians on this merciless rigour of the conqueror towards the vanquished. It is evident that Ferdinand did no violence to the feelings of his orthodox subjects. *Tucendo clamant*.

rely, in matters of conscience, on the spiritual guides whose piety and professional learning seemed to qualify them for the trust. Even in this very transaction she fell far short of the suggestions of some of her counsellors, who urged her to put every inhabitant without exception to the sword; which, they affirmed, would be a just requital of their obstinate *rebellion*, and would prove a wholesome warning to others! We are not told who the advisers of this precious measure were; but the whole experience of this reign shows that we shall scarcely wrong the clergy much by imputing it to them. That their arguments could warp so enlightened a mind as that of Isabella from the natural principles of justice and humanity, furnishes a remarkable proof of the ascendancy which the priesthood usurped over the most gifted intellects, and of their gross abuse of it, before the Reformation, by breaking the seals set on the sacred volume, opened to mankind the uncorrupted channel of divine truth.<sup>21</sup>

The fate of Malaga may be said to have decided that of Granada. The latter was now shut out from the most

<sup>21</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 87.—Bleda, Corónica, lib. 5, cap. 15.—About four hundred and fifty Moorish Jews were ransomed by a wealthy Israelite of Castile for 27,000 doblas of gold; a proof that the Jewish stock was one which thrived amidst persecution. It is scarcely possible that the circumstantial Pulgar should have omitted to notice so important a fact as the scheme of the Moorish

ransom, had it occurred. It is still more improbable that the honest Curate of Los Palacios should have fabricated it. Any one who attempts to reconcile the discrepancies of even contemporary historians will have Lord Oxford's exclamation to his son Horace brought to his mind ten times a day: "Oh! read me not history, for that I know to be false."\*

---

\* [The exact terms of the offer made to the inhabitants of Malaga in the name of the Spanish sovereigns are to be found in a document bearing date Sept. 4, 1487, which is preserved in the Archives of Simancas and printed in the eighth volume of the Coleccion de Documentos inéditos para la Historia de España. The ransom for each person was fixed at thirty *doblas de oro* of a specified weight, or the equivalent in wines, jewels, or silks. To facilitate speedy payment, the people were to dispose of their effects at public auction. If the sum thus raised fell short of two-thirds of the whole amount required, the difference was to be made up within sixty days. The remaining third was to be paid in two instalments, in April and October, 1488, hostages in sufficient numbers being retained till the final payment.—ED.]

important ports along her coast; and she was environed on every point of her territory by her warlike foe, so that she could hardly hope more from subsequent efforts, however strenuous and united, than to postpone the inevitable hour of dissolution. The cruel treatment of Malaga was the prelude to the long series of persecutions which awaited the wretched Moslems in the land of their ancestors; in that land over which the "star of Islamism," to borrow their own metaphor, had shone in full brightness for nearly eight centuries, but where it was now fast descending amid clouds and tempests to the horizon.

The first care of the sovereigns was directed towards repeopling the depopulated city with their own subjects. Houses and lands were freely granted to such as would settle there. Numerous towns and villages with a wide circuit of territory were placed under its civil jurisdiction, and it was made the head of a diocese embracing most of the recent conquests in the south and west of Granada. These inducements, combined with the natural advantages of position and climate, soon caused the tide of Christian population to flow into the deserted city; but it was very long before it again reached the degree of commercial consequence to which it had been raised by the Moors.<sup>33</sup>

After these salutary arrangements, the Spanish sovereigns led back their victorious legions in triumph to Cordova; whence dispersing to their various homes, they prepared, by a winter's repose, for new campaigns and more brilliant conquests.

<sup>33</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap. 94.—In July, 1501, we find a royal ordinance authorizing an immunity from various taxes, and other important privileges, to Malaga and

its territory, for the further encouragement of population in the conquered city.—Col. de Céd., tom. vi. no. 321.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### WAR OF GRANADA.—CONQUEST OF BAZA.—SUBMISSION OF EL ZAGAL.

1487—1489.

The Sovereigns visit Aragon.—The King lays Siege to Baza.—Its great Strength.—Gardens cleared of their Timber.—The Queen raises the Spirits of her Troops.—Her patriotic Sacrifices.—Suspension of Arms.—Baza surrenders.—Treaty with El Zagal.—Difficulties of the Campaign.—Isabella's Popularity and Influence.

IN the autumn of 1487, Ferdinand and Isabella, accompanied by the younger branches of the royal family, visited Aragon, to obtain the recognition from the cortes of Prince John's succession, the boy being now in his tenth year, as well as to repress the disorder into which the country had fallen during the long absence of its sovereigns. To this end, the principal cities and communities of Aragon had recently adopted the institution of the *hermandad*, organized on similar principles to that of Castile. Ferdinand, on his arrival at Saragossa in the month of November, gave his royal sanction to the association, extending the term of its duration to five years; a measure extremely unpalatable to the great feudal nobility, whose power, or rather abuse of power, was considerably abridged by this popular military force.<sup>1</sup>

The sovereigns, after accomplishing the objects of their visit, and obtaining an appropriation from the cortes for the Moorish war, passed into Valencia, where measures of like efficiency were adopted for restoring the authority of the law, which was exposed to such perpetual lapses in

<sup>1</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 351, 352, 356.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. lib. 25, cap. 12.—

Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 3, cap. 95.

this turbulent age, even in the best constituted governments, as required for its protection the utmost vigilance on the part of those intrusted with the supreme executive power. From Valencia the court proceeded to Murcia, where Ferdinand, in the month of June, 1488, assumed the command of an army amounting to less than twenty thousand men, a small force compared with those usually levied on these occasions; it being thought advisable to suffer the nation to breathe a while, after the exhausting efforts in which it had been unintermittingly engaged for so many years.

Ferdinand, crossing the eastern borders of Granada, at no great distance from Vera, which speedily opened its gates, kept along the southern slant of the coast as far as Almeria; whence, after experiencing some rough treatment in a sortie of the garrison, he marched by a northerly circuit on Baza, for the purpose of reconnoitring its position, as his numbers were altogether inadequate to its siege. A division of the army under the marquis duke of Cadiz suffered itself to be drawn here into an ambuscade by the wily old monarch El Zagal, who lay in Baza with a strong force. After extricating his troops with some difficulty and loss from this perilous predicament, Ferdinand retreated on his own dominions by the way of Huescar, where he disbanded his army, and withdrew to offer up his devotions at the cross of Caravaca. The campaign, though signalized by no brilliant achievement, and indeed clouded with some slight reverses, secured the surrender of a considerable number of fortresses and towns of inferior note.<sup>2</sup>

The Moorish chief, El Zagal, elated by his recent success, made frequent forays into the Christian territories, sweeping off the flocks, herds, and growing crops of the husbandman; while the garrisons of Almeria and Salobrena, and

<sup>2</sup> Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. p. 76.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 98.—Zuñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 402.—Cardonne, *Hist. de*

*l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 298, 299.—Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1488.

the bold inhabitants of the valley of Purchena, poured a similar devastating warfare over the eastern borders of Granada into Murcia. To meet this pressure, the Spanish sovereigns reinforced the frontier with additional levies under Juan de Benavides and Garcilasso de la Vega; while Christian knights, whose prowess is attested in many a Moorish lay, flocked there from all quarters, as to the theatre of war.

During the following winter, of 1488, Ferdinand and Isabella occupied themselves with the interior government of Castile, and particularly the administration of justice. A commission was specially appointed to supervise the conduct of the corregidores and subordinate magistrates, "so that every one," says Pulgar, "was most careful to discharge his duty faithfully, in order to escape the penalty which was otherwise sure to overtake him."<sup>3</sup>

While at Valladolid, the sovereigns received an embassy from Maximilian, son of the emperor Frederick the Fourth\* of Germany, soliciting their co-operation in his designs against France for the restitution of his late wife's rightful inheritance, the duchy of Burgundy, and engaging in turn to support them in their claims on Roussillon and Cerdagne. The Spanish monarchs had long entertained

\* Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. pp. 239, 240.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 100, 101.—During the preceding year, while the court was at Murcia, we find one of the examples of prompt and severe exercise of justice which sometimes occur in this reign. One of the royal collectors having been resisted and personally maltreated by the alcayde of Salvatierra, a place belonging to the crown, and by the alcalde of a territorial court of the duke of Alva, the queen caused one of the royal judges privately to enter into the place and take cognizance of the

affair. The latter, after a brief investigation, commanded the alcayde to be hung up over his own fortress, and the alcalde to be delivered over to the court of chancery at Valladolid, who ordered his right hand to be amputated and banished him the realm. This summary justice was perhaps necessary in a community that might be said to be in transition from a state of barbarism to that of civilization, and had a salutary effect in proving to the people that no rank was elevated enough to raise the offender above the law. Pulgar, cap. 99.

\* [Styled usually Frederick the Third, the claims of "Frederick the Handsome," whether as rival or colleague of Louis of Bavaria, being properly disallowed by most historians.—ED.]

many causes of discontent with the French court, both with regard to the mortgaged territory of Roussillon and the kingdom of Navarre; and they watched with jealous eye the daily increasing authority of their formidable neighbour on their own frontier. They had been induced, in the preceding summer, to equip an armament at Biscay and Guipuscoa, to support the duke of Brittany in his wars with the French regent, the celebrated Anne de Beaujeu. This expedition, which proved disastrous, was followed by another in the spring of the succeeding year.<sup>4</sup> But, notwithstanding these occasional episodes to the great work in which they were engaged, they had little leisure for extended operations; and, although they entered into the proposed treaty of alliance with Maximilian, they do not seem to have contemplated any movement of importance before the termination of the Moorish war. The Flemish ambassadors, after being entertained for forty days in a style suited to impress them with high ideas of the magnificence of the Spanish court and of its friendly disposition towards their master, were dismissed with costly presents, and returned to their own country.<sup>5</sup>

These negotiations show the increasing intimacy growing up between the European states, who, as they settled their domestic feuds, had leisure to turn their eyes abroad and enter into the more extended field of international politics. The tenor of this treaty indicates also the direction which affairs were to take when the great powers should be brought into collision with each other on a common theatre of action.

<sup>4</sup> Ialigny, *Hist. de Charles VIII.*, pp. 92, 94.—Siamondi, *Hist. des Français*, tom. xv. p. 77.—Aleson, *Anales de Navarra*, tom. v. p. 61.—*Histoire du Royaume de Navarre*, pp. 578, 579.—Fulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 102.—In the first of these expeditions, more than a thousand Spaniards were slain or taken at the disastrous battle of St. Aubin, in 1488, being the same in

which Lord Rivers, the English noble who made such a gallant figure at the siege of Loja, lost his life. In the spring of 1489, the levies sent into France amounted to two thousand in number. These efforts abroad, simultaneous with the great operations of the Moorish war, show the resources as well as energy of the sovereigns.

<sup>5</sup> Fulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, ubi supra.

All thoughts were now concentrated on the prosecution of the war with Granada, which it was determined should be conducted on a more enlarged scale than it had yet been; notwithstanding the fearful pest which had desolated the country during the past year, and the extreme scarcity of grain, owing to the inundations caused by excessive rains in the fruitful provinces of the south. The great object proposed in this campaign was the reduction of Baza, the capital of that division of the empire which belonged to El Zagal. Besides this important city, that monarch's dominions embraced the wealthy seaport of Almeria, Guadix, and numerous other towns and villages of less consequence, together with the mountain region of the Alpujarras, rich in mineral wealth; whose inhabitants, famous for the perfection to which they had carried the silk-manufacture, were equally known for their enterprise and courage in war: so that El Zagal's division comprehended the most potent and opulent portion of the empire.<sup>6</sup>

In the spring of 1489, the Castilian court passed to Jaen, at which place the queen was to establish her residence, as presenting the most favourable point of communication with the invading army. Ferdinand advanced as far as Sotogordo, where, on the 27th of May, he put himself at the head of a numerous force, amounting to about fifteen thousand horse and eighty thousand foot, including persons of every description; among whom was gathered, as usual, that chivalrous array of nobility and knight-hood which, with stately and well-appointed retinues, was accustomed to follow the royal standard in these crusades.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 91.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 354.—Bleda, *Corónica*, fol. 607.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 307.—Such was the scarcity of grain that the prices in 1489, quoted by Bernaldez, are double those of the preceding year.—Both Abarca and Zurita mention the report that four-fifths of the whole

population were swept away by the pestilence of 1488. Zurita finds more difficulty in swallowing this monstrous statement than father Abarca, whose appetite for the marvellous appears to have been fully equal to that of most of his calling in Spain.

<sup>7</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 2, epist. 70.—Fulgar, *Reyes Cató-*



The first point against which operations were directed was the strong post of Cuxar, two leagues only from Baza, which surrendered after a brief but desperate resistance. The occupation of this place, and some adjacent fortresses, left the approaches open to El Zagal's capital. As the Spanish army toiled up the heights of the mountain barrier which towers above Baza on the west, their advance was menaced by clouds of Moorish light troops, who poured down a tempest of musket-balls and arrows on their heads. These, however, were quickly dispersed by the advancing vanguard; and the Spaniards, as they gained the summits of the hills, beheld the lordly city of Baza, reposing in the shadows of the bold sierra that stretches towards the coast, and lying in the bosom of a fruitful valley extending eight leagues in length and three in breadth. Through this valley flowed the waters of the Guadalentin and the Guadalquiron, whose streams were conducted by a thousand

licos, cap. 104. — It may not be amiss to specify the names of the most distinguished cavaliers who usually attended the king in these Moorish wars; the heroic ancestors of many a noble house still extant in Spain:

Alonso de Cardenas, master of Saint Jago.

Juan de Zuñiga, master of Alcantara.

Juan Garcia de Padilla, master of Calatrava.

Rodrigo Ponce de Leon, marquis duke of Cadiz.

Enrique de Guzman, duke of Medina Sidonia.

Pedro Manrique, duke of Najera.

Juan Pacheco, duke of Escalona, marquis of Villena.

Juan Pimentel, count of Benavente.

Fadrique de Toledo, son of the duke of Alva.

Diego Fernandez de Cordova, count of Cabra.

Gomez Alvarez de Figueroa, count of Fera.

Alvaro Tellez Giron, count of Ureña.

Juan de Silva, count of Cifuentes.  
Fadrique Enriquez, adelantado of Andalusia.

Alonso Fernandez de Cordova, lord of Aguilar.

Gonsalvo de Cordova, brother of the last, known afterwards as the Great Captain.

Luis Porto-Carrero, lord of Palma.

Gutierre de Cardenas, first commander of Leon.

Pedro Fernandez de Velasco, count of Haro, constable of Castile.

Beltran de la Cueva, duke of Albuquerque.

Diego Fernandez de Cordova, alcayde of the royal pages, afterwards marquis of Comaras.

Alvaro de Zuñiga, duke of Bejar.

Infigo Lopez de Mendoza, count of Tendilla, afterwards marquis of Mondejar.

Luis de Cerda, duke of Medina Celi.

Infigo Lopez de Mendoza, marquis of Santillana, second duke of Infantado.

Garcilasso de la Vega, lord of Batras.

canals over the surface of the vega. In the midst of the plain, adjoining the suburbs, might be descried the orchard or garden, as it was termed, of Baza, a league in length, covered with a thick growth of wood, and with numerous villas and pleasure-houses of the wealthy citizens, now converted into garrisoned fortresses. The suburbs were encompassed by a low mud wall; but the fortifications of the city were of uncommon strength. The place, in addition to ten thousand troops of its own, was garrisoned by an equal number from Almeria; picked men, under the command of the Moorish prince Cidi Yahye, a relative of El Zagal, who lay at this time in Guadix, prepared to cover his own dominions against any hostile movement of his rival in Granada. These veterans were commissioned to defend the place to the last extremity; and, as due time had been given for preparation, the town was victualled with fifteen months' provisions, and even the crops growing in the vega had been garnered before their prime, to save them from the hands of the enemy.<sup>8</sup>

The first operation, after the Christian army had encamped before the walls of Baza, was to get possession of the garden, without which it would be impossible to enforce a thorough blockade, since its labyrinth of avenues afforded the inhabitants abundant facilities of communication with the surrounding country. The assault was intrusted to the grand master of St. James, supported by the principal cavaliers, and the king in person. Their reception by the enemy was such as gave them a foretaste of the perils and desperate daring they were to encounter in the present siege. The broken surface of the ground, traversed by intricate passes and thickly studded with trees and edifices, was peculiarly favourable to the desultory and illusory tactics of the Moors. The Spanish cavalry was brought at once to a stand; the ground proving impracticable for it,

<sup>8</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. fol. 360. — Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 241. — Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 2, epist.

70. — Estrada, *Poblacion de España*, tom. ii. fol. 239. — Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 16.

it was dismounted, and led to the charge by its officers on foot. The men, however, were soon scattered far asunder from their banners and their leaders. Ferdinand, who from a central position endeavoured to overlook the field, with the design of supporting the attack on the points most requiring it, soon lost sight of his columns amid the precipitous ravines and the dense masses of foliage which everywhere intercepted the view. The combat was carried on, hand to hand, in the utmost confusion. Still the Spaniards pressed forward, and, after a desperate struggle for twelve hours, in which many of the bravest on both sides fell, and the Moslem chief, Reduan Zafarga, had four horses successively killed under him, the enemy were beaten back behind the intrenchments that covered the suburbs, and the Spaniards, hastily constructing a defence of palisades, pitched their tents on the field of battle.<sup>9</sup>

The following morning Ferdinand had the mortification to observe that the ground was too much broken, and obstructed with wood, to afford a suitable place for a general encampment. To evacuate his position, however, in the face of the enemy, was a delicate manœuvre, and must necessarily expose him to severe loss. This he obviated, in a great measure, by a fortunate stratagem. He commanded the tents nearest the town to be left standing, and thus succeeded in drawing off the greater part of his forces before the enemy was aware of his intention.

After regaining his former position, a council of war was summoned to deliberate on the course next to be pursued. The chiefs were filled with despondency, as they revolved the difficulties of their situation. They almost despaired of enforcing the blockade of a place whose peculiar situation gave it such advantages. Even could this be effected, the camp would be exposed, they argued, to the

<sup>9</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 106, 107.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 40.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 71.—Pulgar relates these particulars with a perspicuity very different

from his entangled narrative of some of the preceding operations in this war. Both he and Martyr were present during the whole siege of Baza.

assaults of a desperate garrison on the one hand, and of the populous city of Guadix, hardly twenty miles distant, on the other ; while the good faith of Granada could scarcely be expected to outlive a single reverse of fortune ; so that, instead of besieging, they might be more properly regarded as themselves besieged. In addition to these evils, the winter frequently set in with much rigour in this quarter ; and the torrents, descending from the mountains, and mingling with the waters of the valley, might overwhelm the camp with an inundation, which, if it did not sweep it away at once, would expose it to the perils of famine by cutting off all external communication. Under these gloomy impressions, many of the council urged Ferdinand to break up his position at once, and postpone all operations on Baza until the reduction of the surrounding country should make it comparatively easy. Even the marquis of Cadiz gave in to this opinion ; and Gutierre de Cardenas, commander of Leon, a cavalier deservedly high in the confidence of the king, was almost the only person of consideration decidedly opposed to it. In this perplexity, Ferdinand, as usual in similar exigencies, resolved to take counsel of the queen.<sup>10</sup>

Isabella received her husband's despatches a few hours after they were written, by means of the regular line of posts maintained between the camp and her station at Jaen. She was filled with chagrin at their import, from

<sup>10</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 92.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 299, 300.—Bleda, *Corónica*, p. 611.—Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. p. 664.—Don Gutierre de Cardenas, who possessed so high a place in the confidence of the sovereigns, occupied a station in the queen's household, as we have seen, at the time of her marriage with Ferdinand. His discretion and general ability enabled him to retain the influence which he had early acquired, as is shown by a popular distich of that time:

“Cardenas, y el Cardenal, y Chacon,  
y Fray Mortero,  
Traen la Corte al retortero.”

Fray Mortero was Don Alonso de Burgos, bishop of Palencia, confessor of the sovereigns. Don Juan Chacon was the son of Gonsalvo, who had the care of Don Alfonso and the queen during her minority, when he was induced by the liberal largesses of John II. of Aragon to promote her marriage with his son Ferdinand. The elder Chacon was treated by the sovereigns with the greatest deference and respect, be-

which she plainly saw that all her mighty preparations were about to vanish into air. Without assuming the responsibility of deciding the proposed question, however, she besought her husband not to distrust the providence of God, which had conducted them through so many perils towards the consummation of their wishes. She reminded him that the Moorish fortunes were never at so low an ebb as at present, and that their own operations could probably never be resumed on such a formidable scale or under so favourable auspices as now, when their arms had not been stained with a single important reverse. She concluded with the assurance that, if his soldiers would be true to their duty, they might rely on her for the faithful discharge of hers in furnishing them with all the requisite supplies.

The exhilarating tone of this letter had an instantaneous effect, silencing the scruples of the most timid, and confirming the confidence of the others. The soldiers, in particular, who had received with dissatisfaction some intimation of what was passing in the council, welcomed it with generous enthusiasm; and every heart seemed now intent on furthering the wishes of their heroic queen by prosecuting the siege with the utmost vigour.

The army was accordingly distributed into two encampments; one under the marquis duke of Cadiz, supported by the artillery, the other under King Ferdinand, on the opposite side of the city. Between the two lay the garden or orchard before mentioned, extending a league in length; so that, in order to connect the works of the two camps, it became necessary to get possession of this contested ground, and to clear it of the heavy timber with which it was covered.

This laborious operation was intrusted to the commander of Leon, and the work was covered by a detachment of seven thousand troops, posted in such a manner as to check

ing usually called by them "father." After his death, they continued to manifest a similar regard towards Don Juan, his eldest son, and heir

of his ample honours and estates. Salazar de Mendoza, *Dignidades*, lib. 4, cap. 1.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 1, 2.

the sallies of the garrison. Notwithstanding four thousand *taladores*, or pioneers, were employed in the task, the forest was so dense, and the sorties from the city so annoying, that the work of devastation did not advance more than ten paces a day, and was not completed before the expiration of seven weeks. When the ancient groves, so long the ornament and protection of the city, were levelled to the ground, preparations were made for connecting the two camps by a deep trench, through which the mountain waters were made to flow; while the borders were fortified with palisades, constructed of the timber lately hewn, together with strong towers of mud or clay, arranged at regular intervals. In this manner the investment of the city was complete on the side of the vega.<sup>11</sup>

As means of communication still remained open, however, by the opposite sierra, defences of similar strength, consisting of two stone walls separated by a deep trench, were made to run along the rocky heights and ravines of the mountains until they touched the extremities of the fortifications on the plain; and thus Baza was encompassed by an unbroken line of circumvallation.

In the progress of the laborious work, which occupied ten thousand men, under the indefatigable commander of Leon, for the space of two months, it would have been easy for the people of Guadix, or of Granada, by co-operation with the sallies of the besieged, to place the Christian army in great peril. Some feeble demonstration of such a movement was made at Guadix, but it was easily disconcerted. Indeed, El Zagal was kept in check by the fear of leaving his own territory open to his rival should he march against the Christians. Abdallah, in the mean while, lay inactive in Granada, incurring the odium and contempt of his people, who stigmatized him as a Christian in heart, and a pensioner of the Spanish sovereigns. Their discontent gradually swelled into a rebellion, which was

<sup>11</sup> Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 304. — Pulgar, *Leyes Católicas*, cap. 109.

— Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 2, epist. 73. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 92.

suppressed by him with a severity that at length induced a sullen acquiescence in a rule which, however inglorious, was at least attended with temporary security.<sup>12</sup>

While the camp lay before Baza, a singular mission was received from the sultan of Egypt, who had been solicited by the Moors of Granada to interpose in their behalf with the Spanish sovereigns. Two Franciscan friars, members of a religious community in Palestine, were bearers of despatches, which, after remonstrating with the sovereigns on their persecution of the Moors, contrasted it with the protection uniformly extended by the sultan to the Christians in his dominions. The communication concluded with menacing a retaliation of similar severities on these latter, unless the sovereigns desisted from their hostilities against Granada.

From the camp, the two ambassadors proceeded to Jaen, where they were received by the queen with all the deference due to their holy profession, which seemed to derive additional sanctity from the spot in which it was exercised. The menacing import of the sultan's communication, however, had no power to shake the purposes of Ferdinand and Isabella, who made answer that they had uniformly observed the same policy in regard to their Mahometan as to their Christian subjects, but that they could no longer submit to see their ancient and rightful inheritance in the hands of strangers, and that, if these latter would consent to live under their rule as true and loyal subjects, they should experience the same paternal indulgence which had been shown to their brethren. With this answer the reverend emissaries returned to the Holy Land, accompanied by substantial marks of the royal favour, in a yearly pension of one thousand ducats, which the queen settled in perpetuity on their monastery, together with a richly-embroidered veil, the work of her own fair hands, to

<sup>12</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 40.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. lib. 26, cap. 12.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 111.

be suspended over the Holy Sepulchre. The sovereigns subsequently despatched the learned Peter Martyr as their envoy to the Moslem court, in order to explain their proceedings more at length, and avert any disastrous consequences from the Christian residents.<sup>13</sup>

In the mean while, the siege went forward with spirit; skirmishes and single rencontres taking place every day between the high-mettled cavaliers on both sides. These chivalrous combats, however, were discouraged by Ferdinand, who would have confined his operations to a strict blockade, and avoided the unnecessary effusion of blood; especially as the advantage was most commonly on the side of the enemy, from the peculiar adaptation of their tactics to this desultory warfare. Although some months had elapsed, the besieged rejected with scorn every summons to surrender; relying on their own resources, and still more on the tempestuous season of autumn, now fast advancing, which, if it did not break up the encampment at once, would at least, by demolishing the roads, cut off all external communication.

In order to guard against these impending evils, Ferdinand caused more than a thousand houses, or rather huts, to be erected, with walls of earth or clay, and roofs made of timber and tiles; while the common soldiers constructed cabins by means of palisades loosely thatched with the branches of trees. The whole work was accomplished in four days; and the inhabitants of Baza beheld with amazement a city of solid edifices, with all its streets and squares in regular order, springing as it were by magic out of the ground, which had before been covered with the light and airy pavilions of the camp. The new city was well supplied, owing to the providence of the queen, not merely with the necessaries but the luxuries of life. Traders flocked there as to a fair, from Aragon, Valencia, Catalonia, and even Sicily, freighted with costly merchandise, and with jewelry

<sup>13</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 112.—Ferrerias, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. p. 88.



and other articles of luxury; such as, in the indignant lament of an old chronicler, "too often corrupt the souls of the soldiery, and bring waste and dissipation into a camp."

That this was not the result, however, in the present instance, is attested by more than one historian. Among others, Peter Martyr, the Italian scholar before mentioned, who was present at this siege, dwells with astonishment on the severe decorum and military discipline which everywhere obtained among this motley congregation of soldiers. "Who would have believed," says he, "that the Galician, the fierce Asturian, and the rude inhabitant of the Pyrenees, men accustomed to deeds of atrocious violence, and to brawl and battle on the lightest occasions at home, should mingle amicably, not only with one another, but with the Toledans, the La-Manchans, and the wily and jealous Andalusians; all living together in harmonious subordination to authority, like members of one family, speaking one tongue, and nurtured under a common discipline; so that the camp seemed like a community modelled on the principle of Plato's republic!" In another part of this letter, which was addressed to a Milanese prelate, he panegyricizes the camp hospital of the queen, then a novelty in war; which, he says, "is so profusely supplied with medical attendance, apparatus, and whatever may contribute to the restoration or solace of the sick, that it is scarcely surpassed in these respects by the magnificent establishments of Milan."<sup>14</sup>

During the five months which the siege had now lasted, the weather had proved uncommonly propitious to the Spaniards, being for the most part of a bland and equal temperature, while the sultry heats of midsummer were

<sup>14</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS.—Peter Martyr, Opus Epist., lib. 2, epist. 73, 80.—Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap. 113, 114, 117.—Garibay, Compendio, tom. ii. p. 667.—Bleda, Corónica, p. 64.—The plague, which fell heavily this year on some parts of Andalusia, does not appear to have attacked the camp, which Bleda imputes to the

healing influence of the Spanish sovereigns, "whose good faith, religion, and virtue banished the contagion from their army, where it must otherwise have prevailed." Personal comforts and cleanliness of the soldiers, though not quite so miraculous a cause, may be considered perhaps full as efficacious.

mitigated by cool and moderate showers. As the autumnal season advanced, however, the clouds began to settle heavily around the mountains; and at length one of those storms predicted by the people of Baza burst forth with incredible fury, pouring a volume of waters down the rocky sides of the sierra, which, mingling with those of the vega, inundated the camp of the besiegers, and swept away most of the frail edifices constructed for the use of the common soldiery. A still greater calamity befell them in the dilapidation of the roads, which, broken up or worn into deep gullies by the force of the waters, were rendered perfectly impassable. All communication with Jaen was of course suspended, and a temporary interruption of the convoys filled the camp with consternation. This disaster, however, was speedily repaired by the queen, who, with an energy always equal to the occasion, caused six thousand pioneers to be at once employed in reconstructing the roads: the rivers were bridged over, causeways new laid, and two separate passes opened through the mountains, by which the convoys might visit the camp and return without interrupting each other. At the same time, the queen bought up immense quantities of grain in all parts of Andalusia, which she caused to be ground in her own mills; and when the roads, which extended more than seven leagues in length, were completed, fourteen thousand mules might be seen daily traversing the sierra, laden with supplies, which from that time forward were poured abundantly, and with the most perfect regularity, into the camp.<sup>18</sup>

Isabella's next care was to assemble new levies of troops, to relieve or reinforce those now in the camp; and the alacrity with which all orders of men from every quarter of the kingdom answered her summons is worthy of remark. But her chief solicitude was to devise expedients for meeting the enormous expenditures incurred by the protracted operations of the year. For this purpose, she had recourse

<sup>18</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 2, epist. 73.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 116.

to loans from individuals and religious corporations, which were obtained without much difficulty, from the general confidence in her good faith. As the sum thus raised, although exceedingly large for that period, proved inadequate to the expenses, further supplies were obtained from wealthy individuals, whose loans were secured by mortgage of the royal demesne; and, as a deficiency still remained in the treasury, the queen, as a last resource, pawned the crown jewels and her own personal ornaments to the merchants of Barcelona and Valencia, for such sums as they were willing to advance on them.<sup>16</sup> Such were the efforts made by this high-spirited woman for the furtherance of her patriotic enterprise. The extraordinary results which she was enabled to effect are to be ascribed less to the authority of her station than to that perfect confidence in her wisdom and virtue with which she had inspired the whole nation, and which secured their earnest co-operation in all her undertakings. The empire which she thus exercised, indeed, was far more extended than any station however exalted, or any authority however despotic, can confer; for it was over the hearts of her people.

Notwithstanding the vigour with which the siege was pressed, Baza made no demonstration of submission. The garrison was indeed greatly reduced in number; the ammunition was nearly expended; yet there still remained abundant supplies of provisions in the town, and no signs of despondency appeared among the people. Even the women of the place, with a spirit emulating that of the dames of ancient Carthage, freely gave up their jewels, bracelets, necklaces, and other personal ornaments, of

<sup>16</sup> Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap. 118. — Archivo de Simancas, in Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. p. 311.—The city of Valencia lent 35,000 florins on the crown and 20,000 on a collar of rubies. They were not wholly redeemed till 1495. Señor Clemencin has given a catalogue of the royal jewels (see Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilus-

tracion 6), which appear to have been extremely rich and numerous, for a period anterior to the discovery of those countries whose mines have since furnished Europe with its *bijouterie*. Isabella, however, set so little value on them that she divested herself of most of them in favour of her daughters.

which the Moorish ladies were exceedingly fond, in order to defray the charges of the mercenaries.

The camp of the besiegers, in the mean while, was also greatly wasted both by sickness and the sword. Many, desponding under perils and fatigues which seemed to have no end, would even at this late hour have abandoned the siege; and they earnestly solicited the queen's appearance in the camp, in the hope that she would herself countenance this measure on witnessing their sufferings. Others, and by far the larger part, anxiously desired the queen's visit as likely to quicken the operations of the siege and bring it to a favourable issue. There seemed to be a virtue in her presence, which, on some account or other, made it earnestly desired by all.

Isabella yielded to the general wish, and on the 7th of November arrived at the camp, attended by the infanta Isabella, the cardinal of Spain, her friend the marchioness of Moya, and other ladies of the royal household. The inhabitants of Baza, says Bernaldez, lined the battlements and housetops, to gaze at the glittering cavalcade as it emerged from the depths of the mountains, amidst flaunting banners and strains of martial music; while the Spanish cavaliers thronged forth in a body from the camp to receive their beloved mistress, and gave her the most animated welcome. "She came," says Martyr, "surrounded by a choir of nymphs, as if to celebrate the nuptials of her child; and her presence seemed at once to gladden and reanimate our spirits, drooping under long vigils, dangers, and fatigue." Another writer, also present, remarks that, from the moment of her appearance, a change seemed to come over the scene; no more of the cruel skirmishes which had before occurred every day; no report of artillery, or clashing of arms, or any of the rude sounds of war, was to be heard, but all seemed disposed to reconciliation and peace.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>17</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 92.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 120, 121.—Ferrerías, *Ilist.*

*d'Espagne*, tom. viii. p. 93.—*Peter Martyr*, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 3, epist. 80.

The Moors probably interpreted Isabella's visit into an assurance that the Christian army would never rise from before the place until its surrender. Whatever hopes they had once entertained of wearying out the besiegers were therefore now dispelled. Accordingly, a few days after the queen's arrival, we find them proposing a parley for arranging terms of capitulation.

On the third day after her arrival, Isabella reviewed her army, stretched out in order of battle along the slope of the western hills; after which she proceeded to reconnoitre the beleaguered city, accompanied by the king and the cardinal of Spain, together with a brilliant escort of the Spanish chivalry. On the same day, a conference was opened with the enemy through the *comendador* of Leon, and an armistice arranged, to continue until the old monarch, El Zagal, who then lay at Guadix, could be informed of the real condition of the besieged, and his instructions be received, determining the course to be adopted.

The alcaide of Baza represented to his master the low state to which the garrison was reduced by the loss of lives and the failure of ammunition. Still, he expressed such confidence in the spirit of his people that he undertook to make good his defence some time longer, provided any reasonable expectation of succour could be afforded; otherwise it would be a mere waste of life, and must deprive him of such vantage-ground as he now possessed for enforcing an honourable capitulation. The Moslem prince acquiesced in the reasonableness of these representations. He paid a just tribute to the loyalty of his brave kinsman Cidi Yahye, and the gallantry of his defence, but, confessing at the same time his own inability to relieve him, authorized him to negotiate the best terms of surrender which he could, for himself and garrison.<sup>18</sup>

A mutual desire of terminating the protracted hostilities infused a spirit of moderation into both parties, which

<sup>18</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 3, epist. 80. — Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. p. 242. — Car-

bajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1489. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 305.

greatly facilitated the adjustment of the articles. Ferdinand showed none of the arrogant bearing which marked his conduct towards the unfortunate people of Malaga, whether from a conviction of its impolicy, or, as is more probable, because the city of Baza was itself in a condition to assume a more imposing attitude. The principal stipulations of the treaty were, that the foreign mercenaries employed in the defence of the place should be allowed to march out with the honours of war; that the city should be delivered up to the Christians; but that the natives might have the choice of retiring with their personal effects where they listed, or of occupying the suburbs as subjects of the Castilian crown, liable only to the same tribute which they paid to their Moslem rulers, and secured in the enjoyment of their property, religion, laws, and usages.<sup>19</sup>

On the fourth day of December, 1489, Ferdinand and Isabella took possession of Baza, at the head of their legions, amid the ringing of bells, the peals of artillery, and all the other usual accompaniments of this triumphant ceremony; while the standard of the Cross, floating from the ancient battlements of the city, proclaimed the triumph of the Christian arms. The brave alcaide, Cidi Yahye, experienced a reception from the sovereigns very different from that of the bold defender of Malaga. He was loaded with civilities and presents; and these acts of courtesy so won upon his heart that he expressed a willingness to enter into their service. "Isabella's compliments," says the Arabian historian, dryly, "were repaid in more substantial coin." \*

\* Pulgar, Reyes Católicos, cap. Moriscos, lib. 1, cap. 16.  
124. — Marmol, Rebelion de los

---

\* [The character and proceedings of Yahye, or Yahia Alnayyar, are revealed in their true light by a document in the Archives of Simancas, bearing date Dec. 25, 1489, in which Ferdinand recites and confirms the promises contained in an agreement made in his name by Gutierre de Cardenas, with the Moorish traitor and renegade, previously to the surrender of Baza. In return for his alacrity in bringing about that event,—"por la prisa que á mi instancia é por me servir distes á la entrega della,"—and in view of other services rendered or to be rendered,—“como

Cidi Yahye was soon prevailed on to visit his royal kinsman El Zagal, at Guadix, for the purpose of urging his submission to the Christian sovereigns. In his interview with that prince, he represented the fruitlessness of any attempt to withstand the accumulated forces of the Spanish monarchies; that he would only see town after town pared away from his territory, until no ground was left for him to stand on and make terms with the victor. He reminded him that the baleful horoscope of Abdallah had predicted the downfall of Granada, and that experience had abundantly shown how vain it was to struggle against the tide of destiny. The unfortunate monarch listened, says the Arabian annalist, without so much as moving an eyelid, and after a long and deep meditation, replied, with the resignation characteristic of the Moslems, "What Allah wills, he brings to pass in his own way. Had he not decreed the fall of Granada, this good sword might have saved it; but his will be done!" It was then arranged that the principal cities of Almeria, Guadix, and their dependencies, constituting the domain of El Zagal, should be formally surrendered by that prince to Ferdinand and Isabella, who should instantly proceed at the head of their army to take possession of them.<sup>20</sup>

<sup>20</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Católicos*, MS., cap. 92.—Marmol, *Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 40.—Bleda, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, Corónica, p. 612.—Bernaldez, *Reyes*, cap. 16.

---

por lo mucho y bien que me habeis servido y espero que me serviréis."—Yahia, with his son and nephews, was to be received into Ferdinand's household, maintained and treated like "the great caballeros," and secured in the possession of his vineyards and castles, with immunity from taxes, and the right to visit any town with an armed escort of twenty men. His reward for obtaining the surrender of Guadix and bringing over his brother-in-law the king to the service of the Spanish sovereign was to be 10,000 reales. As he had professed his desire to become a Christian, he was to receive baptism in Ferdinand's chamber, in order that his conversion might not be known to his countrymen till after the surrender of Guadix, as secrecy on this point would enable him to render more effectual service during the remainder of the conquest, and would also prevent the desertion of his followers to swell the ranks of the enemy. "Lo habeis de tener en secreto por mas servir á Dios y á mí en lo restante de la conquista, en que desta manera sereis mas parte, é porque vuestra gente de guerra no os deje é se vaya con nuestros enemigos." Col. de Doc. inéd. para la Hist. de España, tom. viii.—Ed.]

On the seventh day of December, therefore, the Spanish sovereigns, without allowing themselves or their jaded troops any time for repose, marched out of the gates of Baza, King Ferdinand occupying the centre, and the queen the rear of the army. Their route lay across the most savage district of the long sierra which stretches towards Almeria, leading through many a narrow pass which a handful of resolute Moors, says an eye-witness, might have made good against the whole Christian army, over mountains whose peaks were lost in clouds, and valleys whose depths were never warmed by the sun. The winds were exceedingly bleak, and the weather inclement; so that men, as well as horses, exhausted by the fatigues of previous service, were benumbed by the intense cold, and many of them frozen to death. Many more, losing their way in the intricacies of the sierra, would have experienced the same miserable fate, had it not been for the marquis of Cadiz, whose tent was pitched on one of the loftiest hills, and who caused beacon-fires to be lighted around it, in order to guide the stragglers back to their quarters.

At no great distance from Almeria, Ferdinand was met, conformably to the previous arrangement, by El Zagal, escorted by a numerous body of Moslem cavaliers. Ferdinand commanded his nobles to ride forward and receive the Moorish prince. "His appearance," says Martyr, who was in the royal retinue, "touched my soul with compassion; for, although a lawless barbarian, he was a king, and had given signal proofs of heroism." El Zagal, without waiting to receive the courtesies of the Spanish nobles, threw himself from his horse, and advanced towards Ferdinand with the design of kissing his hand; but the latter, rebuking his followers for their "rusticity," in allowing such an act of humiliation in the unfortunate monarch, prevailed on him to remount, and then rode by his side towards Almeria.<sup>21</sup>

<sup>21</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 3, epist. 81. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii.

p. 340. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, loc. cit. — Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 40.



This city was one of the most precious jewels in the diadem of Granada. It had amassed great wealth by its extensive commerce with Syria, Egypt, and Africa; and its corsairs had for ages been the terror of the Catalan and Pisan marine. It might have stood a siege as long as that of Baza, but it was now surrendered without a blow, on conditions similar to those granted to the former city. After allowing some days for the refreshment of their wearied forces in this pleasant region, which, sheltered from the bleak winds of the north by the sierra they had lately traversed, and fanned by the gentle breezes of the Mediterranean, is compared by Martyr to the gardens of the Hesperides, the sovereigns established a strong garrison there, under the commander of Leon, and then, striking again into the recesses of the mountains, marched on Guadix, which, after some opposition on the part of the populace, threw open its gates to them. The surrender of these principal cities was followed by that of all the subordinate dependencies belonging to El Zagal's territory, comprehending a multitude of hamlets scattered along the green side of the mountain-chain that stretched from Granada to the coast. To all these places the same liberal terms, in regard to personal rights and property, were secured, as to Baza.\*

As an equivalent for these broad domains, the Moorish chief was placed in possession of the *taha*, or district, of Andaraz, the vale of Alhaurin, and half the salt-pits of Maleha, together with a considerable revenue in money. He was, moreover, to receive the title of King of Andaraz, and to render homage for his estates to the crown of Castile.

This shadow of royalty could not long amuse the mind of the unfortunate prince. He pined away amid the scenes of his ancient empire; and, after experiencing some insub-

\* [The terms were even *more* liberal than had been granted to Baza, since the inhabitants, Jews as well as Moors, were not only to retain their own religion and law, but to remain in possession of their homes, secure from plunder or molestation. See the *Capitulacion* (from the Archives of Simancas), dated Feb. 11, 1490, in the Col. de Doc. inéd. para la Hist. de España. tom. xi.—ED.]

ordination on the part of his new vassals, he determined to relinquish his petty principality and withdraw for ever from his native land. Having received a large sum of money as an indemnification for the entire cession of his territorial rights and possessions to the Castilian crown, he passed over to Africa, where, it is reported, he was plundered of his property by the barbarians, and condemned to starve out the remainder of his days in miserable indigence.<sup>22</sup>

The suspicious circumstances attending this prince's accession to the throne throw a dark cloud over his fame, which would otherwise seem, at least so far as his public life is concerned, to be unstained by any opprobrious act. He possessed such energy, talent, and military science as, had he been fortunate enough to unite the Moorish nation under him by an undisputed title, might have postponed the fall of Granada for many years. As it was, these very talents, by dividing the state in his favour, served only to precipitate its ruin.

The Spanish sovereigns, having accomplished the object of the campaign, after stationing part of their forces on such points as would secure the permanence of their conquests, returned with the remainder to Jaen, where they disbanded the army on the 4th of January, 1490. The losses sustained by the troops, during the whole period of their prolonged service, greatly exceeded those of any former year, amounting to no less than twenty thousand men, by far the larger portion of whom are said to have fallen victims to diseases incident to severe and long-continued hardships and exposure.<sup>23</sup>

Thus terminated the eighth year of the war of Granada; a year more glorious to the Christian arms, and more important in its results, than any of the preceding. During

<sup>22</sup> El Nubiense, Descripción de España, p. 160, nota.—Carbajal, Anales, MS., año 1488.—Cardonne, Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne, tom. iii. p. 304.—Peter Martyr, Opus Epist., lib. 3, epist. 81.—

Conde, Dominación de los Arabes, tom. iii. pp. 245, 246.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 93.

<sup>23</sup> Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. fol. 360.—Abarca, Reyes de Aragón, tom. ii. fol. 308.

this period, an army of eighty thousand men had kept the field, amid all the inclemencies of winter, for more than seven months; an effort scarcely paralleled in those times, when both the amount of levies and period of service were on the limited scale adapted to the exigencies of feudal warfare.<sup>24</sup> Supplies for this immense host, notwithstanding the severe famine of the preceding year, were punctually furnished, in spite of every embarrassment presented by the want of navigable rivers, and the interposition of a precipitous and pathless sierra.

The history of this campaign is, indeed, most honourable to the courage, constancy, and thorough discipline of the Spanish soldier, and to the patriotism and general resources of the nation; but most of all to Isabella. She it was who fortified the timid councils of the leaders, after the disasters of the garden, and encouraged them to persevere in the siege. She procured all the supplies, constructed the roads, took charge of the sick, and furnished, at no little personal sacrifice, the immense sums demanded for carrying on the war; and, when at last the hearts of the soldiers were fainting under long-protracted sufferings, she appeared among them, like some celestial visitant, to cheer their faltering spirits and inspire them with her own energy. The attachment to Isabella seemed to be a pervading principle, which animated the whole nation by one common impulse, impressing a unity of design on all its movements. This attachment was imputable to her sex as well as character. The sympathy and tender care with which she regarded her people naturally raised a reciprocal sentiment in their bosoms. But, when they beheld her directing their counsels, sharing their fatigues and dangers, and displaying all the comprehensive intellectual powers of the other sex, they looked up to her as to some superior being, with feelings far more exalted than those of mere loyalty.

<sup>24</sup> The city of Seville alone maintained 600 horse and 8000 foot, under the count of Cifuentes, for

the space of eight months during this siege. See Zúñiga, *Annales de Seville*, p. 404.

The chivalrous heart of the Spaniard did homage to her, as to his tutelar saint; and she held a control over her people such as no man could have acquired in any age,—and probably no woman, in an age and country less romantic.

---

Pietro Martire, or, as he is called in English, Peter Martyr, so often quoted in the present chapter, and who will constitute one of our best authorities during the remainder of the History, was a native of Arona (not of Anghiera, as commonly supposed), a place situated on the borders of Lago Maggiore in Italy. (*Mazzuchelli, Scrittori d'Italia* (Brescia, 1753—63), tom. ii., voce Anghiera.) He was of noble Milanese extraction. In 1477, at twenty-two years of age, he was sent to complete his education at Rome, where he continued ten years, and formed an intimacy with the most distinguished literary characters of that cultivated capital. In 1487, he was persuaded by the Castilian ambassador, the count of Tendilla, to accompany him to Spain, where he was received with marked distinction by the queen, who would have at once engaged him in the tuition of the young nobility of the court; but, Martyr having expressed a preference of a military life, she, with her usual delicacy, declined to press him on the point. He was present, as we have seen, at the siege of Baza, and continued with the army during the subsequent campaigns of the Moorish war. Many passages of his correspondence, at this period, show a whimsical mixture of self-complacency with a consciousness of the ludicrous figure which he made in "exchanging the Muses for Mars."

At the close of the war, he entered the ecclesiastical profession, for which he had been originally destined, and was persuaded to resume his literary vocation. He opened his school at Valladolid, Saragossa, Barcelona, Alcalá de Henares, and other places; and it was thronged with the principal young nobility from all parts of Spain, who, as he boasts in one of his letters, drew their literary nourishment from him: "*Suxerunt mea literalia ubera Castellæ principes fere omnes.*" His important services were fully estimated by the queen, and, after her death, by Ferdinand and Charles V., and he was recompensed with high ecclesiastical preferment as well as civil dignities. He died about the year 1525, at the age of seventy, and his remains were interred beneath a monument in the cathedral church of Granada, of which he was prior.

Among Martyr's principal works is a treatise "*De Legatione Babylonica*," being an account of a visit to the sultan of Egypt, in 1501, for the purpose of deprecating the retaliation with which he had menaced the Christian residents in Palestine for the injuries inflicted on the Spanish Moslems. Peter Martyr conducted his negotiation with such address that he not only appeased the sultan's resentment, but obtained several important immunities for his Christian subjects, in addition to those previously enjoyed by them.

He also wrote an account of the discoveries of the New World, entitled "*De Rebus Oceanicis et Novo Orbe*" (Colonizæ, 1574), a book largely consulted and commended by subsequent historians. But the work of principal value in our researches is his "*Opus Epistolarum*," being a collection of his multifarious correspondence with the most considerable persons of his time, whether in political or literary life. The letters are in Latin, and extend from the year 1488 to the time of his death. Although not conspicuous for elegance of diction, they are most valuable to the historian, from the fidelity and general accuracy of the details, as well as for the intelligent criticism in which they abound, for all which uncommon facilities were afforded by the writer's intimacy with the leading actors and the most recondite sources of information of the period.

This high character is fully authorized by the judgments of those best qualified to pronounce on their merits,—Martyr's own contemporaries. Among these, Dr. Galindez de Carbajal, a counsellor of King Ferdinand and constantly employed in the highest concerns of state, commends these epistles as "the work of a learned and upright man, well calculated to throw light on the transactions of the period." (*Anales*, MS., prólogo.) Alvaro Gomez, another contemporary who survived Martyr, in the *Life of Ximenes*, which he was selected to write by the University of Alcalá, declares that "Martyr's Letters abundantly compensate by their fidelity for the unpolished style in which they are written." (*De Rebus gestis*, fol. 6.) And John de Vergara, a name of the highest celebrity in the literary annals of the period, expresses himself in the following emphatic terms: "I know no record of the time more accurate and valuable. I myself have often witnessed the promptness with which he put down things the moment they occurred. I have sometimes seen him write one or two letters while they were setting the table; for, as he did not pay much attention to style and mere finish of expression, his composition required but little time, and experienced no interruption from his ordinary avocations." (See his letter to Florian de Ocampo, apud Quintanilla y Mendoza, *Archetipo de Virtudes, Espejo de Prelados, el Venerable Padre y Siervo de Dios, F. Francisco Ximenez de Cisneros* (Palermo, 1653), *Archivo*, p. 4.) This account of the precipitate manner in which the epistles were composed may help to explain the cause of the occasional inconsistencies and anachronisms that are to be found in them, and which their author, had he been more patient of the labour of revision, would doubtless have corrected. But he seems to have had little relish for this, even in his more elaborate works, composed with a view to publication. (See his own honest confessions in his book "*De Rebus Oceanicis*," dec. 8, cap. 8, 9.) After all, the errors, such as they are, in his Epistles, may probably be chiefly charged on the publisher. The first edition appeared at Alcalá de Henares, in 1530, about four years after the author's death. It has now become exceedingly rare. The second and last, being the one used in the present History, came out in a more beautiful form from the Elzevir press, Amsterdam, in 1670, folio. Of this also but a small number of copies were struck off. The learned editor takes much credit to himself for having purified the work from many errors, which had flowed from the heedlessness of his predecessor. It will not be difficult to detect several yet remaining,—such, for example, as a memorable letter on the *lues venerea* (No. 68), obviously misplaced, even according to its own date; and that numbered 168, in which two letters are evidently blended into one. But it is unnecessary to multiply examples.—It is very desirable that an edition of this valuable correspondence should be published, under the care of some one qualified to illustrate it by his intimacy with the history of the period, as well as to correct the various inaccuracies which have crept into it, whether through the carelessness of the author or of his editors.

I have been led into this length of remark by some strictures which met my eye in the recent work of Mr. Hallam, who intimates his belief that the Epistles of Martyr, instead of being written at their respective dates, were produced by him at some later period (Introduction to the *Literature of Europe* (London, 1837), vol. i. pp. 439—441); a conclusion which I suspect this acute and candid critic would have been slow to adopt, had he perused the correspondence in connection with the history of the times, or weighed the unqualified testimony borne by contemporaries to its minute accuracy.

## CHAPTER XV.

### WAR OF GRANADA.—SIEGE AND SURRENDER OF THE CITY OF GRANADA.

1490—1492.

The Infanta Isabella affianced to the Prince of Portugal.—Isabella deposes Judges at Valladolid.—Encampment before Granada.—The Queen surveys the City.—Moslem and Christian Chivalry.—Conflagration of the Christian Camp.—Erection of Santa Fe.—Capitulation of Granada.—Results of the War.—Its moral Influence.—Its military Influence.—Fate of the Moors.—Death and Character of the Marquis of Cadiz.

In the spring of 1490, ambassadors arrived from Lisbon for the purpose of carrying into effect the treaty of marriage which had been arranged between Alonso, heir of the Portuguese monarchy, and Isabella, infanta of Castile. An alliance with this kingdom, which from its contiguity possessed such ready means of annoyance to Castile, and which had shown such willingness to employ them in enforcing the pretensions of Joanna Beltraneja, was an object of importance to Ferdinand and Isabella. No inferior consideration could have reconciled the queen to a separation from this beloved daughter, her eldest child, whose gentle and uncommonly amiable disposition seems to have endeared her beyond their other children to her parents.

The ceremony of the affiancing took place at Seville, in the month of April, Don Fernando de Silveira appearing as the representative of the prince of Portugal; and it was followed by a succession of splendid *fêtes* and tourneys. Lists were enclosed, at some distance from the city, on the shores of the Guadalquivir, and surrounded with galleries hung with silk and cloth of gold, and protected from the noontide heat by canopies or awnings, richly embroidered

with the armorial bearings of the ancient houses of Castile. The spectacle was graced by all the rank and beauty of the court, with the infanta Isabella in the midst, attended by seventy noble ladies, and a hundred pages of the royal household. The cavaliers of Spain, young and old, thronged to the tournament, as eager to win laurels on the mimic theatre of war, in the presence of so brilliant an assemblage, as they had shown themselves in the sterner contests with the Moors. King Ferdinand, who broke several lances on the occasion, was among the most distinguished of the combatants for personal dexterity and horsemanship. The martial exercises of the day were relieved by the more effeminate recreations of dancing and music in the evening; and every one seemed willing to welcome the season of hilarity, after the long-protracted fatigues of war.<sup>1</sup>

In the following autumn, the infanta was escorted into Portugal by the cardinal of Spain, the grand master of St. James, and a numerous and magnificent retinue. Her dowry exceeded that usually assigned to the infantas of Castile, by five hundred marks of gold and a thousand of silver; and her wardrobe was estimated at one hundred and twenty thousand gold florins. The contemporary chroniclers dwell with much complacency on these evidences of the stateliness and splendour of the Castilian court. Unfortunately, these fair auspices were destined to be clouded too soon by the death of the prince, her husband.<sup>2</sup>

No sooner had the campaign of the preceding year been brought to a close than Ferdinand and Isabella sent an embassy to the king of Granada, requiring a surrender of his capital, conformably to his stipulations at Loga, which guaranteed this on the capitulation of Baza, Almeria, and Guadix. That time had now arrived. King Abdallah,

<sup>1</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1490. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 95. — Zúñiga, *Annales de Seville*, pp. 404, 405. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, part. 3, cap. 127. — La Clède, *Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iv. p. 19. — Faria y Sousa, *Portuguesa*,

tom. ii. p. 452.

<sup>2</sup> Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 452—456. — Florez, *Reynas Cathólicas*, p. 845. — Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 129. — Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 2, dial. 3.

however, excused himself from obeying the summons of the Spanish sovereign, replying that he was no longer his own master, and that, although he had the strongest desire to keep his engagements, he was prevented by the inhabitants of the city, now swollen much beyond its natural population, who resolutely insisted on its defence.<sup>3</sup>

It is not probable that the Moorish king did any great violence to his feelings in this evasion of a promise extorted from him in captivity. At least it would seem so from the hostile movements which immediately succeeded. The people of Granada resumed all at once their ancient activity, foraying into the Christian territories, surprising Alhendin and some other places of less importance, and stirring up the spirit of revolt in Guadix and other conquered cities. Granada, which had slept through the heat of the struggle, seemed to revive at the very moment when exertion became hopeless.

Ferdinand was not slow in retaliating these acts of aggression. In the spring of 1490, he marched with a strong force into the cultivated plain of Granada, sweeping off, as usual, the crops and cattle, and rolling the tide of devastation up to the very walls of the city. In this campaign he conferred the honour of knighthood on his son, Prince John, then only twelve years of age, whom he had brought with him, after the ancient usage of the Castilian nobles, of training up their children from very tender years in the Moorish wars. The ceremony was performed on the banks of the grand canal, under the battlements almost of the beleaguered city. The dukes of Cadiz and Medina Sidonia were Prince John's sponsors; and, after the completion of the ceremony, the new knight conferred the

<sup>3</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 41.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 90.—Neither the Arabic nor Castilian authorities impeach the justice of the summons made by the Spanish sovereigns. I do not, however, find any other foundation for the obligation imputed to Abdallah in them

than that monarch's agreement during his captivity at Loja, in 1486, to surrender his capital in exchange for Guadix, provided the latter should be conquered within six months. Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, p. 275.—Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. iv. p. 418.



honours of chivalry in like manner on several of his young companions-in-arms.<sup>4</sup>

In the following autumn, Ferdinand repeated his ravages in the vega, and, at the same time appearing before the disaffected city of Guadix with a force large enough to awe it into submission, proposed an immediate investigation of the conspiracy. He promised to inflict summary justice on all who had been in any degree concerned in it; at the same time offering permission to the inhabitants, in the abundance of his clemency, to depart with all their personal effects wherever they would, provided they should prefer this to a judicial investigation of their conduct. This politic proffer had its effect. There were few, if any, of the citizens who had not been either directly concerned in the conspiracy or privy to it. With one accord, therefore, they preferred exile to trusting to the tender mercies of their judges. In this way, says the Curate of Los Palacios, by the mystery of our Lord, was the ancient city of Guadix brought again within the Christian fold: the mosques were converted into Christian temples, filled with the harmonies of Catholic worship, and the pleasant places, which for nearly eight centuries had been trampled under the foot of the infidel, once more restored to the followers of the Cross.

A similar policy produced similar results in the cities of Almeria and Baza, whose inhabitants, evacuating their ancient homes, transported themselves, with such personal effects as they could carry, to the city of Granada, or the coast of Africa. The space thus opened by the fugitive population was quickly filled by the rushing tide of Spaniards.<sup>5</sup>

It is impossible at this day to contemplate these events with the triumphant swell of exultation with which they

<sup>4</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 176.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 130.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. cap. 85.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. p. 309.

<sup>5</sup> Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 131, 132.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Cató-*

*licos*, MS., cap. 97.—Conde, *Domination de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 41.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 3, epist. 84.—Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. iv. p. 424.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 309, 310.

are recorded by contemporary chroniclers. That the Moors were guilty (though not so generally as pretended) of the alleged conspiracy, is not in itself improbable, and is corroborated indeed by the Arabic statements. But the punishment was altogether disproportionate to the offence. Justice might surely have been satisfied by a selection of the authors and principal agents of the meditated insurrection; for no overt act appears to have occurred. But avarice was too strong for justice; and this act, which is in perfect conformity to the policy systematically pursued by the Spanish crown for more than a century afterwards, may be considered as one of the first links in the long chain of persecution which terminated in the expulsion of the Moriscos.

During the following year, 1491, a circumstance occurred illustrative of the policy of the present government in reference to ecclesiastical matters. The chancery of Valladolid having appealed to the pope in a case coming within its own exclusive jurisdiction, the queen commanded Alonso de Valdivieso, bishop of Leon, the president of the court, together with all the auditors, to be removed from their respective offices, which she delivered to a new board, having the bishop of Oviedo at its head. This is one among many examples of the constancy with which Isabella, notwithstanding her reverence for religion and respect for its ministers, refused to compromise the national independence by recognizing in any degree the usurpations of Rome. From this dignified attitude, so often abandoned by her successors, she never swerved for a moment during the course of her long reign.<sup>6</sup>

The winter of 1490 was busily occupied with preparations for the closing campaign against Granada. Ferdinand took command of the army in the month of April, 1491, with the purpose of sitting down before the Moorish capital, not to rise until its final surrender. The troops, which mustered in the Val de Velillos, are computed by most historians at fifty thousand horse and foot, although

<sup>6</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1491.

Martyr, who served as a volunteer, swells the number to eighty thousand. They were drawn from the different cities, chiefly, as usual, from Andalusia, which had been stimulated to truly gigantic efforts throughout this protracted war,<sup>7</sup> and from the nobility of every quarter, many of whom, wearied out with the contest, contented themselves with sending their quotas, while many others, as the marquises of Cadiz and Villena, the counts of Tendilla, Cabra, and Ureña, and Alonso de Aguilar, appeared in person, eager, as they had borne the brunt of so many hard campaigns, to share in the closing scene of triumph.

On the 26th of the month, the army encamped near the fountain of Ojos de Huescar, in the vega, about two leagues distant from Granada. Ferdinand's first movement was to detach a considerable force, under the marquis of Villena, which he subsequently supported in person with the remainder of the army, for the purpose of scouring the fruitful regions of the Alpujarras, which served as the granary of the capital. This service was performed with such unsparing rigour that no less than twenty-four towns and hamlets in the mountains were ransacked and razed to the ground. After this, Ferdinand returned loaded with spoil to his former position on the banks of the Xenil, in full view of the Moorish metropolis, which seemed to stand alone, like some sturdy oak, the last of the forest, bidding defiance to the storm which had prostrated all its brethren.

Notwithstanding the failure of all external resources, Granada was still formidable from its local position and its defences. On the east it was fenced in by a wild mountain barrier, the *Sierra Nevada*, whose snow-clad summits diffused a grateful coolness over the city through the sultry heats of summer. The side towards the vega,

<sup>7</sup> According to Zufiga, the quota furnished by Seville this season amounted to 6000 foot and 500 horse, who were recruited by fresh reinforcements no less than five times during the campaign. *Anales de Sevilla*, p. 406.—The sup-

plies drawn from the northern provinces of Guipuscoa and Alava amounted to only 1000 foot, 450 crossbow-men, and 550 lancers, who were to keep the field for sixty days. —Col. de Cédulas, tom. iii. no. 43; tom. iv. no. 31.

facing the Christian encampment, was encircled by walls and towers of massive strength and solidity. The population, swelled to two hundred thousand by the immigration from the surrounding country, was likely, indeed, to be a burden in a protracted siege; but among them were twenty thousand, the flower of the Moslem chivalry, who had escaped the edge of the Christian sword. In front of the city, for an extent of nearly ten leagues, lay unrolled the magnificent vega,—

“Fresca y regalada vega,  
Dulce recreacion de damas  
Y de hombres gloria inmensa,”—

whose prolific beauties could scarcely be exaggerated in the most florid strains of the Arabian minstrel, and which still bloomed luxuriant, notwithstanding the repeated ravages of the preceding season.<sup>8</sup>

The inhabitants of Granada were filled with indignation at the sight of their enemy, thus encamped under the shadow, as it were, of their battlements. They sallied forth in small bodies, or singly, challenging the Spaniards to equal encounter. Numerous were the combats which took place between the high-mettled cavaliers on both sides, who met on the level arena, as on a tilting-ground, where they might display their prowess in the presence of the assembled beauty and chivalry of their respective nations; for the Spanish camp was graced, as usual, by the presence of queen Isabella and the infantas, with the courtly train of ladies who had accompanied their royal mistress from Alcalá la Real. The Spanish ballads glow

<sup>8</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 42.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 100.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 3, epist. 89.—Marmol, *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 18.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 177.—Martyr remarks that the Genoese merchants, “voyagers to every clime, declare this to be the largest fortified city in the world.” Casiri has collected a body of interesting particulars respecting the

wealth, population, and social habits of Granada, from various Arabic authorities. *Bibliotheca Escorialensis*, tom. ii. pp. 247—260.—The French work of Laborde, *Voyage pittoresque* (Paris, 1807), and the English one of Murphy, *Engravings of Arabian Antiquities of Spain* (London, 1816), do ample justice in their finished designs to the general topography and architectural magnificence of Granada.

with picturesque details of these knightly tourneys, forming the most attractive portion of this romantic minstrelsy which, celebrating the prowess of Moslem as well as Christian warriors, sheds a dying glory round the last hours of Granada.<sup>9</sup>

The festivity which reigned throughout the camp on the arrival of Isabella did not divert her attention from the stern business of war. She superintended the military preparations, and personally inspected every part of the encampment. She appeared on the field superbly mounted, and dressed in complete armour; and, as she visited the different quarters and reviewed her troops, she administered words of commendation or sympathy, suited to the condition of the soldier.<sup>10</sup>

On one occasion she expressed a desire to take a nearer survey of the city. For this purpose a house was selected, affording the best point of view, in the little village of Zubia, at no great distance from Granada. The king and queen stationed themselves before a window which commanded an unbroken prospect of the Alhambra and the most beautiful quarter of the town. In the mean while, a considerable force, under the marquis duke of Cadiz, had been ordered, for the protection of the royal persons, to take up a position between the village and the city of Granada, with strict injunctions on no account to engage the enemy, as Isabella was unwilling to stain the pleasures of the day with unnecessary effusion of blood.

The people of Granada, however, were too impatient

<sup>9</sup> On one occasion, a Christian knight having discomfited with a handful of men a much superior body of Moslem chivalry, King Abdallah testified his admiration of his prowess by sending him on the following day a magnificent present, together with his own sword superbly mounted. (*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. p. 178.) The Moorish ballad beginning

“Al Rey Chico de Granada”

describes the panic occasioned in the city by the Christian encampment on the Xenil:

“Por ese fresco Genil  
un campo viene marchando,  
todo de lucida gente,  
las armas van relumbrando.

“Las vanderas traen tendidas,  
y un estandarte dorado;  
el General de esta gente  
es el invicto Fernando.  
Y tambien viene la Reyna,  
Muger del Rey don Fernando,  
la qual tiene tanto esfuerso  
que anima a qualquier soldado.”

<sup>10</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap 101.

long to endure the presence and, as they deemed it, the bravado of their enemy. They burst forth from the gates of the capital, dragging along with them several pieces of ordnance, and commenced a brisk assault on the Spanish lines. The latter sustained the shock with firmness, till the marquis of Cadiz, seeing them thrown into some disorder, found it necessary to assume the offensive, and, mustering his followers around him, made one of those desperate charges which had so often broken the enemy. The Moorish cavalry faltered, but might have disputed the ground, had it not been for the infantry, which, composed of the rabble population of the city, was easily thrown into confusion, and hurried the horse along with it. The rout now became general. The Spanish cavaliers, whose blood was up, pursued to the very gates of Granada; "and not a lance," says Bernaldez, "that day, but was dyed in the blood of the infidel." Two thousand of the enemy were slain and taken in the engagement, which lasted only a short time; and the slaughter was stopped only by the escape of the fugitives within the walls of the city.<sup>11</sup>

About the middle of July, an accident occurred in the camp, which was like to have been attended with fatal consequences. The queen was lodged in a superb pavilion, belonging to the marquis of Cadiz, and always used by him in the Moorish war. By the carelessness of one of her attendants, a lamp was placed in such a situation that during the night, perhaps owing to a gust of wind, it set fire to the drapery or loose hangings of the pavilion, which was instantly in a blaze. The flame communicated with fearful rapidity to the neighbouring tents, made of light, combustible materials, and the camp was menaced with general conflagration. This occurred at the dead of night, when all but the sentinels were buried in sleep. The

<sup>11</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 101.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 42.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 4, epist. 90.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*, cap. 133.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. cap. 88.—Isabella afterwards caused

a Franciscan monastery to be built in commemoration of this event at Zubia, where, according to Mr. Irving, the house from which she witnessed the action is to be seen at the present day. See *Conquest of Granada*, chap. 90, note.

queen, and her children, whose apartments were near hers, were in great peril, and escaped with difficulty, though fortunately without injury. The alarm soon spread. The trumpets sounded to arms, for it was supposed to be some night attack of the enemy. Ferdinand, snatching up his arms hastily, put himself at the head of his troops, but, soon ascertaining the nature of the disaster, contented himself with posting the marquis of Cadiz, with a strong body of horse, over against the city, in order to repel any sally from that quarter. None, however, was attempted, and the fire was at length extinguished without personal injury, though not without loss of much valuable property, in jewels, plate, brocade, and other costly decorations of the tents of the nobility.<sup>13</sup>

In order to guard against a similar disaster, as well as to provide comfortable winter quarters for the army, should the siege be so long protracted as to require it, it was resolved to build a town of substantial edifices on the place of the present encampment. The plan was immediately put in execution. The work was distributed in due proportions among the troops of the several cities and of the great nobility; the soldier was on a sudden converted into an artisan, and, instead of war, the camp echoed with the sounds of peaceful labour.

In less than three months this stupendous task was accomplished. The spot so recently occupied by light, fluttering pavilions was thickly covered with solid structures of stone and mortar, comprehending, besides dwelling-houses, stables for a thousand horses. The town was thrown into a quadrangular form, traversed by two spacious avenues, intersecting each other at right angles in the centre, in the form of a cross, with stately portals at each of the four extremities. Inscriptions on blocks of marble, in the various quarters, recorded the respective shares of the several cities in the execution of the work. When it

<sup>13</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 4, epist. 91. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 101. — Garibay,

*Compendio*, tom. ii. p. 673. — Bleda, *Corónica*, p. 619. — Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 18.

was completed, the whole army was desirous that the new city should bear the name of their illustrious queen; but Isabella modestly declined this tribute, and bestowed on the place the title of *Santa Fe*, in token of the unshaken trust manifested by her people throughout this war in Divine Providence. With this name it still stands as it was erected in 1491, a monument of the constancy and enduring patience of the Spaniards, "the only city in Spain," in the words of a Castilian writer, "that has never been contaminated by the Moslem heresy."<sup>13</sup>

The erection of *Santa Fe* by the Spaniards struck a greater damp into the people of Granada than the most successful military achievement could have done. They beheld the enemy setting foot on their soil with a resolution never more to resign it. They already began to suffer from the rigorous blockade, which effectually excluded supplies from their own territories, while all communication with Africa was jealously intercepted. Symptoms of insubordination had begun to show themselves among the overgrown population of the city, as it felt more and more the pressure of famine. In this crisis, the unfortunate Abdallah and his principal counsellors became convinced that the place could not be maintained much longer; and at length, in the month of October, propositions were made, through the vizier Abul Cazim Abdelmalic, to open a negotiation for the surrender of the place. The affair was to be conducted with the utmost caution; since the people of Granada, notwithstanding their precarious condition and their disquietude, were buoyed up by indefinite expectations of relief from Africa or some other quarter.

The Spanish sovereigns intrusted the negotiation to

<sup>13</sup> Estrada, *Poblacion de España*, tom. ii. pp. 344, 348.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, lib. 4, epist. 91.—Marmol, *Rebellion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 18.—Hita, who embellishes his florid prose with occasional extracts from the beautiful ballad poetry of Spain, gives one commemorating the erection of

*Santa Fe* :

"Cercada esta Santa Fe  
con mucho lienzo encerado  
al rededor muchas tiendas  
de seda, oro, y brocado.

"Donde estan Duques, y Con-  
des,

Señores de gran estado," etc.

*Guerras de Granada*, p. 515.



their secretary, Fernando de Zafra, and to Gonsalvo de Cordova, the latter of whom was selected for this delicate business from his uncommon address and his familiarity with the Moorish habits and language. Thus the capitulation of Granada was referred to the man who acquired in her long wars the military science which enabled him, at a later period, to foil the most distinguished generals of Europe.

The conferences were conducted by night, with the utmost secrecy, sometimes within the walls of Granada, and at others in the little hamlet of Churriana, about a league distant from it. At length, after large discussion on both sides, the terms of capitulation were definitively settled, and ratified by the respective monarchs on the 25th of November, 1491.<sup>14</sup>

The conditions were of similar though somewhat more liberal import than those granted to Baza. The inhabitants of Granada were to retain possession of their mosques, with the free exercise of their religion, with all its peculiar rites and ceremonies; they were to be judged by their own laws, under their own cadis or magistrates, subject to the general control of the Castilian governor; they were to be unmolested in their ancient usages, manners, language, and dress; to be protected in the full enjoyment of their property, with the right of disposing of it on their own account, and of migrating when and where they would; and

<sup>14</sup> Pedraza, *Antigüedad de Granada*, fol. 74.—Giovio, *De Vitæ Gonsalvi*, apud Vitæ Illust. Virorum, pp. 211, 212.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, p. 236.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 316, 317.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 42.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 178. — Marmol,

however, assigns the date in the text to a separate capitulation respecting Abdallah, dating that made in behalf of the city three days later. (*Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 19.) This author has given the articles of the treaty with greater fulness and precision than any other Spanish historian.\*

\* [Both treaties—that for the surrender of the city and the private capitulation with the Moorish monarch—bore the same date, which, with the substance, is correctly given in the text. They have been published in full, from documents—but, apparently, not the original documents—at Simancas, in the 8th volume of the *Col. de Doc. inéd. para la Hist. de España*.—ED.]

to be furnished with vessels for the conveyance of such as chose within three years to pass into Africa. No heavier taxes were to be imposed than those customarily paid to their Arabic sovereigns, and none whatever before the expiration of three years. King Abdallah was to reign over a specified territory in the Alpujarras, for which he was to do homage to the Castilian crown. The artillery and the fortifications were to be delivered into the hands of the Christians, and the city was to be surrendered in sixty days from the date of the capitulation. Such were the principal terms of the surrender of Granada, as authenticated by the most accredited Castilian and Arabic authorities; which I have stated the more precisely, as affording the best data for estimating the extent of Spanish perfidy in later times.<sup>18</sup>

The conferences could not be conducted so secretly but that some report of them got air among the populace of the city, who now regarded Abdallah with an evil eye for his connection with the Christians. When the fact of the capitulation became known, the agitation speedily mounted into an open insurrection, which menaced the safety of the city, as well as of Abdallah's person. In this alarming state of things, it was thought best by that monarch's counsellors to anticipate the appointed day of surrender; and the 2nd of January, 1492, was accordingly fixed on for that purpose.

Every preparation was made by the Spaniards for performing this last act of the drama with suitable pomp and effect. The mourning which the court had put on for the

<sup>18</sup> Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 19.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 42.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. ii. cap. 90.—Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 317, 318.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 28.—Martyr adds that the principal Moorish nobility were to remove from the city. (*Opus Epist.*, lib. 4, epist. 92.) Pedraza, who has devoted a volume to the history of

Granada, does not seem to think the capitulations worth specifying. Most of the modern Castilians pass very lightly over them. They furnish too bitter a comment on the conduct of subsequent Spanish monarchs. Marmol and the judicious Zurita agree in every substantial particular with Conde, and this coincidence may be considered as establishing the actual terms of the treaty.

death of Prince Alonso of Portugal, occasioned by a fall from his horse a few months after his marriage with the infanta Isabella, was exchanged for gay and magnificent apparel. On the morning of the 2nd, the whole Christian camp exhibited a scene of the most animating bustle. The grand cardinal Mendoza was sent forward at the head of a large detachment, comprehending his household troops, and the veteran infantry grown gray in the Moorish wars, to occupy the Alhambra preparatory to the entrance of the sovereigns.<sup>16</sup> Ferdinand stationed himself at some distance in the rear, near an Arabian mosque, since consecrated as the hermitage of St. Sebastian. He was surrounded by his courtiers, with their stately retinues, glittering in gorgeous panoply, and proudly displaying the armorial bearings of their ancient houses. The queen halted still farther in the rear, at the village of Armilla.<sup>17</sup>

As the column under the grand cardinal advanced up the Hill of Martyrs, over which a road had been constructed for the passage of the artillery, he was met by the Moorish prince Abdallah, attended by fifty cavaliers, who, descending the hill, rode up to the position occupied by Ferdinand on the banks of the Xenil. As the Moor approached the Spanish king, he would have thrown himself from his horse and saluted his hand in token of homage; but Ferdinand hastily prevented him, embracing him with every mark of sympathy and regard. Abdallah then delivered up the keys of the Alhambra to his conqueror, saying, "They are thine, O king, since Allah so decrees it: use thy success with clemency and moderation." Ferdinand would have

<sup>16</sup> Oviedo, whose narrative exhibits many discrepancies with those of other contemporaries, assigns this part to the count of Tendilla, the first captain-general of Granada. (Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 28.) But as this writer, though an eye-witness, was but thirteen or fourteen years of age at the time of the capture, and wrote some sixty years later from his early recollections, his au-

thority cannot be considered of equal weight with that of persons who, like Martyr, described events as they were passing before them.

<sup>17</sup> Pedraza, Antigüedad de Granada, fol. 75.—Salazar de Mendoza, Crón. del Gran Cardenal, p. 238.—Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. cap. 90.—Peter Martyr, Opus Epist., lib. 4, epist. 92.—Abarca, Reyes de Aragón, tom. ii. fol. 309.—Marmol, Rebelion de los Moriscos, lib. 1, cap. 20.

uttered some words of consolation to the unfortunate prince, but he moved forward with a dejected air to the spot occupied by Isabella, and, after similar acts of obeisance, passed on to join his family, who had preceded him with his most valuable effects on the route to the Alpujarras.<sup>18</sup>

The sovereigns during this time awaited with impatience the signal of the occupation of the city by the cardinal's troops, which, winding slowly along the outer circuit of the walls, as previously arranged, in order to spare the feelings of the citizens as far as possible, entered by what is now called the gate of Los Molinos. In a short time, the large silver cross, borne by Ferdinand throughout the crusade, was seen sparkling in the sunbeams, while the standards of Castile and St. Jago waved triumphantly from the red towers of the Alhambra. At this glorious spectacle the choir of the royal chapel broke forth into the solemn anthem of the *Te Deum*, and the whole army, penetrated with deep emotion, prostrated themselves on their knees in adoration of the Lord of Hosts, who had at length granted the consummation of their wishes, in this last and glorious triumph of the Cross.<sup>19</sup> The grandees who surrounded Ferdinand then advanced towards the queen, and, kneeling down, saluted her hand in token of homage to her as sovereign of Granada. The procession took up its march towards the city, "the king and queen moving in the midst," says an historian, "emblazoned with royal magnificence; and, as they were in the prime of life, and had now achieved the

<sup>18</sup> Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, ubi supra.—Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 43.—Pedraza, *Antigüedad de Granada*, fol. 76.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 102.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. cap. 90.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 28.

<sup>19</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., ubi supra.—One is reminded of Tasso's description of the somewhat similar feelings exhibited by the crusaders on their entrance into Jerusalem:

"Ecco apparir Gerusalem si vede,  
Ecco additar Gerusalem si scorge;  
Ecco da mille voci unitamente  
Gerusalemme salutar si senta.

\* \* \* \* \*  
Al gran piacer che quella prima  
vista

Dolcemente spirò nell' altrui petto,

Alta contrizion successe, mista  
Di timoroso e riverente affetto.  
Osano appena d' innalzar la vista  
Ver la città."

Gerusalemme Liberata,  
Cant. iii. st. 3, 5.

completion of this glorious conquest, they seemed to represent even more than their wonted majesty. Equal with each other, they were raised far above the rest of the world. They appeared, indeed, more than mortal, and as if sent by Heaven for the salvation of Spain."<sup>20</sup>

In the mean while the Moorish king, traversing the route of the Alpujarras, reached a rocky eminence which commanded a last view of Granada. He checked his horse, and, as his eye for the last time wandered over the scenes of his departed greatness, his heart swelled, and he burst into tears. "You do well," said his more masculine mother, "to weep like a woman for what you could not defend like a man!" "Alas!" exclaimed the unhappy exile, "when were woes ever equal to mine!" The scene of this event is still pointed out to the traveller by the people of the district; and the rocky height from which the Moorish chief took his sad farewell of the princely abodes of his youth is commemorated by the poetical title of *El ultimo Sospiro del Moro*, "The Last Sigh of the Moor."

The sequel of Abdallah's history is soon told. Like his uncle, El Zagal, he pined away in his barren domain of the Alpujarras, under the shadow, as it were, of his ancient palaces. In the following year he passed over to Fez with

<sup>20</sup> Mariana, Hist. de España, tom. ii. p. 597. — Pedraza, Antigüedad de Granada, fol. 76. — Carbajal, Anales, MS., año 1492. — Conde, Dominación de los Arabes, tom. iii. cap. 43. — Bleda, Corónica, pp. 621, 622. — Zurita, Anales, tom. iv. cap. 90. — Marmol, Rebelion de los Moriscos, lib. 1, cap. 20. — L. Marineo, and indeed most of the Spanish authorities, represent the sovereigns as having postponed their entrance into the city until the 5th or 6th of January. A letter transcribed by Pedraza, addressed by the queen to the prior of Guadalupe, one of her council, dated from the city of Granada on the 2nd of January, 1492, shows the inaccuracy of this statement. See folio 76.

In Mr. Lockhart's picturesque version of the Moorish ballads the

reader may find an animated description of the triumphant entry of the Christian army into Granada:

"There was crying in Granada  
when the sun was going down,  
Some calling on the Trinity, some  
calling on Mahoun;  
Here passed away the Koran,  
there in the cross was borne,  
And here was heard the Christian  
bell, and there the Moorish  
horn:  
*Te Deum laudamus* was up the  
Alcala sung;  
Down from the Alhambra's min-  
arets were all the crescents  
flung;  
The arms thereon of Aragon and  
Castile they display;  
One king comes in in triumph,  
one weeping goes away."

his family, having commuted his petty sovereignty for a considerable sum of money paid him by Ferdinand and Isabella, and soon after fell in battle in the service of an African prince, his kinsman. "Wretched man," exclaims a caustic chronicler of his nation, "who could lose his life in another's cause, though he did not dare to die in his own! Such," continues the Arabian, with characteristic resignation, "was the immutable decree of destiny. Blessed be Allah, who exalteth and debaseth the kings of the earth, according to his divine will, in whose fulfilment consists that eternal justice which regulates all human affairs." The portal through which King Abdallah for the last time issued from his capital was at his request walled up, that none other might again pass through it. In this condition it remains to this day, a memorial of the sad destiny of the last of the kings of Granada.<sup>21</sup>

The fall of Granada excited a general sensation throughout Christendom, where it was received as counterbalancing, in a manner, the loss of Constantinople nearly half a century before. At Rome the event was commemorated by a solemn procession of the pope and cardinals to St. Peter's, where high mass was celebrated, and the public rejoicing continued for several days.<sup>22</sup> The intelligence was

<sup>21</sup> Conde, *Dominacion de los Arabes*, tom. iii. cap. 90. — Cardonne, *Hist. de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne*, tom. iii. pp. 319, 320. — Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. iv. lib. 40, cap. 42. — Marmol, *Rebelion de los Moriscos*, lib. 1, cap. 20. — Mr. Irving, in his beautiful *Spanish Sketch-book*, "The Alhambra," devotes a chapter to mementos of Boabdil, in which he traces minutely the route of the deposed monarch after quitting the gates of his capital. The same author, in the Appendix to his *Chronicle of Granada*, concludes a notice of Abdallah's fate with the following description of his person; "A portrait of Boabdil el Chico is to be seen in the picture-gallery of the Generalife. He is represented with a mild, handsome face, a fair complexion, and yellow hair. His dress

is of yellow brocade, relieved with black velvet; and he has a black velvet cap, surmounted with a crown. In the armoury of Madrid are two suits of armour said to have belonged to him, one of solid steel, with very little ornament; the morion closed. From the proportions of these suits of armour, he must have been of full stature and vigorous form." Note, p. 398.

<sup>22</sup> Senarega, *Commentarii de Rebus Genuensibus*, apud Muratori, *Berum Italicarum Scriptores* (Mediolani, 1723—51), tom. xxiv. p. 531. — It formed the subject of a theatrical representation before the court at Naples, in the same year. This drama, or *Farsa*, as it is called by its distinguished author, San-nazaro, is an allegorical medley, in which Faith, Joy, and the false

welcomed with no less satisfaction in England, where Henry the Seventh was seated on the throne. The circumstances attending it, as related by Lord Bacon, will not be devoid of interest for the reader.<sup>23</sup>

prophet Mahomet play the principal parts. The difficulty of a precise classification of this piece has given rise to warmer discussion among Italian critics than the subject may be thought to warrant. See Signorelli, *Vicende della Coltura nelle due Sicilie* (Napoli, 1810), tom. iii. pp. 543 et seq.

<sup>23</sup> "Somewhat about this time, came letters from Ferdinando and Isabella, king and queen of Spain, signifying the final conquest of Granada from the Moors; which action, in itself so worthy, King Ferdinando, whose manner was, never to lose any virtue for the showing, had expressed and displayed in his letters at large, with all the particularities and religious punctos and ceremonies that were observed in the reception of that city and kingdom; showing, amongst other things, that the king would not by any means in person enter the city until he had first aloof seen the Cross set up upon the greater tower of Granada, whereby it became Christian ground. That likewise, before he would enter, he did homage to God above, pronouncing by an herald from the height of that tower, that he did acknowledge to have recovered that kingdom by the help of God Almighty, and the glorious Virgin, and the virtuous apostle St. James, and the holy father Innocent VIII., together with the aids and services of his prelates, nobles, and commons. That yet he stirred not from his camp, till he had seen a little army of martyrs, to the number of seven hundred and more Christians, that had lived in bonds and servitude, as slaves to the Moors, pass before his eyes, singing a psalm for their redemption; and that he had given tribute unto God, by alms and relief extended to them all, for his admission into the city. These things were in the

letters, with many more ceremonies of a kind of holy ostentation.

"The king, ever willing to put himself into the consort or quire of all religious actions, and naturally affecting much the king of Spain, as far as one king can affect another, partly for his virtues, and partly for a counterpoise to France, upon the receipt of these letters, sent all his nobles and prelates that were about the court, together with the mayor and aldermen of London, in great solemnity to the church of Paul, there to hear a declaration from the lord chancellor, now cardinal. When they were assembled, the cardinal, standing upon the uppermost step, or halfpace, before the quire, and all the nobles, prelates, and governors of the city at the foot of the stairs, made a speech to them, letting them know that they were assembled in that consecrated place to sing unto God a new song. For that, said he, these many years the Christians have not gained new ground or territory upon the infidels, nor enlarged and set farther the bounds of the Christian world. But this is now done by the prowess and devotion of Ferdinando and Isabella, kings of Spain; who have, to their immortal honour, recovered the great and rich kingdom of Granada, and the populous and mighty city of the same name from the Moors, having been in possession thereof by the space of seven hundred years, and more; for which this assembly and all Christians are to render laud and thanks to God, and to celebrate this noble act of the king of Spain; who in this is not only victorious but apostolical, in the gaining of new provinces to the Christian faith. And the rather for that this victory and conquest is obtained without much effusion of blood. Whereby it is to be hoped that there shall be gained not only new territory, but infinite souls to

Thus ended the war of Granada, which is often compared by the Castilian chroniclers to that of Troy in its duration, and which certainly fully equalled the latter in variety of picturesque and romantic incidents, and in circumstances of poetical interest. With the surrender of its capital terminated the Arabian empire in the Peninsula, after an existence of seven hundred and forty-one years from the date of the original conquest. The consequences of this closing war were of the highest moment to Spain. The most obvious was the recovery of an extensive territory, hitherto held by a people whose difference of religion, language, and general habits made them not only incapable of assimilating with their Christian neighbours, but almost their natural enemies; while their local position was a matter of just concern, as interposed between the great divisions of the Spanish monarchy, and opening an obvious avenue to invasion from Africa. By the new conquest, moreover, the Spaniards gained a large extent of country, possessing the highest capacities for production, in its natural fruitfulness of soil, the temperature of climate, and the state of cultivation to which it had been brought by its ancient occupants; while its shores were lined with commodious havens, that afforded every facility for commerce. The scattered fragments of the ancient Visigothic empire were now again, with the exception of the little state of Navarre, combined into one great monarchy, as originally destined by nature; and Christian Spain gradually rose, by means of her new acquisitions, from a subordinate situation to the level of a first-rate European power.

The moral influence of the Moorish war, its influence on the Spanish character, was highly important. The inhabitants of the great divisions of the country, as in most countries during the feudal ages, had been brought too fre-

the Church of Christ, whom the Almighty, as it seems, would have live to be converted. Herewithal he did relate some of the most memorable particulars of the war and victory. And, after his speech ended, the whole assembly went

solemnly in procession, and *Te Deum* was sung." Lord Bacon, *History of the Reign of King Henry VII.*, in his Works (ed. London, 1819), vol. v. pp. 85, 86.—See also Hall, *Chronicle*, p. 463.



quently into collision with each other to allow the existence of a pervading national feeling. This was particularly the case in Spain, where independent states insensibly grew out of the detached fragments of territory recovered at different times from the Moorish monarchy. The war of Granada subjected all the various sections of the country to one common action, under the influence of common motives of the most exciting interest ; while it brought them in conflict with a race the extreme repugnance of whose institutions and character to their own served greatly to nourish the nationality of sentiment. In this way the spark of patriotism was kindled throughout the whole nation, and the most distant provinces of the Peninsula were knit together by a bond of union which has remained indissoluble.

The consequences of these wars in a military aspect are also worthy of notice. Up to this period, war had been carried on by irregular levies, extremely limited in numerical amount and in period of service, under little subordination, except to their own immediate chiefs, and wholly unprovided with the apparatus required for extended operations. The Spaniards were even lower than most of the European nations in military science, as is apparent from the infinite pains of Isabella to avail herself of all foreign resources for their improvement. In the war of Granada, masses of men were brought together far greater than had hitherto been known in modern warfare. They were kept in the field not only through long campaigns, but far into the winter ; a thing altogether unprecedented. They were made to act in concert, and the numerous petty chiefs brought into complete subjection to one common head, whose personal character enforced the authority of station. Lastly, they were supplied with all the requisite munitions, through the providence of Isabella, who introduced into the service the most skilful engineers from other countries, and kept in pay bodies of mercenaries,—as the Swiss, for example, reputed the best disciplined troops of that day. In this admirable school the Spanish soldier was gradually trained to patient endurance, fortitude, and thorough subordination ; and

those celebrated captains were formed, with that invincible infantry, which in the beginning of the sixteenth century spread the military fame of their country over all Christendom.

But, with all our sympathy for the conquerors, it is impossible without a deep feeling of regret to contemplate the decay and final extinction of a race who had made such high advances in civilization as the Spanish Arabs; to see them driven from the stately palaces reared by their own hands, wandering as exiles over the lands which still blossomed with the fruits of their industry, and wasting away under persecution, until their very name as a nation was blotted out from the map of history.<sup>24</sup> It must be admitted, however, that they had long since reached their utmost limit of advancement as a people. The light shed over their history shines from distant ages; for during the later period of their existence they appear to have reposed in a state of torpid, luxurious indulgence, which would seem to argue that, when causes of external excitement were withdrawn, the inherent vices of their social institutions had incapacitated them for the further production of excellence. In this impotent condition, it was wisely ordered that their territory should be occupied by a people whose religion and more liberal form of government, however frequently misunderstood or perverted, qualified them for advancing still higher the interests of humanity.

It will not be amiss to terminate the narrative of the war of Granada with some notice of the fate of Rodrigo Ponce de Leon, marquis duke of Cadiz; for he may be regarded in a peculiar manner as the hero of it, having struck the first stroke by the surprise of Alhama, and witnessed every campaign till the surrender of Granada. A circumstantial account of his last moments is afforded by the pen of his worthy countryman, the Andalusian Curate of Los Palacios. The gallant marquis survived the close

<sup>24</sup> The African descendants of the Spanish Moors, unable wholly to relinquish the hope of restoration to the delicious abodes of their ancestors, continued for many gener-

ations, and perhaps still continue, to put up a petition to that effect in their mosques every Friday. Pedraza, Antigüedad de Granada, fol. 7.

of the war only a short time, terminating his days at his mansion in Seville, on the 28th of August, 1492, by a disorder brought on by fatigue and incessant exposure. He had reached the forty-ninth year of his age, and, although twice married, left no legitimate issue. In his person he was of about the middle stature, of a compact, symmetrical frame, a fair complexion, with light hair inclining to red. He was an excellent horseman, and well skilled in most of the exercises of chivalry. He had the rare merit of combining sagacity with intrepidity in action. Though somewhat impatient, and slow to forgive, he was frank and generous, a warm friend, and a kind master to his vassals.<sup>25</sup>

He was strict in his observance of the Catholic worship, punctilious in keeping all the church festivals and in enforcing their observance throughout his domains; and in war he was a most devout champion of the Virgin. He was ambitious of acquisitions, but lavish in expenditure, especially in the embellishment and fortification of his towns and castles; spending on Alcalá de Guadaira, Xerez, and Alanis, the enormous sum of seventeen million maravedis. To the ladies he was courteous, as became a true knight. At his death, the king and queen with the whole court went into mourning; "for he was a much-loved cavalier," says the Curate, "and was esteemed, like the Cid, both by friend and foe; and no Moor durst abide in that quarter of the field where his banner was displayed."

His body, after lying in state for several days in his palace at Seville, with his trusty sword by his side, with which he had fought all his battles, was borne in solemn procession by night through the streets of the city, which was everywhere filled with the deepest lamentation, and was finally deposited in the great chapel of the Augustine church, in the tomb of his ancestors. Ten Moorish banners, which he had taken in battle with the infidel before the war of Granada, were borne along at his funeral, "and

<sup>25</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1492.—Don Henrique de Guzman, duke of Medina Sidonia, the ancient enemy, and, since the commence-

ment of the Moorish war, the firm friend, of the marquis of Cadiz, died the 28th of August, on the same day with the latter.

still wave over his sepulchre," says Bernaldez, "keeping alive the memory of his exploits, as undying as his soul." The banners have long since mouldered into dust; the very tomb which contained his ashes has been sacrilegiously demolished; but the fame of the hero will survive as long as anything like respect for valour, courtesy, unblemished honour, or any other attribute of chivalry, shall be found in Spain.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>26</sup> Zuñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 411.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 104. The marquis left three illegitimate daughters by a noble Spanish lady, who all formed high connections. He was succeeded in his titles and estates, by the permission of Ferdinand and Isabella, by Don Rodrigo Ponce de Leon, the son of his eldest daughter,

who had married with one of her kinsmen. Cadiz was subsequently annexed by the Spanish sovereigns to the crown, from which it had been detached in Henry IV.'s time, and considerable estates were given as an equivalent, together with the title of Duke of Arcos, to the family of Ponce de Leon.

One of the chief authorities on which the account of the Moorish war rests is Andres Bernaldez, Curate of Los Palacios. He was a native of Fuente in Leon, and appears to have received his early education under the care of his grandfather, a notary of that place, whose commendations of a juvenile essay in historical writing led him later in life, according to his own account, to record the events of his time in the extended and regular form of a chronicle. After admission to orders, he was made chaplain to Deza, archbishop of Seville, and curate of Los Palacios, an Andalusian town not far from Seville, where he discharged his ecclesiastical functions with credit from 1488 to 1513, at which time, as we find no later mention of him, he probably closed his life with his labours.

Bernaldez had ample opportunities for accurate information relative to the Moorish war, since he lived, as it were, in the theatre of action, and was personally intimate with the most considerable men of Andalusia, especially the marquis of Cadiz, whom he has made the Achilles of his epic, assigning him a much more important part in the principal transactions than is always warranted by other authorities. His chronicle is just such as might have been anticipated from a person of lively imagination, and competent scholarship for the time, deeply dyed with the bigotry and superstition of the Spanish clergy in that century. There is no great discrimination apparent in the work of the worthy curate, who dwells with goggle-eyed credulity on the most absurd marvels, and expends more pages on an empty court show than on the most important schemes of policy. But, if he is no philosopher, he has, perhaps for that very reason, succeeded in making us completely master of the popular feelings and prejudices of the time; while he gives a most vivid portraiture of the principal scenes and actors in this stirring war, with all their chivalrous exploit and rich theatrical accompaniment. His credulity and fanaticism, moreover, are well compensated by a simplicity and loyalty of purpose which secure much more credit to his narrative than attaches to those of more ambitious writers, whose judgment is perpetually swayed by personal or party interests. The chronicle descends as late as 1513, although, as might be expected from the author's character, it is entitled to much less confidence in the discussion of events which fell without the scope of

his personal observation. Notwithstanding its historical value is fully recognized by the Castilian critics, it has never been admitted to the press, but still remains ingulfed in the ocean of manuscripts with which the Spanish libraries are deluged.

It is remarkable that the war of Granada, which is so admirably suited in all its circumstances to poetical purposes, should not have been more frequently commemorated by the epic muse. The only successful attempt in this way with which I am acquainted is the "*Conquisto di Granata*," by the Florentine Girolamo Gratiani, Modena, 1650. The author has taken the license, independently of his machinery, of deviating very freely from the historic track; among other things, introducing Columbus and the Great Captain as principal actors in the drama, in which they played at most but a very subordinate part. The poem, which swells into twenty-six cantos, is in such repute with the Italian critics that Quadrio does not hesitate to rank it "among the best epical productions of the age." A translation of this work has recently appeared at Nuremberg, from the pen of C. M. Winterling, which is much commended by the German critics.

Mr. Irving's late publication, the "*Chronicle of the Conquest of Granada*," has superseded all further necessity for poetry, and, unfortunately for me, for history. He has fully availed himself of all the picturesque and animating movements of this romantic era; and the reader who will take the trouble to compare his *Chronicle* with the present more prosaic and literal narrative will see how little he has been seduced from historic accuracy by the poetical aspect of his subject. The fictitious and romantic dress of his work has enabled him to make it the medium for reflecting more vividly the floating opinions and chimerical fancies of the age, while he has illuminated the picture with the dramatic brilliancy of colouring denied to sober history.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### APPLICATION OF CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS AT THE SPANISH COURT.

1492.

**Early Discoveries of the Portuguese.—Of the Spaniards.—Columbus.—His Application at the Castilian Court.—Rejected.—Negotiations resumed.—Favourable Disposition of the Queen.—Arrangement with Columbus.—He sails on his first Voyage.—Indifference to the Enterprise.—Acknowledgments due to Isabella.**

WHILE Ferdinand and Isabella were at Santa Fe, the capitulation was signed that opened the way to an extent of empire compared with which their recent conquests, and indeed all their present dominions, were insignificant. The extraordinary intellectual activity of the Europeans in the fifteenth century, after the torpor of ages, carried them forward to high advancement in almost every department of science, but especially nautical, whose surprising results have acquired for the age the glory of being designated as peculiarly that of maritime discovery. This was eminently favoured by the political condition of modern Europe. Under the Roman empire, the traffic with the East naturally centred in Rome, the commercial capital of the West. After the dismemberment of the empire, it continued to be conducted principally through the channel of the Italian ports, whence it was diffused over the remoter regions of Christendom. But these countries, which had now risen from the rank of subordinate provinces to that of separate, independent states, viewed with jealousy this monopoly of the Italian cities, by means of which the latter were rapidly advancing beyond them in power and opulence. This was especially the case with Portugal and Castile,<sup>1</sup> which,

<sup>1</sup> Aragon, or rather Catalonia, with the Levant, and the remote regions of the East, during the

placed on the remote frontiers of the European continent, were far removed from the great routes of Asiatic intercourse; while this disadvantage was not compensated by such an extent of territory as secured consideration to some other of the European states, equally unfavourably situated for commercial purposes with themselves. Thus circumstanced, the two nations of Castile and Portugal were naturally led to turn their eyes on the great ocean which washed their western borders, and to seek in its hitherto unexplored recesses for new domains, and, if possible, strike out some undiscovered track towards the opulent regions of the East.

The spirit of maritime enterprise was fomented, and greatly facilitated in its operation, by the invention of the astrolabe, and the important discovery of the polarity of the magnet, whose first application to the purposes of navigation on an extended scale may be referred to the fifteenth century.<sup>3</sup> The Portuguese were the first to enter on the brilliant path of nautical discovery, which they pursued under the infant Don Henry with such activity that before the middle of the fifteenth century they had pene-

Middle Ages, through the flourishing port of Barcelona. See Capmany y Montpalau, *Memorias históricas sobre la Marina, Comercio y Artes de Barcelona* (Madrid, 1779—92), *passim*.

<sup>3</sup> A council of mathematicians in the court of John II. of Portugal first devised the application of the ancient astrolabe to navigation, thus affording to the mariner the essential advantages appertaining to the modern quadrant. The discovery of the polarity of the needle, which vulgar tradition, sanctioned without scruple by Robertson, assigned to the Amalfite Flavio Gioja, is clearly proved to have occurred more than a century earlier. Tiraboschi, who investigates the matter with his usual erudition, passing by the doubtful reference of Guiot de Provins, whose age and personal identity even are contested, traces the familiar use of the magnetic needle

as far back as the first half of the thirteenth century, by a pertinent passage from Cardinal Vitri, who died in 1244, and sustains this by several similar references to other authors of the same century. Capmany finds no notice of its use by the Castilian navigators earlier than 1403. It was not until considerably later in the fifteenth century that the Portuguese voyagers, trusting to its guidance, ventured to quit the Mediterranean and African coasts and extend their navigation to Madeira and the Azores. See Navarrete, *Coleccion de los Viajes y Descubrimientos que hicieron por Mar los Españoles* (Madrid, 1825—29), tom. i., introd., sec. 33.—Tiraboschi, *Letteratura Italiana*, tom. iv. pp. 173, 174.—Capmany, *Mem. de Barcelona*, tom. iii. part. 1, cap. 4.—Koch, *Tableau des Révolutions de l'Europe* (Paris, 1814), tom. i. pp. 358—360.

trated as far as Cape de Verd, doubling many a fearful headland which had shut in the timid navigator of former days; until at length, in 1486, they descried the lofty promontory which terminates Africa on the south, and which, hailed by King John the Second, under whom it was discovered, as the harbinger of the long-sought passage to the East, received the cheering appellation of the Cape of Good Hope.

The Spaniards, in the mean while, did not languish in the career of maritime enterprise. Certain adventurers from the northern provinces of Biscay and Guipuscoa, in 1393, had made themselves masters of one of the smallest of the group of islands supposed to be the Fortunate Isles of the ancients, since known as the Canaries. Other private adventurers from Seville extended their conquests over these islands in the beginning of the following century. These were completed in behalf of the crown under Ferdinand and Isabella, who equipped several fleets for their reduction, which at length terminated in 1495 with that of Teneriffe.<sup>3</sup> From the commencement of their reign, Ferdinand and Isabella had shown an earnest solicitude for the encouragement of commerce and nautical science, as is evinced by a variety of regulations, which, however imperfect from the misconception of the true principles of trade in that day, are sufficiently indicative of the dispositions of the government.<sup>4</sup> Under them, and indeed under

<sup>3</sup> Four of the islands were conquered on behalf of private adventurers chiefly from Andalusia, before the accession of Ferdinand and Isabella, and under their reign were held as the property of a noble Castilian family, named Peraza. The sovereigns sent a considerable armament from Seville in 1480, which subdued the great island of Canary on behalf of the crown, and another in 1493, which effected the reduction of Palma and Teneriffe after a sturdy resistance from the natives. Bernaldez postpones the last conquest to 1495. Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. i. pp. 347—349.—Pulgar, *Reyes Católicos*,

pp. 136, 203. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 64, 65, 66, 133. — Navarrete, *Colección de Viages*, tom. i., introd., sec. 28.

<sup>4</sup> Among the provisions of the sovereigns enacted previous to the present date may be noted those for regulating the coin and weights; for opening a free trade between Castile and Aragon; for security to Genoese and Venetian trading-vessels; for safe conduct to mariners and fishermen; for privileges to the seamen of Palos; for prohibiting the plunder of vessels wrecked on the coast; and an ordinance of the very last year, requiring foreigners to take their return cargoes in the







their predecessors as far back as Henry the Third, a considerable traffic had been carried on with the western coast of Africa, from which gold-dust and slaves were imported into the city of Seville. The annalist of that city notices the repeated interference of Isabella in behalf of these unfortunate beings, by ordinances tending to secure them a more equal protection of the laws, or opening such social indulgences as might mitigate the hardships of their condition. A misunderstanding gradually arose between the subjects of Castile and Portugal, in relation to their respective rights of discovery and commerce on the African coast, which promised a fruitful source of collision between the two crowns, but which was happily adjusted by an article in the treaty of 1479, that terminated the war of the succession. By this it was settled that the right of traffic and of discovery on the western coast of Africa should be exclusively reserved to the Portuguese, who in their turn should resign all claims on the Canaries to the crown of Castile. The Spaniards, thus excluded from further progress to the south, seemed to have no other opening left for naval adventure than the hitherto untravelled regions of the great western ocean. Fortunately, at this juncture an individual appeared among them, in the person of Christopher Columbus, endowed with capacity for stimulating them to this heroic enterprise and conducting it to a glorious issue.<sup>5</sup>

This extraordinary man was a native of Genoa, of humble parentage, though perhaps honourable descent.<sup>6</sup>

products of the country.—See these laws, as extracted from the *Ordenanças Reales* and the various public archives, in *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 11.

<sup>5</sup> Zúñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, pp. 373, 374, 398.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. iv. lib. 20, cap. 30, 34.—Navarrete, *Collection de Viages*, tom. i., introd., sec. 21, 24.—Ferrerías, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. vii. p. 548.

<sup>6</sup> Spotorno, *Memorials of Columbus* (London, 1823), p. 14.—Sena-rega, apud Muratori, *Rerum Ital.*

*Script.*, tom. xxiv. p. 535.—Antonio Gallo, *De Navigatione Columbi*, apud Muratori, *Rerum Ital. Script.*, tom. xxiii. p. 202.—It is very generally agreed that the father of Columbus exercised the craft of a wool-carder, or weaver. The admiral's son, Ferdinand, after some speculation on the genealogy of his illustrious parent, concludes with remarking that, after all, a noble descent would confer less lustre on him than to have sprung from such a father; a philosophical sentiment,

He was instructed in his early youth at Pavia, where he acquired a strong relish for the mathematical sciences, in which he subsequently excelled. At the age of fourteen he engaged in a seafaring life, which he followed with little intermission till 1470; when, probably little more than thirty years of age,<sup>7</sup> he landed in Portugal, the country to which adventurous spirits from all parts of the world then resorted, as the great theatre of maritime enterprise. After his arrival, he continued to make voyages to the then known parts of the world, and, when on shore, occupied himself with the construction and sale of charts and maps; while his geographical researches were considerably aided by the possession of papers belonging to an eminent Portuguese navigator, a deceased relative of his wife. Thus stored with all that nautical science in that day could supply, and fortified by large practical experience, the reflecting mind of Columbus was naturally led to speculate on the existence of some other land beyond the western waters; and he conceived the possibility of reaching the eastern shores of Asia, whose provinces of Zipango and

indicating pretty strongly that he had no great ancestry to boast of. Ferdinand finds something extremely mysterious and typical in his father's name of *Columbus*, signifying a *dove*, in token of his being ordained to "carry the olive-branch and oil of baptism over the ocean, like Noah's dove, to denote the peace and union of the heathen people with the church, after they had been shut up in the ark of darkness and confusion." Fernando Colon, *Historia del Almirante*, cap. 1, 2, apud Barcia, *Historiadores primitivos de las Indias occidentales* (Madrid, 1749), tom. i.

<sup>7</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 131. — Muñoz, *Historia del Nuevo-Mundo* (Madrid, 1793), lib. 2, sec. 13. — There are no sufficient data for determining the period of Columbus's birth. The learned Muñoz places it in 1446. (*Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 12.) Navarrete, who has weighed the

various authorities with caution, seems inclined to remove it back eight or ten years further, resting chiefly on a remark of Bernaldez, that he died in 1506, "in a good old age, at the age of seventy, a little more or less." (Cap. 131.) The expression is somewhat vague. In order to reconcile the facts with this hypothesis, Navarrete is compelled to reject, as a chirographical blunder, a passage in a letter of the admiral, placing his birth in 1456, and to distort another passage in his book of "Prophecies," which, if literally taken, would seem to establish his birth near the time assigned by Muñoz. Incidental allusions in some other authorities, speaking of Columbus's old age at or near the time of his death, strongly corroborate Navarrete's inference. (See *Coleccion de Viajes*, tom. i., introd., sec. 54.) — Mr. Irving seems willing to rely exclusively on the authority of Bernaldez.

Cathay were emblazoned in such gorgeous colours in the narratives of Mandeville and the Poli, by a more direct and commodious route than that which traversed the Eastern continent.<sup>8</sup>

The existence of land beyond the Atlantic, which was not discredited by some of the most enlightened ancients,<sup>9</sup> had become matter of common speculation at the close of the fifteenth century, when maritime adventure was daily disclosing the mysteries of the deep, and bringing to light new regions, that had hitherto existed only in fancy. A proof of this popular belief occurs in a curious passage of the "*Morgante Maggiore*" of the Florentine poet Pulci, a man of letters, but not distinguished for scientific attainments beyond his day.<sup>10</sup> The passage is remarkable, independently of the cosmographical knowledge it implies, for its allusion to phenomena in physical science not established till more than a century later. The Devil, alluding to the

<sup>8</sup> Antonio de Herrera, *Historia general de las Indias occidentales* (Amberes, 1728), tom. i. dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 7.—Gomara, *Historia de las Indias*, cap. 14, apud Barcia, *Hist. primitivos*, tom. ii.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 118.—Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. i., introd., sec. 30.—Ferdinand Columbus enumerates three grounds on which his father's conviction of land in the west was founded. First, natural reason,—or conclusions drawn from science; secondly, authority of writers,—amounting to little more than vague speculations of the ancients; thirdly, testimony of sailors, comprehending, in addition to popular rumours of land described in western voyages, such relics as appeared to have floated to the European shores from the other side of the Atlantic *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 6—8.

<sup>9</sup> None of the intimations are so precise as that contained in the well-known lines of Seneca's *Medea*,

"*Venient annis sæcula*," etc.,

although, when regarded as a mere poetical vagary, it has not the

weight which belongs to more serious suggestions, of similar import, in the writings of Aristotle and Strabo. The various allusions in the ancient classic writers to an undiscovered world form the subject of an elaborate essay in the *Memorias da Acad. Real das Sciencias de Lisboa* (tom. v. pp. 101—112), and are embodied in much greater detail in the first section of Humboldt's "*Histoire de la Géographie du nouveau Continent*;" a work in which the author, with his usual acuteness, has successfully applied the vast stores of his erudition and experience to the illustration of many interesting points connected with the discovery of the New World, and the personal history of Columbus.

<sup>10</sup> It is probably the knowledge of this which has led some writers to impute part of his work to the learned Marsilio Ficino, and others, with still less charity and probability, to refer the authorship of the whole to Politian. Comp. Tasso, *Opere* (Venezia, 1735—42), tom. x. p. 129; and Crescimbeni, *Istoria della volgar Poesia* (Venezia, 1731), tom. iii. pp. 273, 274.

vulgar superstition respecting the Pillars of Hercules, thus addresses his companion Rinaldo :

" Know that this theory is false ; his bark  
The daring mariner shall urge far o'er  
The western wave, a smooth and level plain,  
Albeit the earth is fashioned like a wheel.  
Man was in ancient days of grosser mould,  
And Hercules might blush to learn how far  
Beyond the limits he had vainly set,  
The dullest sea-boat soon shall wing her way.  
Men shall decry another hemisphere.  
Since to one common centre all things tend,  
So earth, by curious mystery divine  
Well balanced, hangs amid the starry spheres.  
At our Antipodes are cities, states,  
And thronged empires, ne'er divined of yore.  
But see, the Sun speeds on his western path  
To glad the nations with expected light."<sup>11</sup>

Columbus's hypothesis rested on much stronger ground than mere popular belief. What indeed was credulity with the vulgar, and speculation with the learned, amounted in his mind to a settled practical conviction, that made him ready to peril life and fortune on the result of the experiment. He was fortified still further in his conclusions by a correspondence with the learned Italian Toscanelli, who furnished him with a map of his own projection, in which the eastern coast of Asia was delineated opposite to the western frontier of Europe.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Pulci, *Morgante Maggiore*, canto 25, st. 229, 230.—I have used blank verse, as affording facility for a more literal version than the corresponding *ottava rima* of the original. This passage of Pulci, which has not fallen under the notice of Humboldt, or any other writer on the same subject whom I have consulted, affords, probably, the most circumstantial prediction that is to be found of the existence of a western world. Dante, two centuries before, had intimated more vaguely his belief in an undiscovered quarter of the globe.

"De' vostri sensi, ch' è del rimanente,

Non vogliate negar l'esperienza,  
Dietro al sol, del mondo senza gente."

*Inferno*, cant. 26, v. 115.

<sup>12</sup> Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. ii., Col. dipl., no. 1.—Munoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 17.—It is singular that Columbus, in his visit to Iceland in 1477 (see Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 4), should have learned nothing of the Scandinavian voyages to the northern shores of America in the tenth and following centuries; yet if he was acquainted with them it appears equally surprising that he should not have adduced the fact in support of his own hypothesis of the existence of land in the west, and that he should have taken a route so different from that of his predecessors in the path of discovery. It may be, however, as M. de Humboldt has well remarked, that the information he obtained in Iceland was too vague to suggest

Filled with lofty anticipations of achieving a discovery which would settle a question of such moment, so long involved in obscurity, Columbus submitted the theory on which he had founded his belief in the existence of a western route to King John the Second of Portugal. Here he was doomed to encounter for the first time the embarrassments and mortifications which so often obstruct the conceptions of genius, too sublime for the age in which they are formed. After a long and fruitless negotiation, and a dishonourable attempt on the part of the Portuguese to avail themselves clandestinely of his information, he quitted Lisbon in disgust, determined to submit his proposals to the Spanish sovereigns, relying on their reputed character for wisdom and enterprise.<sup>13</sup>

The period of his arrival in Spain, being the latter part of 1484, would seem to have been the most unpropitious possible to his design. The nation was then in the heat of the Moorish war, and the sovereigns were unintermittingly engaged, as we have seen, in prosecuting their campaigns, or in active preparation for them. The large expenditure incident to this exhausted all their resources; and indeed the engrossing character of this domestic conquest left them little leisure for indulging in dreams of distant and doubtful discovery. Columbus, moreover, was unfortunate in his first channel of communication with the court. He was furnished by Fray Juan Perez de Marchena, guardian of the convent of La Rabida in Andalusia, who had early taken a deep interest in his plans, with an introduction to Fernando de Talavera, prior of Prado, and confessor of the queen, a person high in the royal confidence, and gradually

the idea that the lands thus discovered by the Northmen had any connection with the Indies, of which he was in pursuit. In Columbus's day, indeed, so little was understood of the true position of these countries that Greenland is laid down on the maps in the European seas, and as a peninsular prolongation of Scandinavia. See Humboldt, *Géographie du nouveau Continent*,

tom. ii. pp. 118, 125.

<sup>13</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, tom. i. dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 7.—Munoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 19.—Gomara, *Hist. de las Indias*, cap. 15.—Benzoni, *Novi Orbis Historia*, lib. 1, cap. 6.—Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 10.—Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. part. 3, cap. 4.

raised through a succession of ecclesiastical dignities to the archiepiscopal see of Granada. He was a man of irreproachable morals, and of comprehensive benevolence for that day, as is shown in his subsequent treatment of the unfortunate Moriscos.<sup>14</sup> He was also learned; although his learning was that of the cloister, deeply tinctured with pedantry and superstition, and debased by such servile deference even to the errors of antiquity as at once led him to discountenance everything like innovation or enterprise.<sup>15</sup>

With these timid and exclusive views, Talavera was so far from comprehending the vast conceptions of Columbus, that he seems to have regarded him as a mere visionary, and his hypothesis as involving principles not altogether orthodox. Ferdinand and Isabella, desirous of obtaining the opinion of the most competent judges on the merits of Columbus's theory, referred him to a council selected by Talavera from the most eminent scholars of the kingdom, chiefly ecclesiastics, whose profession embodied most of the science of that day. Such was the apathy exhibited by this learned conclave, and so numerous were the impediments suggested by dulness, prejudice, or scepticism, that years glided away before it came to a decision. During this time, Columbus appears to have remained in attendance on the court, bearing arms occasionally in the campaigns, and experiencing from the sovereigns an unusual degree of deference and personal attention; an evidence of which is afforded in the disbursements repeatedly made by the royal order for his private expenses, and in the instructions issued to the municipalities of the different towns in Andalusia to supply him gratuitously with lodging and other personal accommodations.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>14</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., dial. de Talavera.

<sup>15</sup> Salazar de Mendoza, *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, p. 214.—Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, tom. i. dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 8.—Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 11.—Munoz postpones his advent to Spain to 1486, on the supposition that he

offered his services to Genoa immediately after this rupture with Portugal. *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 21.

<sup>16</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 8.—Zuñiga, *Anales de Sevilla*, p. 104.—Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viajes*, tom. i. sec. 60, 61, tom. ii. Col. dipl., nos. 2, 4.



At length, however, Columbus, wearied out by this painful procrastination, pressed the court for a definite answer to his propositions; when he was informed that the council of Salamanca pronounced his scheme to be "vain, impracticable, and resting on grounds too weak to merit the support of the government." Many in the council, however, were too enlightened to acquiesce in this sentence of the majority. Some of the most considerable persons of the court, indeed, moved by the cogency of Columbus's arguments and affected by the elevation and grandeur of his views, not only cordially embraced his scheme, but extended their personal intimacy and friendship to him. Such, among others, were the grand cardinal Mendoza, a man whose enlarged capacity, and acquaintance with affairs, raised him above many of the narrow prejudices of his order, and Deza, archbishop of Seville, a Dominican friar, whose commanding talents were afterwards unhappily perverted in the service of the Holy Office, over which he presided as successor to Torquemada.<sup>17</sup> The authority of these individuals had undoubtedly great weight with the sovereigns, who softened the verdict of the junta by an assurance to Columbus that, "although they were too much occupied at present to embark in his undertaking, yet at the conclusion of the war they should find both time and inclination to treat with him." Such was the ineffectual result of Columbus's long and painful solicitation; and far from receiving the qualified assurance of the sovereigns in mitigation of their refusal, he seems to have considered it as peremptory and final. In great dejection of mind, therefore, but without further delay, he quitted the court, and bent his way to the south, with the apparently almost

" This prelate, Diego de Deza, was born of poor but respectable parents, at Toro. He early entered the Dominican order, where his learning and exemplary life recommended him to the notice of the sovereigns, who called him to court to take charge of Prince John's education. He was afterwards

raised, through the usual course of episcopal preferment, to the metropolitan see of Seville. His situation as confessor of Ferdinand gave him great influence over that monarch, with whom he appears to have maintained an intimate correspondence to the day of his death. Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., dial de Deza.

desperate intent of seeking out some other patron to his undertaking.<sup>18</sup>

Columbus had already visited his native city of Genoa, for the purpose of interesting it in his scheme of discovery; but the attempt proved unsuccessful. He now made application, it would seem, to the dukes of Medina Sidonia and Medina Celi, successively, from the latter of whom he experienced much kindness and hospitality; but neither of these nobles, whose large estates lying along the sea-shore had often invited them to maritime adventure, was disposed to assume one which seemed too hazardous for the resources of the crown. Without wasting time in further solicitation, Columbus prepared with a heavy heart to bid adieu to Spain (1491) and carry his proposals to the king of France, from whom he had received a letter of encouragement while detained in Andalusia.<sup>19</sup>

\* Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 11.—Salazar de Mendoza, *Orón. del Gran Cardenal*, p. 215.—Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 25, 29.—Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. i. introd., sec. 60.

"Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 8.—Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 27.—Spotorno, *Memorials of Columbus*, pp. 31—33.—The last dates the application to Genoa prior to that to Portugal. A letter from the duke of Medina Celi to the cardinal of Spain, dated 19th March, 1493, refers to his entertaining Columbus as his guest for two years. It is very difficult to determine the date

of these two years. If Herrera is correct in the statement that, after a five years' residence at court, whose commencement he had previously referred to 1484, he carried his proposals to the duke of Medina Celi (see cap. 7, 8), the two years may have intervened between 1489—1491. Navarrete places them between the departure from Portugal and the first application to the court of Castile, in 1486.\* Some other writers, and among them Muñoz and Irving, referring his application to Genoa to 1485, and his first appearance in Spain to a subsequent period, make no provision for the residence with the duke of Medina Celi. Mr. Irving, indeed, is be-

\* [According to the account of the duke of Medina Celi, Columbus, when received by him, was on his way from Portugal to seek the favour and assistance of the French king. The duke asserts that he would himself have furnished him with three or four caravels, but perceiving that the expedition was a fit one to be undertaken by the crown, he had by letter commended it to Isabella, and, at her request, had sent Columbus to the court. As the object of this statement, made on the return of Columbus, was to obtain a share in the advantages of the discovery, we may suspect the writer of having overrated his own services in the matter. Yet in the dearth or conflict of evidence the document seems entitled to more consideration than it has hitherto received, especially as the terms of it imply a reference to Isabella's acquaintance with the facts, perhaps to that of Columbus himself.—Ed.]

His progress, however, was arrested at the convent of La Rabida, which he visited previous to his departure, by his friend the guardian, who prevailed on him to postpone his journey till another effort had been made to move the Spanish court in his favour. For this purpose the worthy ecclesiastic undertook an expedition in person to the newly-erected city of Santa Fe, where the sovereigns lay encamped before Granada. Juan Perez had formerly been confessor of Isabella, and was held in great consideration by her for his excellent qualities. On arriving at the camp, he was readily admitted to an audience, when he pressed the suit of Columbus with all the earnestness and reasoning of which he was capable. The friar's eloquence was supported by that of several eminent persons whom Columbus during his long residence in the country had interested in his project, and who viewed with sincere regret the prospect of its abandonment. Among these individuals are particularly mentioned Alonso de Quintanilla, comptroller-general of Castile, Louis de St. Angel, a fiscal officer of the crown of Aragon, and the marchioness of Moya, the personal friend of Isabella, all of whom exercised considerable influence over her counsels. Their representations, combined with the opportune season of the application, occurring at the moment when the approaching termination of the Moorish war allowed room for interest in other objects, wrought so favourable a change in the dispositions of the sovereigns that they consented to resume the negotiation with Columbus. An invitation was accordingly sent to him to repair to Santa Fe, and a considerable sum provided for his suitable equipment and his expenses on the road.<sup>20</sup>

Columbus, who lost no time in availing himself of this

trayed into a chronological inaccuracy in speaking of a seven years' residence at the court in 1491, which he had previously noticed as having before begun in 1486. (*Life of Columbus* (London, 1828), comp. vol. i. pp. 109, 141.) In fact, the discrepancies among the earliest authorities are such as to render hopeless any attempt to settle with

precision the chronology of Columbus's movements previous to his first voyage.

<sup>20</sup> Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. pp. 129, 130.—Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 31.—Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 8.—Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. i., introd., sec. 60.

welcome intelligence, arrived at the camp in season to witness the surrender of Granada, when every heart, swelling with exultation at the triumphant termination of the war, was naturally disposed to enter with greater confidence on a new career of adventure. In his interview with the king and queen, he once more exhibited the arguments on which his hypothesis was founded. He then endeavoured to stimulate the cupidity of his audience by picturing the realms of Mangi and Cathay, which he confidently expected to reach by this western route, in all the barbaric splendours which had been shed over them by the lively fancy of Marco Polo and other travellers of the Middle Ages; and he concluded with appealing to a higher principle, by holding out the prospect of extending the empire of the Cross over nations of benighted heathen, while he proposed to devote the profits of his enterprise to the recovery of the Holy Sepulchre. This last ebullition, which might well have passed for fanaticism in a later day, and given a visionary tinge to his whole project, was not quite so preposterous in an age in which the spirit of the crusades might be said still to linger, and the romance of religion had not yet been dispelled by sober reason. The more temperate suggestion of the diffusion of the gospel was well suited to affect Isabella, in whose heart the principle of devotion was deeply seated, and who, in all her undertakings, seems to have been far less sensible to the vulgar impulses of avarice or ambition than to any argument connected, however remotely, with the interests of religion.<sup>21</sup>

Amidst all these propitious demonstrations towards Columbus, an obstacle unexpectedly arose in the nature of his demands, which stipulated for himself and heirs the title and authority of Admiral and Viceroy over all lands discovered by him, with one-tenth of the profits. This was deemed wholly inadmissible. Ferdinand, who had looked with cold distrust on the expedition from the first, was

<sup>21</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 8.—Primer Viage de Colon, apud Navarrete, Coleccion

de Viages, tom. i. pp. 2, 117.—Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 13.

supported by the remonstrances of Talavera, the new archbishop of Granada, who declared that "such demands savoured of the highest degree of arrogance, and would be unbecoming in their Highnesses to grant to a needy foreign adventurer." Columbus, however, steadily resisted every attempt to induce him to modify his propositions. On this ground the conferences were abruptly broken off, and he once more turned his back upon the Spanish court, resolved rather to forego his splendid anticipations of discovery, at the very moment when the career so long sought was thrown open to him, than surrender one of the honourable distinctions due to his services. This last act is perhaps the most remarkable exhibition in his whole life, of that proud, unyielding spirit which sustained him through so many years of trial, and enabled him at length to achieve his great enterprise, in the face of every obstacle which man and nature had opposed to it.<sup>22</sup>

The misunderstanding was not suffered to be of long duration. Columbus's friends, and especially Louis de St. Angel, remonstrated with the queen on these proceedings in the most earnest manner. He frankly told her that Columbus's demands, if high, were at least contingent on success, when they would be well deserved, while, if he failed, he required nothing. St. Angel expatiated on his qualifications for the undertaking, so signal as to insure in all probability the patronage of some other monarch, who would reap the fruits of his discoveries; and he ventured to remind the queen that her present policy was not in accordance with the magnanimous spirit which had hitherto made her the ready patron of great and heroic enterprise. Far from being displeased, Isabella was moved by his honest eloquence. She contemplated the proposals of Columbus in their true light; and, refusing to hearken any longer to the suggestions of cold and timid counsellors, she gave way to the natural impulses of her own noble and generous heart. "I will assume the undertaking," said

<sup>22</sup> Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 28, 29.—Fernando

Colón, *Hist. del Almirante*, ubi supra.

she, "for my own crown of Castile, and am ready to pawn my jewels to defray the expenses of it, if the funds in the treasury shall be found inadequate." The treasury had been reduced to the lowest ebb by the late war; but the receiver, St. Angel, advanced the sums required, from the Aragonese revenues deposited in his hands. Aragon, however, was not considered as adventuring in the expedition, the charges and emoluments of which were reserved exclusively for Castile.<sup>23</sup>

Columbus, who was overtaken by the royal messenger at a few leagues' distance only from Granada, experienced the most courteous reception on his return to Santa Fe, where a definitive arrangement was concluded with the Spanish sovereigns, April 17th, 1492. By the terms of the capitulation, Ferdinand and Isabella, as lords of the ocean-seas, constituted Christopher Columbus their admiral, viceroy, and governor-general of all such islands and continents as he should discover in the western ocean, with the privilege of nominating three candidates, for the selection of one by the crown, for the government of each of these territories. He was to be vested with exclusive right of jurisdiction over all commercial transactions within his admiralty. He was to be entitled to one-tenth of all the products and profits within the limits of his discoveries, and an additional eighth, provided he should contribute one eighth part of the expense. By a subsequent ordinance, the official dignities above enumerated were settled on him and his heirs for ever, with the privilege of prefixing to their names the title of Don, which had not then degenerated into an appellation of mere courtesy.<sup>24</sup>

No sooner were the arrangements completed, than Isabella prepared, with her characteristic promptness, to forward the expedition by the most efficient measures.

<sup>23</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 8.—Mufioz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 32, 33.—Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 14.—Gomara, *Hist. de las Indias*, cap. 15.

<sup>24</sup> Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. ii., Col. diplomat., nos. 5, 6.—Zufiiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 412.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 606.

Orders were sent to Seville and the other ports of Andalusia, to furnish stores and other articles requisite for the voyage, free of duty, and at as low rates as possible. The fleet, consisting of three vessels, was to sail from the little port of Palos in Andalusia, which had been condemned for some delinquency to maintain two caravels for a twelve-month for the public service. The third vessel was furnished by the admiral, aided, as it would seem, in defraying the charges by his friend the guardian of La Rabida, and the Pinzons, a family in Palos long distinguished for its enterprise among the mariners of that active community. With their assistance, Columbus was enabled to surmount the disinclination, and indeed open opposition, manifested by the Andalusian mariners to his perilous voyage; so that in less than three months his little squadron was equipped for sea. A sufficient evidence of the extreme unpopularity of the expedition is afforded by a royal ordinance of the 30th of April, promising protection to all persons who should embark in it from criminal prosecution of whatever kind, until two months after their return. The armament consisted of two caravels, or light vessels without decks, and a third of larger burden. The total number of persons who embarked amounted to one hundred and twenty; and the whole charges of the crown for the expedition did not exceed seventeen thousand florins. The fleet was instructed to keep clear of the African coast, and other maritime possessions of Portugal. At length, all things being in readiness, Columbus and his whole crew partook of the sacrament, and confessed themselves, after the devout manner of the ancient Spanish voyagers when engaged in any important enterprise; and on the morning of the 3rd of August, 1492, the intrepid navigator, bidding adieu to the old world, launched forth on that unfathomed waste of waters where no sail had been ever spread before.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>25</sup> Peter Martyr, *De Rebus Oceanicis et Novo Orbe* (Coloniæ, 1574), dec. 1, lib. 1.—Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. ii., Col. diplomat., nos. 7, 8, 9, 10, 12.—Herrera, *Indias*

*occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 1, cap. 9.—Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 14.—Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 2, sec. 33.—Benzoni, *Novi Orbis Hist.*, lib. 1,

It is impossible to peruse the story of Columbus without assigning to him almost exclusively the glory of his great discovery; for from the first moment of its conception to that of its final execution he was encountered by every species of mortification and embarrassment, with scarcely a heart to cheer or a hand to help him.<sup>26</sup> Those more enlightened persons whom, during his long residence in Spain, he succeeded in interesting in his expedition, looked to it probably as the means of solving a dubious problem, with the same sort of vague and sceptical curiosity as to its successful result with which we contemplate, in our day, an attempt to arrive at the Northwest passage. How feeble was the interest excited even among those who from their science and situation would seem to have their attention most naturally drawn towards it, may be inferred from the infrequency of allusion to it in the correspondence and other writings of that time, previous to the actual discovery. Peter Martyr, one of the most accomplished scholars of the period, whose residence at the

cap. 6. — Gomara, *Hist. de las Indias*, cap. 15.

The expression in the text will not seem too strong, even admitting the previous discoveries of the Northmen, which were made in so much higher latitudes. Humboldt has well shown the probabilities, *a priori*, of such discoveries, made in a narrow part of the Atlantic, where the Orcaes, the Faroe Islands, Iceland, and Greenland afforded the voyager so many intermediate stations, at moderate distances from each other. (*Géographie du nouveau Continent*, tom. ii. pp. 183 et seq.) The publication of the original Scandinavian MSS. (of which imperfect notices and selections only have hitherto found their way into the world) by the Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, at Copenhagen, is a matter of the deepest interest; and it is fortunate that it is to be conducted under auspices which must insure its execution in the most faithful and able manner. It may be doubted, however, whe-

ther the declaration of the *Prospectus*, that "it was the knowledge of the Scandinavian voyages, in all probability, which prompted the expedition of Columbus," can ever be established. His personal history furnishes strong internal evidence to the contrary.

<sup>26</sup> How strikingly are the forlorn condition and indomitable energy of Columbus depicted in the following noble verses of Chiabrera!—

"Certo da cor, oh' alto destin non  
scelse,  
Son l'impresa magnanime neglette;  
Ma le bell' alme alle bell' opre elette  
Sanno gioir nelle fatiche eccelse;  
Nè biammo popolar, frale catena,  
Spirto d' onore, il suo cammin refrena.

Così lunga stagion per modi indegni

Europa dispregiò l' inclita speme,  
Sohernendo il vulgo, e seco i Regi  
insieme

*Nudo nocchier, promettitor di Regni.*"  
Rime, parte 1, canzone 12.



Castilian court must have fully instructed him in the designs of Columbus, and whose inquisitive mind led him subsequently to take the deepest interest in the results of his discoveries, does not, so far as I am aware, allude to him in any part of his voluminous correspondence with the learned men of his time, previous to the first expedition. The common people regarded, not merely with apathy, but with terror, the prospect of a voyage that was to take the mariner from the safe and pleasant seas which he was accustomed to navigate, and send him roving on the boundless wilderness of waters, which tradition and superstitious fancy had peopled with innumerable forms of horror.

It is true that Columbus experienced a most honourable reception at the Castilian court ; such as naturally flowed from the benevolent spirit of Isabella and her just appreciation of his pure and elevated character. But the queen was too little of a proficient in science to be able to estimate the merits of his hypothesis ; and, as many of those on whose judgment she leaned deemed it chimerical, it is probable that she never entertained a deep conviction of its truth ; at least not enough to warrant the liberal expenditure which she never refused to schemes of real importance. This is certainly inferred by the paltry amount actually expended on the armament, far inferior to that appropriated to the equipment of two several fleets in the course of the late war for a foreign expedition, as well as to that with which in the ensuing year she followed up Columbus's discoveries.

But while, on a review of the circumstances, we are led more and more to admire the constancy and unconquerable spirit which carried Columbus victorious through all the difficulties of his undertaking, we must remember, in justice to Isabella, that, although tardily, she did in fact furnish the resources essential to its execution ; that she undertook the enterprise when it had been explicitly declined by other powers, and when probably none other of that age would have been found to countenance it ; and that, after once plighting her faith to Columbus, she

became his steady friend, shielding him against the calumnies of his enemies, reposing in him the most generous confidence, and serving him in the most acceptable manner, by supplying ample resources for the prosecution of his glorious discoveries.<sup>27</sup>

<sup>27</sup> Columbus, in a letter written on his third voyage, pays an honest, heartfelt tribute to the effectual patronage which he experienced from the queen. "In the midst of the general incredulity," says he, "the Almighty infused into the queen, my lady, the spirit of intelligence and energy; and, whilst

every one else, in his ignorance, was expatiating only on the inconvenience and cost, *our* Highness approved it, on the contrary, and gave it all the support in her power." See Carta al Ama del Principe D. Juan, apud Navarrete, Coleccion de Viages, tom. i. p. 266.

---

It is now more than thirty years since the Spanish government intrusted Don Martin Fernandez de Navarrete, one of the most eminent scholars of the country, with the care of exploring the public archives, for the purpose of collecting information relative to the voyages and discoveries of the early Spanish navigators. In 1826, Señor Navarrete gave to the world the first-fruits of his indefatigable researches, in two volumes, the commencement of a series, comprehending letters, private journals, royal ordinances, and other original documents, illustrative of the discovery of America. These two volumes are devoted exclusively to the adventures and personal history of Columbus, and must be regarded as the only authentic basis on which any notice of the great navigator can hereafter rest. Fortunately, Mr. Irving's visit to Spain, at this period, enabled the world to derive the full benefit of Señor Navarrete's researches, by presenting their results in connection with whatever had been before known of Columbus, in the lucid and attractive form which engages the interest of every reader. It would seem highly proper that the fortunes of the discoverer of America should engage the pen of an inhabitant of her most favoured and enlightened region; and it is unnecessary to add that the task has been executed in a manner which must secure to the historian a share in the imperishable renown of his subject. The adventures of Columbus, which form so splendid an episode to the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella, cannot properly come within the scope of its historian, except so far as relates to his personal intercourse with the government, or to their results on the fortunes of the Spanish monarchy.

## CHAPTER XVII.

### EXPULSION OF THE JEWS FROM SPAIN.

1492.

Excitement against the Jews.—Edict of Expulsion.—Dreadful Sufferings of the Emigrants.—Whole Number of Exiles.—Disastrous Results.—True Motives of the Edict.—Contemporary Judgments.

WHILE the Spanish sovereigns were detained before Granada, they published their memorable and most disastrous edict against the Jews ; inscribing it, as it were, with the same pen which drew up the glorious capitulation of Granada and the treaty with Columbus. The reader has been made acquainted in a preceding chapter with the prosperous condition of the Jews in the Peninsula, and the pre-eminent consideration which they attained there beyond any other part of Christendom. The envy raised by their prosperity, combined with the high religious excitement kindled in the long war with the infidel, directed the terrible arm of the Inquisition, as has been already stated, against this unfortunate people ; but the result showed the failure of the experiment, since comparatively few conversions, and those frequently of a suspicious character, were effected, while the great mass still maintained a pertinacious attachment to ancient errors.<sup>1</sup>

Under these circumstances, the popular odium, inflamed by the discontent of the clergy at the resistance which they

<sup>1</sup> It is a proof of the high consideration in which such Israelites as were willing to embrace Christianity were held, that three of that number, Alvarez, Avila, and Pulgar, were private secretaries of the queen. (Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 18.) An incidental expression of Martyr's, among

many similar ones by contemporaries, affords the true key to the popular odium against the Jews: "Cum namque viderent, Judæorum tabido commercio, qui hac hora sunt in Hispaniâ innumeri Christianis ditiores, plurimorum animos corrumpi ac seduci," etc. Opus Epist., epist. 92.

encountered in the work of proselytism, gradually grew stronger and stronger against the unhappy Israelites. Old traditions, as old indeed as the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, were revived, and charged on the present generation, with all the details of place and action. Christian children were said to be kidnapped in order to be crucified in derision of the Saviour; the host, it was rumoured, was exposed to the grossest indignities; and physicians and apothecaries, whose science was particularly cultivated by the Jews in the Middle Ages, were accused of poisoning their Christian patients. No rumour was too absurd for the easy credulity of the people. The Israelites were charged with the more probable offence of attempting to convert to their own faith the *ancient Christians*, as well as to reclaim such of their own race as had recently embraced Christianity. A great scandal was occasioned also by the intermarriages which still occasionally took place between Jews and Christians; the latter condescending to repair their dilapidated fortunes by these wealthy alliances, though at the expense of their vaunted purity of blood.<sup>2</sup>

These various offences were urged against the Jews with great pertinacity by their enemies, and the sovereigns were importuned to adopt a more rigorous policy. The inquisitors, in particular, to whom the work of conversion had been specially intrusted, represented the incompetence of all lenient measures to the end proposed. They asserted that the only mode left for the extirpation of the Jewish heresy was to eradicate the seed; and they boldly demanded the immediate and total banishment of every unbaptized Israelite from the land.<sup>3</sup>

The Jews, who had obtained an intimation of these proceedings, resorted to their usual crafty policy for propitiating

<sup>2</sup> Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, p. 164.—Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. cap. 7, sec. 3.—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 94.—Ferrerias, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. p. 128.

<sup>3</sup> Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, p. 163.—Salazar de Mendoza

refers the sovereigns' consent to the banishment of the Jews, in a great measure, to the urgent remonstrances of the cardinal of Spain. The bigotry of the biographer makes him claim the credit of every fanatical act for his illustrious hero. See *Crón. del Gran Cardenal*, p. 250.

the sovereigns. They commissioned one of their body to tender a donative of thirty thousand ducats towards defraying the expenses of the Moorish war. The negotiation, however, was suddenly interrupted by the inquisitor-general. Torquemada, who burst into the apartment of the palace where the sovereigns were giving audience to the Jewish deputy, and, drawing forth a crucifix from beneath his mantle, held it up, exclaiming, "Judas Iscariot sold his Master for thirty pieces of silver. Your Highnesses would sell him anew for thirty thousand; here he is, take him, and barter him away." So saying, the frantic priest threw the crucifix on the table, and left the apartment. The sovereigns, instead of chastising this presumption, or despising it as a mere freak of insanity, were overawed by it. Neither Ferdinand nor Isabella, had they been left to the unbiassed dictates of their own reason, could have sanctioned for a moment so impolitic a measure, which involved the loss of the most industrious and skilful portion of their subjects. Its extreme injustice and cruelty rendered it especially repugnant to the naturally humane disposition of the queen.<sup>4</sup> But she had been early schooled to distrust her own reason, and indeed the natural suggestions of humanity, in cases of conscience. Among the reverend counsellors on whom she most relied in these matters was the Dominican Torquemada. The situation which this man enjoyed as the queen's confessor, during the tender years of her youth, gave him an ascendancy over her mind which must have been denied to a person of his savage, fanatical temper, even with the advantages of this spiritual connection, had it been formed at a ripper period of her life. Without opposing further resistance to the representations, so emphatically expressed, of the holy persons in whom she most confided, Isabella, at length, silenced her own scruples, and consented to the fatal measure of proscription.

<sup>4</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 7, sect. 5.—Pulgar, in a letter to the cardinal of Spain, animadverting with much severity on the tenor of certain municipal

ordinances against the Jews in Guipuscoa and Toledo, in 1482, plainly intimates that they were not at all to the taste of the queen. See *Letras* (Amstelodami, 1670), let. 31.

The edict for the expulsion of the Jews was signed by the Spanish sovereigns at Granada, March 30th, 1492. The preamble alleges, in vindication of the measure, the danger of allowing further intercourse between the Jews and their Christian subjects, in consequence of the incorrigible obstinacy with which the former persisted in their attempts to make converts of the latter to their own faith, and to instruct them in their heretical rites, in open defiance of every legal prohibition and penalty. When a college or corporation of any kind—the instrument goes on to state—is convicted of any great or detestable crime, it is right that it should be disfranchised, the less suffering with the greater, the innocent with the guilty. If this be the case in temporal concerns, it is much more so in those which affect the eternal welfare of the soul. It finally decrees that all unbaptized Jews, of whatever age, sex, or condition, should depart from the realm by the end of July next ensuing; prohibiting them from revisiting it, on any pretext whatever, under penalty of death and confiscation of property. It was, moreover, interdicted to every subject to harbour, succour, or minister to the necessities of any Jew, after the expiration of the term limited for his departure. The persons and property of the Jews, in the mean time, were taken under the royal protection. They were allowed to dispose of their effects of every kind on their own account, and to carry the proceeds along with them, in bills of exchange, or merchandise not prohibited, but neither in gold nor silver.<sup>5</sup>

The doom of exile fell like a thunderbolt on the heads of the Israelites. A large proportion of them had hitherto succeeded in shielding themselves from the searching eye of the Inquisition, by an affectation of reverence for the forms of Catholic worship, and a discreet forbearance of whatever might offend the prejudices of their Christian brethren. They had even hoped that their steady loyalty and a quiet and orderly discharge of their social duties

<sup>5</sup> Carbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1492. ley 2.—*Pragmáticas del Reyno*, ed. —*Recop. de las Leyes*, lib. 8, tit. 2, 1520, fol. 3.

would in time secure them higher immunities. Many had risen to a degree of opulence, by means of the thrift and dexterity peculiar to the race, which gave them a still deeper interest in the land of their residence.<sup>6</sup> Their families were reared in all the elegant refinements of life; and their wealth and education often disposed them to turn their attention to liberal pursuits, which ennobled the character, indeed, but rendered them personally more sensible to physical annoyance and less fitted to encounter the perils and privations of their dreary pilgrimage. Even the mass of the common people possessed a dexterity in various handicrafts which afforded a comfortable livelihood, raising them far above similar classes in most other nations, who might readily be detached from the soil on which they happened to be cast, with comparatively little sacrifice of local interests.<sup>7</sup> These ties were now severed at a blow. They were to go forth as exiles from the land of their birth; the land where all whom they ever loved had lived or died; the land not so much of their adoption as of their inheritance; which had been the home of their ancestors for centuries, and with whose prosperity and glory they were of course as intimately associated as was any ancient Spaniard. They were to be cast out helpless and defenceless, with a brand of infamy set on them, among nations who had always held them in derision and hatred.

Those provisions of the edict which affected a show of kindness to the Jews were contrived so artfully as to be nearly nugatory. As they were excluded from the use of gold and silver, the only medium for representing their property was bills of exchange. But commerce was too limited and imperfect to allow of these being promptly obtained to any very considerable, much less to the enormous amount required in the present instance. It was impossible, moreover, to negotiate a sale of their effects

<sup>6</sup> The Curate of Los Palacios speaks of several Israelites worth one or two millions of maravedis, and of another as having even amassed ten. He mentions one, in particular, by the name of Abraham,

VOL. I.

as renting the *greater part of Castile*! It will hardly do to take the good Curate's statement *à la lettre*. See Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 112.

<sup>7</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, ubi supra.

under existing circumstances, since the market was soon glutted with commodities; and few would be found willing to give anything like an equivalent for what, if not disposed of within the prescribed term, the proprietors must relinquish at any rate. So deplorable, indeed, was the sacrifice of property that a chronicler of the day mentions that he had seen a house exchanged for an ass, and a vineyard for a suit of clothes! In Aragon, matters were still worse. The government there discovered that the Jews were largely indebted to individuals and to certain corporations. It accordingly caused their property to be sequestered for the benefit of their creditors, until their debts should be liquidated. Strange, indeed, that the balance should be found against a people who have been everywhere conspicuous for their commercial sagacity and resources, and who, as factors of the great nobility and farmers of the revenue, enjoyed at least equal advantages in Spain with those possessed in other countries for the accumulation of wealth.<sup>8</sup>

While the gloomy aspect of their fortunes pressed heavily on the hearts of the Israelites, the Spanish clergy were indefatigable in the work of conversion. They lectured in the synagogues and public squares, expounding the doctrines of Christianity, and thundering forth both argument and invective against the Hebrew heresy. But their laudable endeavours were in a great measure counteracted by the more authoritative rhetoric of the Jewish Rabbins, who compared the persecutions of their brethren to those which their ancestors had suffered under Pharaoh. They encouraged them to persevere, representing that the present afflictions were intended as a trial of their faith by the Almighty, who designed in this way to guide them to the promised land, by opening a path through the waters, as he had done to their fathers of old. The more wealthy Israelites enforced their exhortations by liberal contribu-

<sup>8</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 10.—Zurita, Anales, tom. v. fol. 9.—Capmany notices the number of synagogues existing in Aragon in 1428 as amounting to nine-

teen. In Galicia at the same time there were but three, and in Catalonia but one. See Mem. de Barcelona, tom. iv. Apend. num. 11.



tions for the relief of their indigent brethren. Thus strengthened, there were found but very few, when the day of departure arrived, who were not prepared to abandon their country rather than their religion. This extraordinary act of self-devotion by a whole people for conscience' sake may be thought, in the nineteenth century, to merit other epithets than those of "perfidy, incredulity, and stiff-necked obstinacy," with which the worthy Curate of Los Palacios, in the charitable feeling of that day, has seen fit to stigmatize it.<sup>9</sup>

When the period of departure arrived, all the principal routes through the country might be seen swarming with emigrants, old and young, the sick and the helpless, men, women, and children, mingled promiscuously together, some mounted on horses or mules, but far the greater part undertaking their painful pilgrimage on foot. The sight of so much misery touched even the Spaniards with pity, though none might succour them; for the grand inquisitor, Torquemada, enforced the ordinance to that effect by denouncing heavy ecclesiastical censures on all who should presume to violate it. The fugitives were distributed along various routes, being determined in their destination by accidental circumstances much more than by any knowledge of the respective countries to which they were bound. Much the largest division, amounting according to some estimates to eighty thousand souls, passed into Portugal; whose monarch, John the Second, dispensed with his scruples of conscience so far as to give them a free passage through his dominions on their way to Africa, in consideration of a tax of a *cruzado* a head. He is even said to have silenced his scruples so far as to allow certain ingenious artisans to establish themselves permanently in the kingdom.<sup>10</sup>

A considerable number found their way to the ports of Santa Maria and Cadiz, where, after lingering some time

<sup>9</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 10, 113.—Ferrerías, Hist. d'Espagne, tom. viii. p. 131.

<sup>10</sup> Zurita, Anales, tom. v. fol. 9.—Ferrerías, Hist. d'Espagne, tom.

viii. p. 133.—Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, ubi supra.—La Clède, Hist. de Portugal, tom. iv. p. 95.—Marina, Hist. de España, tom. ii. p. 602.

in the vain hope of seeing the waters open for their egress, according to the promises of the Rabbins, they embarked on board a Spanish fleet for the Barbary coast. Having crossed over to Ercilla, a Christian settlement in Africa, whence they proceeded by land towards Fez, where a considerable body of their countrymen resided, they were assaulted on their route by the roving tribes of the desert, in quest of plunder. Notwithstanding the interdict, the Jews had contrived to secrete small sums of money, sewed up in their garments or the linings of their saddles. These did not escape the avaricious eyes of their spoilers, who are even said to have ripped open the bodies of their victims in search of gold which they were supposed to have swallowed. The lawless barbarians, mingling lust with avarice, abandoned themselves to still more frightful excesses, violating the wives and daughters of the unresisting Jews, or massacring in cold blood such as offered resistance. But, without pursuing these loathsome details further, it need only be added that the miserable exiles endured such extremity of famine that they were glad to force a nourishment from the grass which grew scantily among the sands of the desert; until at length great numbers of them, wasted by disease, and broken in spirit, retraced their steps to Ercilla, and consented to be baptized, in the hope of being permitted to revisit their native land. The number, indeed, was so considerable that the priest who officiated was obliged to make use of the mop, or hyssop, with which the Roman Catholic missionaries were wont to scatter the holy drops whose mystic virtue could cleanse the soul in a moment from the foulest stains of infidelity. "Thus," says a Castilian historian, "the calamities of these poor blind creatures proved in the end an excellent remedy, that God made use of to unseal their eyes, which they now opened to the vain promises of the Rabbins; so that, renouncing their ancient heresies, they became faithful followers of the Cross!"<sup>11</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. p. 133.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 113.

Many of the emigrants took the direction of Italy. Those who landed at Naples brought with them an infectious disorder, contracted by long confinement in small, crowded, and ill-provided vessels. The disorder was so malignant, and spread with such frightful celerity, as to sweep off more than twenty thousand inhabitants of the city in the course of the year, whence it extended its devastation over the whole Italian peninsula.

A graphic picture of these horrors is thus given by a Genoese historian, an eye-witness of the scenes he describes. "No one," he says, "could behold the sufferings of the Jewish exiles unmoved. A great many perished of hunger, especially those of tender years. Mothers, with scarcely strength to support themselves, carried their famished infants in their arms, and died with them. Many fell victims to the cold, others to intense thirst, while the unaccustomed distresses incident to a sea-voyage aggravated their maladies. I will not enlarge on the cruelty and the avarice which they frequently experienced from the masters of the ships which transported them from Spain. Some were murdered to gratify their cupidity, others forced to sell their children for the expenses of the passage. They arrived in Genoa in crowds, but were not suffered to tarry there long, by reason of the ancient law which interdicted the Jewish traveller from a longer residence than three days. They were allowed, however, to refit their vessels, and to recruit themselves for some days from the fatigues of their voyage. One might have taken them for spectres, so emaciated were they, so cadaverous in their aspect, and with eyes so sunken; they differed in nothing from the dead, except in the power of motion, which indeed they scarcely retained. Many fainted and expired on the mole, which, being completely surrounded by the sea, was the only quarter vouchsafed to the wretched emigrants. The infection bred by such a swarm of dead and dying persons was not at once perceived; but, when the winter broke up, ulcers began to make their appearance, and the malady, which lurked for a long time

in the city, broke out into the plague in the following year."<sup>12</sup>

Many of the exiles passed into Turkey, and to different parts of the Levant, where their descendants continued to speak the Castilian language far into the following century. Others found their way to France, and even England. Part of their religious services is recited to this day in Spanish, in one or more of the London synagogues; and the modern Jew still reverts with fond partiality to Spain, as the cherished land of his fathers, illustrated by the most glorious recollections in their eventful history.<sup>13</sup>

The whole number of Jews expelled from Spain by Ferdinand and Isabella is variously computed at from one hundred and sixty thousand to eight hundred thousand souls; a discrepancy sufficiently indicating the paucity of authentic data. Most modern writers, with the usual predilection for startling results, have assumed the latter estimate; and Llorente has made it the basis of some important calculations, in his *History of the Inquisition*. A view of all the circumstances will lead us without much hesitation to adopt the most moderate computation.<sup>14</sup> This,

<sup>12</sup> Senarega, apud Muratori, *Re- rum Ital. Script.*, tom. xxiv. pp. 531, 532.

<sup>13</sup> See a sensible notice of Hebrew literature in Spain, in the *Retro- spective Review*, vol. iii. p. 209.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. lib. 26, cap. 1.—Zurita, *Anales*, tom. v. fol. 9.—Not a few of the learned exiles attained to eminence in those countries of Europe where they transferred their residence. One is mentioned by Castro as a leading practitioner of medicine in Genoa; another, as filling the posts of astronomer and chronicler under King Emanuel of Portugal. Many of them published works in various departments of science, which were translated into the Spanish and other European languages. *Biblioteca Española*, tom. i. pp. 359—372.

<sup>14</sup> From a curious document in the Archives of Simancas, consist-

ing of a report made to the Spanish sovereigns by their accountant-general, Quintanilla, in 1492, it would appear that the population of the kingdom of Castile, exclusive of Granada, was then estimated at 1,500,000 *vecinos*, or householders. (See *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, Apend. no. 12.) This, allowing four and a half to a family, would make the whole population 6,750,000. It appears from the statement of Bernaldes that the kingdom of Castile contained five-sixths of the whole number of Jews in the Spanish monarchy. This proportion, if 800,000 be received as the total, would amount in round numbers to 670,000, or ten per cent. of the whole population of the kingdom. Now, it is manifestly improbable that so large a portion of the whole nation, conspicuous moreover for wealth and intelligence, could have been held so light

moreover, is placed beyond reasonable doubt by the direct testimony of the Curate of Los Palacios. He reports that a Jewish Rabbin, one of the exiles, subsequently returned to Spain, where he was baptized by him. This person, whom Bernaldez commends for his intelligence, estimated the whole number of his unbaptized countrymen in the dominions of Ferdinand and Isabella, at the publication of the edict, at thirty-six thousand families. Another Jewish authority, quoted by the Curate, reckoned them at thirty-five thousand. This, assuming an average of four and a half to a family, gives the sum total of about one hundred and sixty thousand individuals, agreeably to the computation of Bernaldez. There is little reason for supposing that the actual amount would suffer diminution in the hands of either the Jewish or Castilian authority; since the one might naturally be led to exaggerate in order to heighten sympathy with the calamities of his nation, and the other to magnify as far as possible the glorious triumphs of the Cross.<sup>15</sup>

The detriment incurred by the state, however, is not founded so much on any numerical estimate as on the subtraction of the mechanical skill, intelligence, and general resources of an orderly, industrious population. In this view, the mischief was incalculably greater than that inferred by the mere number of the exiled; and, although even this might have been gradually repaired in a country allowed the free and healthful development of its energies, yet in Spain this was so effectually counteracted by the Inquisition, and other causes in the following century, that the loss may be deemed irretrievable.

The expulsion of so numerous a class of subjects by an

in a political aspect as the Jews certainly were, or have tamely submitted for so many years to the most wanton indignities without resistance, or, finally, that the Spanish government would have ventured on so bold a measure as the banishment of so numerous and powerful a class, and that too with as few precautions, apparently, as

would be required for driving out of the country a roving gang of gipsies.

<sup>15</sup> Bernaldez, Reyes Católicos, MS., cap. 110.—Llorente, Hist. de l'Inquisition, tom. i. chap. 7, sect. 7.—Mariana, Hist. de España, tom. ii. lib. 26.—Zurita, Anales, tom. v. fol. 9.

independent act of the sovereign might well be regarded as an enormous stretch of prerogative, altogether incompatible with anything like a free government. But, to judge the matter rightly, we must take into view the actual position of the Jews at that time. Far from forming an integral part of the commonwealth, they were regarded as alien to it, as a mere excrescence, which, so far from contributing to the healthful action of the body politic, was nourished by its vicious humours, and might be lopped off at any time when the health of the system demanded it. Far from being protected by the laws, the only aim of the laws in reference to them was to define more precisely their civil incapacities, and to draw the line of division more broadly between them and the Christians. Even this humiliation by no means satisfied the national prejudices, as is evinced by the great number of tumults and massacres of which they were the victims. In these circumstances, it seemed to be no great assumption of authority to pronounce sentence of exile against those whom public opinion had so long proscribed as enemies to the state. It was only carrying into effect that opinion, expressed as it had been in a great variety of ways; and, so far as the rights of the nation were concerned, the banishment of a single Spaniard would have been held a grosser violation of them than that of the whole race of Israelites.

It has been common with modern historians to detect a principal motive for the expulsion of the Jews in the avarice of the government. It is only necessary, however, to transport ourselves back to those times to find it in perfect accordance with their spirit, at least in Spain. It is indeed incredible that persons possessing the political sagacity of Ferdinand and Isabella could indulge a temporary cupidity at the sacrifice of the most important and permanent interests, converting their wealthiest districts into a wilderness, and dispeopling them of a class of citizens who contributed beyond all others not only to the general resources but to the direct revenues of the crown; a measure so manifestly unsound as to lead even a barbarian monarch of that day

to exclaim, "Do they call this Ferdinand a politic prince, who can thus impoverish his own kingdom and enrich ours?"<sup>16</sup> It would seem, indeed, when the measure had been determined on, that the Aragonese monarch was willing, by his expedient of sequestration, to control its operation in such a manner as to secure to his own subjects the full pecuniary benefit of it.<sup>17</sup> No imputation of this kind attaches to Castile. The clause of the ordinance which might imply such a design, by interdicting the exportation of gold and silver, was only enforcing a law which had been already twice enacted by cortes in the present reign, and which was deemed of such moment that the offence was made capital.<sup>18</sup>

We need look no further for the principle of action, in this case, than the spirit of religious bigotry, which led to a similar expulsion of the Jews from England, France, and other parts of Europe, as well as from Portugal, under circumstances of peculiar atrocity, a few years later.<sup>19</sup> Indeed, the spirit of persecution did not expire with the fifteenth century, but extended far into the more luminous periods of the seventeenth and eighteenth; and that, too, under a ruler of the enlarged capacity of Frederick the Great, whose intolerance could not plead in excuse the blindness of fanaticism.<sup>20</sup> How far the banishment of the Jews was con-

<sup>16</sup> Bajazet. See Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. p. 310.—Paramo, *De Origine Inquisitionis*, p. 168.

<sup>17</sup> "In truth," father Abarca somewhat innocently remarks, "King Ferdinand was a politic Christian, making the interests of church and state mutually subservient to each other!" *Reyes de Aragon*, tom. ii. fol. 310.

<sup>18</sup> Once at Toledo, 1480, and at Murcia, 1488. See *Recop. de las Leyes*, lib. 6, tit. 18, ley 1.

<sup>19</sup> The Portuguese government caused all children of fourteen years of age, or under, to be taken from their parents and retained in the country, as fit subjects for a Christian education. The distress occasioned by this cruel provision may be well imagined. Many of the

unhappy parents murdered their children to defeat the ordinance; and many laid violent hands on themselves. Faria y Sousa coolly remarks that "it was a great mistake in King Emanuel to think of converting to Christianity any Jew old enough to pronounce the name of Moses." He fixes three years of age as the utmost limit. (*Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 496.) Mr. Turner has condensed, with his usual industry, the most essential chronological facts relative to modern Jewish history, in a note contained in the second volume of his *History of England*, pp. 114—120.

<sup>20</sup> They were also ejected from Vienna in 1669. The illiberal and indeed most cruel legislation of Frederick II. in reference to his

formable to the opinions of the most enlightened contemporaries, may be gathered from the encomiums lavished on its authors from more than one quarter. Spanish writers, without exception, celebrate it as a sublime sacrifice of all temporal interests to religious principle. The best-instructed foreigners, in like manner, however they may condemn the details of its execution or commiserate the sufferings of the Jews, commend the act, as evincing the most lively and laudable zeal for the true faith.<sup>21</sup>

It cannot be denied that Spain at this period surpassed most of the nations of Christendom in religious enthusiasm, or, to speak more correctly, in bigotry. This is doubtless imputable to the long war with the Moslems, and its recent glorious issue, which swelled every heart with exultation, disposing it to consummate the triumphs of the Cross by purging the land from a heresy which, strange as it may seem, was scarcely less detested than that of Mahomet. Both the sovereigns partook largely of these feelings. With regard to Isabella, moreover, it must be borne constantly in mind, as has been repeatedly remarked in the course of this history, that she had been used to surrender her own judgment in matters of conscience to those spiritual guardians who were supposed in that age to be its rightful depositaries, and the only casuists who could safely determine the doubtful line of duty. Isabella's pious disposition, and her trembling solicitude to discharge her duty at whatever cost of personal inclination, greatly enforced the precepts of education. In this way, her very

Jewish subjects transports us back to the darkest periods of the Visigothic monarchy. The reader will find a summary of these enactments in the third volume of Milman's agreeable History of the Jews.

<sup>21</sup> The accomplished and amiable Florentine, Pico di Mirandola, in his treatise on Judicial Astrology, remarks that "the sufferings of the Jews, in which the glory of divine justice delighted, were so extreme as to fill us Christians with commiseration." The Genoese historian Sena-

rega, indeed, admits that the measure savoured of *some slight degree of cruelty*: "*Res hæc primo conspectu laudabilis visa est, quia decus nostræ Religionis respiceret, sed aliquantulum in se crudelitatis continere, si eos non belluas, sed homines a Deo creatos, consideravimus.*" De Rebus Genuensibus, apud Muratori, *Berum Ital. Script.*, tom. xxiv.—*Illeascas*, Hist. Pontif., apud Paramo, De Origine Inquisitionis, p. 167.



virtues became the source of her errors. Unfortunately, she lived in an age and station which attached to these errors the most momentous consequences.<sup>22</sup> — But we gladly turn from these dark prospects to a brighter page of her history.

<sup>22</sup> Illorente sums up his account of the expulsion by assigning the following motives to the principal agents in the business. "The measure," he says, "may be referred to the fanaticism of Torquemada, to the avarice and superstition of Fer-

dinand, to the false ideas and inconsiderate zeal with which they had inspired Isabella, to whom history cannot refuse the praise of great sweetness of disposition and an enlightened mind." *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 7, sec. 10.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### ATTEMPTED ASSASSINATION OF FERDINAND.—RETURN AND SECOND VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

1492—1493.

*Attempt on Ferdinand's Life.—Consternation and Loyalty of the People.—Return of Columbus.—His Progress to Barcelona.—Interviews with the Sovereigns.—Sensations caused by the Discovery.—Regulation of Trade.—Conversion of the Natives.—Famous Bulls of Alexander VI.—Jealousy of Portugal.—Second Voyage of Columbus.—Treaty of Tordesillas.*

TOWARDS the latter end of May, 1492, the Spanish sovereigns quitted Granada, between which and Santa Fe they had divided their time since the surrender of the Moorish metropolis. They were occupied during the two following months with the affairs of Castile. In August they visited Aragon, proposing to establish their winter residence there, in order to provide for its internal administration and conclude the negotiations for the final surrender of Roussillon and Cerdagne by France, to which these provinces had been mortgaged by Ferdinand's father, John the Second; proving ever since a fruitful source of diplomacy, which threatened more than once to terminate in open rupture.

Ferdinand and Isabella arrived in Aragon on the 8th of August, accompanied by Prince John and the infantas and a brilliant train of Castilian nobles. In their progress through the country they were everywhere received with the most lively enthusiasm. The whole nation seemed to abandon itself to jubilee at the approach of its illustrious sovereigns, whose heroic constancy had rescued Spain from the detested empire of the Saracens. After devoting some months to the internal police of the kingdom, the court transferred its residence to Catalonia, whose capital

it reached about the middle of October. During its detention in this place, Ferdinand's career was wellnigh brought to an untimely close.<sup>1</sup>

It was a good old custom of Catalonia, long since fallen into desuetude, for the monarch to preside in the tribunals of justice at least once a week, for the purpose of determining the suits of the poorer classes especially, who could not afford the more expensive forms of litigation. King Ferdinand, in conformity with this usage, held a court in the house of deputation, on the 7th of December, being the vigil of the Conception of the Virgin. At noon, as he was preparing to quit the palace, after the conclusion of business, he lingered in the rear of his retinue, conversing with some of the officers of the court. As the party was issuing from a little chapel contiguous to the royal saloon, and just as the king was descending a flight of stairs, a ruffian darted from an obscure recess in which he had concealed himself early in the morning, and aimed a blow with a short sword, or knife, at the back of Ferdinand's neck. Fortunately the edge of the weapon was turned by a gold chain or collar which he was in the habit of wearing. It inflicted, however, a deep wound between the shoulders. Ferdinand instantly cried out, "St. Mary preserve us! treason! treason!" and his attendants, rushing on the assassin, stabbed him in three places with their poniards, and would have despatched him on the spot, had not the king, with his usual presence of mind, commanded them to desist, and take the man alive, that they might ascertain the real authors of the conspiracy. This was done accordingly, and Ferdinand, fainting with loss of blood, was carefully removed to his apartments in the royal palace.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. v. fol. 13. —Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 28.

<sup>2</sup> Zurita, *Anales*, tom. v. fol. 15. —Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 116. —Garibay, *Compendio*, tom. ii. pp. 678, 679. —Ábarca, *Reyes de Aragón*, tom. ii. fol. 315. —Cárbajal, *Anales*, MS., año 1492. —Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat.

1, quinc. 4, dial. 9. —A brief account of this event, with a very long and ostentatious commentary on its enormity, is to be found in a rare and curious old volume, entitled "Los Tratados del Doctor Alonso Ortiz," printed at Seville in 1493, the same year with the intended assassination. The writer, a canon of the metropolitan church of To-

The report of the catastrophe spread like wildfire through the city. All classes were thrown into consternation by so foul an act, which seemed to cast a stain on the honour and good faith of the Catalans. Some suspected it to be the work of a vindictive Moor, others of a disappointed courtier. The queen, who had swooned on first receiving intelligence of the event, suspected the ancient enmity of the Catalans, who had shown such determined opposition to her husband in his early youth. She gave instant orders to hold in readiness one of the galleys lying in the port, in order to transport her children from the place, as she feared the conspiracy might be designed to embrace other victims.<sup>3</sup>

The populace, in the mean while, assembled in great numbers round the palace where the king lay. All feelings of hostility had long since given way to devoted loyalty towards a government which had uniformly respected the liberties of its subjects, and whose paternal sway had secured similar blessings to Barcelona with the rest of the empire. They thronged round the building, crying out that the king was slain, and demanding that his murderers should be delivered up to them. Ferdinand, exhausted as he was, would have presented himself at the window of his apartment, but was prevented from making the effort by his physicians. It was with great difficulty that the people were at length satisfied that he was still living, and that they finally consented to disperse, on the assurance that the assassin should be brought to condign punishment.

The king's wound, which did not appear dangerous at

ledo, pours forth a flood of eloquence on this occasion, in a discourse addressed to the Catholic sovereign, which, whatever merit it may have in a rhetorical point of view, bears abundant testimony to his loyalty.

<sup>3</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 125.—Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 116.—Abarca, *Reyes de Aragon*, ubi supra.—The great bell of Velilla, whose miraculous tolling always announced some dis-

aster to the monarchy, was heard to strike at the time of this assault on Ferdinand, being the fifth time since the subversion of the kingdom by the Moors. The fourth was on the assassination of the inquisitor Arbues. All which is established by a score of good orthodox witnesses, as reported by Dr. Diego Dormer, in his *Discursos varios*, pp. 206, 207.

first, gradually exhibited more alarming symptoms. One of the bones was found to be fractured, and a part of it was removed by the surgeons. On the seventh day his situation was considered extremely critical. During this time the queen was constantly by his side, watching with him day and night, and administering all his medicines with her own hand. At length, the unfavourable symptoms yielded; and his excellent constitution enabled him so far to recover, that in less than three weeks he was able to show himself to the eyes of his anxious subjects, who gave themselves up to a delirium of joy, offering thanksgivings and grateful oblations in the churches; while many a pilgrimage, which had been vowed for his restoration to health, was performed by the good people of Barcelona, with naked feet, and even on their knees, among the wild sierras that surround the city.

The author of the crime proved to be a peasant, about sixty years of age, of that humble class, *de remenza*, as it was termed, which Ferdinand had been instrumental some few years before in releasing from the baser and more grinding pains of servitude. The man appeared to be insane; alleging, in vindication of his conduct, that he was the rightful proprietor of the crown, which he expected to obtain by Ferdinand's death. He declared himself willing, however, to give up his pretensions, on condition of being set at liberty. The king, convinced of his alienation of mind, would have discharged him; but the Catalans, indignant at the reproach which such a crime seemed to attach to their own honour, and perhaps distrusting the plea of insanity, thought it necessary to expiate it by the blood of the offender, and condemned the unhappy wretch to the dreadful doom of a traitor; the preliminary barbarities of the sentence, however, were remitted, at the intercession of the queen.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>4</sup> *Tratados del Doctor Alonso Ortiz, Tratado primero* — L. Marinero, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 186. — Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 125, 127, 131. — Zurita, *Anales*, tom.

v. fol. 16. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., loc. cit. — Garibay, after harrowing the reader's feelings with half a column of inhuman cruelties inflicted on the miserable man, con-

In the spring of 1493, while the court was still at Barcelona, letters were received from Christopher Columbus, announcing his return to Spain, and the successful achievement of his great enterprise, by the discovery of land beyond the western ocean. The delight and astonishment raised by this intelligence were proportioned to the scepticism with which his project had been originally viewed. The sovereigns were now filled with a natural impatience to ascertain the extent and other particulars of the important discovery; and they transmitted instant instructions to the admiral to repair to Barcelona as soon as he should have made the preliminary arrangements for the further prosecution of his enterprise.<sup>5</sup>

The great navigator had succeeded, as is well known, after a voyage the natural difficulties of which had been much augmented by the distrust and mutinous spirit of his followers, in descrying land on Friday, the 12th of October, 1492. After some months spent in exploring the delightful regions now for the first time thrown open to the eyes of a European, he embarked in the month of January, 1493, for Spain. One of his vessels had previously foundered, and another had deserted him; so that he was left alone to retrace his course across the Atlantic. After a most tempestuous voyage, he was compelled to take shelter in the Tagus, sorely against his inclination.<sup>6</sup> He experi-

cludes with the comfortable assurance, "Pero ahogaronle primero por clemencia y misericordia de la Reyna." (Compendio, tom. ii. lib. 19, cap. 1.) A letter written by Isabella to her confessor, Fernando de Talavera, during her husband's illness, shows the deep anxiety of her own mind, as well as that of the citizens of Barcelona, at his critical situation, furnishing abundant evidence, if it were needed, of her tenderness of heart and the warmth of her conjugal attachment. See *Correspondencia epistolar*, apud *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 13.

<sup>5</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 2, cap. 3.—Muñoz, *Hist.*

*del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 4, sect. 13, 14.—Columbus concludes a letter addressed, on his arrival at Lisbon, to the treasurer Sanchez, in the following glowing terms: "Let processions be made, festivals held, temples filled with branches and flowers, for Christ rejoices on earth as in heaven, seeing the future redemption of souls. Let us rejoice, also, for the temporal benefit likely to result, not merely to Spain, but to all Christendom." See *Primer Viage de Colon*, apud Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. i.

<sup>6</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, tom. i. dec. 1, lib. 2, cap. 2.—*Primer Viage de Colon*, apud Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. i.—

enced, however, the most honourable reception from the Portuguese monarch, John the Second, who did ample justice to the great qualities of Columbus, although he had failed to profit by them.<sup>7</sup> After a brief delay, the admiral resumed his voyage, and, crossing the bar of Saltes, entered the harbour of Palos about noon on the 15th of March, 1493, being exactly seven months and eleven days since his departure from that port.<sup>8</sup>

Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 39.—The Portuguese historian, Faria y Sousa, appears to be nettled at the prosperous issue of the voyage; for he testily remarks that “the admiral entered Lisbon with a vainglorious exultation, in order to make Portugal feel, by displaying the tokens of his discovery, how much she had erred in not acceding to his propositions.” *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. pp. 462, 463.

<sup>7</sup> My learned friend Mr. John Pickering has pointed out to me a passage in a Portuguese author giving some particulars of Columbus's visit to Portugal. The passage, which I have not seen noticed by any writer, is extremely interesting, coming, as it does, from a person high in the royal confidence, and an eye-witness of what he relates. “In the year 1493, on the sixth day of March, arrived in Lisbon Christopher Columbus, an Italian, who came from the discovery, made under the authority of the sovereigns of Castile, of the islands of Cipango and Antilia; from which countries he brought with him the first specimens of the people, as well as of the gold and other things to be found there; and he was entitled admiral of them. The king, being forthwith informed of this, commanded him into his presence; and appeared to be annoyed and vexed, as well from the belief that the said discovery was made within the seas and boundaries of his seigniorship of Guinea,—which might give rise to disputes,—as because the said admiral, having become somewhat haughty by his situation, and in the relation of his adventures always exceeding the bounds of truth, made

this affair, as to gold, silver, and riches, much greater than it was. Especially did the king accuse himself of negligence, in having declined this enterprise, when Columbus first came to ask his assistance, from want of credit and confidence in it. And, notwithstanding the king was importuned to kill him on the spot; since with his death the prosecution of the undertaking, so far as the sovereigns of Castile were concerned, would cease, from want of a suitable person to take charge of it; and notwithstanding this might be done without suspicion of the king's being privy to it,—for inasmuch as the admiral was overbearing and puffed up by his success, they might easily bring it about that his own indiscretion should appear the occasion of his death,—yet the king, as he was a prince greatly fearing God, not only forbade this, but even showed the admiral honour and much favour, and therewith dismissed him.” *Ruy de Pina, Chronica d'el Rei Dom Joao II.*, cap. 66, apud *Collecção de Livros ineditos de Historia Portugueza* (Lisboa, 1790—93), tom. ii.

<sup>8</sup> Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 40, 41.—Charlevoix, *Histoire de S. Domingue* (Paris, 1730), tom. i. pp. 84—90.—*Primer Viage de Colon*, apud Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. i.—*La Clède, Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iv. pp. 53—58.—Columbus sailed from Spain on Friday, discovered land on Friday, and re-entered the port of Palos on Friday. These curious coincidences should have sufficed, one might think, to dispel, especially with American mariners, the superstitious dread, still so preva-

Great was the agitation in the little community of Palos as they beheld the well-known vessel of the admiral re-entering their harbour. Their desponding imaginations had long since consigned him to a watery grave; for, in addition to the preternatural horrors which hung over the voyage, they had experienced the most stormy and disastrous winter within the recollection of the oldest mariners.<sup>9</sup> Most of them had relatives or friends on board. They thronged immediately to the shore, to assure themselves with their own eyes of the truth of their return. When they beheld their faces once more, and saw them accompanied by the numerous evidences which they brought back of the success of the expedition, they burst forth in acclamations of joy and gratulation. They awaited the landing of Columbus, when the whole population of the place accompanied him and his crew to the principal church, where solemn thanksgivings were offered up for their return; while every bell in the village sent forth a joyous peal in honour of the glorious event. The admiral was too desirous of presenting himself before the sovereigns, to protract his stay long at Palos. He took with him on his journey specimens of the multifarious products of the newly-discovered regions. He was accompanied by several of the native islanders, arrayed in their simple barbaric costume, and decorated, as he passed through the principal cities, with collars, bracelets, and other ornaments of gold, rudely fashioned; he exhibited also considerable quantities of the same metal in dust, or in crude masses,<sup>10</sup> numerous vegetable exotics, possessed of aromatic or medicinal virtue, and several kinds of quadrupeds unknown in Europe, and birds whose varieties of gaudy plumage gave a brilliant effect to the pageant. The admiral's progress through the country was everywhere impeded by the multitudes thronging forth to gaze at the

lent, of commencing a voyage on that ominous day.

<sup>9</sup> *Primer Viage de Colon*, Let. 2.

<sup>10</sup> Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 4, sec. 14.—Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 41.—Among other specimens was a lump

of gold of sufficient magnitude to be fashioned into a vessel for containing the host; "thus," says Salazar de Mendoza, "converting the first-fruits of the new dominions to pious uses." *Monarquía*, pp. 351, 352.



extraordinary spectacle, and the more extraordinary man, who, in the emphatic language of that time, which has now lost its force from its familiarity, first revealed the existence of a "New World." As he passed through the busy, populous city of Seville, every window, balcony, and house-top which could afford a glimpse of him is described to have been crowded with spectators. It was the middle of April before Columbus reached Barcelona. The nobility and cavaliers in attendance on the court, together with the authorities of the city, came to the gates to receive him, and escorted him to the royal presence. Ferdinand and Isabella were seated, with their son, Prince John, under a superb canopy of state, awaiting his arrival. On his approach, they rose from their seats, and, extending their hands to him to salute, caused him to be seated before them. These were unprecedented marks of condescension to a person of Columbus's rank, in the haughty and ceremonious court of Castile. It was, indeed, the proudest moment in the life of Columbus. He had fully established the truth of his long-contested theory, in the face of argument, sophistry, sneer, scepticism, and contempt. He had achieved this, not by chance, but by calculation supported through the most adverse circumstances by consummate conduct. The honours paid him, which had hitherto been reserved only for rank, or fortune, or military success, purchased by the blood and tears of thousands, were in his case a homage to intellectual power successfully exerted in behalf of the noblest interests of humanity.<sup>11</sup>

After a brief interval, the sovereigns requested from Columbus a recital of his adventures. His manner was sedate and dignified, but warmed by the glow of natural enthusiasm. He enumerated the several islands which he had visited, expatiated on the temperate character of the

<sup>11</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 133, 134, 140. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 118. — Ferreras, *Hist. d'Espagne*, tom. viii. pp. 141, 142. — Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, ubi supra. —

Zuñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 413. — Gomara, *Hist. de las Indias*, cap. 17. — Benzoni, *Novi Orbis Hist.*, lib. 1, cap. 8, 9. — Gallo, apud Muratori, *Rerum Ital. Script.*, tom. xxiii. p. 203.

climate, and the capacity of the soil for every variety of agricultural production, appealing to the samples imported by him as evidence of their natural fruitfulness. He dwelt more at large on the precious metals to be found in these islands, which he inferred less from the specimens actually obtained, than from the uniform testimony of the natives to their abundance in the unexplored regions of the interior. Lastly, he pointed out the wide scope afforded to Christian zeal, in the illumination of a race of men whose minds, far from being wedded to any system of idolatry, were prepared by their extreme simplicity for the reception of pure and uncorrupted doctrine. The last consideration touched Isabella's heart most sensibly; and the whole audience, kindled with various emotions by the speaker's eloquence, filled up the perspective with the gorgeous colouring of their own fancies, as ambition, or avarice, or devotional feeling predominated in their bosoms. When Columbus ceased, the king and queen, together with all present, prostrated themselves on their knees in grateful thanksgivings, while the solemn strains of the *Te Deum* were poured forth by the choir of the royal chapel, as in commemoration of some glorious victory.<sup>12</sup>

The discoveries of Columbus excited a sensation, particularly among men of science, in the most distant parts of Europe, strongly contrasting with the apathy which had preceded them. They congratulated one another on being reserved for an age which had witnessed the consummation of so grand an event. The learned Martyr, who, in his multifarious correspondence, had not even deigned to notice the preparations for the voyage of discovery, now lavished the most unbounded panegyric on its results; which he contemplated with the eye of a philosopher, having far less reference to considerations of profit or policy than to the prospect which they unfolded of enlarging the boundaries of knowledge.<sup>13</sup> Most of the scholars

<sup>12</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, tom. i. dec. 1, lib. 2, cap. 3.—Mun-  
fiez, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib.

4, sec. 15, 16, 17.—Fernando Colon,  
*Hist. del Almirante*, ubi supra.

<sup>13</sup> In a letter written soon after

of the day, however, adopted the erroneous hypothesis of Columbus, who considered the lands he had discovered as bordering on the eastern shores of Asia, and lying adjacent to the vast and opulent regions depicted in such golden colours by Mandeville and the Poli. This conjecture, which was conformable to the admiral's opinions before undertaking the voyage, was corroborated by the apparent similarity between various natural productions of these islands and of the East. From this misapprehension, the new dominions soon came to be distinguished as the West Indies, an appellation by which they are still recognized in the titles of the Spanish crown.<sup>14</sup>

Columbus, during his residence at Barcelona, continued to receive from the Spanish sovereigns the most honourable distinctions which royal bounty could confer. When Ferdinand rode abroad, he was accompanied by the admiral at his side. The courtiers, in emulation of their master, made

the admiral's return, Martyr announces the discovery to his correspondent, Cardinal Sforza, in the following manner: "Mira res ex eo terrarum orbe, quem sol horarum quatuor et viginti spatio circuit, ad nostra usque tempora, quod minime te latet, trita cognitaque dimidia tantum pars, ab Aurea utpote Chersoneso, ad Gades nostras Hispanas, reliqua vero a cosmographis pro incognita relicta est. Et si quæ mentio facta, ea tenuis et incerta. Nunc autem, o beatum facinus! meorum regum auspiciis, quod latuit hactenus a rerum primordio, intelligi coëptum est." In a subsequent epistle to the learned Pomponio Leto, he breaks out in a strain of warm and generous sentiment: "Præ lætitiâ proiliisse te, vixque a lachrymis præ gaudio temperasse, quando literas adpexisti meas, quibus de Antipodum Orbe latenti hactenus, te certiorum feci, mi suavisime Pomponi, insinuasti. Ex tuis ipse literis colligo, quid senseris. Sensisti autem, tantique rem fecisti, quanti virum summâ doctrinâ insignitum decuit. Quis namque cibus sublimibus præstari potest ingeniis

isto suavior? quod condimentum gravius? a me facio conjecturam. Beari sentio spiritus meos, quando accitos alloquor prudentes aliquos ex his qui ab eâ redeunt provinciâ. Implicent animos pecuniarum cumulis augendis miseri avari, libidinibus obseceni; nostras nos mentes, postquam Deo pleni aliquandiu fuerimus, contemplando, hujusmodi rerum notiâ demulceamus." *Opus Epist.*, epist. 124, 162.

<sup>14</sup> Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 118.—Gallo, apud Muratori, *Rerum Ital. Script.*, tom. xxiii. p. 203.—Gomara, *Hist. de las Indias*, cap. 18.—Peter Martyr seems to have received the popular inference, respecting the identity of the new discoveries with the East Indies, with some distrust: "Insulas reperit plures; has esse, de quibus fit apud cosmographos mentio extra Oceanum Orientalem, adjacentes Indiæ arbitrantur. Nec inficior ego penitus, quamvis sphæræ magnitudo aliter sentire videatur; neque enim desunt qui parvo tractu a finibus Hispanis distare littus Indicum, putent." *Opus Epist.*, epist. 135.

frequent entertainments, at which he was treated with the punctilious deference paid to a noble of the highest class.<sup>15</sup> But the attentions most grateful to his lofty spirit were the preparations of the Spanish court for prosecuting his discoveries on a scale commensurate with their importance. A board was established for the direction of Indian affairs, consisting of a superintendent and two subordinate functionaries. The first of these officers was Juan de Fonseca, archdeacon of Seville, an active, ambitious prelate, subsequently raised to high episcopal preferment, whose shrewdness and capacity for business enabled him to retain the control of the Indian department during the whole of the present reign. An office for the transaction of business was instituted at Seville, and a custom-house placed under its direction at Cadiz. This was the origin of the important establishment of the *Casa de la Contratacion de las Indias*, or India House.<sup>16</sup>

The commercial regulations adopted exhibit a narrow policy in some of their features, for which a justification may be found in the spirit of the age, and in the practice of the Portuguese particularly, but which entered still more largely into the colonial legislation of Spain under later princes. The new territories, far from being permitted free intercourse with foreign nations, were opened only under strict limitations to Spanish subjects, and were reserved, as forming, in some sort, part of the exclusive revenue of the crown. All persons of whatever description were interdicted, under the severest penalties, from trading with or even visiting the Indies without license from the

<sup>15</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 2, cap. 3. — Benzoni, *Novi Orbis Hist.*, lib. 1, cap. 8. — Gomara, *Hist. de las Indias*, cap. 17. — Zúñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 413. — Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, ubi supra. — He was permitted to quarter the royal arms with his own, which consisted of a group of golden islands amid azure billows. To these were afterwards added five anchors, with the celebrated motto, well known as being

carved on his sepulchre. (See Part II. chap. 18.) He received besides, soon after his return, the substantial gratuity of a thousand doblas of gold, from the royal treasury, and the premium of 10,000 maravedis, promised to the person who first descried land. See Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, Col. diplom., nos. 20, 32, 38.

<sup>16</sup> Navarrete, *Ibid.*, tom. ii, Col. diplom., no. 45. — M. fíoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 4, sec. 21.

constituted authorities. It was impossible to evade this, as a minute specification of the ships, cargoes, crews, with the property appertaining to each individual, was required to be taken at the office in Cadiz, and a corresponding registration in a similar office established at Hispaniola. A more sagacious spirit was manifested in the ample provision made of whatever could contribute to the support or permanent prosperity of the infant colony. Grain, plants, the seeds of numerous vegetable products, which in the genial climate of the Indies might be made valuable articles for domestic consumption or export, were liberally furnished. Commodities of every description for the supply of the fleet were exempted from duty. The owners of all vessels throughout the ports of Andalusia were required, by an ordinance somewhat arbitrary, to hold them in readiness for the expedition. Still further authority was given to impress both officers and men, if necessary, into the service. Artisans of every sort, provided with the implements of their various crafts, including a great number of miners for exploring the subterraneous treasures of the new regions, were enrolled in the expedition; in order to defray the heavy charges of which, the government, in addition to the regular resources, had recourse to a loan, and to the sequestrated property of the exiled Jews.<sup>17</sup>

Amid their own temporal concerns, the Spanish sovereigns did not forget the spiritual interests of their new subjects. The Indians who accompanied Columbus to Barcelona had been all of them baptized, being offered up, in the language of a Castilian writer, as the first-fruits of the Gentiles. King Ferdinand and his son, Prince John, stood as sponsors to two of them, who were permitted to take their names. One of the Indians remained attached to the prince's establishment; the residue were sent to Seville, whence, after suitable religious instruction, they were to be returned as missionaries for the propagation of

<sup>17</sup> Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, Col. diplom., nos. 33, 35, 45.—Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib.

2, cap. 4.—Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 4, sec. 21.

the faith among their own countrymen. Twelve Spanish ecclesiastics were also destined to this service; among whom was the celebrated Las Casas,\* so conspicuous afterwards for his benevolent exertions in behalf of the unfortunate natives. The most explicit directions were given to the admiral to use every effort for the illumination of the poor heathen, which was set forth as the primary object of the expedition. He was particularly enjoined "to abstain from all means of annoyance, and to treat them well and lovingly, maintaining a familiar intercourse with them, rendering them all the kind offices in his power, distributing presents of the merchandise and various commodities which their Highnesses had caused to be embarked on board the fleet for that purpose; and finally, to chastise, in the most exemplary manner, all who should offer the natives the slightest molestation." Such were the instructions emphatically urged on Columbus for the regulation of his intercourse with the savages; and their indulgent tenor sufficiently attests the benevolent and rational views of Isabella in religious matters, when not warped by any foreign influence.<sup>18</sup>

Towards the last of May, Columbus quitted Barcelona for the purpose of superintending and expediting the preparations for departure on his second voyage. He was accompanied to the gates of the city by all the nobility and cavaliers of the court. Orders were issued to the different

\* See the original instructions, apud Navarrete, Colección de Viajes, Col. diplom., no. 45.—Muñoz, Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo, lib. 4, sec. 22.—Zuñiga. Annales de Sevilla, p. 413.—L. Marineo eagerly claims the conversion of the natives as the prime object of the expedition with the sovereigns, far outweighing all temporal considerations. The passage is worth quoting, if only to show what egregious blunders a contemporary may make in the re-

lation of events passing, as it were, under his own eyes. "The Catholic sovereigns having subjugated the Canaries, and established Christian worship there, sent *Peter Colon*, with *thirty-five ships*, called *caraels*, and a *great number of men*, to other much larger islands abounding in mines of gold, not so much, however, for the sake of the gold, as for the salvation of the poor heathen natives." Coeas memorables, fol. 161.

\* [This is a mistake, which the author has corrected in the History of the Conquest of Mexico. Las Casas, who was at this time a student, did not embark for the New World till some years later.—ED.]

towns to provide him and his suite with lodgings free of expense. His former commission was not only confirmed in its full extent, but considerably enlarged. For the sake of despatch, he was authorized to nominate to all offices, without application to government; and ordinances and letters patent, bearing the royal seal, were to be issued by him, subscribed by himself or his deputy. He was intrusted, in fine, with such unlimited jurisdiction as showed that, however tardy the sovereigns may have been in granting him their confidence, they were not disposed to stint the measure of it when his deserts were once established.<sup>19</sup>

Soon after Columbus's return to Spain, Ferdinand and Isabella applied to the court of Rome to confirm them in the possession of their recent discoveries and invest them with similar extent of jurisdiction with that formerly conferred on the kings of Portugal. It was an opinion, as ancient perhaps as the crusades, that the pope, as vicar of Christ, had competent authority to dispose of all countries inhabited by heathen nations in favour of Christian potentates. Although Ferdinand and Isabella do not seem to have been fully satisfied of this right, yet they were willing to acquiesce in its assumption in the present instance, from the conviction that the papal sanction would

<sup>19</sup> See copies of the original documents, apud Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. ii., *Cr. diplom.*, nos. 39, 41, 42, 43. — Considering the importance of Columbus's discoveries, and the distinguished reception given to him at Barcelona, one might have expected to find some notice of him in the records of the city. An intelligent friend of mine, Mr. George Sumner, on a visit to that capital, examined these records, as well as the archives of the crown of Aragon, in the hope of meeting with some such account, but in vain. The *dictaria*, or "day-book," of Barcelona records the entrance of the Catholic sovereigns and the heir apparent into the city, on the 14th of November, 1492, in the following

terms: "The king, the queen, and the prince entered to-day the city, and took up their abode in the palace of the bishop of Urgil, in the Calle Ancha." Then follows a description of the shows and rejoicings which took place on the occasion. After this come two other entries: "1493, February 4. The king, the queen, and the prince went to Montserrat." "February 14. The king, the queen, and the prince returned to Barcelona." But not a word is given to the discoverer of a world! And we can only conjecture that the haughty Catalan felt no desire to communicate an event which reflected no glory on him, and the advantages of which were jealously reserved for his Castilian rivals.

most effectually exclude the pretensions of all others, and especially their Portuguese rivals. In their application to the Holy See they were careful to represent their own discoveries as in no way interfering with the rights formerly conceded by it to their neighbours. They enlarged on their services in the propagation of the faith, which they affirmed to be a principal motive of their present operations. They intimated, finally, that, although many competent persons deemed their application to the court of Rome for a title to territories already in their possession to be unnecessary, yet, as pious princes, and dutiful children of the church, they were unwilling to proceed further without the sanction of him to whose keeping its highest interests were intrusted.<sup>20</sup>

The pontifical throne was at that time filled by Alexander the Sixth; a man who, although degraded by unrestrained indulgence of the most sordid appetites, was endowed by nature with singular acuteness as well as energy of character. He lent a willing ear to the application of the Spanish government, and made no hesitation in granting what cost him nothing, while it recognized the assumption of powers which had already begun to totter in the opinion of mankind.

On the 3rd of May, 1493, he published a bull, in which, taking into consideration the eminent services of the Spanish monarchs in the cause of the church, especially in the subversion of the Mahometan empire in Spain, and willing to afford still wider scope for the prosecution of their pious labours, he, "out of his pure liberality, infallible knowledge, and plenitude of apostolic power," confirmed them in the possession of all lands discovered, or hereafter to be discovered, by them in the western ocean, comprehending the same extensive rights of jurisdiction with those formerly conceded to the kings of Portugal.

This bull he supported by another, dated on the following day, in which the pope, in order to obviate any mis-

<sup>20</sup> Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 2, cap. 4.—Muñoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib. 4, sec. 18.



understanding with the Portuguese, and acting, no doubt, on the suggestion of the Spanish sovereigns, defined with greater precision the intention of his original grant to the latter, by bestowing on them all such lands as they should discover to the west and south of an imaginary line, to be drawn from pole to pole, at the distance of one hundred leagues to the west of the Azores and Cape de Verd Islands.<sup>21</sup> It seems to have escaped his Holiness that the Spaniards, by pursuing a western route, might in time reach the eastern limits of countries previously granted to the Portuguese. At least this would appear from the import of a third bull, issued September 25th of the same year, which invested the sovereigns with plenary authority over all countries discovered by them, whether in the East, or within the boundaries of India, all previous concessions to the contrary notwithstanding. With the title derived from actual possession thus fortified by the highest ecclesiastical sanction, the Spaniards might have promised themselves an uninterrupted career of discovery, but for the jealousy of their rivals the Portuguese.<sup>22</sup>

The court of Lisbon viewed with secret disquietude the increasing maritime enterprise of its neighbours. While the Portuguese were timidly creeping along the barren shores of Africa, the Spaniards had boldly launched into the deep, and rescued unknown realms from its embraces, which teemed in their fancies with treasures of inestimable wealth. Their mortification was greatly enhanced by the reflection that all this might have been achieved for themselves, had they but known how to profit by the proposals of Columbus.<sup>23</sup> From the first moment in which the

<sup>21</sup> A point south of the meridian is something new in geometry; yet so says the bull of his Holiness: "Omnes insulas et terras firmas inventas et inveniendas, detectas et detegendas, versus occidentem et meridiem, fabricando et constituendo unam lineam a Polo Arctico, scilicet septentrione, ad Polum Antarcticum, scilicet meridiem."

<sup>22</sup> See the original papal grants,

transcribed by Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, tom. ii., Col. diplom., nos. 17, 18. Appendice al Col. diplom., no. 11.

<sup>23</sup> Padre Abarca considers "that the discovery of a new world, first offered to the kings of Portugal and England, was reserved by Heaven for Spain, being *forced*, in a manner, on Ferdinand, in recompense for the subjugation of the Moors and the

success of the admiral's enterprise was established, John the Second, a politic and ambitious prince, had sought some pretence to check the career of discovery, or at least to share in the spoils of it.<sup>24</sup>

In his interview with Columbus, at Lisbon, he suggested that the discoveries of the Spaniards might interfere with the rights secured to the Portuguese by repeated papal sanctions since the beginning of the present century, and guaranteed by the treaty with Spain in 1479. Columbus, without entering into the discussion, contented himself with declaring that he had been instructed by his own government to steer clear of all Portuguese settlements on the African coast, and that his course indeed had led him in an entirely different direction. Although John professed himself satisfied with the explanation, he soon after despatched an ambassador to Barcelona, who, after dwelling on some irrelevant topics, touched as it were incidentally on the real object of his mission, the late voyage of discovery. He congratulated the Spanish sovereigns on its success, expatiated on the civilities shown by the court of Lisbon to Columbus on his late arrival there, and acknowledged the satisfaction felt by his master at the orders given to the admiral to hold a western course from the Canaries, expressing a hope that the same course would be pursued in future, without interfering with the rights of Portugal by deviation to the south. This was the first occasion on which the existence of such claims had been intimated by the Portuguese.

In the mean while, Ferdinand and Isabella received intelligence that King John was equipping a considerable armament in order to anticipate or defeat their discoveries in the west. They instantly sent one of their household, Don Lope de Herrera, as ambassador to Lisbon, with instructions to make their acknowledgments to the king for his hospitable reception of Columbus, accompanied with a request that he would prohibit his subjects from interfer-

expulsion of the Jews"! Reyes  
de Aragon, fol. 310, 311.

<sup>24</sup> La Clède, Hist. de Portugal,  
tom. iv. pp. 53—58.

ence with the discoveries of the Spaniards in the west, in the same manner as these latter had been excluded from the Portuguese possessions in Africa. The ambassador was furnished with orders of a different import, provided he should find the reports correct respecting the equipment and probable destination of a Portuguese armada. Instead of a conciliatory deportment, he was in that case to assume a tone of remonstrance, and to demand a full explanation from King John of his designs. The cautious prince, who had received, through his secret agents in Castile, intelligence of these latter instructions, managed matters so discreetly as to give no occasion for their exercise. He abandoned, or at least postponed, his meditated expedition, in the hope of adjusting the dispute by negotiation, in which he excelled. In order to quiet the apprehensions of the Spanish court, he engaged to fit out no fleet from his dominions within sixty days; at the same time he sent a fresh mission to Barcelona, with directions to propose an amicable adjustment of the conflicting claims of the two nations, by making the parallel of the Canaries a line of partition between them; the right of discovery to the north being reserved to the Spaniards, and that to the south to the Portuguese.<sup>25</sup>

While this game of diplomacy was going on, the Castilian court availed itself of the interval afforded by its rival, to expedite preparations for the second voyage of discovery; which, through the personal activity of the admiral, and the facilities everywhere afforded him, were fully completed before the close of September. Instead of the reluctance, and indeed avowed disgust, which had been manifested by all classes to his former voyage, the only embarrassment now arose from the difficulty of selection among the multitude of competitors who pressed to be enrolled in the present expedition. The reports and sanguine speculations of the first adventurers had inflamed the cupidity of many,

<sup>25</sup> Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 463.—Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, loc. cit.—Munoz, *Hist. del Nuevo-Mundo*, lib.

4, sec. 27, 28.—Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 606, 607.—La Clède, *Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iv. pp. 53—58.

which was still further heightened by the exhibition of the rich and curious products which Columbus had brought back with him, and by the popular belief that the new discoveries formed part of that gorgeous East

“whose caverns teem  
With diamond flaming, and with seeds of gold,

and which tradition and romance had alike invested with the supernatural splendours of enchantment. Many others were stimulated by the wild love of adventure which had been kindled in the long Moorish war, but which now, excluded from that career, sought other objects in the vast, untravelled regions of the New World. The complement of the fleet was originally fixed at twelve hundred souls, a number eventually swelled through importunity or various pretences of the applicants to fifteen hundred. Among these were many who enlisted without compensation, including several persons of rank, hidalgos, and members of the royal household. The whole squadron amounted to seventeen vessels, three of them of one hundred tons' burden each. With this gallant navy, Columbus, dropping down the Guadalquivir, took his departure from the bay of Cadiz on the 25th of September, 1493; presenting a striking contrast to the melancholy plight in which, but the year previous, he had sallied forth like some forlorn knight-errant on a desperate and chimerical enterprise.<sup>26</sup>

No sooner had the fleet weighed anchor than Ferdinand and Isabella despatched an embassy in solemn state to advise the king of Portugal of it. This embassy was composed of two persons of distinguished rank, Don Pedro de Ayala and Don Garci Lopez de Carbajal. Agreeably to their instructions, they represented to the Portuguese monarch the inadmissibility of his propositions respecting the boundary-line of navigation; they argued that the grants of the Holy See, and the treaty with Spain in 1479,

<sup>26</sup> Zúñiga, *Annales de Sevilla*, p. 413. — Fernando Colon, *Hist. del Almirante*, cap. 44. — Bernaldez, *Reyes Católicos*, MS., cap. 118. —

Peter Martyr, *De Rebus Oceanicis*, dec. 1, lib. 1. — Benzoni, *Novi Orbis Historia*, lib. 1, cap. 9. — Gomara, *Hist. de las Indias*, cap. 20.

had reference merely to the actual possessions of Portugal, and the right of discovery by an eastern route along the coasts of Africa to the Indies; that these rights had been invariably respected by Spain; that the late voyage of Columbus struck into a directly opposite track; and that the several bulls of Pope Alexander the Sixth, prescribing the line of partition, not from east to west, but from the north to the south pole, were intended to secure to the Spaniards the exclusive right of discovery in the western ocean. The ambassadors concluded with offering, in the name of their sovereigns, to refer the whole matter in dispute to the arbitration of the court of Rome, or of any common umpire.

King John was deeply chagrined at learning the departure of the Spanish expedition. He saw that his rivals had been acting, while he had been amused with negotiation. He at first threw out hints of an immediate rupture, and endeavoured, it is said, to intimidate the Castilian ambassadors by bringing them accidentally, as it were, in presence of a splendid array of cavalry, mounted and ready for immediate service. He vented his spleen on the embassy, by declaring that "it was a mere abortion, having neither head nor feet;" alluding to the personal infirmity of Ayala, who was lame, and to the light, frivolous character of the other envoy.<sup>27</sup>

These symptoms of discontent were duly notified to the Spanish government, who commanded the superintendent, Fonseca, to keep a vigilant eye on the movements of the Portuguese, and, in case any hostile armament should quit their ports, to be in readiness to act against it with one double its force. King John, however, was too shrewd a prince to be drawn into so impolitic a measure as war with a powerful adversary, quite as likely to baffle him in the field as in the council. Neither did he relish the suggestion of deciding the dispute by arbitration, since he well knew that his claim rested on too unsound a basis to

<sup>27</sup> *La Clède, Hist. de Portugal, del Nuevo-Mundo, lib. 4, sec. 27, tom. iv. pp. 53—58. — Muñoz, Hist. 28.*

authorize the expectation of a favourable award from any impartial umpire. He had already failed in an application for redress to the court of Rome, which answered him by reference to its bulls, recently published. In this emergency, he came to the resolution at last, which should have been at first adopted, of deciding the matter by a fair and open conference. It was not until the following year, however, that his discontent so far subsided as to allow his acquiescence in this measure.

At length, commissioners named by the two crowns convened at Tordesillas, and on the 7th of June, 1494, subscribed articles of agreement, which were ratified in the course of the same year by the respective powers. In this treaty the Spaniards were secured in the exclusive right of navigation and discovery in the western ocean. At the urgent remonstrance of the Portuguese, however, who complained that the papal line of demarcation cooped up their enterprises within too narrow limits, they consented that, instead of one hundred, it should be removed three hundred and seventy leagues west of the Cape de Verd islands, beyond which all discoveries should appertain to the Spanish nation. It was agreed that one or two caravels should be provided by each nation, to meet at the Grand Canary and proceed due west the appointed distance, with a number of scientific men on board, for the purpose of accurately determining the longitude; and, if any lands should fall under the meridian, the direction of the line should be ascertained by the erection of beacons at suitable distances. The proposed meeting never took place. But the removal of the partition-line was followed by important consequences to the Portuguese, who derived from it their preteusions to the noble empire of Brazil.<sup>28</sup>

Thus the singular misunderstanding, which menaced an open rupture at one time, was happily adjusted. Fortun-

<sup>28</sup> Navarrete, *Coleccion de Viages*, Doc. diplom., no. 75. — Faria y Sousa, *Europa Portuguesa*, tom. ii. p. 463. — Herrera, *Indias occidentales*, dec. 1, lib. 2, cap. 8, 10. —

Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 606, 607. — La Clède, *Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iv. pp. 60 — 62. — Zurita, *Anales*, tom. v. fol. 31.

ately, the accomplishment of the passage round the Cape of Good Hope, which occurred soon afterwards, led the Portuguese in an opposite direction to their Spanish rivals, their Brazilian possessions having too little attractions, at first, to turn them from the splendid path of discovery thrown open in the East. It was not many years, however, before the two nations, by pursuing opposite routes of circumnavigation, were brought into collision on the other side of the globe; a circumstance never contemplated, apparently, by the treaty of Tordesillas. Their mutual pretensions were founded, however, on the provisions of that treaty, which, as the reader is aware, was itself only supplementary to the original bull of demarcation of Alexander the Sixth.<sup>29</sup> Thus this bold stretch of papal authority, so often ridiculed as chimerical and absurd, was in a measure justified by the event, since it did, in fact, determine the principles on which the vast extent of unappropriated empire in the eastern and western hemispheres was ultimately divided between two petty states of Europe.

\* The contested territory was the Molucca islands, which each party claimed for itself, by virtue of the treaty of Tordesillas. After more than one congress, in which all the cosmographical science of the day was put in requisition, the affair was terminated *à l'amiable* by the Spanish government's relinquishing

its pretensions, in consideration of 350,000 ducats paid by the court of Lisbon. See La Clède, *Hist. de Portugal*, tom. iv. pp. 309, 401, 402, 480. — Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. pp. 607, 875. — Salazar de Mendoza, *Monarquía*, tom. ii. pp. 205, 206.

## CHAPTER XIX.

### CASTILIAN LITERATURE.—CULTIVATION OF THE COURT.— CLASSICAL LEARNING.—SCIENCE.

Early Education of Ferdinand.—Of Isabella.—Her Library.—Early Promise of Prince John.—Scholarship of the Nobles.—Accomplished Women.—Classical Learning.—Universities.—Printing introduced.—Encouraged by the Queen.—Actual Progress of Science.

WE have now arrived at the period when the history of Spain becomes incorporated with that of the other states of Europe. Before embarking on the wide sea of European politics, however, and bidding adieu, for a season, to the shores of Spain, it will be necessary, in order to complete the view of the internal administration of Ferdinand and Isabella, to show its operation on the intellectual culture of the nation. This, as it constitutes, when taken in its broadest sense, a principal end of all government, should never be altogether divorced from any history. It is particularly deserving of note in the present reign, which stimulated the active development of the national energies in every department of science, and which forms a leading epoch in the ornamental literature of the country. The present and the following chapter will embrace the mental progress of the kingdom, not merely down to the period at which we have arrived, but through the whole of Isabella's reign, in order to exhibit as far as possible its entire results, at a single glance, to the eye of the reader.

We have beheld, in a preceding chapter, the auspicious literary promise afforded by the reign of Isabella's father, John the Second of Castile. Under the anarchical sway of his son, Henry the Fourth, the court, as we have seen, was abandoned to unbounded license, and the whole nation sunk into a mental torpor from which it was roused only



by the tumults of civil war. In this deplorable state of things, the few blossoms of literature which had begun to open under the benign influence of the preceding reign were speedily trampled under foot, and every vestige of civilization seemed in a fair way to be effaced from the land.

The first years of Ferdinand and Isabella's government were too much clouded by civil dissensions to afford a much more cheering prospect. Ferdinand's early education, moreover, had been greatly neglected. Before the age of ten, he was called to take part in the Catalan wars. His boyhood was spent among soldiers, in camps instead of schools, and the wisdom which he so eminently displayed in later life was drawn far more from his own resources than from books.<sup>1</sup>

Isabella was reared under more favourable auspices; at least more favourable to mental culture. She was allowed to pass her youth in retirement, and indeed oblivion, as far as the world was concerned, under her mother's care, at Arevalo. In this modest seclusion, free from the engrossing vanities and vexations of court life, she had full leisure to indulge the habits of study and reflection to which her temper naturally disposed her. She was acquainted with several modern languages,\* and both wrote and discoursed in her own with great precision and elegance. No great expense or solicitude, however, appears to have been lavished on her education. She was uninstructed in the Latin, which in that day was of greater importance than at present; since it was not only the common medium of communication between learned men, and the language in which the most familiar treatises were often composed, but was frequently used by well-educated foreigners at court,

<sup>1</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 3. 15.

\* [Bergenroth says that Ferdinand and Isabella, though they wrote Spanish well, "*seem* to have been unable to understand any other language." (*Letters and Despatches*, vol. i., introd., p. xxxv.) No evidence is adduced to support this conclusion—or conjecture; nor is any notice taken of the evidence by which, in Isabella's case, it is clearly refuted.—ED.]

and especially employed in diplomatic intercourse and negotiation.<sup>2</sup>

Isabella resolved to repair the defects of education, by devoting herself to the acquisition of the Latin tongue, so soon as the distracting wars with Portugal which attended her accession were terminated. We have a letter from Pulgar, addressed to the queen soon after that event, in which he inquires concerning her progress, intimating his surprise that she can find time for study amidst her multitude of engrossing occupations, and expressing his confidence that she will acquire the Latin with the same facility with which she had already mastered other languages. The result justified his prediction; for "in less than a year," observes another contemporary, "her admirable genius enabled her to obtain a good knowledge of the Latin language, so that she could understand without much difficulty whatever was written or spoken in it."<sup>3</sup>

Isabella inherited the taste of her father, John the Second, for collecting books. She endowed the convent of San Juan de los Reyes at Toledo, at the time of its foundation, 1477, with a library consisting principally of manuscripts.<sup>4</sup> The Archives of Simancas contain cata-

<sup>2</sup> L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 164, 182.

<sup>3</sup> Carro de las Doñas, lib. 2, cap. 62 et seq., apud Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 21.—Pulgar, *Letras* (Amstelodami, 1670), let. 11.—L. Marineo, *Cosas memorables*, fol. 182.—It is sufficient evidence of her familiarity with the Latin, that the letters addressed to her by her confessor seem to have been written in that language and the Castilian indifferently, exhibiting occasionally a curious patchwork in the alternate use of each in the same epistle. See *Correspondencia epistolar*, apud Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 13.

<sup>4</sup> Previous to the introduction of printing, collections of books were necessarily very small and thinly scattered, owing to the extreme cost of manuscripts. The learned

Saez has collected some curious particulars relative to this matter. The most copious library which he could find any account of in the middle of the fifteenth century was owned by the counts of Benavente, and contained not more than one hundred and twenty volumes. Many of these were duplicates; of Livy alone there were eight copies. The cathedral churches in Spain rented their books every year by auction to the highest bidders, whence they derived a considerable revenue. It would appear from a copy of Gratian's *Canons*, preserved in the Celestine monastery in Paris, that the copyist was engaged twenty-one months in transcribing that manuscript. At this rate, the production of four thousand copies by one hand would require nearly eight thousand years, a work now easily

logues of part of two separate collections belonging to her, whose broken remains have contributed to swell the magnificent library of the Escorial. Most of them are in manuscript; the richly-coloured and highly-decorated binding of these volumes (an art which the Spaniards derived from the Arabs) shows how highly they were prized, and the worn and battered condition of some of them proves that they were not kept merely for show.<sup>5</sup>

The queen manifested the most earnest solicitude for the instruction of her own children. Her daughters were endowed by nature with amiable dispositions, that seconded her maternal efforts. The most competent masters, native and foreign, especially from Italy, then so active in the revival of ancient learning, were employed in their tuition. This was particularly intrusted to two brothers, Antonio and Alessandro Geraldino, natives of that country. Both were conspicuous for their abilities and classical erudition, and the latter, who survived his brother Antonio, was subsequently raised to high ecclesiastical preferments.<sup>6</sup> Under

performed in less than four months. Such was the tardiness in multiplying copies before the invention of printing. Two thousand volumes may be procured now at a price which in those days would hardly have sufficed to purchase fifty. See *Tratado de Monedas de Enrique III.*, apud Moratin, *Obras*, ed. de la Acad. (Madrid, 1830), tom. i. pp. 91, 92. But does not Moratin draw his conclusions from extreme cases?

<sup>5</sup> Navagiero, *Viaggio fatto in Spagna et in Francia* (Vinegia, 1563), fol. 23.—*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. llust. 17.—The larger collection comprised about two hundred and one articles, or distinct works. Of these, about a third is taken up with theology, comprehending Bibles, psalters, missals, lives of saints, and works of the Fathers; one-fifth, civil law and the municipal code of Spain; one-fourth, ancient classics, modern literature, and romances of chivalry; one-tenth, history; the residue is devoted to ethics, medicine, gram-

mar, astrology, &c. The only Italian author, besides Leonardo Bruno d'Arezzo, is Boccaccio. The works of the latter writer consisted of the "*Fiammetta*," the treatises "*De Casibus Illustrium Virorum*," and "*De Claris Mulieribus*," and probably the "*Decameron*;" the first in the Italian, and the three last translated into the Spanish. It is singular that neither of Boccaccio's great contemporaries, Dante and Petrarch, the former of whom had been translated by Villena, and imitated by Juan de Mena, half a century before, should have found a place in the collection.

<sup>6</sup> Antonio, the eldest, died in 1488. Part of his Latin poetical works, entitled "*Sacred Bucolics*," was printed in 1505, at Salamanca. The younger brother, Alessandro, after bearing arms in the Portuguese war, was subsequently employed in the instruction of the infantas, finally embraced the ecclesiastical state, and died bishop of St. Domingo, in 1525. *Mem. de la Acad.*

these masters, the infantas made attainments rarely permitted to the sex, and acquired such familiarity with the Latin tongue especially as excited lively admiration among those over whom they were called to preside in riper years.<sup>7</sup>

A still deeper anxiety was shown in the education of her only son, Prince John, heir of the united Spanish monarchies. Every precaution was taken to train him up in a manner that might tend to the formation of a character suited to his exalted station. He was placed in a class consisting of ten youths, selected from the sons of the principal nobility. Five of them were of his own age, and five of riper years, and they were all brought to reside with him in the palace. By this means it was hoped to combine the advantages of public with those of private education ; which last, from its solitary character, necessarily excludes the subject of it from the wholesome influence exerted by bringing the powers into daily collision with antagonists of a similar age.<sup>8</sup>

A mimic council was also formed on the model of a

de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 16.—Tiraboschi, *Letteratura Italiana*, tom. vi. part. 2, p. 285.

The learned Valencian, Luis Vives, in his treatise "*De Christianâ Femina*," remarks, "*Ætas nostra quatuor illas Isabellæ reginæ filias, quas paullo ante memoravi, erudititas vidit. Non sine laudibus et admiratione refertur mihi passim in hac terrâ Joannam, Philippi conjugem, Caroli hujus matrem, ex tempore latinis orationibus, quæ de more apud novos principes oppidatim habentur, latine respondisse. Idem de reginâ suâ, Joannæ sorore, Britanni prædicant; idem omnes de duabus aliis, quæ in Lusitaniâ fato concessere.*" (*De Christianâ Femina*, cap. 4, apud *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Ilust. 16.)—It appears, however, that Isabella was not inattentive to the more humble accomplishments, in the education of her daughters. "*Regina*," says the same author, "*nerè,*

*suere, ac pingere quatuor filias suas doctas esse voluit.*" Another contemporary, the author of the *Carro de las Doñas* (lib. 2, cap. 62, apud *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, Ilust. 21), says, "*She educated her son and daughters, giving them masters of life and letters, and surrounding them with such persons as tended to make them vessels of election, and kings in heaven.*" Erasmus notices the literary attainments of the youngest daughter of the sovereigns, the unfortunate Catharine of Aragon, with unqualified admiration. In one of his letters he styles her "*egregie doctam*;" and in another he remarks, "*Regina non tantum in sexus miraculum literata est; nec minus pietate suscipienda, quam eruditione.*" *Epistolæ* (Londini, 1642), lib. 19, epist. 31; lib. 2, epist. 24.

<sup>8</sup> Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., dial. de Deza.—*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Ilust. 14.

council of state, composed of suitable persons of more advanced standing, whose province it was to deliberate on, and to discuss, topics connected with government and public policy. Over this body the prince presided, and here he was initiated into a practical acquaintance with the important duties which were to devolve on him at a future period of life. The pages in attendance on his person were also selected with great care from the cavaliers and young nobility of the court, many of whom afterwards filled with credit the most considerable posts in the state. The severer discipline of the prince was relieved by attention to more light and elegant accomplishments. He devoted many of his leisure hours to music, for which he had a fine natural taste, and in which he attained sufficient proficiency to perform with skill on a variety of instruments. In short, his education was happily designed to produce that combination of mental and moral excellence which should fit him for reigning over his subjects with benevolence and wisdom. How well the scheme succeeded is abundantly attested by the commendations of contemporary writers, both at home and abroad, who enlarge on his fondness for letters and for the society of learned men, on his various attainments, and more especially his Latin scholarship, and above all on his disposition, so amiable as to give promise of the highest excellence in maturer life,—a promise, alas! most unfortunately for his own nation, destined never to be realized \*

Next to her family, there was no object which the queen had so much at heart as the improvement of the young nobility. During the troubled reign of her predecessor

\* Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 14.—Juan de la Encina, in the dedication to the prince of his translation of Virgil's *Bucolics*, pays the following compliment to the enlightened and liberal taste of Prince John: "Favoresceis tanto la sciencia andando acompañado de tantos e tan doctísimos varones, que no menos dejareis perdurable memoria de haber alargado e estendido

los límites e términos de la sciencia que los del imperio." The extraordinary promise of this young prince made his name known in distant parts of Europe, and his untimely death, which occurred in the twentieth year of his age, was commemorated by an epitaph of the learned Greek exile, Constantine Lascaris.

they had abandoned themselves to frivolous pleasure, or to a sullen apathy from which nothing was potent enough to arouse them but the voice of war.<sup>10</sup> She was obliged to relinquish her plans of amelioration during the all-engrossing struggle with Granada, when it would have been esteemed a reproach for a Spanish knight to have exchanged the post of danger in the field for the effeminate pursuit of letters. But no sooner was the war brought to a close than Isabella resumed her purpose. She requested the learned Peter Martyr, who had come into Spain with the count of Tendilla a few years previous, to repair to the court and open a school there for the instruction of the young nobility.<sup>11</sup> In an epistle addressed by Martyr to Cardinal Mendoza, dated at Granada, April, 1492, he alludes to the promise of a liberal recompense from the queen if he would assist in reclaiming the young cavaliers of the court from the idle and unprofitable pursuits in which, to her great mortification, they consumed their hours. The prejudices to be encountered seemed to have filled him with natural distrust of his success; for he remarks, "Like their ancestors, they hold the pursuit of letters in light estimation, considering them an obstacle to success in the profession of arms, which alone they esteem worthy of honour." He, however, expresses his confidence that the generous nature of the Spaniards will make it easy to infuse into them a more liberal taste; and in a subsequent letter he enlarges on the "good effects likely to result from the literary ambition exhibited by the heir apparent, on whom the eyes of the nation were naturally turned."<sup>12</sup>

Martyr, in obedience to the royal summons, instantly

<sup>10</sup> "Aficionados á la guerra," says Oviedo, speaking of some young nobles of his time, "*por su Española y natural inclinacion.*" Quincuagenas, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 36.

<sup>11</sup> For some account of this eminent Italian scholar, see the postscript to Part I. chap. 14, of this History.

<sup>12</sup> Peter Martyr, Opus Epist.,

epist. 102, 103.—Lucio Marineo, in a discourse addressed to Charles V., thus notices the queen's solicitude for the instruction of her young nobility: "Isabella præsertim Regina magnanima, virtutum omnium maxima cultrix. Quæ quidem multis et magnis occupata negotiis, ut aliis exemplum præberet, a primis grammaticæ rudimentis studere cœpit, et omnes suæ domûs adoles-

repaired to court, and in the month of September following we have a letter dated from Saragossa, in which he thus speaks of his success: "My house, all day long, swarms with noble youths, who, reclaimed from ignoble pursuits to those of letters, are now convinced that these, so far from being a hindrance, are rather a help in the profession of arms. I earnestly inculcate on them that consummate excellence in any department, whether of war or peace, is unattainable without science. It has pleased our royal mistress, the pattern of every exalted virtue, that her own near kinsman, the duke of Guimaraens, as well as the young duke of Villahermosa, the king's nephew, should remain under my roof during the whole day; an example which has been imitated by the principal cavaliers of the court, who, after attending my lectures in company with their private tutors, retire at evening to review them with these latter in their own quarters."<sup>13</sup>

Another Italian scholar, often cited as authority in the preceding portion of this work, Lucio Marineo Siculo, co-operated with Martyr in the introduction of a more liberal scholarship among the Castilian nobles. He was born at Bedino, in Sicily, and, after completing his studies at Rome under the celebrated Pomponio Leto, opened a school in his native island, where he continued to teach for five years. He was then induced to visit Spain, in 1486, with the admiral Henriquez, and soon took his place among the professors of Salamanca, where he filled the chairs of poetry and grammar with great applause for twelve years. He was subsequently transferred to the court, which he helped to illumine by his exposition of the ancient classics, particularly the Latin.<sup>14</sup> Under the

*centes utriusque sexûs nobilium liberos, præceptoribus liberaliter et honorifice conductis erudiendos commendabat.*" *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. Apend. 16.—See also Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 38.

<sup>13</sup> Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 115.

<sup>14</sup> A particular account of Marineo's writings may be found in Nic. Antonio. (*Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. ii., Apend. p. 369.) The most important of these is his work "*De Rebus Hispaniæ Memorabilibus*," often cited, in the Castilian, in this History. It is a rich repository of details respecting the geography,

auspices of these and other eminent scholars, both native and foreign, the young nobility of Castile shook off the indolence in which they had so long rusted, and applied with generous ardour to the cultivation of science; so that, in the language of a contemporary, "while it was a most rare occurrence to meet with a person of illustrious birth, before the present reign, who had even studied Latin in his youth, there were now to be seen numbers every day who sought to shed the lustre of letters over the martial glory inherited from their ancestors." <sup>15</sup>

The extent of this generous emulation may be gathered from the large correspondence both of Martyr and Marineo with their disciples, including the most considerable persons of the Castilian court; it may be still further inferred from the numerous dedications to these persons of contemporary publications, attesting their munificent patronage of literary enterprise; <sup>16</sup> and still more unequivocally

statistics, and manners of the Peninsula, with a copious historical notice of events in the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella. The author's insatiable curiosity, during a long residence in the country, enabled him to collect many facts of a kind that do not fall within the ordinary compass of history; while his extensive learning, and his familiarity with foreign models, peculiarly qualified him for estimating the institutions he describes. It must be confessed he is sufficiently partial to the land of his adoption. The edition referred to in this work is in black letter, printed before, or soon after, the author's death (the date of which is uncertain), in 1539, at Alcalá de Henares, by Juan Brocar, one of a family long celebrated in the annals of Castilian printing. Marineo's prologue concludes with the following noble tribute to letters: "Porque todos los otros bienes son sujetos a la fortuna y mudables y en poco tiempo mudan muchos dueños passando de unos señores en otros, mas los dones de letras y hystorias que se ofrescen para perpetuidad de memoria y fama son

immortales y prorgan y guardan para siempre la memoria assi de los que los reciben, como de los que los ofrescen."

<sup>15</sup> Sepulveda, Democrites, apud Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 16.—Signorelli, Coltura nelle Sicilie, tom. iv. p. 318.—Tiraboschi, Letteratura Italiana, tom. vii. part. 3, lib. 3, cap. 4.—Comp. Lampillas, Saggio storico-apologetico de la Letteratura Spagnuola (Genova, 1778), tom. ii. dia. 2, sec. 5.—The patriotic abate is greatly scandalized by the degree of influence which Tiraboschi and other Italian critics ascribe to their own language over the Castilian, especially at this period. The seven volumes in which he has discharged his bile on the heads of the offenders afford valuable materials for the historian of Spanish literature. Tiraboschi must be admitted to have the better of his antagonist in temper, if not in argument.

<sup>16</sup> Among these we find copious translations from the ancient classics, as Cæsar, Appian, Plutarch, Plautus, Sallust, Æsop, Justin, Boëthius, Apuleius, Herodian, affording strong evidence of the



from the zeal with which many of the highest rank entered on such severe literary labour as few, from the mere love of letters, are found willing to encounter. Don Gutierre de Toledo, son of the duke of Alva, and a cousin of the king, taught in the university of Salamanca. At the same place, Don Pedro Fernandez de Velasco, son of the count of Haro, who subsequently succeeded his father in the hereditary dignity of grand constable of Castile, read lectures on Pliny and Ovid. Don Alfonso de Manrique, son of the count of Paredes, was professor of Greek in the university of Alcalá. All ages seemed to catch the generous enthusiasm; and the marquis of Denia, although turned of sixty, made amends for the sins of his youth, by learning the elements of the Latin tongue at this late period. In short, as Giovio remarks in his eulogium on Lebrija, "No Spaniard was accounted noble who held science in indifference." From a very early period, a courtly stamp was impressed on the poetic literature of Spain. A similar character was now imparted to its erudition; and men of the most illustrious birth seemed eager to lead the way in the difficult career of science, which was thrown open to the nation.<sup>17</sup>

In this brilliant exhibition those of the other sex must not be omitted, who contributed by their intellectual endowments to the general illumination of the period. Among them, the writers of that day lavish their panegyrics on the marchioness of Monteagudo, and Doña Maria Pacheco, of the ancient house of Mendoza, sisters of the historian Don Diego Hurtado,<sup>18</sup> and daughters of the ac-

activity of the Castilian scholars in this department. *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. pp. 406, 407.—Mendez, *Typographia Española*, pp. 133, 139.

"Salazar de Mendoza, *Dignidades*, cap. 21.—Lucio Marineo Siculo, in his discourse above alluded to, in which he exhibits the condition of letters under the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella, enumerates the names of the nobility most conspicuous for their scholarship.

This valuable document was to be found only in the edition of Marineo's work, "*De Rebus Hispaniæ Memorabilibus*," printed at Alcalá in 1630, whence it has been transferred by Clemencin to the sixth volume of the *Memoirs of the Royal Academy of History*.

"His work "*Guerra de Granada*" was first published at Madrid, in 1610, and "may be compared," says Nic. Antonio, in a judgment which has been ratified by the gen-

complished count of Tendilla,<sup>19</sup> who, while ambassador at Rome, induced Martyr to visit Spain, and who was grandson of the famous marquis of Santillana, and nephew of the grand cardinal.<sup>20</sup> This illustrious family, rendered yet more illustrious by its merits than its birth, is worthy of specification, as affording altogether the most remarkable combination of literary talent in the enlightened court of Castile. The queen's instructor in the Latin language was a lady named Doña Beatriz de Galindo, called from her peculiar attainments *la Latina*. Another lady, Doña Lucia de Medrano, publicly lectured on the Latin classics in the university of Salamanca; and another, Doña Francisca de Lebrija, daughter of the historian of that name, filled the chair of rhetoric with applause at Alcalá. But our limits will not allow a further enumeration of names, which should never be permitted to sink into oblivion, were it only for the rare scholarship, peculiarly rare in the female sex, which they displayed in an age comparatively unenlightened.<sup>21</sup> Female education in that day embraced a wider compass of erudition, in reference to the ancient languages, than is common at present; a circumstance attributable, probably, to the poverty of modern literature at

eral consent of his countrymen, "with the compositions of Sallust or any other ancient historian." His poetry and his celebrated *picaresco* novel, "*Lazarillo de Tormes*," have made an epoch in the ornamental literature of Spain.

"Oviedo has devoted one of his dialogues to this nobleman, equally distinguished by his successes in arms, letters, and love; the last of which, according to that writer, he had not entirely resigned at the age of seventy. — *Quincuagenas*, MS., bat. 1, quinc. 1, dial. 28.

"For an account of Santillana, see the first chapter of this History. The cardinal, in early life, is said to have translated for his father the *Æneid*, the *Odyssey*, Ovid, Valerius Maximus, and Sallust. (*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 16.) This herculean feat would put modern schoolboys to shame; and we

may suppose that partial versions only of these authors are intended.

"*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. vi. *Ilust.* 18.—Oviedo, *Quincuagenas*, MS., dial. de Grizio. — Señor Clemencin has examined with much care the intellectual culture of the nation under Isabella, in the sixteenth *Ilustracion* of his work. He has touched lightly on its poetical character, considering, no doubt, that this had been sufficiently developed by other critics. His essay, however, is rich in information in regard to the scholarship and severer studies of the period. The reader who would pursue the inquiry still further may find abundant materials in Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Vetus*, tom. ii. lib. 10, cap. 13 et seq. — *Idem*, *Bibliotheca Hispana Nova* (Matriti, 1783—8), tom. i. ii., *passim*.

that time, and the new and general appetite excited by the revival of classical learning in Italy. I am not aware, however, that it was usual for learned ladies, in any other country than Spain, to take part in the public exercises of the gymnasium and deliver lectures from the chairs of the universities.\* This peculiarity, which may be referred in part to the influence of the queen, who encouraged the love of study by her own example, as well as by personal attendance on the academic examinations, may have been also suggested by a similar usage, already noticed, among the Spanish Arabs.<sup>22</sup>

While the study of the ancient tongues came thus into fashion with persons of both sexes and of the highest rank, it was widely and most thoroughly cultivated by professed scholars. Men of letters, some of whom have been already noticed, were invited into Spain from Italy, the theatre at that time on which, from obvious local advantages, classical discovery was pursued with greatest ardour and success. To this country it was usual also for Spanish students to repair, in order to complete their discipline in classical literature, especially the Greek, as first taught on sound principles of criticism by the learned exiles from Constantinople. The most remarkable of the Spanish scholars who made this literary pilgrimage to Italy was Antonio de Lebrija, or Nebrissensis, as he is more frequently called from his Latin name.<sup>23</sup> After ten years passed at Bologna and other seminaries of repute, with particular attention to their interior discipline, he returned, in 1473, to his native land, richly laden with the stores of various erudition. He was invited to fill the Latin chair at Seville, whence he was successively transferred to Salamanca and Alcalá, both of which places he long continued to enlighten by

\* See Part I. chap. 8, of this History. the postscript to Part I. chap. 11, of this History.

<sup>22</sup> For a notice of this scholar, see

\* [The two examples cited in the text do not show that the practice was "usual" in Spain; while at least one earlier instance in another country—the famous Novella d'Andrea, of Bologna—will be recollected by most readers.—ED.]

his oral instruction and publications. The earliest of these was his *Introducciones Latinas*, the third edition of which was printed in 1485, being four years only from the date of the first; a remarkable evidence of the growing taste for classical learning. A translation in the vernacular accompanied the last edition, arranged, at the queen's suggestion, in columns parallel with those of the original text; a form which, since become common, was then a novelty.<sup>24</sup> The publication of his Castilian grammar, "*Grammatica Castellana*," followed in 1492; a treatise designed particularly for the instruction of the ladies of the court. The other productions of this indefatigable scholar embrace a large circle of topics, independently of his various treatises on philology and criticism. Some were translated into French and Italian, and their republication was continued to the last century. No man of his own or of later times contributed more essentially than Lebrija to the introduction of a pure and healthful erudition into Spain. It is not too much to say that there was scarcely an eminent Spanish scholar in the beginning of the sixteenth century who had not formed himself on the instructions of this master.<sup>25</sup>

Another name worthy of commemoration is that of Arias Barbosa, a learned Portuguese, who, after passing some

<sup>24</sup> Mendez, *Typographia Española*, pp. 271, 272.—In the second edition, published in 1482, the author states that no work of the time had a greater circulation, more than a thousand copies of it having been disposed of, at a high price, in the preceding year. *Ibid.*, p. 237.

<sup>25</sup> Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. i. pp. 132—139.—Lampillas, *Letteratura Spagnuola*, tom. ii. dis. 2, sec. 3.—*Diálogo de las Lenguas*, apud Mayans y Siscar, *Orígenes* (Madrid, 1737), tom. ii. pp. 46, 47.—Lucio Marineo pays the following elegant compliment to this learned Spaniard, in his discourse before quoted: "Amisit nuper Hispania maximum sui cultorem in re litteraria, Antonium

Nebrissensem, qui primus ex Italiâ in Hispaniam Musas adduxit, quibuscum barbariem ex sua patria fugavit, et Hispaniam totam linguæ Latinæ lectionibus illustravit." "Meruerat id," says Gomez de Castro of Lebrija, "et multo majora hominis eruditio, cui Hispania debet, quicquid habet bonarum litterarum." The acute author of the "*Diálogo de las Lenguas*," while he renders ample homage to Lebrija's Latin erudition, disputes his critical acquaintance with his own language, from his being a native of Andalusia, where the Castilian was not spoken with purity: "Habla y escrivia como en el Andalucía y no como en la Castilla." p. 92. See also pp. 9, 10, 46, 53.

years, like Lebrija, in the schools of Italy, where he studied the ancient tongues under the guidance of Politiano, was induced to establish his residence in Spain. In 1489 we find him at Salamanca, where he continued for twenty, or, according to some accounts, forty, years, teaching in the departments of Greek and rhetoric. At the close of that period he returned to Portugal, where he superintended the education of some of the members of the royal family, and survived to a good old age. Barbosa was esteemed inferior to Lebrija in extent of various erudition, but as having surpassed him in an accurate knowledge of the Greek, and poetical criticism. In the former, indeed, he seems to have obtained a greater repute than any Spanish scholar of the time. He composed some valuable works, especially on ancient prosody. The unwearied assiduity and complete success of his academic labours have secured to him a high reputation among the restorers of ancient learning, and especially that of reviving a livelier relish for the study of the Greek, by conducting it on principles of pure criticism, in the same manner as Lebrija did with the Latin.<sup>26</sup>

The scope of the present work precludes the possibility of a copious enumeration of the pioneers of ancient learning, to whom Spain owes so large a debt of gratitude.<sup>27</sup>

<sup>26</sup> Barbosa, *Bibliotheca Lusitana* (Lisboa occidental, 1741), tom. i. pp. 76—78.—Signorelli, *Coltura nelle Sicilie*, tom. iv. pp. 315—321.—Mayans y Siscar, *Orígenes*, tom. i. p. 173.—Lampillas, *Letteratura Spagnuola*, tom. ii. dia. 2, sec. 5.—Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. i. pp. 170, 171.

<sup>27</sup> Among these are particularly deserving of attention the brothers John and Francis Vergara, professors at Alcalá, the latter of whom was esteemed one of the most accomplished scholars of the age; Núñez de Guzmán, of the ancient house of that name, professor for many years at Salamanca and Alcalá, and the author of the Latin version in the famous Polyglot of Cardinal Ximenes; he left behind

him numerous works, especially commentaries on the classics; Olivario, whose curious erudition was abundantly exhibited in his illustrations of Cicero and other Latin authors; and, lastly, Vives, whose fame belongs rather to Europe than his own country, and who, when only twenty-six years old, drew from Erasmus the encomium that "there was scarcely any one of the age whom he could venture to compare with him in philosophy, eloquence, and liberal learning." But the most unequivocal testimony to the deep and various scholarship of the period is afforded by that stupendous literary work of Cardinal Ximenes, the Polyglot Bible, whose versions in the Greek, Latin, and Oriental tongues were collated,

The Castilian scholars of the close of the fifteenth and the beginning of the sixteenth century may take rank with their illustrious contemporaries of Italy. They could not, indeed, achieve such brilliant results in the discovery of the remains of antiquity, for such remains had been long scattered and lost amid the centuries of exile and disastrous warfare consequent on the Saracen invasion. But they were unwearied in their illustrations, both oral and written, of the ancient authors; and their numerous commentaries, translations, dictionaries, grammars, and various works of criticism, many of which, though now obsolete, passed into repeated editions in their own day, bear ample testimony to the generous zeal with which they conspired to raise their contemporaries to a proper level for contemplating the works of the great masters of antiquity, and well entitled them to the high eulogium of Erasmus, that "liberal studies were brought, in the course of a few years, in Spain to so flourishing a condition as might not only excite the admiration, but serve as a model to the most cultivated nations of Europe."<sup>28</sup>

The Spanish universities were the theatre on which this classical erudition was more especially displayed. Previous to Isabella's reign, there were but few schools in the kingdom; not one, indeed, of any note, except in Salamanca; and this did not escape the blight which fell on every generous study. But under the cheering patronage of the present government they were soon filled and widely multiplied. Academies of repute were to be found in Seville, Toledo, Salamanca, Granada, and Alcalá; and learned teachers were drawn from abroad by the most liberal emoluments. At the head of these establishments stood "the illustrious city of Salamanca," as Marineo fondly terms it, "mother of all liberal arts and virtues, alike renowned for noble cavaliers and learned men."<sup>29</sup> Such

with a single exception, by Spanish scholars. Erasmus, *Epistolæ*, lib. 19, epist. 101.—Lampillas, *Letteratura Spagnuola*, tom. ii. pp. 382—384, 495, 792—794; tom. ii. p. 208

et seq.—Gomez, *De Rebus gestis*, fol. 37.

<sup>28</sup> Erasmus, *Epistolæ*, p. 977.

<sup>29</sup> "La muy esclarecida ciudad de Salamanca, madre de las artes

was its reputation that foreigners as well as natives were attracted to its schools, and at one time, according to the authority of the same professor, seven thousand students were assembled within its walls. A letter of Peter Martyr to his patron the count of Tendilla gives a whimsical picture of the literary enthusiasm of this place. The throng was so great to hear his introductory lecture on one of the Satires of Juvenal that every avenue to the hall was blockaded, and the professor was borne in on the shoulders of the students. Professorships in every department of science then studied, as well as of polite letters, were established at the university, the "new Athens," as Martyr somewhere styles it. Before the close of Isabella's reign, however, its glories were rivalled, if not eclipsed, by those of Alcalá;<sup>30</sup> which combined higher advantages for ecclesiastical with civil education, and which, under the splendid patronage of Cardinal Ximenes, executed the famous Polyglot version of the Scriptures, the most stupendous literary enterprise of that age.<sup>31</sup>

This active cultivation was not confined to the dead languages, but spread more or less over every department of knowledge. Theological science, in particular, received a large share of attention. It had always formed a principal object of academic instruction, though suffered to languish under the universal corruption of the preceding

liberales, y todas virtudes, y ansi de cavalleros como de letrados varones, muy ilustre." *Cosas memorables*, fol. 11.—Chacon, *Hist. de la Universidad de Salamanca*, apud *Semanario erudito*, tom. xviii. pp. 1—61.

<sup>30</sup> "Academia Complutensis," says Erasmus of this university, "non aliunde celebritatem nominis auspicata est quam a complectendo linguas ac bonas literas. Cujus præcipuum ornamentum est egregius ille senex, planèque dignus, qui multos vincat Nestoras, Antonius Nebrissensis." *Epist. ad Ludovicum Vivem*, 1521, *Epistolæ*, p. 755.

<sup>31</sup> *Cosas memorables*, ubi supra.

—Peter Martyr, *Opus Epist.*, epist. 57.—Gomez, *De Rebus gestis*, lib. 4.—Chacon, *Universidad de Salamanca*, ubi supra.—It appears that the practice of scraping with the feet as an expression of disapprobation, familiar in our universities, is of venerable antiquity; for Martyr mentions that he was saluted with it before finishing his discourse by one or two idle youths, dissatisfied with its length. The lecturer, however, seems to have given general satisfaction, for he was escorted back in triumph to his lodgings, to use his own language, "like a victor in the Olympic games," after the conclusion of the exercise.

reign. It was so common for the clergy to be ignorant of the most elementary knowledge, that the council of Aranda found it necessary to pass an ordinance, the year before Isabella's accession, that no person should be admitted to orders who was ignorant of Latin. The queen took the most effectual means for correcting this abuse, by raising only competent persons to ecclesiastical dignities. The highest stations in the church were reserved for those who combined the highest intellectual endowments with unblemished piety. Cardinal Mendoza, whose acute and comprehensive mind entered with interest into every scheme for the promotion of science, was archbishop of Toledo; Talavera, whose hospitable mansion was itself an academy for men of letters, and whose princely revenues were liberally dispensed for their support, was raised to the see of Granada; and Ximenes, whose splendid literary projects will require more particular notice hereafter, succeeded Mendoza in the primacy of Spain. Under the protection of these enlightened patrons, theological studies were pursued with ardour, the Scriptures copiously illustrated, and sacred eloquence cultivated with success.

A similar impulse was felt in the other walks of science. Jurisprudence assumed a new aspect under the learned labours of Montalvo.<sup>32</sup> The mathematics formed a principal branch of education, and were successfully applied to astronomy and geography. Valuable treatises were produced on medicine, and on the more familiar practical arts, as husbandry, for example.<sup>33</sup> History, which since the time of Alfonso the Tenth had been held in higher honour and more widely cultivated in Castile than in any other European state, began to lay aside the garb of chronicle and to be studied on more scientific principles. Charters and diplomas were consulted, manuscripts col-

<sup>32</sup> For some remarks on the labours of this distinguished jurist-consult, see Part I. chap. 6, and Part II. chap. 26, of the present work.

<sup>33</sup> The most remarkable of these

latter is Herrera's treatise on Agriculture, which, since its publication in Toledo in 1520, has passed through a variety of editions at home and translations abroad. Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. i. p. 503.



lated, coins and lapidary inscriptions deciphered, and collections made of these materials, the true basis of authentic history; and an office of public archives, like that now existing at Simancas, was established at Burgos, and placed under the care of Alonso de Mota, as keeper, with a liberal salary.<sup>34</sup>

Nothing could have been more opportune for the enlightened purposes of Isabella than the introduction of the art of printing into Spain at the commencement, indeed in the very first year, of her reign. She saw, from the first moment, all the advantages which it promised for diffusing and perpetuating the discoveries of science. She encouraged its establishment, by large privileges to those who exercised it, whether natives or foreigners, and by causing many of the works composed by her subjects to be printed at her own charge.<sup>35</sup>

Among the earlier printers we frequently find the names of Germans,—a people who to the original merits of the discovery may justly add that of its propagation among every nation of Europe. We meet with a *pragmática*, or royal ordinance, dated in 1477, exempting a German, named Theodoric, from taxation, on the ground of being “one of the principal persons in the discovery and practice of the art of printing books, which he had brought with him into Spain at great risk and expense, with the design of ennobling the libraries of the kingdom.”<sup>36</sup> Monopolies for printing and selling books for a limited period, answering to the modern copyright, were granted to certain persons in consideration of their doing so at a reasonable rate.<sup>37</sup> It seems to have been usual for the printers to be also the publishers and venders of books. These exclusive

<sup>34</sup> This collection, with the ill luck which has too often befallen such repositories in Spain, was burnt in the war of the Communities, in the time of Charles V. Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. Ilust. 16.—Morales, Obras, tom. vii. p. 18.—Informe de Riol, who particularly notices the solicitude of Ferdinand

and Isabella for preserving the public documents.

<sup>35</sup> Mendez, *Typographia Española*, p. 51.

<sup>36</sup> Archivo de Murcia, apud Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. vi. p. 244.

<sup>37</sup> Mendez, *Typographia Española*, pp. 52, 332.

privileges, however, do not appear to have been carried to a mischievous extent. Foreign books, of every description, by a law of 1480, were allowed to be imported into the kingdom free of all duty whatever; an enlightened provision, which might furnish a useful hint to legislators of the nineteenth century.<sup>38</sup>

The first press appears to have been erected at Valencia, in 1474; although the glory of precedence is stoutly contested by several places, and especially by Barcelona.<sup>39</sup> The first work printed was a collection of songs composed for a poetical contest in honour of the Virgin, for the most part in the Limousin or Valencian dialect.<sup>40</sup> In the following year the first ancient classic, being the works of Sallust, was printed; and in 1478 there appeared from the same press a translation of the Scriptures in the Limousin, by father Boniface Ferrer, brother of the famous Dominican, St. Vincent Ferrer.<sup>41</sup> Through the liberal patronage of the government, the art was widely diffused; and before the end of the fifteenth century presses were established and in active operation in the principal cities of the united kingdom; in Toledo, Seville, Ciudad Real, Granada, Valladolid, Burgos, Salamanca, Zamora, Saragossa, Valencia, Barcelona, Monte Rey, Lerida, Murcia, Tolosa, Tarragona, Alcalá de Henares, and Madrid.

<sup>38</sup> Ordenanças Reales, lib. 4, tit. 4, ley 22.—The preamble of this statute is expressed in the following enlightened terms: "Considerando los Reyes de gloriosa memoria quanto era provechoso y honroso, que a estos sus reynos se truxessen libros de otras partes para que con ellos se hiziesen los hombres letrados, quisieron y ordenaron, que de los libros no se pagasse el alcavala. . . . Lo qual parece que reunda en provecho universal de todos, y en ennoblecimiento de nuestros Reynos."

<sup>39</sup> Capmany, Mem. de Barcelona, tom. i. part. 2, lib. 2, cap. 6.—Mendez, *Typographia Española*, pp. 55, 93.—Bouterwek intimates that the art of printing was first

practised in Spain by German printers at Seville, in the *beginning of the sixteenth century*. (*Geschichte der Poesie und Beredsamkeit* (Göttingen, 1801—17), Band iii. S. 98.) —He appears to have been misled by a solitary example quoted from Mayans y Sisear. The want of materials has more than once led this eminent critic to build sweeping conclusions on slender premises.

<sup>40</sup> The title of the book is "Certamen poetich en lohor de la Concecio," Valencia, 1474, 4to. The name of the printer is wanting. Mendez, *Typographia Española*, p. 56.

<sup>41</sup> Mendez, *Typographia Española*, pp. 61—63.

It is painful to notice amidst the judicious provisions for the encouragement of science, one so entirely repugnant to their spirit as the establishment of the censorship. By an ordinance dated at Toledo, July 8th, 1502, it was decreed that, "as many of the books sold in the kingdom were defective, or false, or apocryphal, or pregnant with vain and superstitious novelties, it was therefore ordered that no book should hereafter be printed without special license from the king, or some person regularly commissioned by him for the purpose." The names of the commissioners then follow, consisting mostly of ecclesiastics, archbishops and bishops, with authority respectively over their several dioceses.<sup>42</sup> This authority was devolved in later times, under Charles the Fifth and his successors, on the Council of the Supreme, over which the inquisitor-general presided *ex officio*. The immediate agents employed in the examination were also drawn from the Inquisition, who exercised this important trust, as is well known, in a manner most fatal to the interests of letters and humanity. Thus a provision destined in its origin for the advancement of science, by purifying it from the crudities and corruptions which naturally infect it in a primitive age, contributed more effectually to its discouragement than any other which could have been devised, by interdicting the freedom of expression so indispensable to freedom of inquiry.<sup>43</sup>

While endeavouring to do justice to the progress of civilization in this reign, I should regret to present to the reader an overcoloured picture of its results. Indeed, less emphasis should be laid on any actual results than on the

<sup>42</sup> Mendez, *Typographia Española*, pp. 52, 53.—*Pragmáticas del Reyno*, fol. 138, 139.

<sup>43</sup> Llorente, *Hist. de l'Inquisition*, tom. i. chap. 13, art. 1.—"Adempto per inquisitiones," says Tacitus of the gloomy times of Domitian, "et loquendi audiendique commercio." (*Vita Agricola*, sect. 2.) Beaumarchais, in a merrier vein, indeed, makes the same bitter reflections: "Il s'est établi dans Madrid un système de liberté sur la vente des

productions, qui s'étend même à celles de la presse; et que, pourvu que je ne parle en mes écrits ni de l'autorité, ni de culte, ni de la politique, ni de la morale, ni des gens en place, ni des corps en crédit, ni de l'Opéra, ni des autres spectacles, ni de personne qui tienne à quelque chose, je puis tout imprimer librement, sous l'inspection de deux ou trois censeurs." *Mariage de Figaro*, acte 5, sc. 3.

spirit of improvement which they imply in the nation, and the liberal dispositions of the government. The fifteenth century was distinguished by a zeal for research and laborious acquisition, especially in ancient literature, throughout Europe, which showed itself in Italy in the beginning of the age, and in Spain, and some other countries, towards the close. It was natural that men should explore the long-buried treasures which had descended from their ancestors, before venturing on anything of their own creation. Their efforts were eminently successful; and, by opening an acquaintance with the immortal productions of ancient literature, they laid the best foundation for the cultivation of the modern.

In the sciences, their success was more equivocal. A blind reverence for authority, a habit of speculation instead of experiment,—so pernicious in physics,—in short, an ignorance of the true principles of philosophy, often led the scholars of that day in a wrong direction. Even when they took a right one, their attainments, under all these impediments, were necessarily so small as to be scarcely perceptible, when viewed from the brilliant heights to which science has arrived in our own age. Unfortunately for Spain, its subsequent advancement has been so retarded that a comparison of the fifteenth century with those which succeeded it is by no means so humiliating to the former as in some other countries of Europe; and it is certain that in general intellectual fermentation no period has surpassed, if it can be said to have rivalled, the age of Isabella.

## CHAPTER XX.

### CASTILIAN LITERATURE.—ROMANCES OF CHIVALRY.— LYRICAL POETRY.—THE DRAMA.

This Reign an Epoch in Polite Letters.—Romances of Chivalry.—Ballads or *Romances*.—Moorish Minstrelsy.—“*Cancionero general*.”—Its Literary Value.—Rise of the Spanish Drama.—Criticism on “*Celestina*.”—*Encina*.—*Naharro*.—Low Condition of the Stage.—National Spirit of the Literature of this Epoch.

ORNAMENTAL or polite literature, which, emanating from the taste and sensibility of a nation, readily exhibits its various fluctuations of fashion and feeling, was stamped in Spain with the distinguishing characteristics of this revolutionary age. The Provençal, which reached such high perfection in Catalonia, and subsequently in Aragon, as noticed in an introductory chapter,<sup>1</sup> expired with the union of this monarchy with Castile, and the dialect ceased altogether to be applied to literary purposes after the Castilian became the language of the court in the united kingdoms. The poetry of Castile, which throughout the present reign continued to breathe the same patriotic spirit and to exhibit the same national peculiarities that had distinguished it from the time of the *Cid*, submitted soon after Ferdinand's death to the influence of the more polished Tuscan, and henceforth, losing somewhat of its distinctive physiognomy, assumed many of the prevalent features of continental literature. Thus the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella becomes an epoch as memorable in literary as in civil history.

The most copious vein of fancy, in that day, was turned in the direction of the prose romance of chivalry, now seldom disturbed, even in its own country, except by the

<sup>1</sup> Eichhorn, *Geschichte der Kultur und Litteratur der neueren Europa* (Göttingen, 1796—1811),

pp. 129, 130.—See also the conclusion of the Introduction, Sec. 2, of this History.

antiquary. The circumstances of the age naturally led to its production. The romantic Moorish wars,—teeming with adventurous exploit and picturesque incident, carried on with the natural enemies of the Christian knight, and opening moreover all the legendary stores of Oriental fable,—the stirring adventures by sea as well as land, above all, the discovery of a world beyond the waters, whose unknown regions gave full scope to the play of the imagination, all contributed to stimulate the appetite for the incredible chimeras, the *magnanime menzogne*, of chivalry. The publication of “Amadis de Gaula” gave a decided impulse to this popular feeling. This romance, which seems now well ascertained to be the production of a Portuguese in the latter half of the fourteenth century,<sup>2</sup> was first printed in a Spanish version, probably not far from 1490.<sup>3</sup> Its editor, Garci Ordoñez de Montalvo, states in his prologue that “he corrected it from the ancient originals, pruning it of all

<sup>2</sup> Nic. Antonio seems unwilling to relinquish the pretensions of his own nation to the authorship of this romance. (See *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. ii. p. 394.) Later critics, and among them Lampillas (*Ensayo histórico-apologético de la Literatura Española*, tom. v. p. 168), who resigns no more than he is compelled to do, are less disposed to contest the claims of the Portuguese. Mr. Southey has cited two documents, one historical, the other poetical, which seem to place its composition by Lobeira in the latter part of the fourteenth century beyond any reasonable doubt. (See *Amadis de Gaul*, pref.,—also Sarmiento, *Memorias para la Historia de la Poesía y Poetas Españoles*, *Obras posthumas* (Madrid, 1775), tom. i. p. 239.) Bouterwek, and after him Sismondi, without adducing any authority, have fixed the era of Lobeira's death at 1325. Dante, who died but four years previous to that date, furnishes a negative argument, at least, against this, since in his notice of some of the best names in chivalry then known, he makes no allusion to Amadis, the best of all

Of *Inferno*, cantos v., xxxi., xxxii.; also *De Vulgari Eloquentia*, cap. 10.

<sup>3</sup> The excellent old romance “*Tirante the White*,” *Tirant lo Blanch*, was printed at Valencia in 1490. (See Mendez, *Typographia Española*, tom. i. pp. 72—75.) If, as Cervantes asserts, the “*Amadis*” was the first book of chivalry printed in Spain, it must have been anterior to this date. This is rendered probable by Montalvo's prologue to his edition at Saragossa, in 1521, still preserved in the royal library at Madrid, where he alludes to his former publication of it in the time of Ferdinand and Isabella. (Cervantes, *Don Quixote*, ed. Pellicer, *Discurso preliminar*.)—Mr. Dunlop, who has analyzed these romances with a patience that more will be disposed to commend than imitate, has been led into the error of supposing that the first edition of the “*Amadis*” was printed at Seville, in 1526, from detached fragments appearing in the time of Ferdinand and Isabella, and subsequently by Montalvo, at Salamanca, in 1547. See *History of Prose Fiction*, vol. ii. chap. 10.

superfluous phrases, and substituting others of a more polished and elegant style."<sup>4</sup> How far its character was benefited by this work of purification may be doubted; although it is probable it did not suffer so much by such a process as it would have done in a later and more cultivated period. The simple beauties of this fine old romance, its bustling incidents, relieved by the delicate play of Oriental machinery, its general truth of portraiture, above all, the knightly character of the hero, who graced the prowess of chivalry with a courtesy, modesty, and fidelity unrivalled in the creations of romance, soon recommended it to popular favour and imitation. A continuation, bearing the title of "*Las Sergas de Esplandian*," was given to the world by Montalvo himself, and grafted on the original stock, as the fifth book of the *Amadis*, before 1510. A sixth, containing the adventures of his nephew, was printed at Salamanca in the course of the last-mentioned year; and thus the idle writers of the day continued to propagate dulness through a series of heavy tomes, amounting in all to four-and-twenty books, until the much-abused public would no longer suffer the name of *Amadis* to cloak the manifold sins of his posterity.<sup>5</sup> Other knights-errant were

<sup>4</sup> The following is Montalvo's brief prologue to the introduction of the first book: "Aqui comienza el primero libro del esforçado et virtuoso cauallero Amadis hijo del rey Perion de Gaula: y dela reyna Elisena: el qual fue coregido y emendado por el honrado y virtuoso cauallero Garciorodofes de Montalvo, regidor dela noble uilla de Medina del campo; et corregiolo delos antiguos originales que estauan corruptos, et compuestos en antiguo estilo: por falta delos diferentes escriptores. Quitando muchas palabras superfluas: et poniendo otras de mas polido y elegante estilo: tocantes ala caualleria et actos della, animando los coraçones gentiles de manzebos belicosos que con grandissimo affetto abrazan el arte dela milicia corporal animando la immortal memoria del arte de caual-

leria no menos honestissimo que glorioso." *Amadis De Gaula* (Venecia, 1533), fol. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Nic. Antonio enumerates the editions of thirteen of this doughty family of knights-errant. (*Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. ii. pp. 394, 395.) He dismisses his notice with the reflection, somewhat more charitable than that of *Don Quixote's* curate, that "he had felt little interest in investigating these fables, yet was willing to admit, with others, that their reading was not wholly useless." Moratin has collected an appalling catalogue of *part* of the books of chivalry published in Spain at the close of the fifteenth and in the following century. The first on the list is the *Carcel de Amor*, por Diego Hernandez de San Pedro, en Burgos, año de 1496. *Obras*, tom. i. pp. 98—98.

sent roving about the world at the same time, whose exploits would fill a library; but fortunately they have been permitted to pass into oblivion, from which a few of their names only have been rescued by the caustic criticism of the curate in *Don Quixote*; who, it will be remembered, after declaring that the virtues of the parent shall not avail his posterity, condemns them and their companions, with one or two exceptions only, to the fatal funeral pile.<sup>6</sup>

These romances of chivalry must have undoubtedly contributed to nourish those exaggerated sentiments which from a very early period entered into the Spanish character. Their evil influence, in a literary view, resulted less from their improbabilities of situation, which they possessed in common with the inimitable Italian epics, than from the false pictures which they presented of human character, familiarizing the eye of the reader with such models as debauched the taste and rendered him incapable of relishing the chaste and sober productions of art. It is remarkable that the chivalrous romance, which was so copiously cultivated through the greater part of the sixteenth century, should not have assumed the poetic form, as in Italy, and indeed among our Norman ancestors; and that in its prose dress no name of note appears to raise it to a high degree of literary merit. Perhaps such a result might have been achieved, but for the sublime parody of Cervantes, which cut short the whole race of knights-errant, and, by the fine irony which it threw around the mock heroes of chivalry, extinguished them for ever.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Cervantes, *Don Quixote*, tom. i. part. 1, cap. 6.—The curate's wrath is very emphatically expressed: "Pues vayan todos al corral, dixo el Cura, que a trueco de quemar a la reyna Pintiquiniestra, y al pastor Darinel y a sus eglogas, y a las endiabladas y revueltas razones de su autor, quemara con ellos al padre que me engendro si andubiera en figura de caballero andante." The author of the "*Diálogo de las Lenguas*" chimes in with the same tone of criticism. "Los quales," he says, speaking of books of chivalry,

"de mas da ser mentirossissimos, son tal mal compuestos, assi por dezir las mentiras tan desvergonçadas, como por tener el estilo desbaraçado, que no ay buen estomago que lo pueda leer." Apud Mayans y Siscar, *Origenes*, tom. ii. p. 158.

<sup>7</sup> The labours of Bowles, Rios, Arrieta, Pellicer, and Navarrete would seem to have left little to desire in regard to the illustration of Cervantes. But the commentaries of Clemencin, published since this chapter was written, in 1833, show how much yet remained to be



The most popular poetry of this period, that springing from the body of the people, and most intimately addressed to it, is the ballads, or *romances*, as they are termed in Spain. These, indeed, were familiar to the Peninsula as far back as the twelfth and thirteenth centuries; but in the present reign they received a fresh impulse from the war with Granada, and composed, under the name of the Moorish ballads, what may perhaps be regarded, without too high praise, as the most exquisite popular minstrelsy of any age or country.

The humble narrative lyrics making up the mass of ballad poetry, and forming the natural expression of a simple state of society, would seem to be most abundant in nations endowed with keen sensibilities, and placed in situations of excitement and powerful interest fitted to develop them. The light and lively French have little to boast of in this way.<sup>8</sup> The Italians, with a deeper poetic feeling, were too early absorbed in the gross business habits of trade, and their literature received too high a direction from its master spirits at its very commencement, to allow any considerable deviation in this track. The countries where it has most thriven are probably Great Britain and Spain. The English and the Scotch, whose constitutionally pensive and even melancholy temperament has been deepened by the sober complexion of the climate, were led to the cultivation of this poetry still further by the stirring scenes of feudal warfare in which they were engaged, espe-

supplied. They afford the most copious illustrations, both literary and historical, of his author, and exhibit that nice taste in verbal criticism which is not always joined with such extensive erudition. Unfortunately, the premature death of Clemencin has left the work unfinished; but the fragment completed, which reaches to the close of the First Part, is of sufficient value permanently to associate the name of its author with that of the greatest genius of his country.

<sup>8</sup> The fabliaux cannot fairly be

considered as an exception to this. These graceful little performances, the work of professed bards, who had nothing further in view than the amusement of a listless audience, have little claim to be considered as the expression of national feeling or sentiment. The poetry of the south of France, more impassioned and lyrical in its character, wears the stamp not merely of patrician elegance, but refined artifice, which must not be confounded with the natural flow of popular minstrelsy.

cially along the borders. The Spaniards, to similar sources of excitement, added that of high religious feeling in their struggles with the Saracens, which gave a somewhat loftier character to their effusions. Fortunately for them, their early annals gave birth, in the *Cid*, to a hero whose personal renown was identified with that of his country, and round whose name might be concentrated all the scattered lights of song, thus enabling the nation to build up its poetry on the proudest historic recollections.<sup>9</sup> The feats of many other heroes, fabulous as well as real, were permitted to swell the stream of traditionary verse; and thus a body of poetical annals, springing up as it were from the depths of the people, was bequeathed from sire to son, contributing, perhaps, more powerfully than any real history could have done, to infuse a common principle of patriotism into the scattered members of the nation.

There is considerable resemblance between the early Spanish ballad and the British. The latter affords more situations of pathos and deep tenderness, particularly those of suffering, uncomplaining love, a favourite theme with old English poets of every description.<sup>10</sup> We do not find, either, in the ballads of the Peninsula, the wild, romantic adventures of the roving outlaw, of the Robin Hood genus, which enter so largely into English minstrelsy. The former are in general of a more sustained and chivalrous character, less gloomy, and, although fierce, not so ferocious, nor so decidedly tragical in their aspect, as the latter. The ballads of the *Cid*, however, have many points in common with the border poetry; the same free and cordial manner, the same love of military exploit, relieved by a certain tone of gener-

\* How far the achievements claimed for the *Campeador* are strictly true, is little to the purpose. It is enough that they were received as true, throughout the Peninsula, as far back as the twelfth, or at latest the thirteenth, century.

<sup>10</sup> One exception, among others, readily occurs in the pathetic old ballad of the *Conde Alarcos*, whose woeful catastrophe, with the unre-

sisting suffering of the countess, suggests many points of coincidence with the English minstrelsy. The English reader will find a version of it in the "*Ancient Poetry and Romances of Spain*" from the pen of Mr. Bowring, to whom the literary world is so largely indebted for an acquaintance with the popular minstrelsy of Europe.

ous gallantry, and accompanied by a strong expression of national feeling.

The resemblance between the minstrelsy of the two countries vanishes, however, as we approach the Moorish ballads. The Moorish wars had always afforded abundant themes of interest for the Castilian muse; but it was not till the fall of the capital that the very fountains of song were broken up, and those beautiful ballads were produced, which seem like the echoes of departed glory lingering round the ruins of Granada. Incompetent as these pieces may be as historical records, they are doubtless sufficiently true to manners.<sup>11</sup> They present a most remarkable combination of not merely the exterior form, but the noble spirit of European chivalry, with the gorgeousness and effeminate luxury of the East. They are brief, seizing single situations of the highest poetic interest, and striking the eye of the reader with a brilliancy of execution so artless in appearance withal as to seem rather the effect of accident than study. We are transported to the gay seat of Moorish power, and witness the animating bustle, its pomp and its revelry, prolonged to the last hour of its existence. The bull-fight of the Vivarrambla, the graceful tilt of reeds, the amorous knights with their quaint significant devices, the dark Zegris, or Gomeres, and the royal, self-devoted Abencerages, the Moorish maiden radiant at the tourney, the

"I have already noticed the insufficiency of the *romances* for authentic history, in Part I. chap. 8, note 31. My conclusions there have been confirmed by Mr. Irving (whose researches have led him in a similar direction) in his "Alhambra," published nearly a year after the above note was written. The great source of the popular misconceptions respecting the domestic history of Granada is Gines Perez de Hita, whose work, under the title of "Historia de los Vandos de los Zegries y Abencerrages, Cavaleros Moros de Granada, y las Guerras civiles que hubo en ella," was published at Alcalá in 1604. This romance, written in prose,

embodied many of the old Moorish ballads, whose singular beauty, combined with the romantic and picturesque character of the work itself, soon made it extremely popular, until at length it seems to have acquired a degree of the historical credit claimed for it by its author as a translation from an Arabic chronicle; a credit which has stood it in good stead with the tribe of travel-mongers and *raconteurs*, persons always of easy faith, who have propagated its fables far and wide. Their credulity, however, may be pardoned in what has imposed on the perspicacity of so cautious an historian as Müller. Allgemeine Geschichte (1817), Band ii. S. 504.

moonlight serenade, the stolen interview, where the lover gives vent to all the intoxication of passion in the burning language of Arabian metaphor and hyperbole,<sup>12</sup>—these, and a thousand similar scenes, are brought before the eye, by a succession of rapid and animated touches, like the lights and shadows of a landscape. The light trochaic structure of the *redondilla*,<sup>13</sup> as the Spanish ballad measure is called, rolling on its graceful, negligent *asonante*,<sup>14</sup> whose continued

<sup>12</sup> Thus, in one of these *romances* we have a Moorish lady “shedding drops of liquid silver, and scattering her hair of Arabian gold,” over the corpse of her murdered husband!

“Sobre el cuerpo de Albencayde  
Destila liquida plata,  
Y convertida en cabellos  
Eparce el oro de Arabia.”

Can anything be more Oriental than this imagery? In another we have an “hour of years of impatient hopes;” a passionate sally, that can scarcely be outmatched by Scriblerus. This taint of exaggeration, however, far from being peculiar to the popular minstrelsy, has found its way, probably through this channel in part, into most of the poetry of the Peninsula.

<sup>13</sup> The *redondilla* may be considered as the basis of Spanish versification. It is of great antiquity, and compositions in it are still extant as old as the time of the infant Don Manuel, at the close of the thirteenth century. (See *Cancionero general*, fol. 207.) The *redondilla* admits of great variety; but in the *romances* it is most frequently found to consist of eight syllables, the last foot, and some or all of the preceding, as the case may be, being trochees. (*Rengifo, Arte poética Española* (Barcelona, 1727), cap. 9, 44.) Critics have derived this delightful measure from various sources. Sarmiento traces it to the hexameter of the ancient Romans, which may be bisected into something analogous to the *redondillas*. (*Memorias*, pp. 168—171.) Bouterwek thinks it may have been suggested by the songs of the Roman

soldiery. (*Geschichte der Poesie und Beredsamkeit*, Band iii., Einleitung, S. 20.) Velazquez borrows it from the rhyming hexameters of the Spanish Latin poets, of which he gives specimens of the beginning of the fourteenth century. (*Poesía Castellana*, pp. 77, 78.) Later critics refer its derivation to the Arabic. Conde has given a translation of certain Spanish Arabian poems, in the measure of the original, from which it is evident that the hemistich of an Arabic verse corresponds perfectly with the *redondilla*. (See his *Domination de los Arabes*, *passim*.) The same author, in a treatise, which he never published, on the “*poesía oriental*,” shows more precisely the intimate affinity subsisting between the metrical form of the Arabian and the old Castilian verse. The reader will find an analysis of his manuscript in Part I. chap. 8, note 50, of this History. This theory is rendered the more plausible by the influence which the Arabic has exercised on Castilian versification in other respects, as in the prolonged repetition of the rhyme, for example, which is wholly borrowed from the Spanish Arabs; whose superior cultivation naturally affected the unformed literature of their neighbours, and through no channel more obviously than its popular minstrelsy.

<sup>14</sup> The *asonante* is a rhyme made by uniformity of the vowels, without reference to the consonants. the regular rhyme, which obtains in other European literatures, is distinguished in Spain by the term *consonante*. Thus the four follow-

repetition seems by its monotonous melody to prolong the note of feeling originally struck, is admirably suited by its flexibility to the most varied and opposite expression; a circumstance which has recommended it as the ordinary measure of dramatic dialogue.

Nothing can be more agreeable than the general effect of the Moorish ballads, which combine the elegance of a riper period of literature with the natural sweetness and simplicity, savouring sometimes even of the rudeness, of a primitive age. Their merits have raised them to a sort of classical dignity in Spain, and have led to their cultivation by a higher order of writers, and down to a far later period, than in any other country in Europe. The most successful specimens of this imitation may be assigned to the early part of the seventeenth century; but the age was too late to enable the artist, with all his skill, to seize the true colouring of the antique. It is impossible, at this period, to ascertain the authors of these venerable lyrics, nor can the exact time of their production be now determined; although, as their subjects are chiefly taken from the last days of the Spanish Arabian empire, the larger part of them was probably posterior, but, as they were printed in collections at the beginning of the sixteenth century, could not have been long posterior, to the capture of Granada. How far they may be referred to the conquered Moors, is uncertain. Many of these wrote and spoke the Castilian with elegance, and there is nothing improbable in the supposition that they should seek some

ing words, taken at random from a Spanish ballad, are consecutive *asonantes*: *regozijo, pellico, luzido, amarillo*. In this example, the two last syllables have the assonance; although this is not invariable, it sometimes falling on the antepenultima and the final syllable. (See Rengifo, *Arte poética Española*, pp. 214, 215, 218.) There is a wild, artless melody in the *asonante*, and a graceful movement, coming somewhere, as it does, betwixt regular rhyme and blank verse, which would make its introduction very

desirable, but not very feasible, in our own language. An attempt of the kind has been made by a clever writer in the *Retrospective Review*. (Vol. iv. art. 2.) If it has failed, it is from the impediments presented by the language, which has not nearly the same number of vowel terminations, nor of simple uniform vowel sounds, as the Spanish; the double termination, however full of grace and beauty in the Castilian, assumes, perhaps from the effect of association, rather a doggerel air in the English.

solace under present evils in the splendid visions of the past. The bulk of this poetry, however, was in all probability the creation of the Spaniards themselves, naturally attracted by the picturesque circumstances in the character and condition of the conquered nation to invest them with poetic interest.

The Moorish *romances* fortunately appeared after the introduction of printing into the Peninsula, so that they were secured a permanent existence, instead of perishing with the breath that made them, like so many of their predecessors. This misfortune, which attaches to so much of popular poetry in all nations, is not imputable to any insensibility in the Spaniards to the excellence of their own. Men of more erudition than taste may have held them light, in comparison with more ostentatious and learned productions. This fate has befallen them in other countries than Spain.<sup>15</sup> But persons of finer poetic feeling and more enlarged spirit of criticism have estimated them as a most essential and characteristic portion of Castilian literature. Such was the judgment of the great Lope de Vega, who, after expatiating on the extraordinary compass

" This may be still further inferred from the tenor of a humorous, satirical old *romance*, in which the writer implores the justice of Apollo on the heads of the swarm of traitor poets who have deserted the ancient themes of song, the Cids, the Laras, the Gonzales, to celebrate the Ganzuls and Abderrahmans and the fantastical fables of the Moors :

" Tanta Zayda y Adalifa,  
tanta Draguta y Daraxa,  
tanto Azarque y tanto Adulce,  
tanto Gazul, y Abenamar,  
tanto alquizer y marlota,  
tanto almayzar, y almalafa,  
tantas emprasas y plumas,  
tantas cifras y medallas,  
tanta roperia Mora.  
Y en vanderillas y adargas,  
tanto mote, y tantas motas  
muera yo sino me cansan.

• • • • •

Los Alfonsos, los Henricos,  
los Sanchos, y los de Lara,  
que es dellos, y que es del Cid  
tanto olvido en glorias tantas ?  
ninguna pluma las buela,  
ninguna Musa las canta ?  
Justicia, Apollo, justicia,  
vengadores rayos lança  
contra Poetas Moriscos."

Dr. Johnson's opinions are well known in regard to this department of English literature, which, by his ridiculous parodies, he succeeded for a time in throwing into the shade, or, in the language of his admiring biographer, made "perfectly contemptible." Petrarch, with like pedantry, rested his hopes of fame on his Latin epic, and gave away his lyrics as alms to ballad-singers. Posterity, deciding on surer principles of taste, has reversed both these decisions.

and sweetness of the *romance*, and its adaptation to the highest subjects, commends it as worthy of all estimation for its peculiar national character.<sup>16</sup> The modern Spanish writers have adopted a similar tone of criticism, insisting on its study as essential to a correct appreciation and comprehension of the genius of the language.<sup>17</sup>

The Castilian ballads were first printed in the "Cancionero general" of Fernando del Castillo, in 1511. They were first incorporated into a separate work, by Sepulveda, under the name of "Romances sacados de Historias antiguas," printed at Antwerp, in 1551.<sup>18</sup> Since that period, they have passed into repeated editions, at home and abroad, especially in Germany, where they have been illustrated by able critics.<sup>19</sup> Ignorance of their authors and of the era of their production has prevented any attempt at exact chronological arrangement; a circumstance rendered, moreover, nearly impossible by the perpetual modification which the original style of the more ancient ballads has experienced in their transition through successive generations; so that, with one or two exceptions, no earlier date should probably be assigned to the oldest of them, in their present form, than the fifteenth century.<sup>20</sup> Another system of classification has been

<sup>16</sup> "Algunos quieren que sean la cartilla de los Poetas; yo no lo siento assi; antes bien los hallo capaces, no solo de exprimir y declarar qualquier concepto con facil dulzura, pero de proseguir toda grave accion de numeroso Poema. Y soy tan de veras Español, que por ser en nuestro idioma natural este genero, no me puedo persuadir que no sea digno de toda estimacion." (Coleccion de Obras sueltas (Madrid, 1776—9), tom. iv. p. 176, Prólogo.) In another place, he finely styles them "Iliads without a Homer."

<sup>17</sup> See, among others, the encomiastic and animated criticism of Fernandez and Quintana. Fernandez, *Poesías escogidas de nuestros Cancioneros y Romanceros antiguos* (Madrid, 1796), tom. xvi., Prólogo. —Quintana, *Poesías selectas Castellanas*, Introd., art. 4.

VOL. I.

<sup>18</sup> Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. ii. p. 10.—The Spanish translators of Bouterwek have noticed the principal "collections and earliest editions" of the *Romances*. This original edition of Sepulveda has escaped their notice. See *Literatura Española*, pp. 217, 218.

<sup>19</sup> See Grimm, Depping, Herder, etc. This last poet has given a selection of the *Cid* ballads, chronologically arranged, and translated with eminent simplicity and spirit, if not with the scrupulous fidelity usually aimed at by the Germans. See his *Sämmtliche Werke* (Wien, 1813), Band iii.

<sup>20</sup> Sarmiento, *Memorias*, pp. 242, 243.—Moratin considers that none have come down to us, in their original costume, of an earlier date than John II.'s reign, the first half of the fifteenth century. (*Obras*, tom. i. p. 84.) The Spanish trans-

2 F

adopted, of distributing them according to their subjects ; and independent collections also of the separate departments, as ballads of the Cid, of the Twelve Peers, the Morisco ballads, and the like, have been repeatedly published, both at home and abroad.<sup>21</sup>

The higher and educated classes of the nations were not insensible to the poetic spirit which drew forth such excellent minstrelsy from the body of the people. Indeed, Castilian poetry bore the same patrician stamp through the whole of the present reign which had been impressed on it in its infancy. Fortunately, the new art of printing was employed here, as in the case of the *romances*, to arrest those fugitive sallies of imagination which in other countries were permitted, from want of this care, to pass into oblivion ; and *cancioneros*, or collections of lyrics, were published, embodying the productions of this reign and that of John the Second, thus bringing under one view the poetic culture of the fifteenth century.

The earliest *cancionero* printed was at Saragossa, in 1492. It comprehended the works of Mena, Manrique, and six or seven other bards of less note.<sup>22</sup> A far more copious

lators of Bouterwek transcribe a *romance*, relating to the Cid, from the fathers Berganza and Merino, purporting to exhibit the primitive, uncorrupted diction of the thirteenth century. Native critics are of course the only ones competent to questions of this sort ; but to the less experienced eye of a foreigner the style of this ballad would seem to resemble much less that genuine specimen of the versification of the preceding age, the poem of the Cid, than the compositions of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries.

<sup>21</sup> The principle of philosophical arrangement, if it may be so called, is pursued still further in the latest Spanish publications of the *romances*, where the Moorish minstrelsy is embodied in a separate volume and distributed with reference to its topics. This system is the more practicable with this class of ballads, since it far exceeds in number any other. See Duran, *Romancero de Romances Moriscos*. The Roman-

cero I have used is the ancient edition of Medina del Campo, 1602. It is divided into nine parts, though it is not easy to see on what principle, since productions differing widely in date and tenor are brought into juxtaposition. The collection contains nearly a thousand ballads, which, however, fall far short of the entire number preserved, as may easily be seen by reference to other compilations. When to this is added the consideration of the large number which insensibly glided into oblivion without ever coming to the press, one may form a notion of the immense mass of these humble lyrics which floated among the common people of Spain ; and we shall be the less disposed to wonder at the proud and chivalrous bearing that marks even the peasantry of a nation which seems to breathe the very air of romantic song.

<sup>22</sup> The title of this work was "*Coplas de Vita Christi, de la Cena*



collection was made by Fernando del Castillo, and first published at Valencia, in 1511, under the title of "*Cancionero general*," since which period it has passed into repeated editions. This compilation is certainly more creditable to Castillo's industry than to his discrimination or power of arrangement. Indeed, in this latter respect it is so defective that it would almost seem to have been put together fortuitously, as the pieces came to hand. A large portion of the authors appear to have been persons of rank; a circumstance to which perhaps they were indebted, more than to any poetic merit, for a place in the miscellany, which might have been decidedly increased in value by being diminished in bulk.<sup>23</sup>

The *works of devotion* with which the collection opens are on the whole the feeblest portion of it. We discern none of the inspiration and lyric glow which were to have been anticipated from the devout, enthusiastic Spaniard. We meet with anagrams on the Virgin, glosses on the creed and pater noster, *canciones* on original sin and the like unpromising topics, all discussed in the most bald, prosaic manner, with abundance of Latin phrase, Scriptural allusion, and commonplace precept, unenlivened by a single spark of true poetic fire, and presenting altogether a farrago of the most fantastic pedantry.

The lighter, especially the amatory poems, are much

con la Pasion, y de la Veronica con la Resurreccion de nuestro Redemptor. E las siete Angustias e siete Gozos de nuestra Señora, con otras obras mucho provechosas." It concludes with the following notice: "Fue la presente obra emprentada en la insigne Ciudad de Zaragoza de Aragon por industria e expensas de Paulo Hurus de Constanca aleman. A 27 dias de Noviembre, 1492." (Mendez, *Typographia Española*, pp. 134, 136.) It appears there were two or three other *cancioneros* compiled, none of which, however, were admitted to the honours of the press. (Bouterwek, *Literatura Española*, nota.) The learned Castro, some fifty years since, published an analysis with

copious extracts from one of these, made by Baena, the Jewish physician of John II., a copy of which existed in the royal library of the Escorial. *Bibliotheca Española*, tom. i. p. 265 et seq.

<sup>23</sup> *Cancionero general*, *passim*.—Moratin has given a list of the men of rank who contributed to this miscellany; it contains the names of the highest nobility of Spain. (Orig. del Teatro Español, Obras, tom. i. pp. 85, 86.) Castillo's *Cancionero* passed through several editions, the latest of which appeared in 1573. See a catalogue, not entirely complete, of the different Spanish *Cancioneros* in Bouterwek, *Literatura Española*, trad., p. 217.

more successfully executed, and the primitive forms of the old Castilian versification are developed with considerable variety and beauty. Among the most agreeable effusions in this way may be noticed those of Diego Lopez de Haro, who, to borrow the encomium of a contemporary, was "the mirror of gallantry for the young cavaliers of the time." There are few verses in the collection composed with more facility and grace.<sup>24</sup> Among the more elaborate pieces, Diego de San Pedro's "Desprecio de la Fortuna" may be distinguished, not so much for any poetic talent which it exhibits, as for its mercurial and somewhat sarcastic tone of sentiment.<sup>25</sup> The similarity of subject may suggest a parallel between it and the Italian poet Guidi's celebrated ode on Fortune; and the different styles of execution may perhaps be taken as indicating pretty fairly the distinctive peculiarities of the Tuscan and the old Spanish school of poetry. The Italian, introducing her fickle goddess in person on the scene, describes her triumphant march over the ruins of empires and dynasties, from the earliest time, in a flow of lofty dithyrambic eloquence, adorned with all the brilliant colouring of a stimulated fancy and a highly finished language. The Castilian, on the other hand, instead of this splendid personification, deepens his verse into a moral tone, and, dwelling on the vicissitudes and vanities of human life, points his reflections with some caustic warning, often conveyed with enchanting simplicity, but without the least approach to lyric exultation, or indeed the affectation of it.

This proneness to moralize the song is in truth a characteristic of the old Spanish bard. He rarely abandons himself without reserve to the frolic puerilities so common with the sister Muse of Italy,

*"Scritta così come la penna getta,  
Per fuggir l' ozio, e non per cercar gloria."*

It is true, he is occasionally betrayed by verbal subtleties

<sup>24</sup> Cancionero general, pp. 83—89.—Oviedo, Quincuagenas, MS.

<sup>25</sup> Cancionero general, pp. 158—161.—Some meagre information respecting this person is given by Nic. Antonio, whose biographical

notices may be often charged with deficiency in chronological data; a circumstance perhaps unavoidable from the obscurity of their subjects. Bibliotheca Vetus, tom. ii. lib. 10, cap. 6.

and other affectations of the age;<sup>26</sup> but even his liveliest sallies are apt to be seasoned with a moral or sharpened by a satiric sentiment. His defects, indeed, are of the kind most opposed to those of the Italian poet, showing themselves, especially in the more elaborate pieces, in a certain tumid stateliness and overstrained energy of diction.

On the whole, one cannot survey the "Cancionero general" without some disappointment at the little progress of the poetic art since the reign of John the Second, at the beginning of the century. The best pieces in the collection are of that date, and no rival subsequently arose to compete with the masculine strength of Mena or the delicacy and fascinating graces of Santillana. One cause of this tardy progress may have been the direction to utility manifested in this active reign, which led such as had leisure for intellectual pursuits to cultivate science, rather than abandon themselves to the mere revels of the imagination.

Another cause may be found in the rudeness of the language, whose delicate finish is so essential to the purposes of the poet, but which was so imperfect at this period that Juan de la Encina, a popular writer of the time, complained that he was obliged, in his version of Virgil's Eclogues, to coin, as it were, a new vocabulary, from the want of terms corresponding with the original in the old one.<sup>27</sup> It was not until the close of the present reign, when the nation began to breathe awhile from its tumultuous career, that the fruits of the patient cultivation which it had been steadily though silently experiencing began to manifest themselves in the improved condition of the language and

<sup>26</sup> There are probably more direct puns in Petrarch's lyrics alone than in all the Cancionero general. — There is another kind of *niaiserie*, however, to which the Spanish poets were much addicted, being the transposition of the word in every variety of sense and combination; as, for example,

"Acordad vuestros olvidos  
Y olvida vuestros acuerdos  
Porque tales desacuerdos  
Acuerden vuestros sentidos," etc.  
Cancionero general, fol. 226.

It was such subtleties as these, *entricades razones*, as Cervantes calls them, that addled the brains of poor Don Quixote. Tom. i. cap. 1.

<sup>27</sup> Velazquez, *Poesía Castellana*, p. 122.—More than half a century later, the learned Ambrosio Morales complained of the barrenness of the Castilian, which he imputed to the too exclusive adoption of the Latin upon all subjects of dignity and importance. Obras, tom. xiv. pp. 147, 148.

its adaptation to the highest poetical uses. The intercourse with Italy, moreover, by naturalizing new and more finished forms of versification, afforded a scope for the nobler efforts of the poet, to which the old Castilian measures, however well suited to the wild and artless movements of the popular minstrelsy, were altogether inadequate.

We must not dismiss the miscellaneous poetry of this period without some notice of the "Coplas" of Don Jorge Manrique,<sup>28</sup> on the death of his father, the count of Paredes, in 1474.<sup>29</sup> The elegy is of considerable length, and is sustained throughout in a tone of the highest moral dignity; while the poet leads us up from the transitory objects of the lower world to the contemplation of that imperishable existence which Christianity has opened beyond the grave. A tenderness pervades the piece, which may remind us of the best manner of Petrarch; while, with the exception of a slight taint of pedantry, it is exempt from the meretricious vices that belong to the poetry of the age. The effect of the sentiment is heightened by the simple turns and broken melody of the old Castilian verse, of which perhaps this may be accounted the most finished specimen; such would seem to be the judgment of his own countrymen,<sup>30</sup> whose glosses and commentaries on it have swelled into a separate volume.<sup>31</sup>

I shall close this survey with a brief notice of the drama, whose foundations may be said to have been laid during this reign. The sacred plays, or mysteries, so popular throughout Europe in the Middle Ages, may be traced in

<sup>28</sup> L. Marineo, speaking of this accomplished nobleman, styles him "virum satis illustrem. Eum enim poetam et philosophum natura formavit ac peperit." He unfortunately fell in a skirmish, five years after his father's death, in 1479. Mariana, *Hist. de España*, tom. ii. p. 531.

<sup>29</sup> An elaborate character of this Quixotic old cavalier may be found in Pulgar, *Claros Varones*, tit. 13.

<sup>30</sup> "Don Jorge Manrique," says Lope de Vega, "cuyas coplas Castellanas admiren los ingenios estrangeros y merecen estar escritas

con letras de oro." *Obras sueltas*, tom. xii., Prólogo.

<sup>31</sup> *Coplas de Don Jorge Manrique*, ed. Madrid, 1779.—*Diálogo de las Lenguas*, apud Mayans y Siscar, Orígenes, tom. ii. p. 149.—Manrique's *Coplas* have also been the subject of a separate publication in the United States. Professor Longfellow's version, accompanying it, is well calculated to give the English reader a correct notion of the Castilian bard, and, of course, a very exaggerated one of the literary culture of the age.

Spain to an ancient date. Their familiar performance in the churches, by the clergy, is recognized in the middle of the thirteenth century, by a law of Alfonso the Tenth, which, while it interdicted certain profane mummeries that had come into vogue, prescribed the legitimate topics for exhibition.<sup>32</sup>

The transition from these rude spectacles to more regular dramatic efforts was very slow and gradual. In 1414, an allegorical comedy, composed by the celebrated Henry, marquis of Villena, was performed at Saragossa, in the presence of the court.<sup>33</sup> In 1469, a dramatic eclogue, by an anonymous author, was exhibited in the palace of the count of Ureña, in the presence of Ferdinand, on his coming into Castile to espouse the infanta Isabella.<sup>34</sup> These pieces may be regarded as the earliest theatrical attempts, after the religious dramas and popular pantomimes already noticed; but unfortunately they have not come down to us. The next production deserving attention is a "Dialogue between

<sup>32</sup> After proscribing certain profane mummeries, the law confines the clergy to the representation of such subjects as "the birth of our Saviour, in which is shown how the angels appeared, announcing his nativity; also his advent, and the coming of the three Magi kings to worship him; and his resurrection, showing his crucifixion and ascension, on the third day; and other such things leading men to do well and live constant in the faith." (*Siete Partidas*, tit. 6, ley 34.) It is worth noting, that similar abuses continued common among the ecclesiastics down to Isabella's reign, as may be inferred from a decree, very similar to the law of the *Partidas* above cited, published by the council of Aranda in 1473. (*Apud Moratin*, *Obras*, tom. i. p. 87.) Moratin considers it certain that the representation of the mysteries existed in Spain as far back as the eleventh century. The principal grounds for this conjecture appear to be the fact that such notorious abuses had crept into practice by the middle of the thirteenth century as to require the intervention of the law. (*Ibid.* pp. 11, 13.) The circumstance would seem compatible with a much more recent origin.

<sup>33</sup> Cervantes, *Comedias y Entremeses* (Madrid, 1749), tom. i., prólogo de Nasarre. — Velazquez, *Poesía Castellana*, p. 86. — The fifth volume of the *Memoirs of the Spanish Royal Academy of History* contains a dissertation on the "national diversions," by Don Gaspar Melchor de Jovellanos, replete with curious erudition, and exhibiting the discriminating taste to have been expected from its accomplished author. Among these antiquarian researches the writer has included a brief view of the first theatrical attempts in Spain. See *Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. v. Mem. 6.

<sup>34</sup> Moratin, *Obras*, tom. i. p. 115. — Nasarre (Cervantes, *Comedias*, pról.), Jovellanos (*Mem. de la Acad. de Hist.*, tom. v. *Memor.* 6), Pellicer (*Origen y Progreso de la Comedia* (1804), tom. i. p. 12), and others, refer the authorship of this little piece, without hesitation, to Juan de la Encina, although the year of its representation corresponds precisely with that of his birth. The prevalence of so gross a blunder among the Spanish scholars shows how little the antiquities of their theatre were studied before the time of Moratin.

Love and an Old Man," imputed to Rodrigo Cota, a poet of whose history nothing seems to be known, and little conjectured, but that he flourished during the reigns of John the Second and Henry the Fourth. The dialogue is written with much vivacity and grace, and with as much dramatic movement as is compatible with only two interlocutors.<sup>35</sup>

A much more memorable production is referred to the same author, the tragicomedy of "Celestina," or "Calisto and Melibea," as it is frequently called. The first act, indeed, constituting nearly one-third of the piece, is all that is ascribed to Cota. The remaining twenty acts, which, however, should rather be denominated scenes, were written by another hand, some—though, to judge from the internal evidence afforded by the style, not many—years later. The second author was Fernando de Roxas, bachelor of law, as he informs us, who composed this work, as a sort of intellectual relaxation, during one of his vacations. The time was certainly not misspent. The continuation, however, is not esteemed by the Castilian critics as having risen quite to the level of the original act.<sup>36</sup>

<sup>35</sup> This little piece has been published at length by Moratin, in the first volume of his works. (See *Orígenes del Teatro Español*, Obras, tom. i. pp. 303—314.) The celebrated marquis of Santillana's poetical dialogue, "Comedieta da Ponza," has no pretensions to rank as a dramatic composition, notwithstanding its title, which is indeed as little significant of his real character as the term "Commedia" is of Dante's epic. It is a discourse on the vicissitudes of human life, suggested by a sea-fight near Ponza in 1435. It is conducted without any attempt at dramatic action or character, or, indeed, dramatic development of any sort. The same remarks may be made of the political satire "Mingo Revulgo," which appeared in Henry IV.'s reign. Dialogue was selected by these authors as a more popular and spirited medium than direct narrative for conveying their sentiments. The "Comedieta da Ponza" has never appeared in print; the copy which I have used is a tran-

script from the one in the Royal Library at Madrid, and belongs to Mr. George Ticknor.

<sup>36</sup> *Tragicomedia de Calisto y Melibea* (Alcala, 1586), Introd.—Nothing is positively ascertained respecting the authorship of the first act of the *Celestina*. Some impute it to Juan de Mena; others with more probability to Rodrigo Cota el Tio, of Toledo, a person who, although literally nothing is known of him, has in some way or other obtained the credit of the authorship of some of the most popular effusions of the fifteenth century; such, for example, as the Dialogue above cited of "Love and an Old Man," the Coplas of "Mingo Revulgo," and this first act of the "Celestina." The principal foundation of these imputations would appear to be the bare assertion of an editor of the "Dialogue between Love and an Old Man," which appeared at Medina del Campo in 1569, nearly a century, probably, after Cota's death; another example of the obscurity which in-

The story turns on a love-intrigue. A Spanish youth of rank is enamoured of a lady, whose affections he gains with some difficulty, but whom he finally seduces, through the arts of an accomplished courtesan, whom the author has introduced under the romantic name of *Celestina*. The piece, although comic, or rather sentimental, in its progress, terminates in the most tragical catastrophe, in which all the principal actors are involved. The general texture of the plot is exceedingly clumsy, yet it affords many situations of deep and varied interest in its progress. The principal characters are delineated in the piece with considerable skill. The part of *Celestina*, in particular, in which a veil of plausible hypocrisy is thrown over the deepest profligacy of conduct, is managed with much address. The subordinate parts are brought into brisk comic action, with natural dialogue, though somewhat obscene; and an interest of a graver complexion is raised by the passion of the lovers, the timid, confiding tenderness of the lady, and the sorrows of the broken-hearted parent. The execution of the play reminds us, on the whole, less of the Spanish than of the old English theatre, in many of its defects as well as beauties; in the contrasted strength and imbecility of various passages; in its intermixture of broad farce and deep tragedy; in the unseasonable introduction of frigid metaphor and pedantic allusion in the midst of the most passionate discourses; in the unveiled voluptuousness of its colouring, occasionally too gross for any public exhibition; but, above all, in the general strength and fidelity of its portraiture.

The tragicomedy, as it is styled, of *Celestina*, was obviously never intended for representation, to which not merely the grossness of some of the details, but the length and arrangement of the piece, rendered it unsuitable.

volves the history of the early Spanish drama. Many of the Castilian critics detect a flavour of antiquity in the first act which should carry back its composition as far as John II.'s reign. Moratin does not discern this, however, and is inclined to refer its production to a date not much if at all more distant than Isabella's time. To the un-

practised eye of a foreigner, as far as style is concerned, the whole work might well seem the production of the same period. Moratin, *Obras*, tom. i. pp. 88, 115, 116.—*Diálogo de las Lenguas*, apud Mayans y Siscar, *Origenes*, pp. 165—167.—Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. ii. p. 263.

But, notwithstanding this, and its approximation to the character of a romance, it must be admitted to contain within itself the essential elements of dramatic composition; and, as such, it is extolled by the Spanish critics, as opening the theatrical career of Europe. A similar claim has been maintained for productions nearly contemporaneous in other countries, and especially for Politian's "Orfeo," which there is little doubt was publicly acted before 1483. Notwithstanding its representation, however, the "Orfeo," presenting a combination of the eclogue and the ode, without any proper theatrical movement, or attempt at development of character, cannot fairly come within the limits of dramatic writing. A more ancient example than either, at least as far as the exterior forms are concerned, may be probably found in the celebrated French farce of Pierre Pathelin, printed as early as 1474, having been repeatedly played during the preceding century, which, with the requisite modifications, still keeps possession of the stage. The pretensions of this piece, however, as a work of art, are comparatively humble; and it seems fair to admit that in the higher and more important elements of dramatic composition, and especially in the delicate and at the same time powerful delineation of character and passion, the Spanish critics may be justified in regarding the "Celestina" as having led the way in modern Europe.<sup>37</sup>

Without deciding on its proper classification as a work of art, however, its real merits are settled by its wide popularity both at home and abroad. It has been translated into most of the European languages, and the preface to

<sup>37</sup> Such is the high encomium of the Abate Andres (*Letteratura*, tom. v. part. 2, lib. 1).—Cervantes does not hesitate to call it "libro divino;" and the acute author of the "Diálogo de las Lenguas" concludes a criticism upon it with the remark that "there is no book in the Castilian which surpasses it in the propriety and elegance of its diction." (*Don Quixote*, ed. de Pellicer, tom. i. p. 239.—Mayans y Siscar, tom. ii. p. 167.)—Its merits indeed seem in some degree to have disarmed even

the severity of foreign critics; and Signorelli, after standing up stoutly in defence of the precedence of the "Orfeo" as a dramatic composition, admits the "Celestina" to be a "work rich in various beauties, and meriting undoubted applause. In fact," he continues, "the vivacity of the description of character, and faithful portraiture of manners, have made it immortal." *Storia critica de' Teatri antichi e moderni* (Napoli 1813), tom. vi. pp. 146, 147.



the last edition published in Madrid, so recently as 1822, enumerates thirty editions of it in Spain alone in the course of the sixteenth century. Impressions were multiplied in Italy, at the very time when it was interdicted at home on the score of its immoral tendency. A popularity thus extending through distant ages and nations shows how faithfully it is built on the principles of human nature.<sup>39</sup>

The drama assumed the pastoral form, in its early stages, in Spain, as in Italy. The oldest specimens in this way which have come down to us are the productions of Juan de la Encina, a contemporary of Roxas. He was born in 1469, and, after completing his education at Salamanca, was received into the family of the duke of Alva. He continued there several years, employed in the composition of various poetical works, among others, a version of Virgil's Eclogues, which he so altered as to accommodate them to the principal events in the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella. He visited Italy in the beginning of the following century, and was attracted by the munificent patronage of Leo the Tenth to fix his residence at the papal court. While there, he continued his literary labours. He embraced the ecclesiastical profession; and his skill in music recommended him to the office of principal director of the pontifical chapel. He was subsequently presented with the priory of Leon, and returned to Spain, where he died in 1534.<sup>40</sup>

Encina's works first appeared at Salamanca, in 1496, collected into one volume folio.<sup>40</sup> Besides other poetry, they comprehend a number of dramatic eclogues, sacred and profane: the former suggested by topics drawn from Scripture, like the ancient mysteries; the latter chiefly amatory. They were performed in the palace of his patron, the duke of Alva, in the presence of Prince John, the duke

<sup>39</sup> Bouterwek, *Literatura Española*, notas de traductores, p. 234.—Andres, *Letteratura*, tom. v. pp. 170, 171.—Lampillas, *Letteratura Spagnuola*, tom. vi. pp. 57—59.

<sup>40</sup> Rojas, *Viage entretenido* (1614), fol. 46.—Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. i. p. 684.—Moratin, *Obras*, tom. i. pp. 126, 127.—Pellicer, *Origen de la Comedia*, tom. i. pp. 11, 12.

<sup>40</sup> They were published under the title "*Cancionero de todas las Obras de Juan de la Encina con otras añadidas*." (Mendez, *Typographia Española*, p. 247.) Subsequent impressions of his works, more or less complete, appeared at Salamanca in 1509, and at Saragossa in 1512 and 1516.—Moratin, *Obras*, tom. i. p. 127, nota.

of Infantado, and other eminent persons of the court; and the poet himself occasionally assisted at the representation.<sup>41</sup>

Encina's eclogues are simple compositions, with little pretence to dramatic artifice. The story is too meagre to admit of much ingenuity or contrivance or to excite any depth of interest. There are few interlocutors, seldom more than three or four, although on one occasion rising to as many as seven; of course there is little scope for theatrical action. The characters are of the humble class belonging to pastoral life, and the dialogue, which is extremely appropriate, is conducted with facility; but the rustic condition of the speakers precludes anything like literary elegance or finish, in which respect they are doubtless surpassed by some of his more ambitious compositions. There is a comic air imparted to them, however, and a lively colloquial turn, which renders them very agreeable. Still, whatever be their merit as pastorals, they are entitled to little consideration as specimens of dramatic art, and in the vital spirit of dramatic composition must be regarded as far inferior to the "Celestina." The simplicity of these productions, and the facility of their exhibition, which required little theatrical decoration or costume, recommended them to popular imitation, which continued long after the regular forms of the drama were introduced into Spain.<sup>42</sup>

<sup>41</sup> The comedian Rojas, who flourished in the beginning of the following century, and whose "Viage entretenido" is so essential to the knowledge of the early histrionic art in Spain, identifies the appearance of Encina's Eclogues with the dawn of the Castilian drama. His verses may be worth quoting:

"Que es en nuestra madre España,  
porque en la dichosa era,  
que aquellos gloriosos Reyes  
dignos de memoria eterna  
Don Fernando e Ysabel  
(que ya con los santos reynan)  
de echar de España acabavan  
todos los Moriscos, que eran  
De aquel Reyno de Granada,  
y entonces se dava en ella  
principio a la Inquisicion,  
se le dio a nuestra comedia,

Juan de la Encina el primero,  
aquel insigne poeta,  
que tanto bien empezo  
de quien tenemos tres eglogas  
Que el mismo represento  
al Almirante y Duquesa  
de Castilla, y de Infantado  
que estas fueron las primeras  
Y para mas honra suya,  
y de la comedia nuestra,  
en los dias que Colon  
descubrio la gran riqueza  
De Indias y nuevo mundo,  
y el gran Capitan empieza  
a sugetar aquel Reyno  
de Napoles, y su tierra.  
A descubrirse empezo  
el uso de la comedia  
porque todos se animassen  
a emprender cosas tan buenas."  
fol. 46, 47.

<sup>42</sup> Signorelli, correcting what he

The credit of this introduction belongs to Bartolomé Torres de Naharro, often confounded by the Castilian writers themselves with a player of the same name who flourished half a century later.<sup>43</sup> Few particulars have been ascertained of his personal history. He was born at Torre, in the province of Estremadura. In the early part of his life he fell into the hands of the Algerines, and was finally released from captivity by the exertions of certain benevolent Italians, who generously paid his ransom. He then established his residence in Italy, at the court of Leo the Tenth. Under the genial influence of that patronage which quickened so many of the seeds of genius to production in every department, he composed his "*Propaladia*," a work embracing a variety of lyrical and dramatic poetry, first published at Rome, in 1517. Unfortunately, the caustic satire levelled in some of the higher pieces of this collection at the license of the pontifical court brought such obloquy on the head of the author as compelled him to take refuge in Naples, where he remained under the protection of the noble family of Colonna. No further particulars are recorded of him, except that he embraced the ecclesiastical profession; and the time and place of his death are alike uncertain. In person he is said to have been comely, with an amiable disposition and sedate and dignified demeanour.<sup>44</sup>

His "*Propaladia*," first published at Rome, passed through several editions subsequently in Spain, where it was alternately prohibited or permitted, according to the

denominates the "*romance*" of *Lampillas*, considers *Encina* to have composed only one pastoral drama, and that on occasion of *Ferdinand's* entrance into *Castile*. The critic should have been more charitable, as he has made two blunders himself in correcting one. *Storia critica de' Teatri*, tom. iv. pp. 192, 193.

<sup>43</sup> *Andres*, confounding *Torres de Naharro* the poet with *Naharro* the comedian, who flourished about half a century later, is led into a ludicrous train of errors in controverting *Cervantes*, whose criticism on the actor is perpetually misapplied

by *Andres* to the poet. *Velazquez* seems to have confounded them in like manner: another evidence of the extremely superficial acquaintance of the Spanish critics with their early drama. *Comp. Cervantes, Comedias y Entremeses*, tom. i., prólogo.—*Andres, Letteratura*, tom. v. p. 179.—*Velazquez, Poesía Castellana*, p. 88.

<sup>44</sup> *Nic. Antonio, Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. i. p. 202.—*Cervantes, Comedias*, tom. i., pról. de *Nasarré*.—*Pellicer, Origen de la Comedia*, tom. ii. p. 17.—*Moratin, Obras*, tom. i. p. 48.

caprice of the Holy Office. It contains, among other things, eight comedies, written in the native *redondillas*, which continue to be regarded as the suitable measure for the drama. They afford the earliest example of the division into *jornadas*, or days, and of the *intróito*, or prologue, in which the author, after propitiating the audience by suitable compliment, and witticisms not over-delicate, gives a view of the length and general scope of his play.<sup>45</sup>

The scenes of Naharro's comedies, with a single exception, are laid in Spain and Italy; those in the latter country probably being selected with reference to the audiences before whom they were acted. The diction is easy and correct, without much affectation of refinement or rhetorical ornament. The dialogue, especially in the lower parts, is sustained with much comic vivacity; indeed, Naharro seems to have had a nicer perception of character as it is found in lower life than as it exists in the higher; and more than one of his plays are devoted exclusively to its illustration. On some occasions, however, the author assumes a more elevated tone, and his verse rises to a degree of poetic beauty, deepened by the moral reflection so characteristic of the Spaniards. At other times, his pieces are disfigured by such a Babel-like confusion of tongues as makes it doubtful which may be the poet's vernacular. French, Spanish, Italian, with a variety of barbarous *patois* and mongrel Latin, are all brought into play at the same time, and all comprehended, apparently with equal facility, by each one of the *dramatis personæ*. But it is difficult to conceive how such a jargon could have been comprehended, far more relished, by an Italian audience.<sup>46</sup>

<sup>45</sup> Bartolomé Torres de Naharro, *Propaladia* (Madrid, 1573).—The deficiency of the earlier Spanish books, of which Bouterwek repeatedly complains, has led him into an error respecting the "*Propaladia*," which he had never seen. He states that Naharro was the first to distribute the play into three *jornadas* or acts, and takes Cervantes roundly to task for assuming the original merit of this distribution to himself. In fact, Naharro

did introduce the division into *five* *jornadas*, and Cervantes assumes only the credit of having been the first to *reduce them to three*. Comp. Bouterwek, *Geschichte der Poesie und Beredsamkeit*, Band iii. S. 285, —and Cervantes, *Comedias*, tom. i., pról.

<sup>46</sup> In the argument to the "*Seraphina*," he thus prepares the audience for this colloquial *olla podrida*:  
"Mas haveis de estar alerta  
por sentir los personajes

Naharro's comedies are not much to be commended for the intrigue, which generally excites but a languid interest and shows little power or adroitness in the contrivance. With every defect, however, they must be allowed to have given the first forms to Spanish comedy, and to exhibit many of the features which continued to be characteristic of it in a state of more perfect development under Lope de Vega and Calderon. Such, for instance, is the amorous jealousy, and especially the point of honour, so conspicuous on the Spanish theatre; and such, too, the moral confusion too often produced by blending the foulest crimes with zeal for religion.<sup>47</sup> These comedies, moreover, far from blind conformity with the ancients, discovered much of the spirit of independence and deviated into many of the eccentricities which distinguish the national theatre in later times, and which the criticism of our own day has so successfully explained and defended on philosophical principles.

Naharro's plays were represented, as appears from his prologue, in Italy, probably not at Rome, which he quitted soon after their publication, but at Naples, which, then forming a part of the Spanish dominions, might more easily furnish an audience capable of comprehending them.<sup>48</sup> It is remarkable that, notwithstanding their re-

que hablan quatro languages.  
hasta acabar su rehyerta  
no salen de cuenta cierta  
por Latin e Italiano  
Castellano y Valenciano  
que ninguno desconcierta."

Propaladia, p. 50.

<sup>47</sup> The following is an example of the precious reasoning with which Floristan, in the play above quoted, reconciles his conscience to the murder of his wife Orfea in order to gratify the jealousy of his mistress Seraphina. Floristan is addressing himself to a priest:

"Y por mas dafio escusar  
no lo quiero hora hazer,  
sino que es menester.  
quo yo mate luego a Orfea  
do Serafina lo vea  
porque lo pueda creer.  
Que yo bien me mataria  
pues toda razon me inclina;

pero se de Serafina  
que se desesperaria.  
y Orfea, pues que haria?  
quando mi muerte supiesse:  
que creo que no pudiesse  
sostener la vida un dia.  
Pues hablando aca entre nos  
a Orfea cabe la suerte;  
porque con su sola muerte  
se escusaran otras dos:  
de modo que padre vos  
si llamar me la quereys,  
a mi merced me hareys  
y tambien servicio a Dios.

• • •  
porque si yo la matare  
morira christianamente;  
yo morire penitente,  
quando mi suerte llegare."

Propaladia, fol. 68.

<sup>48</sup> Signorelli waxes exceedingly wroth with Don Blas Nasarre for the assertion that Naharro first

peated editions in Spain, they do not appear to have ever been performed there. The cause of this, probably, was the low state of the histrionic art, and the total deficiency in theatrical costume and decoration; yet it was not easy to dispense with these in the representation of pieces which brought more than a score of persons occasionally, and these crowned heads, at the same time, upon the stage.<sup>49</sup>

Some conception may be afforded of the lamentable poverty of the theatrical equipment from the account given by Cervantes of its condition half a century later. "The whole wardrobe of a manager of the theatre at that time," says he, "was contained in a single sack, and amounted only to four dresses of white fur trimmed with gilt leather, four beards, four wigs, and four crooks, more or less. There were no trap-doors, movable clouds, or machinery of any kind. The stage itself consisted only of four or six planks, placed across as many benches, arranged in the form of a square, and elevated but four palms from the ground. The only decoration of the theatre was an old coverlet, drawn from side to side by cords, behind which the musicians sang some ancient *romance*, without the guitar."<sup>50</sup> In fact, no further apparatus was employed than that demanded for the exhibition of mysteries, or the pastoral dialogues which succeeded them. The Spaniards, notwithstanding their precocity, compared with most of the nations of Europe, in dramatic art, were unaccountably tardy in all its histrionic accompaniments. The public remained content with such poor mummeries as could be got up by strolling players and mountebanks. There was no fixed theatre in Madrid until the latter part of the sixteenth century; and that consisted of a courtyard, with only a roof to shelter it, while

taught the Italians to write comedy, taxing him with downright mendacity; and he stoutly denies the probability of Naharro's comedies ever having been performed on the Italian boards. The critic seems to be in the right, as far as regards the influence of the Spanish dramatist; but he might have been spared all doubts respecting their representation in the country, had he consulted the prologue of Naharro

himself, where he asserts the fact in the most explicit manner. Comp. Propaladia, pról., and Signorelli, Storia critica de' Teatri, tom. vi. pp. 171—179. — See also Moratin, Orígenes, Obras, tom. i. pp. 149, 150.

<sup>49</sup> Propaladia; see the comedies of "Trofea" and "Tinellaria." — Jovellanos, Memoria sobre las Diversiones públicas, apud Mem. de la Acad. de Hist., tom. v.

<sup>50</sup> Cervantes, Comedias, tom. i. pról.

the spectators sat on benches ranged around, or at the windows of the surrounding houses.<sup>51</sup>

A similar impulse with that experienced by comic writing was given to tragedy. The first that entered on this department were professed scholars, who adopted the error of the Italian dramatists, in fashioning their pieces servilely after the antique, instead of seizing the expression of their own age. The most conspicuous attempts in this way were made by Fernan Perez de Oliva.<sup>52</sup> He was born at Cordova, in 1494, and, after many years passed in the various schools of Spain, France, and Italy, returned to his native land, and became a lecturer in the university of Salamanca. He instructed in moral philosophy and mathematics, and established the highest reputation for his critical acquaintance with the ancient languages and his own. He died young, at the age of thirty-nine, deeply lamented for his moral no less than for his intellectual worth.<sup>53</sup>

His various works were published by the learned Morales, his nephew, some fifty years after his death. Among them are translations in prose of the *Electra* of Sophocles, and the *Hecuba* of Euripides. They may with more propriety be termed imitations, and those too of the freest kind. Although they conform, in the general arrangement and progress of the story, to their originals, yet characters, nay, whole scenes and dialogues, are occasionally omitted; and in those retained it is not always easy to recognize the hand of the Grecian artist, whose modest beauties are thrown into shade by the ambitious ones of his

<sup>51</sup> Pellicer, *Origen de la Comedia*, tom. ii. pp. 58—62. — See also *American Quarterly Review*, no. viii. art. 3.

<sup>52</sup> Oliva, *Obras* (Madrid, 1787). — Vasco Diaz Tanco, a native of Estremadura, who flourished in the first half of the sixteenth century, mentions in one of his works three tragedies composed by himself on Scripture subjects. As there is no evidence, however, of their having been printed, or performed, or even read in manuscript by any one, they hardly deserve to be included in the catalogue of dramatic compositions. (*Moratin, Obras*, tom. i. pp.

150, 151. — Lampillas, *Letteratura Spagnuola*, tom. v. dis. 1, sec. 5.) This patriotic *littérateur* endeavours to establish the production of Oliva's tragedies in the year 1515, in the hope of antedating that of Trissino's "*Sophonisba*," composed a year later, and thus securing to his nation the palm of precedence, in time at least, though it should be only for a few months, on the tragic theatre of modern Europe. *Letteratura Spagnuola*, ubi supra.

<sup>53</sup> Nic. Antonio, *Bibliotheca Nova*, tom. i. p. 386. — Oliva, *Obras*, pref. de Morales.

imitator.<sup>54</sup> But, with all this, Oliva's tragedies must be admitted to be executed, on the whole, with vigour; and the diction, notwithstanding the national tendency to exaggeration above alluded to, may be generally commended for decorum, and an imposing dignity quite worthy of the tragic drama; indeed, they may be selected as affording probably the best specimen of the progress of prose composition during the present reign.<sup>55</sup>

Oliva's reputation led to a similar imitation of the antique. But the Spaniards were too national in all their tastes to sanction it. These classical compositions did not obtain possession of the stage, but were confined to the closet, serving only as a relaxation for the man of letters; while the voice of the people compelled all who courted it to accommodate their inventions to those romantic forms which were subsequently developed in such variety of beauty by the great Spanish dramatists.<sup>56</sup>

We have now surveyed the different kinds of poetic culture familiar to Spain under Ferdinand and Isabella. Their most conspicuous element is the national spirit which pervades them, and the exclusive attachment which they manifest to the primitive forms of versification peculiar to the Peninsula. The most remarkable portion of this body of poetry may doubtless be considered the Spanish *romances*, or ballads; that popular minstrelsy which, commemorating the picturesque and chivalrous incidents of the age, reflects

<sup>54</sup> The following passage, for example, in the "Vengaza de Agamemnon," imitated from the *Electra* of Sophocles, will hardly be charged on the Greek dramatist: "Haced, yo os ruego, de mi compassion, no querais atapar con vuestros consejos los respiraderos de las hornazas de fuego, que dentro me atormentan." See Oliva, *Obras*, p. 185.

<sup>55</sup> Compare the diction of these tragedies with that of the "Canton epistolario," for instance, esteemed one of the best literary compositions of John II.'s reign, and see the advance made, not only in orthography, but in the verbal arrangement generally, and the whole complexion of the style.

<sup>56</sup> Notwithstanding some Spanish critics, as Cueva, for example, have vindicated the romantic forms of the drama on scientific principles, it is apparent that the most successful writers in this department have been constrained to adopt them by public opinion, rather than their own, which would have suggested a nearer imitation of the classical models of antiquity, the practice so generally followed by the *Italiana*, and one which naturally recommends itself to the scholar. See the canon's discourse in Cervantes, *Don Quixote*, ed. de Pellicer, tom. iii. pp. 207—220,—and, more explicitly, Lope de Vega, *Obras sueltas*, tom. iv. p. 406.



most faithfully the romantic genius of the people who gave it utterance. The lyric efforts of the period were less successful. There were few elaborate attempts in this field, indeed, by men of decided genius. But the great obstacle may be found in the imperfection of the language and the deficiency of the more exact and finished metrical forms indispensable to high poetic execution.

The whole period, however, comprehending, as it does, the first decided approaches to a regular drama, may be regarded as very important in a literary aspect; since it exhibits the indigenous peculiarities of Castilian literature in all their freshness, and shows to what a degree of excellence it could attain, while untouched by any foreign influence. The present reign may be regarded as the epoch which divides the ancient from the modern school of Spanish poetry; in which the language was slowly but steadily undergoing the process of refinement, that "made the knowledge of it," to borrow the words of a contemporary critic, "pass for an elegant accomplishment, even with the cavaliers and dames of cultivated Italy;"<sup>57</sup> and which finally gave full scope to the poetic talent that raised the literature of the country to such brilliant heights in the sixteenth century.

<sup>57</sup> "Ya en Italia, assi entre Damas, como entre Caballeros, se tiene por gentileza y ganancia, saber ha-

blar Castellano." *Diálogo de las Lenguas*, apud Mayans y Siscar, *Orígenes*, tom. ii. p. 4.

I have had occasion to advert more than once in the course of this chapter to the superficial acquaintance of the Spanish critics with the early history of their own drama, authentic materials for which are so extremely rare and difficult of access as to preclude the expectation of anything like a satisfactory account of it out of the Peninsula. The nearest approach to this within my knowledge is made in an article in the eighth number of the *American Quarterly Review*, ascribed to Mr. Ticknor, late Professor of Modern Literature in Harvard University. This gentleman, during a residence in the Peninsula, had every facility for replenishing his library with the most curious and valuable works, both printed and manuscript, in this department; and his essay embodies in a brief compass the results of a well-directed industry, which he has expanded in greater detail in his lectures on Spanish literature, delivered before the classes of the University. The subject is discussed with his usual elegance and perspicuity of style; and the foreign, and indeed Castilian, scholar may find much novel information there, in the views presented of the early progress of the dramatic and the histrionic art in the Peninsula.

Since the publication of this article, Moratin's treatise, so long and anxiously expected, "*Orígenes del Teatro Español*," has made its appearance under the auspices of the Royal Academy of History, which has

enriched the national literature with so many admirable editions of its ancient authors. Moratin states in his Preface that he was employed from his earliest youth in collecting notices, both at home and abroad, of whatever might illustrate the origin of the Spanish drama. The results have been two volumes, containing in the First Part an historical discussion, with ample explanatory notes, and a catalogue of dramatic pieces from the earliest epoch down to the time of Lope de Vega, chronologically arranged, and accompanied with critical analyses, and copious illustrative extracts from pieces of the greatest merit. The Second Part is devoted to the publication of entire pieces of various authors, which from their extreme rarity, or their existence only in manuscript, have had but little circulation. The selections throughout are made with that careful discrimination which resulted from poetic talent combined with extensive and thorough erudition. The criticisms, although sometimes warped by the peculiar dramatic principles of the author, are conducted in general with great fairness; and ample, but not extravagant, commendation is bestowed on productions whose merit, to be properly appreciated, must be weighed by one conversant with the character and intellectual culture of the period. The work, unfortunately, did not receive the last touches of its author, and undoubtedly something may be found wanting to the full completion of his design. On the whole, it must be considered as a rich repertory of old Castilian literature, much of it of the most rare and recondite nature, directed to the illustration of a department that has hitherto been suffered to languish in the lowest obscurity, but which is now so arranged that it may be contemplated, as it were, under one aspect, and its real merits accurately determined.

It was not till some time after the publication of this History that my attention was called to that portion of the writings of Don Martinez de la Rosa in which he criticises the various departments of the national literature. This criticism is embodied in the annotations and appendix to his elegant "*Poetica*" (*Obras literarias* (Paris, 1827), tom. i. ii.). The former discuss the general laws by which the various kinds of poetry are to be regulated; the latter presents a very searching and scientific analysis of the principal productions of the Spanish poets, down to the close of the last century. The critic exemplifies his own views by copious extracts from the subjects of his criticism, and throws much collateral light on the argument by illustrations borrowed from foreign literature. In the examination of the Spanish drama, especially comedy, which he modestly qualifies as a "succinct notice, not very exact," he is very elaborate, and discovers the same taste and sagacity in estimating the merits of individual writers which he had shown in discussing the general principles of the art. Had I read his work sooner, it would have greatly facilitated my own inquiries in the same obscure path; and I should have recognized at least one brilliant exception to my sweeping remark on the apathy manifested by the Castilian scholars to the antiquities of the national drama.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.







